

# THE LOST RANGER: A SOLDIER'S STORY

Noel F. Mehlo, Jr



# The Lost Ranger, A Soldier's Story

NOEL F. MEHLO, JR



Noel F. Mehlo, Jr

Copyright © 2014, 2<sup>nd</sup> Edition 2015

All rights reserved.

ISBN: 1500421464

ISBN-13: 978-1500421465

## DEDICATION

To my mom, aunt, uncles and the Hull family for enduring loss.

To my sister, brother and cousins.

To my wife and kids for their patience while I was on this journey.

To past and present United States Army Rangers and their families for what they did and continue to do.

To those men who served as Infantry soldiers during World War II.

To my Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ.





## REVIEWS

“This book is a wonderful example of what an author can accomplish by good research. Starting with a short note from his mother, and his grandfather's discharge papers and uniform, through diligent research, Mehlo has produced a marvel of detail and a complete, thoroughly engrossing story. The book is a must for anyone interested in the World War II Rangers or D-Day, or in the training that Infantry units were exposed to in their development into the fighting units that won the war.”

Major General (r) John C. Raaen, Jr.  
Author of *Intact: A First-Hand Account of the D-Day Invasion From a 5th Rangers Company Commander*

“Since my office worked with Mr. Noel F. Mehlo, Jr. on *The Lost Ranger: A Soldier's Story*, I wanted to commend this book. Because we publish *Veritas*, the Army Special Operations history journal, a number of authors working in this realm, solicit our advice and assistance. Mehlo's book is extremely well-researched with a heavy emphasis on primary sources. More importantly, this memoir is placed in context, socially, politically, and economically, which will enable any reader to grasp a sense of the times. His subject epitomizes America's citizen-soldier in wartime and what the Greatest Generation contributed to today's world. *The Lost Ranger* is a key reference in our research library.”

C.H. 'Chuck' Briscoe, PhD,  
Cmd Historian, US Army Special Operations  
Command, Fort Bragg, NC.

“Noel Mehlo has written an invaluable account of a singular period of our history. The research, frankly, is astounding. His sources include not only documents, but first person accounts of men who were there. In one case, accounts of a soldier who had never discussed his experiences with anyone, not even his family. Mehlo's book takes you on a journey. He begins with what inspired him to start researching his book, and continues on to what the soldiers did to prepare for the most challenging event of their lives. And then on to the D-Day invasion itself. If you want to understand what your fathers or grandfathers experienced as soldiers during World War II, this book will take you there. If you're a student of military history, this is a must-read. Mehlo has made a significant contribution to our understanding of military, and human, history.”

Janet L. Whittington  
Daughter of Cpt. George Whittington  
5<sup>th</sup> RN INF BN, B Company Commander

This book started out as a quest to learn about the author's grandfather, Sgt Herbert Hull, a ranger in the 5th Ranger Battalion during the Normandy Campaign. It turned into the most informative history of the 5th Ranger Battalion I've come across. Richly detailed and profusely illustrated, it traces the battalion from its formation in 1943 through the bloody siege of Brest where Sgt Hull was badly wounded and evacuated back to the United States. The book goes far beyond Sgt Hull's personal experiences and details the tumultuous events that shaped the 2nd and 5th Ranger Battalions into the elite fighting forces that played such an important role during the invasion of Normandy and the bitter fighting that followed. If you're a student of WWII military history, this book belongs in your collection.

Jim Schneider  
Son of Lt. Col. Max F. Schneider  
Author of *My Father's War, the story of Col. Max Ferguson Schneider, A Ranger Commander*



# CONTENTS

Acknowledgments	i
Prologue	iii
1 The Quest for My Grandfather	1
2 Herbert Stanton Hull - Transition from Civilian to Soldier	5
3 The 35th Infantry Division – 320th Infantry Regiment	23
4 The 35th Infantry Division – 134th Infantry Regiment	34
5 Becoming an Army Ranger in the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion – Camp Forrest	52
6 Scouts and Raiders School – Fort Pierce, Florida	93
7 Fort Dix and New York City	113
8 Camp Kilmer – Preparation for Movement Overseas	125
9 New York Port of Embarkation – The Voyage for England	136
10 Leominster, Herefordshire, England	160
11 Vacationing in Scotland	167
12 U.S. Assault Training Centre, Braunton, England	179
13 Dorchester and Exercise Fabius I	204
14 Swanage	219
15 Dorchester Camp D5 and Weymouth	245
16 Red Sky in the Morning: D-Day	256
17 D-Day: Over the Top	292
18 Battle, Recovery, Replacements and Refit	311
19 Battle for Brest: Fort de Toulbroc'h	340
20 Evacuation and Loss	370
21 My Journey to Find a Lost Ranger	388
About the Author	401
Appendix A: S/Sgt Hull Discharge	402
Appendix B: Heavy Infantry Company Table of Organization	403
Appendix C: 94 <sup>th</sup> General Hospital GO #15, 20 SEP 44	405



Appendix D: S/Sgt Hull Bronze Star & Purple Heart Citations	407
Works Cited	408
Bibliography	420
List of Figures	431
Index	441

## ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

This work would not be possible without the encouragement and support of many individuals. First among these is my friend, retired Major General John C. Raaen, Jr. Next are friends, Rangers James Robert (JR) Copeland and his daughter, Randall Ching and his daughter Bonnie, Richard “Doc” Felix and his wife. I have to thank retired Colonel Robert W. Black for his mentoring and critical contributions. I wish to thank my family including my wife Denise and kids, Christian, Maggie and Katie, mom, sister Beth and brother Stephen, aunt Linda, cousins Sunny Hull, Debra Hull and Judy Brinker (Hull).

Special Thanks to the following individuals who went out of their way to help in this endeavor:

Richard L. Baker (MA, Msgt, USAF (ret) U.S. Army Heritage and Education Center (USHEC) Carlisle, PA), Richard T. Bass (historian, UK), Douglas McCabe (Curator, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Ohio University), Elmo Banning (retired detective and nephew of Ranger Elmo Banning), Frank Maurouard (French historian and friend to Rangers), Garry M. Graves (author/historian and friend to JR Copeland), Bradley Hunt (U.S. Army Human Resources Center of Excellence Award and Decorations Branch), Jerry Styles (The Descendants of World War II Rangers, Inc.), Mark Weast (friend & son of Ranger Carl Weast), Mike McCarthy (friend), Mike Ford (historian UK), Saundra Peralta (Camp San Luis Obispo Museum), Richard Drew (historian UK), Roberta Russo (134<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment website/historian), Donna Noelkin (NARA) and George Cowmeadow Bauman.

Thanks to the following individuals, organizations and institutions who assisted me or contributed to this work: Marge Bullock (35<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division Association), Bruno Derrick (National Archives of the United Kingdom (UK)), U.S. Army Ranger Association, Inc, Alain Batens & Ben Meadows (Medical Research Center, UK), Alan Holiday (historian/geologist UK), Skip Theberge (meteorologist NOAA), Dr. Alice Kaplan (professor, Yale University), Allan R. Millet (University of New Orleans), Andrew Burgess (re-enactor, 5<sup>th</sup> Rangers E Coy), Andrew Parry (Archives Office, Gloucestershire, England), Amy Purcell (University of Louisville, KY), National Archives and Records Administration (NARA), Atlantikwall Superforum, Jason Austin (Director of Public Affairs, Arnold AFB, TN), Benjamin C Nance (Historical Archaeologist, TN Division of Archaeology), Bob Post (friend of Don Garlits), Brandon Rowe (historian), Brandon Wiegand (historian, D-Day Militaria), Charles Briscoe (U.S. Army Special Operations Command Historian), Bruce Ford (City of Akron, OH), Claudia Burdge (City of Akron, OH), U.S. Army Military History Institute (USAMHI), Chris Mewse (historian UK), Chris Tingom (35<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division Association), David Clarke (historian Center for Transportation Research at the University of Tennessee, Knoxville (UTK)), Stephen H Richards (historian UTK), Mollie C. Mitchell (historian UTK), Spence Meyers (historian, UTK), Colleen McDevitt (The Descendants of World War II Rangers, Inc.), Craig Brown (Columbiana County, OH Recorder), Dan Cupper (railroad historian), Deanne Johnson (East Palestine Morning Journal), George Despotis (historian), Katie Difford (English Heritage), Library of Congress, Kenneth MacNevin (Chief of Public Affairs, DLA Disposition Services & DLA Logistics Information Service), Don Garlits (retired drag racing legend and family friend), Dorma Tolso (East Palestine Morning Journal), Doug Pellom (brother-in-law of Sgt Mark Townsend), Ed Miller (historian), Erik Runge (historian), Frank H Grubbs (veteran/pastor), James Foradas & Vern Six (friends of Frank Grubbs), Fred M Prauty (Director of Programs, TN Wars Commission), Géoportail, Gary Sterne (historian, France-UK), Gemma Birnbaum (The National WWII Museum), Guy I. Colby, IV (cousin of Ranger Victor Miller), Randy Harlan (Historian, 75<sup>th</sup> Ranger Regiment, U.S. Army), Bill Harris (Norfolk Southern Railroad), Bonnie Henning (U.S. Army Fort Belvoir, Institute of Heraldry), Sarah Herrmann (American Battle Monuments Commission), Jay Hobgood (meteorologist, Ohio State University), Graham Hodson (National Museums Liverpool, UK), Dr. Ian West (geologist/professor, UK), Jennifer Bradley (Rudder Collection, Texas A&M University), Catherine Coker (Rudder Collection, Texas A&M University), Jeremy Drouin (Kansas City, MO Library), Jim Havron (Middle TN State University), John Shepherd (Liverpool Ships.org), Cunard Line, Julie Fulmer (The Descendants of World War II Rangers, Inc.), Keith Campbell (D-Day.org), Ed Gerhardt, BG (ret) (Kansas National Guard Museum), Lynn & Ray Towne (The Descendants of World War II Rangers, Inc.), Marcel Tchaou (friend), Saunders Marble (U.S. Army Medical Command), Mike Boyce (historian), Erica Schneider (friend and historian), Paul Graham (friend and historian), Peter Wright (historian UK), Michael Siegel (Rutgers University), Mike Ruth (friend), Mary-Jo Miller (NE State Historical Society), Mark Moore (City of Akron, OH), Nancy Campbell (historian and friend, Ohio State Preservation Office), National Museums Liverpool, Julie Smith (News Tribune, Jefferson City, MO), Nick Gadenne (photographer UK), Nick Catford (historian UK), Ordinance Survey United Kingdom, Donald & Sophia van den

Bogert, (historians, Belgum), Patricia Lee (historian), Paul Garcia (family friend to Henry Glassman family), Richard Glenn (son of veteran), Rob Gorrell (historian), Robert Ault (Youngstown State University), Ron Hudnell (The Descendants of World War II Rangers, Inc.), Rich Merrill (The Descendants of World War II Rangers, Inc.), Roger Thorne (historian), Stuart Bryant (historian), Bruce Stuyvesant (son of Ranger Herman Stuyvesant), Charles Whittington (Son of Captain George Whittington), Janet Whittington (Daughter of Captain George Whittington)

I also wish to acknowledge and thank SSG Chase Adkins who serves as a Ranger in our present conflicts. He was previously a member of the 75<sup>th</sup> Ranger Regiment. He re-enacts World War II Ranger history, and graciously allowed me the use of his image as he portrayed my grandpa for the cover. SSG Adkins, served in Iraq and Afghanistan and has been awarded the Purple Heart and Bronze Star Medals for his actions in combat. I am deeply honored at his contributions to this work as he is cut from the same mettle as the men to whom this book honors.





## PROLOGUE

He wanted something more with his military service, Private (PVT) Herbert Stanton Hull had explained in a February 1943 letter home to his sister Doris from Camp San Luis Obispo as a member of the 35<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, 320<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment. By summer of 1943, he had found what he had been looking for. He volunteered for and was accepted as a member of the newly formed 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company in September 1943. Since joining the Rangers, he rose from the rank of PVT to the rank of Staff Sergeant (S/Sgt) and was now assigned as a Platoon Sergeant in one of the most élite units of World War II all in less than five months by the early spring of 1944.

He had survived the bloody June 6, 1944 D-Day invasion on Omaha Beach. It was now September 2, 1944. On this date, the Battalion had been split into two groups for combat operations around the Brest, France area. Companies B, D, F and Headquarters of the 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion were engaged at Fort de Toulbroc'h. The 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company, 2<sup>nd</sup> Platoon, was under the command 1<sup>st</sup> Lt. Louis J. Gombosi. The platoon moved to the south down a long and deep ravine as part of an ordered reconnaissance in force.<sup>1</sup> Upon reaching the sea, the platoon separated into two Sections, the first led by Gombosi, the second by Hull. Hull's section moved back slightly to the north and then east up a secondary ravine toward the outer perimeter defenses of the northwestern edge of the objective. This fortification has stood sentinel over the port of Brest, France since at least 1884. Under German occupation, it acted as one of the formidable coastal defenses to the west of the German fortress of Brest as part of the vaunted German "Atlantikwall." Within it were many pieces of artillery capable of firing into the flanks and rear of the rapidly advancing 29<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division to the north of the fort who were closing in on the Port of Brest which lies to the east. The capture or elimination of this important strongpoint was just the sort of mission that the 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Battalion was created for.

During the recon by 2<sup>nd</sup> Platoon, 2<sup>nd</sup> Section of the fort's perimeter, one of the men in the section to the left of Hull tripped a landmine. Hull warned his men to drop to the ground with hand motions, but it was too late. The mine went off sending shrapnel into his right hand, back and most importantly impaling his left knee rendering him unable to walk.

Moments after Hull was wounded, Lt Gombosi was in position just outside the fort. He requested permission to attack, having observed no enemy within. The permission to attack was granted and the 2<sup>nd</sup> Platoon advanced into the base going slowly from dugout to dugout. It was nearly half an hour before they struck any enemy, but when they did, the 2<sup>nd</sup> Platoon found themselves outnumbered more than ten to one and were forced to withdraw to the northwest. The dead and wounded soldiers were pinned down under intense fire. By 2007 hours the report to the Company Headquarters that soldiers were tied down and unable to be reached resulted in orders being issued for every available man in the Battalion to bear arms and join the fight.<sup>2</sup>

The U.S. Army Ranger Creed states: "I will never leave a fallen comrade to fall into the hands of the enemy." Even though this portion of the creed is more modern, the United States Army Rangers have a long history of not leaving a man behind. The entire portion of the Battalion engaged in this action rose up in what must have been quite a

measure of indignation focused at a stubborn enemy on the night of September 2, 1944 in order to save the situation from imminent disaster.

The thoughts of “Am I going to die?” must have passed through his mind as a fierce firefight waged all around him for several hours while his fellow Rangers were unable to rescue him. I never had the chance to ask if these thoughts were accurate of this particular soldier, my grandfather, but I am confident that these thoughts crossed his mind while under heavy enemy fire as he lay wounded on the battlefield. The thought of one’s own mortality is one that is not often heard voiced from one of this extremely special generation of Americans. As warriors, they exhibit a quiet dignity of men who simply did what their nation asked of them in order to help secure freedom for the world. The quiet demeanor and dignity of such men would not let them boast of their role in World War II in such grandiose terms.

S/Sgt Hull was rescued and his life saved after several hours by his fellow Rangers. He was sent to the rear for medical treatment. In an ironic twist of fate, he was lost. He was physically lost to the unit with whom he had spilled blood in France. He was lost administratively to the official records of the unit compiled throughout the remainder of the war and beyond. He was lost to history for nearly seventy years, he became a lost Ranger.

## 1 THE QUEST FOR MY GRANDFATHER

I have long been told that my grandfather, Herbert Stanton Hull, had been a United States Army Ranger and that he had fought in France in World War II. There seemed to be some confusion as to some of the specifics regarding his service, but as a child and into my adult years, the fact that he was a Ranger was enough for me to be proud of him. I never met him. He died in 1954. The singular event of his death rocked his immediate and extended family to their foundations in ways that have persisted for decades and negative feelings of hurt went to the grave with many.

My mom was very young when he died. She was only six-and-a-half years old at the time of his death. Her older sister was only seven years and nine months old when he died. He also left two younger sons, Herbert and Thomas. As a result of his death there were a great many things that were never properly and fully passed down through the generations. Complicating matters further, there were lines of communication that had been severed for many years between his parents and his siblings and my grandmother and her children. A good example of the limited information available to the family is found in the information that my mom gave me some years back as a hand-written note regarding his military service (Figure 1). This note represents the original information that I had to work with in order to find him.

The family oral history was incomplete and full of confusing information. Depending upon who you spoke with, he was reported to have served in either the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion or the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion. The oral history varied between B Company and D Company. The cliffs at Pointe du Hoc often found their way into the narrative. It was also often reported that he was one

Normandy cliffs 6-6-1944  
1 HR before D-day  
back of German lines -  
retreated @ Paris

Shutborough  
Shutbury Peninsula End Aug  
9-2-5 hit  
40 par division (3 left)  
S. Troquet

trapped wire  
put sun up & down  
went off but he was hit

lazed field 3 days before march  
to plane  
to England

knos surprise  
got better

Fat Doc New Gray  
Battle Creek Michigan

Figure 1: This note was written by my mom concerning what she knew about her father's military service.



of the first to have landed on Omaha beach as some sort of advance force. I was told that during D-Day or shortly thereafter, that he suffered from multiple wounds. He made it home from the war to become a police officer in East Palestine in Columbiana County located in eastern Ohio. I had been told that he suffered from nagging lingering effects from his physical wounds and that in the early 1950's he succumbed to them at an early age.

His Army uniform had been in the care of his mother, and was passed on to his sister Helen Hull when his mother died. From there his military belongings passed to our cousins Ron and Judy, who in turn passed them on to my Aunt Linda. After my grandma died in 2011, my Aunt Linda passed these things on to me along with a copy of his discharge paper on January 30, 2012. My mom also produced a copy of his discharge paper<sup>1</sup> in January 2012. A copy of this is included in Appendix A. The information received from my mom and aunt were enough to cause me to question some of the previously held family oral history regarding my grandpa. Here are the items that had come to my possession by the end of January, 2012 and as shown in Figure 2:

- WD AGO Form 53-55 (signifying Enlisted Personnel - Discharge & Release from Active Duty other than at Separation Centers)
- World War II U.S. Army Dress Tunic (Uniform and Insignia)
  - 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion Scroll
  - France War Aid Patch
  - Good Conduct Ribbon
  - Bronze Star Medal
  - European-African-Middle Eastern Theatre Ribbon (with double bronze campaign stars)
  - Distinguished Unit Citation
  - Purple Heart
  - Combat Infantrymans Badge
  - American Campaign Medal (not listed on discharge paper)
  - S/Sgt Rank
  - 2 Overseas Service Bars



Figure 2: Photo showing uniform of S/Sgt Herbert Hull

I resolved myself that based on this evidence; he was a member of the 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion. Along with his uniform came a set of patches. I used various research tools to identify them. I initially assumed that all of these fit the picture of his service based on the units involved in order to not limit my research options. The patches included:

- 35<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division Patch (adorning cap)
- 78<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division Patch
- Fourth Army Patch
- Ranger Patch (blue with gold writing)
- 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion Patch
- Army Amphibious Forces Patch – Blue with gold insignia
- 26<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division Patch

It was during this time in January, 2012, that I began in earnest to research both the 2<sup>nd</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion and the 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion. I made the acquaintance of Mr. Jerry Styles, the son on Clarence Styles who had served in the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, D Company. Mr. Styles placed me in contact with other members of the Descendants of World War II Rangers, Inc. We thus began a quest to uncover the facts concerning the military service of Herbert Stanton Hull.

## THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

The form used for his discharge was WD AGO Form 53-55 signifying Enlisted Personnel - Discharge & Release from Active Duty other than at Separation Centers. Important information was obtained from his discharge papers; however, due to missing details, the discharge papers also resulted in additional questions. The information obtained from his records was as follows:

- Grade - Staff Sergeant (matches insignia on uniform)
- Arm or Service - Ranger BN
- Component - AUS (meaning Army of the United States per Army TM 12-235)
- Organization - 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger BN
- Date of Separation - 19 April 1945
- Place of Separation - 3610 SCU Percy Jones Hospital Center , Fort Custer , Michigan
- Civilian Occupation and no. - Automobile, Body Repairman, Metal
- Date of Induction - 7 Jan 1943
- Date of Entry into Service - 14 January 1943
- Place of Entry - Fort Hayes , Ohio
- Squad Leader 746
- Military Qualification - Combat Infantryman
- Battles & Campaigns - Battle of France
- Decorations & Citations - Good Conduct Ribbon, Bronze Star for Campaign, European-African-Middle Eastern Theatre Ribbon, Unit Citation GO 26 1<sup>st</sup> Army 17 June 44, Purple Heart, Combat Infantrymans Badge
- Wounds Received in Action: France 2 September 1944
- Service outside Continental United States & Return

<b>Date of Departure:</b>	<b>Destination:</b>	<b>Date of Arrival</b>
7 Jan 44	England	19 Jan 44
Unknown	France	6 Jun 44
19 Dec 44	USA	27 Dec 44

- Total Length of Service - Continental 1 yr 3 mo 22 days, foreign 0 yr 11 mo, 21 days
- Highest Grade held - S/Sgt
- Prior Service – None
- Reason & Authority for Separation – Certificate of Authority for Discharge AR 615-361 (Disability), 3610 SCU Percy Jones Hospital Center , Fort Custer , Michigan
- He also had an Honorable Discharge Certificate dated 19 April 1945

These were not a lot of facts to begin with. Part of the initial research conducted led to my purchase of two books concerning the Rangers in World War II. These were *Rangers In World War II*, by Robert W. Black<sup>2</sup> and “*Lead the Way, Rangers*”, *History of the Fifth Ranger Battalion*<sup>3</sup> by Henry S. Glassman, both of which are considered by most to be the authoritative works covering the 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion. The concerning thing to me in the early part of this endeavor, as well as to Mr. Styles, was that my grandfather appeared neither in these texts nor in records of the Battalion that he had acquired over the years. Staff Sergeant Hull was lost to history. To his credit, even though Mr. Styles developed and held the belief in January through March of 2012 that S/Sgt Hull must have been a replacement Ranger, he continued to help me diligently. The concept of Hull having been a replacement would have meant that he did not join the unit until after June 15, 1944 at the earliest. It would have meant that certain of the facts represented in his discharge papers and on his uniform might have been in error. If true, this would have set back my research for an unknown amount of time. Mr. Styles does not know this, but these beliefs made me want to dig in with extreme determination and find the facts in a way that I otherwise might not have done. I set about to research this as if a scientific topic. I established a hypothesis, and ran down each research thread until exhausted either in support of or against any single piece of evidence. It is for this reason that our family owes Mr. Styles our thanks. He also introduced me to some remarkable individuals who are discussed in this book, such as Major General John C. Raaen, Jr, (ret) and Colonel Robert W. Black (ret), and Richard “Doc” Felix. These great men have given much of

their personal time in order to collaborate back and forth with me at each stage of this quest.

This is the story of a United States Army Ranger. It is the story of his service in World War II. It is the story of the American Infantryman in World War II. It is the story of the 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion from its creation through September 1944. It is a story of valor and fortitude. It is the story of how a man became lost to the consciousness of his unit. It is about how a soldier was lost to history. This story is about the research to find him in and of itself and what the journey yielded. Most importantly however, it is about how with the help of some determined individuals, he was brought home to his brothers in the 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, to his rightful place in the unit history. He was also brought home to a family who never really knew him.



Figure 3: Photo taken in approximately 1953 of Herbert Hull with children (left to right), Mary Kathleen, Linda and Herbert.



## 2 HERBERT STANTON HULL - TRANSITION FROM CIVILIAN TO SOLDIER

Herbert Stanton Hull was born on January 14, 1924 in East Palestine, Columbiana County, Ohio where he lived until he began his military service. His parents were Stanton Hull and Ethel Hull (Young). He had one brother, Raymond and four sisters, Helen, Shirley, Lucile, and Doris. He was the fifth of six children. Herbert's grandparents were George Hull and Anna "Belle" Hull who immigrated to the United States in 1890 from Bedfordshire, England.<sup>1</sup>

Herbert Hull's father was a jigger-man in the general ware pottery industry and was employed by the W.S. George Pottery Company of East Palestine and was considered a semi-skilled laborer. The plant is shown in Figure 4. It is reported that this company employed about one third of the city's residents throughout the first half of the 20th century. The company manufactured semi-porcelain hotel ware, toilet ware, and dinnerware. East Palestine, Ohio is located in a portion of the Ohio River valley that historically has played an important part in the industrial fabric of America. The pottery industry thrived in this portion of Ohio during that era.<sup>2</sup> His mother did not work as of the 1940 United States census and stayed at home to raise the family.



Figure 4: WS George Pottery Company, East Palestine Postcard: Public Domain

Herbert, "Herb" as he was known, had graduated from East Palestine High School in 1942, one of two siblings to do so. He had become a skilled mechanic and automobile repairman by 1943 at Brittain Motors in East Palestine. He

would return to work there after the war until he later became a police officer in East Palestine. He was 5'11" and 178 pounds with blond hair and blue eyes. He was reported to have had a beautiful singing voice and sang constantly. He liked to laugh and it is said that he was a great deal of fun, constantly pulling jokes and pranks. He once shot one of his sisters in the behind with his BB gun. He had a love of the outdoors including gardening and hunting. He loved dogs. He often would head up into the hills to find edible wild mushrooms. He attended the East Palestine United Methodist Church as seen in Figure 5. This sleepy small town life was soon to be interrupted.



Figure 5: East Palestine Methodist Church Postcard: Public Domain

Worldwide events continued to evolve rapidly in the late 1930's and early 1940's. In the spring of 1940, Hitler returned to his blitzkrieg war resulting in the overrun of Western Europe. Hitler's forces were flying the Swastika flag from the Rhine to the English Channel, from the Pyrenees to the Arctic Circle in fewer than six weeks.

In response to these events in Europe and those involving Japanese aggression, President Franklin Roosevelt encouraged Congress to write and to pass legislation known as the Burke-Wadsworth Bill which would establish a peace time draft. This would be the first time this had been done in the history of the nation and also created the Selective Service System. The Selective Service system made provision for calling into Federal service up to 500,000 men. The Burke-Wadsworth Bill was signed into law by the President on September 16, 1940 and he also signed an Executive Order which federalized selected National Guard units into active service for a one year training period. This became known as the Selective Training and Service Act (STSA) of 1940. Most of these units would report to training camps in the spring of 1941. Congress in turn appropriated over one billion dollars for the national defense in May of 1940, in part, to construct the facilities to house and train these men. Using an inflation calculator this would equal approximately 16 billion dollars today. The STSA required registration of all men between 21 and 45. The selection process for one year's service was done by a national lottery.

The government returned to the World War I system to serve as a model for World War II conscription. In August 1941, the term of required service was extended by one year, and after the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor the STSA was further amended on December 19, 1941 to read for the duration of the war plus six months. The draft of World War II required the registration of some 50 million men, 36 million of them being classified as fit for military service and with 10 million being inducted. The STSA established the Selective Service System as the agency responsible for placing men into military service. The Selective Service System (SSS) remains in place to this day. Later in the war, as needs changed, men were conscripted into the Marine Corps as well as the Army. An important change that affected Herbert Hull occurred on December 5, 1942 when Presidential Executive Order 9279 -

PROVIDING FOR THE MOST EFFECTIVE MOBILIZATION AND UTILIZATION OF THE NATIONAL MANPOWER AND TRANSFERRING THE SELECTIVE SERVICE SYSTEM TO THE WAR MANPOWER COMMISSION dropped the age of registration from age 21 to 18 years of age.

Herbert was conscripted into the United States Army for the duration of the War plus six months at the age of 19. Conscription in the United States, also known as compulsory military service or the Draft, has been employed several times by the U.S. Government, usually during war throughout our nation's history.<sup>3</sup>

He was drafted by the lottery system through Columbiana County Draft Board and was inducted in Akron, Ohio for enlistment into the Army at Fort Hayes in Columbus, Franklin County, Ohio which will be discussed later. His date of induction was January 7, 1943 at the Armed Forces Induction Station #5303, Akron, Ohio. The United States Army Medical Examination and Induction Board No 4 was located at 76 South High Street, Akron Ohio, and was located on the west side of the street between East Mill Street and East Market Street in downtown Akron. Its phone number was FR-9318. The building that housed the Induction Station was built in 1916-1917 and was formerly the home of the Central Union Telephone Company. That company left this location sometime in the latter 1920's, leaving the building vacant by the beginning of the war. This multiple story building was constructed of masonry and concrete. It had an L-shaped floor plan, and had offices, a dining room, locker room and rest rooms according to the Sanborn Fire Insurance maps for Akron, Ohio. The Akron Induction Center building is shown in Figure 6.



Figure 6: 1978 photo of Akron Ohio U.S. Armed Forces Induction Center (Courtesy, City of Akron Planning Department)

His date of entry into service was January 14, 1943, his 19<sup>th</sup> birthday. It is unknown how he transported between East Palestine and Akron, but it likely involved a bus or a train ride at the Army's expense. It is likely that he travelled to Columbus from Akron via train or a bus based on other Ohio soldiers' accounts that were drafted in the Youngstown, Ohio region at the time. The Pennsylvania Railroad had a train station in East Palestine, and there was ample bus service from East Palestine so either mode would have been possible.

Part of the registration process would have resulted in classifying his suitability for military service in one of four Classes of I through IV by his local draft board. The word "classification" appears multiple times for different reasons throughout the conscription process. A man classified as IA would be deemed to be available and fit for general military service. This is the classification that Herbert Hull was given. He would have received notice by way of U.S. Mail when he, like millions of other men, received a D.S.S. Form 150 Order to Report for Induction. An




example of this form is shown in Figure 7. This form would instruct him as to the time and place to report for induction, in his case, Akron, Ohio as stated previously. After a man received his classification and DSS Form 150, he and other men from the community would assemble at the Local Board, where a group would be formed under a leader and assistant leader. Orders were announced charging the selected groups of men to report to a particular Induction Station under the leader and meal and lodging tickets were distributed, and the men's records were turned over to the leader for delivery to the Induction Station.

App. not Req.

Prepare in Duplicate

Local Board No. 11 58  
 Mahoning County 099  
 MAR 15 1943 011  
 Boardman Twp. Fire Sta.  
 Youngstown, Ohio  
(LOCAL BOARD DATE START WITH CODE)



March 15, 1943  
(Date of mailing)

### ORDER TO REPORT FOR INDUCTION

The President of the United States,

To Carl Franklin Weast  
(First name) (Middle name) (Last name)

Order No. 10,358

**GREETING:**

Having submitted yourself to a local board composed of your neighbors for the purpose of determining your availability for training and service in the land or naval forces of the United States, you are hereby notified that you have now been selected for training and service therein.

Alliance Bus Station  
Alliance, Ohio

You will, therefore, report to the local board named above at \_\_\_\_\_  
(Place of reporting)

at 7:45 A m., on the 27th day of March, 1943  
(Hour of reporting)

This local board will furnish transportation to an induction station. You will there be examined, and, if accepted for training and service, you will then be inducted into the land or naval forces.

Persons reporting to the induction station in some instances may be rejected for physical or other reasons. It is well to keep this in mind in arranging your affairs, to prevent any undue hardship if you are rejected at the induction station. If you are employed, you should advise your employer of this notice and of the possibility that you may not be accepted at the induction station. Your employer can then be prepared to replace you if you are accepted, or to continue your employment if you are rejected.

Willful failure to report promptly to this local board at the hour and on the day named in this notice is a violation of the Selective Training and Service Act of 1940, as amended, and subjects the violator to fine and imprisonment.

If you are so far removed from your own local board that reporting in compliance with this order will be a serious hardship and you desire to report to a local board in the area of which you are now located, go immediately to that local board and make written request for transfer of your delivery for induction, taking this order with you.

*Homer E. Carlyle*  
Member or clerk of the local board.

D. S. S. FORM 150  
 (Revised 1-15-43)

U. S. GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE 10-18271-5

Figure 7: DSS FORM 150 – Order to Report for Induction, for a new soldier named Carl F. Weast, of Alliance, Ohio; (Courtesy Mark Weast)<sup>4</sup>

An Induction Station is any Camp, Post, Ship or Station of the Army or Navy forces at which selected men are received and if found acceptable, are inducted into Military Service. Decisions were reached at the Induction Station whether to accept or reject each selectee and to induct or enlist those accepted into the Military Service. Physical examinations were given under the supervision of a Medical Officer. An Officer of the Army, Navy or Marine Corps administered the prescribed oath of office below to each person who was accepted. The officer then explained their

obligations and privileges as members of the military. All of the actions taken at the Induction Stations generally lasted less than 24 hours. Figure 8 shows the general route of Hebert Hull in Ohio as he went off to war.



Figure 8: 1942 Ohio Division of Highways Map (Ohio Department of Transportation)<sup>5</sup>

**10 USC 502. Enlistment Oath.**— Each person enlisting in an armed force shall take the following oath: "I, {name}, do solemnly swear (or affirm) that I will support and defend the Constitution of the United States against all enemies, foreign and domestic; that I will bear true faith and allegiance to the same; and that I will obey the orders of the President of the United States and the orders of the officers appointed over me, according to regulations and the Uniform Code of Military Justice. So help me God."

Based upon the STSA of 1940 and Army regulations for men inducted into the Army, he was assigned his Army Serial Number (SN). The first digit of "3" in the SN indicated that a man was conscripted (drafted) into the United States Army, regardless of whether the man formerly had an Army, Navy, or other service number, and this SN would be retained thereafter upon enlistment or reenlistment for the Regular Army. The second digit of "5" indicates the corps area of induction. The Corps Areas of induction were specially designated geographic areas that assisted in tracking inductees back to their point of origin. In the case of Herbert Hull, he was from the 5th Corps Area, which included OH, IN, KY, and WV, and included Army SNs 35,000,000 to 35,999,999.

Consecutive numbers were not assigned to men of the same surname. Canceled numbers were not to be held available for reassignment. The Army serial number assigned to an enlisted man is part of his official designation and, except as indicated, will ordinarily appear in every military record in which his name appears, including every letter, telegram, order, report, pay roll, etc., at least once, preferably where the name first occurs. Special care must be taken that the correct Army serial number is used for the reason that certain records are filed and certain accounts are paid by the Army serial number and not by name.<sup>6</sup>

The importance of a soldier's SN in conducting research on the soldier can not be overstressed as this vital number provides the link to everything that exists in the governmental archival records concerning said soldier. He was given Army SN 35-597-467, and it is this number that helped track him down when finding him. Herbert Hull's enlistment records may be found at the National Archives, Archival Database in the Electronic Army Serial Number Merged File, ca. 1938 - 1946 (Enlistment Records) in Records Group 64, in Box # 0964 on Film Reel # 5.26 and may



be accessed at: <http://aad.archives.gov/aad/>

The physical qualifications for men inducted into the armed forces included that the selectee be at least 5 feet tall, and weigh at least 105 pounds. The recruit must be firmly muscled, vigorous and healthy. The hearing requirements were to be rated at least 10/20 in one ear, and 20/20 in the other ear. The vision requirements were that he must be able to read 20/100 without glasses and 20/40 with them, with no disqualification for color-blindness. Herbert Hull met all of these requirements. Figure 9 shows the induction process.

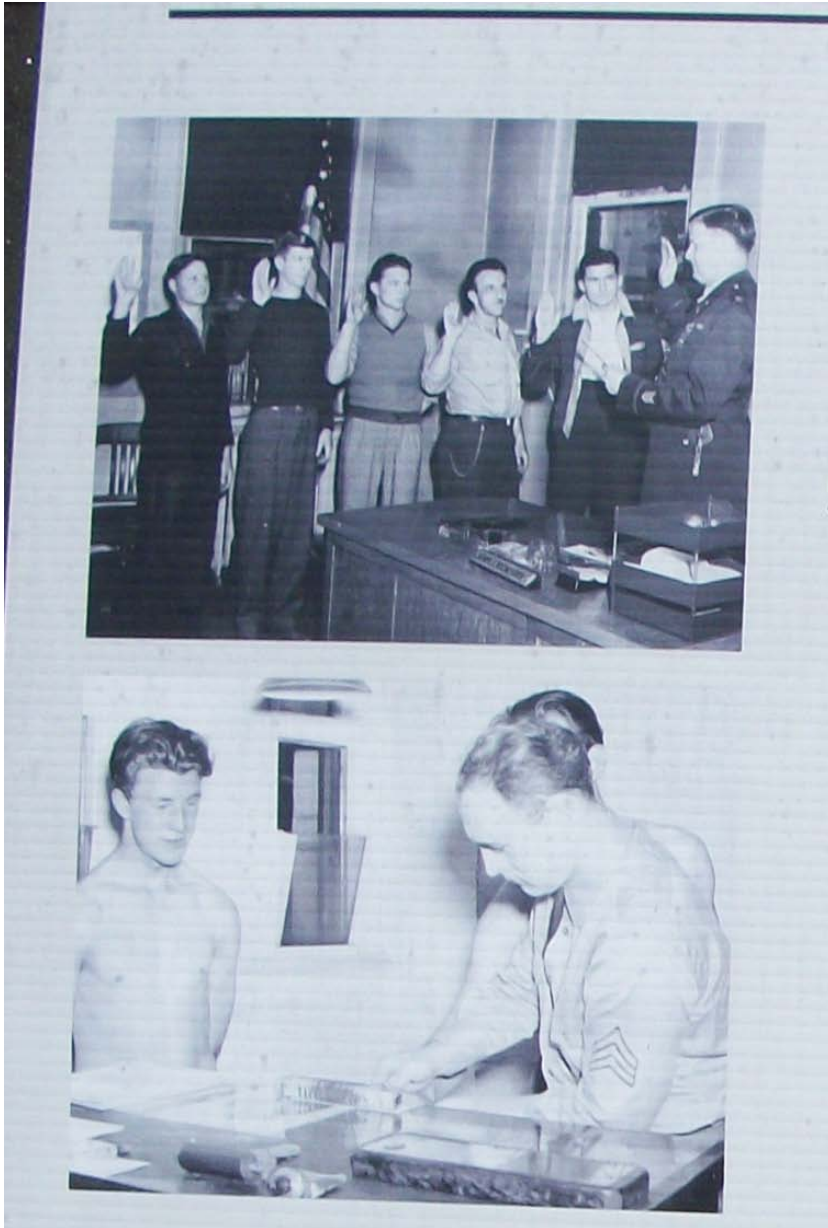


Figure 9: Induction Center photos: Taken from U.S. Army Heritage Trail, USAHEC, Carlisle, Pennsylvania (author's collection)

To summarize the induction process during World War II, millions of American draftees began their military service by reporting to induction centers established throughout the country. At the induction center future soldiers had to successfully complete the following tasks:

- Undergo physical examinations conducted in groups of 25 using an assembly line approach
- Receive a psychiatric evaluation
- Be fingerprinted and undergo a criminal background check
- Participate in a pre-assignment interview during which interviewees expressed the type of service they desired
- Sign induction papers and receive individual serial numbers
- Participate in a formal swearing in ceremony
- Depart on up to two weeks furlough before reporting to reception centers located throughout the country.

(Taken from U.S. Army Heritage Trail, USAHEC, Carlisle, Pennsylvania)

Next, he may have been given a few days furlough with orders for now Private (PVT) Herbert S Hull to arrive at the Fort Hayes Reception Center, Columbus, Ohio on January 14, 1943 to begin his enlistment.

Fort Hayes was a historic fort established in 1863 that served as an important military post during the Civil War. The 77-acre military post known today as Fort Hayes in Columbus was born out of the need for a federal arsenal to store and repair Ordnance Corps arms and to equip Ohio regiments called to duty during the Civil War. In 1861, Columbus was a city of 19,000 inhabitants in a geographic area not nearly as large as it is today. That same year Congress authorized the erection of an armory and arsenal in Columbus. In 1922, the name of the post was changed from the Columbus Arsenal to Fort Hayes in honor of President and former Governor Rutherford B. Hayes. Fort

## THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

Hayes continued as it had in the past as a reception center for soldiers during World War II. On March 1, 1944, this function was discontinued. The federal government granted the Ohio National Guard use of the post on December 17, 1946, and it has been used by both the Army Reserve and the U. S. Army Corps of Engineers. The compound has continued to be in use by the local, State and Federal governments for both military and civilian functions to this day.

The former Fort Hayes site sits northeast of the Greater Columbus Convention Center and the central business district of downtown Columbus and is bordered to the north and south by Interstate 670, to the east by Interstate 71 and to the west by Cleveland Avenue. The photo in Figure 10 accurately reflects the Fort Hayes that existed in 1943<sup>7</sup>,<sup>8,9</sup>.



Figure 10: 1950 aerial view of Fort Hayes: Ohio Historical Society

A Reception Center existed to receive newly procured manpower into the armed forces. The activities to be completed at the center included filling out all necessary paperwork and records, issue of individual equipment, the classification of the recruit as to occupation, immunization for smallpox and typhoid, military occupation and unit assignment. Each man was interviewed at the reception center to help determine their best use for the military. There are some written accounts of the Fort Hayes Reception Center process to draw from to better understand the process from a soldier's point of view. An account that was particularly useful came in the form of a book written by an airman from Youngstown, Ohio named *A Teenager's View of World War II; The Adventures of a Young Airman in the Army Air Force; 1942 to 1945*; 2003, by Fred Kaiser. Shortly after reporting to a Reception Center, soldiers received their basic issue of clothing and equipment. Much of the early training revolved around ensuring that soldiers knew how to properly care for and use the equipment issued to them.

The military had a purpose for the process, although to many soldiers and other veterans, the Reception Centers might have appeared to be haphazard or have given the perception of doing nothing but standing in never-ending lines. The best source of information regarding the Reception Center and the purpose for which they served is found in War Department Technical Manual, TM 12 – 223, Reception Center Operations. This manual, together with TM

12-221, -Armed Forces Induction Station Operations, 30 November 1944, superseded Army Service Forces Manual M-201, Induction Station and Reception Center Operation, August 1943.

“The mission of reception centers is to perform certain administrative processes in connection with newly enlisted men which must be accomplished before they may begin basic training”.<sup>10</sup> To understand the process, the Reception Center Operations manual is a must read. The procedures contained in the manual were designed to implement regulations affecting reception center operations, while at the same time, simplifying and standardizing the processing of personnel through such stations. The procedure charts used in the manual illustrate graphically the flow of the man and his records and the action taken throughout each step in the process. Figure 11, taken from a War Department Manual displays the reception Center Processing Plan. Reception centers were considered Class I installations of the Army Service Forces established and operated pursuant to Army Regulation (AR) 615-500. The essential administrative processes performed at reception centers were:

- Initiation of records
- Physical profile
- Classification tests. (Army General Classification, Mechanical Aptitude and Army Radio Code Aptitude)
- Issuance of clothing and equipment
- Classification (into arm of service or military occupational specialty - MOS)
- Application for insurance, dependency benefits, allotments, and bonds
- Blood typing
- Immunization. (Initial injections)
- Training films and lectures
- Assignment
- Transfer to training center

20 DEC 44

TM 12-223  
General

**RECEPTION CENTER PROCESSING PLAN**

INITIAL STEPS	FIRST PROCESSING DAY	SECOND PROCESSING DAY
Receiving	General Orientation Talk	Interview and Classification
Checking	Physical Profile	Insurance, Bonds, and Allotments
Issuance of Towels, Toilet Articles, Raincoat, and Pamphlet	Classification Testing*	Required Lectures and Films
Quartering	Clothing Issue	Blood Type and Inoculations
Initiation of Records		

*\* Immediately after the completion of the Army General Classification Test, the results thereof will be determined and forwarded to the Classification and Assignment Section.*

Figure 11: TM 12-223, Reception Center Processing Plan

The Army placed considerable emphasis on speedy and efficient processing. They understood that:

“the psychological implications involved in the transition from civilian life to military life should not be overlooked. The reception center is the new soldier's first Army home and his first experience

with Army procedures following enlistment or induction. In most cases, he will look upon reception center activities as indicative of what he may expect in the future. Accordingly, the impression made on the soldier during his stay at the reception center may have a significant influence in shaping his attitude toward the Army. The processing should be so conducted as to impress the soldier with the fact that, in traditional Army manner, it has been meticulously planned and is being executed according to that plan. He should be given fair and considerate treatment. Unnecessary haste or unwarranted delays should be avoided. Care should be exercised in the initial assignment of quarters so that changes will be held to a minimum. The mess should be so coordinated that all soldiers do not arrive at a mess hall at the same time. All reception center personnel who conduct any phase of processing should be thoroughly trained in their jobs. Military personnel of the reception center should be exemplary in appearance and conduct. The reception center should take full advantage of the opportunity it has to instill in the soldier confidence in Army leadership".<sup>10</sup>

The Army dictated that the physical profile examination and the Army General Classification Test must be accomplished at the earliest practicable time after the arrival of the enlisted men so that statistical reporting could occur on a daily basis. Not unlike the process used to this day, the Major Sections visited by the recruits during their reception were as follows:

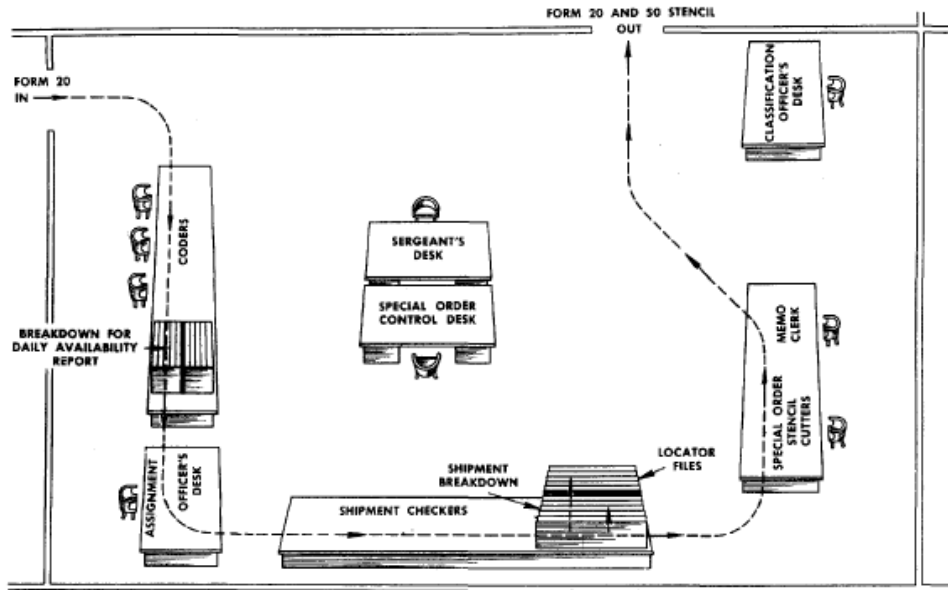
- Receiving Section
  - Receiving Unit
  - Forms Processing Unit
- Physical Profile Section
- Classification Testing Section
- Clothing Shipment Section
- Clothing and Equipment Issue Section
- Classification and Assignment Section
- Insurance, Bonds and Allotments Section
- War Department Theater
- Blood Type and Immunization Section
- Transportation Section
- Records Section

The United States Military has been and is known for its generation of paperwork. During these few days, each Soldier would have their official personnel records created. The basic components of the initial records included:

- Records Jacket (WD AGO Form 201)
- Selective Service Letter
- Processing Schedule
- Company Quartering Report
- Consolidated Quartering Report Notice
- Soldier's Qualification Card (WD AGO Form 20)
- Application For National Service Life Insurance (VET ADM Form 350)
- Authorization For Allotment Of Pay (WD AGO Form 29)
- Authorization of Class B Allotment For Purchase of War Savings Bonds (WD AG Form 29-6)
- Individual Clothing And Equipment Record (WD AGO Form 32)
- Special Orders
- "Report Of Physical Examination And Induction (DSS Form 221)
- Service Record (WD AGO Form 24)
- Army Life (WD Pamphlet 21-13)
- Barracks Bag Tag
- Civilian Clothes Bag Tag

- Civilian Clothes Bag Slip
- Physical Profile Form
- Application for Dependency Benefits (WD AGO Form 425)
- Immunization Register and Other Medical Data (Wd MD 81 / Old WD MD 81)
- Identification Tags
- Postal Locator Card
- Locator Card (WD AGO Form 401)
- Enlistment Record Jacket (WD AGO Form 490)
- Dispatch Notice
- Shipping Schedule
- Telephone Call
- Troop Movement
- Routing
- Equipment List
- Transportation Notice

For any family member looking for information regarding their loved-ones service, the single most important piece of documentation to try to find a copy of is the Soldier's Qualification Card (WD AGO Form 20). These were largely burned in the 1973 National Archives and Records Administration (NARA) records fire; however, they contain the most pertinent information regarding a veteran's service. However, any of the listed documents above can provide valuable clues as to military service. The Army determined that proper layout of the various offices used for processing new recruits would contribute a great deal toward the expeditious processing of the men as shown in Figures 12 through 14. The manual established that equipment and facilities should be so arranged that the enlisted men and the forms being processed move forward on an assembly line basis. The use of the assembly line process invented by Henry Ford found its way into many of the wartime activities from this to the manufacture of bombers. This greatly enhanced America's ability to out produce our enemies in the war. The Army provided guidance as simple as that "backtracking or crisscrossing should be avoided wherever possible. The names of the various processing stations should be clearly and conspicuously designated by signs." This activity lent to an efficient militarization of the individual citizen. Even providing meals (mess) to the new recruits was discussed in the process in order to provide for good timing that avoids long lines and waiting for the men to eat.



Layout for processing Soldier's Qualification Card after interview.

Figure 12: TM 12-223, Layout for Soldier In-processing



the items on the list noted above or some modified version of it based on Army guidance during January 1943.

After completing the Reception Center process, the men might await transportation to their next duty station at a training center or unit for basic training. These men were put to work doing certain tasks to assist in the performance of processing operations such as fingerprinting, records keeping or equipment issuance. "All men who have completed processing and who are not assigned to necessary reception center details or sick in quarters, in the hospital, or in confinement will receive the prescribed training. Training given to these men will be conducted in accordance with approved instructional procedures".

PVT Hull was classified as an Infantryman while at Fort Hayes. This classification and training that came next, gave him the needed skills to become a Ranger later on.

In order to better understand the personal stories and experiences of men in this setting, I set out to find stories of others who had processed at Fort Hayes. The many stories I found shared common themes. Many men reportedly arrived at Fort Hayes by way of Greyhound bus or by train. They were reportedly again sworn in to uphold the Constitution of the United States. The men were taught the basics, such as when to salute an officer when one was encountered. Their uniforms were issued and were often ill-fitting. They received their blue barracks bags along with their uniform issue. The new recruits were injected and inoculated in an assembly line fashion. The men were all given examinations to determine the job for which they would best be suited. They might be given a duty such as KP (Kitchen Police). Many men reported this time as an uncomfortable time, with much hustle and with the ever present Sergeant yelling at them with orders. One veteran wrote that Fort Hayes is where he fully understood the old Army adage of "Hurry up and wait." It is reported that sleep would often be interrupted with announcements. Many of the men were first subjected to the concept of venereal diseases while noticing the separate latrine for men with such diseases. After completion of processing at the Reception Center, the men were packed aboard military troop trains for either unit assignments or training at a replacement center.

Another fascinating account comes from the Camp Upton Reception Center, New York from the 225<sup>th</sup> AAA Searchlight Battalion Veterans Association. They wrote:

They lined up in their civilian clothes, a single overnight bag at their feet like a faithful pup, and listened alternately to the jeering of other soldiers and the barking of sergeants. "You'll be sorry!" "Good luck, Jeep!" ("Jeep" was slang for a first-day recruit in 1941-42). "Get the lead out!"

As a follow-up to what the recruit heard at the induction office (the AWOL and desertion articles from the Articles of War), he now had to listen to a reading of the complete articles, which covered military crimes with unfamiliar names like "fraudulent enlistment" and "false muster." Some instruction was given on military courtesy, especially how and when to salute, as well as some close-order drill, but not to the degree that both would be covered in basic training.

During this same period, the Army General Classification Test (AGCT) was given. A soldier who may have indicated a particular skill, like radio, would be given a special aptitude test in addition, but, by and large, the AGCT was the most important and was given to everyone. The classic version consisted of 150 multiple-choice questions that had to be completed in 40 minutes. There were three types of questions, embracing block counting, synonym matching, and simple arithmetic. "Jim had 10 bottles of milk. He bought 2 more and drank 7. How many did he have left?" The tests were machine-graded and the scores were used to place or classify the new soldier, which was the main function of centers like Upton. A GI generally got his Army assignment on the basis of what he'd done as a civilian; thus, the 15-minute interview with the classification specialist (CS) was as important, sometimes, as an AGCT score. The CS recorded the inductee's work history, education, and training, as well as the sports he played, his hobbies, and his talents. These attributes were considered in the light of the Army's needs, and the assignment was made.



Armed Forces' Original  
D. S. S. Form 221  
January 30, 1943

*not A 2/1/43*

## REPORT OF PHYSICAL EXAMINATION AND INDUCTION

106

(LOCAL BOARD DATE STAMP WITH CODE)

First examination  Second examination  Third examination  Fourth examination   
(To be filled in by local board clerk. Check number of examination made by local board)

SECTION I.—GENERAL (To be filled in by the local board clerk from the Selective Service Questionnaire, D. S. S. Form 40. Write "none" opposite the questions where no information is given. Do not leave any question blank.)

1. Name (page 1) Herbert Stanton Hull  
(First) (Middle) (Last)

2. Address (page 1) R. D. #1, Park Avenue, Extension, East Palestine, Ohio  
(Street or rural route) (Town or city) (County) (State)

3. Social Security No. (Series I, line 5) \_\_\_\_\_ 4. Registrant's order number (page 1) V-12193

5. Physical or mental defects or diseases (Series II, line 1) none

6. Treatment at an institution, sanitarium, or asylum (Series II, line 2) no  
(Yes or no)

7. Education completed (Series III): Elementary school 8 High school 4 Vocational school, college, or university \_\_\_\_\_

8. Occupation: (a) Title of present job (Series IV, line 2 (a), or Series V, line 1) Body and repair man at garage  
(b) Duties (Series IV, line 2 (b)) paint, straighten and repair wrecked cars  
(c) Title of last job, if unemployed (Series IV, line 3) \_\_\_\_\_

9. Years experience in this work (Series IV, line 2 (c), or Series V, line 2) 1 1/2 years

10. Income (Series IV, line 2 (d)): Average weekly earnings \$ 35.00  
(Weekly, monthly, annual)

11. Employment class (Series IV, line 2 (e)): Permanent employee ; Temporary employee ; Apprentice ; Independent worker ; Unpaid family worker ; Employer ; Student (Series IV, line 4 (a))

12. Business of present employer (Series IV, line 2 (g)) Body and Repair work on cars

13. Marital status (Series VII, line 1): Single ; Widower ; Divorced ; Married, not separated ; Married, separated

14. Number of dependents (Series VII, line 3 (a) fifth column except N. C.'s plus line 4 (a) fifth column) none

15. Birthplace (Series IX, line 1) East Palestine, Ohio USA  
(Town or city) (State) (Country)

16. Birth date (Series IX, line 2) January 14, 1924  
(Month) (Day) (Year)

17. Race (Series IX, line 3): White ; Negro ; Other (specify) \_\_\_\_\_

18. Citizenship: United States citizen (Series IX, line 4) Yes; Declarant alien (Series IX, line 7) \_\_\_\_\_  
(Yes or no) (Yes or no)

19. Previous U. S. military service (Series XII): None ; Army ; Guard ; Navy ; Marine Corps ; Guard

20. Type of discharge (Series XII): Specify \_\_\_\_\_

21. Date of registrant's affidavit (top of page 8) 27th November 1942.  
(Day) (Month) (Year)

(To be filled in by Armed Forces)

**35597467**

(Armed Forces Serial No.)

RESIDENCE
State
County
Place inducted
DATE INDUCTED
Day
Month
Year
Source
Marital
Year of birth
Race/citizenship
Education
Occupation

**INSTRUCTIONS**

- An original and three copies of this form will be prepared for each registrant called up for physical examination. The original is designated as the Armed Forces' Original; the first carbon copy, the National Headquarters' Copy; the second carbon copy, the Surgeon General's (Army)—Bureau of Medicine and Surgery (Navy)—Commandant Marine Corps (M. C.) Copy; and the third carbon copy, the Local Board's Copy. Instructions are contained on each copy.
- Forms of men rejected by the armed forces will be marked "Rejected by the Armed Forces" in large letters at the top of page 1.
- If the registrant is not sent to the induction station of the armed forces, or is rejected by the induction station of the armed forces, this original will be filed, along with "Local Board's Copy" (3d copy), in the registrant's Cover Sheet (Form 53).
- For registrants accepted by the induction station of the armed forces: If inducted by the ARMY, this original accompanied by F. B. I. Military Fingerprint Card will be forwarded from induction station to The Adjutant General, Washington, D. C.; if inducted by the NAVY or COAST GUARD, this original will be forwarded through the Main Recruiting Station to the Bureau of Navigation, Washington, D. C.; if inducted by the MARINE CORPS, this original will be sent to the Commandant, Headquarters, U. S. Marine Corps, Washington, D. C.
- Fingerprints are required only on this original and only for registrants who are inducted. If inducted by ARMY, prepare F. B. I. Military Fingerprint Card.

ORIGINAL COPY (PAGE 1)

3341  
#10-304179

Figure 15: PVT Hull Report of Physical Examination & Induction - DSS Form 221

PVT Hull was channeled through the process at Fort Hayes. Appropriate paperwork such as the Report of Physical Examination and Induction was completed as shown in Figure 15, and he was given orders for the 35<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, 320<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment on January 20, 1943. His next duty station, basic training, would take him to Camp San Luis Obispo, California. He departed from Columbus by train at the nearby Union Station. John Anderson Carnahan, a local Columbus historian, provided an excellent description of Columbus's Union Station:



“The grand concourse of the new structure was located midway between east and west on the second floor of the building, which floor was at [the High Street] viaduct level. The ceiling was forty-five feet above the floor, and the ceiling and upper walls were ornately finished in plaster paneling and figures, while marble wainscoting of six-foot height embellished the lower walls. The concourse contained the main waiting room, ticket offices, telegraph counter, and news stand, and off in the southwest corner was a smoking and rest room for men. A spacious corridor with a big arched ceiling led from the west middle of the concourse to the main entrance of the building at a canopied portico. The corridor was flanked by a comfortable waiting room for women, and by baggage and parcel counters. A pair of wide marble stairways led from either side of the north areas of the concourse to the ground floor, which was at track level. The ground floor contained rooms for handling mail, baggage and express and another large waiting room which was originally intended for excursions and immigrants. By the early forties, at the height of World War II, Union Station had lost some of the elegance that Mr. Steiner describes, and the number of daily trains arriving and departing Union Station had grown to 112. To put it mildly, the place, whether or not its earlier grandeur had dimmed, presented to my young eyes an exciting, sometimes chaotic, scene. Uniforms were everywhere - soldiers and sailors on their way to or from a boot camp or Naval station, some alone and disconsolate, others surrounded by teary families, still others kissed and embraced by their sweethearts. This was a place of constant motion – Americans on the move. But best of all, there were the trains.”

“*CHANGING TRAINS IN COLUMBUS*”, Paper by John Anderson Carnahan<sup>13</sup>



Figure 16: Union Station, Columbus Ohio Postcard: Public Domain

Fort Hayes in Columbus, Ohio currently serves as a school. Union Station is long gone and the Columbus Convention Center now stands where it once was. The old train station is shown in Figure 16. He would have travelled via the Pennsylvania Railroad lines on board a military troop train from Columbus, Ohio to St. Louis, Missouri. From St. Louis, the troop train would have taken a short line rail for the trip to Kansas City’s Union Station. Upon leaving Kansas City, the troop train would have followed a Union Pacific line. From Los Angeles, he would have taken a short line to Camp San Luis Obispo to the north of Los Angeles.

One possible clue that I was presented with along with his uniform was a small change purse in the pocket of his uniform trousers. It contained several coins, including a few Missouri sales tax tokens. These tokens are shown in

Figure 17. In years past many U.S. States had sales tax that for certain sales amounts resulted in tenths of cents being collected. This is where the tax term “mill” comes from meaning one-thousandth of a dollar. Many localities across the country still use the terminology millage when asking voters to approve one tax or another.



Figure 17: State of Missouri tax tokens

During the early 20<sup>th</sup> century, the State of Missouri had a 2 percent sales tax and issued tokens to help properly collect the tax. They issued these tokens in 1-mill and 5-mill denominations. During World War II, the previous metal tokens were replaced in manufacture by red and green tokens.<sup>14</sup> It is a few of the red plastic 1-mill tokens and metal 1-mil tokens that were in the change purse. This begged the question as to why he would have them. The logical deduction as to why he would have had these amongst his military paraphernalia was that he travelled through Missouri at some point. I would find out later that he was in the “Show Me” State for sure once, and likely twice during his military service. Once en route from Columbus to California on board the troop train, and a second time, I would later find as a patient in Springfield, Missouri in 1945. Albeit a small clue, these tokens helped to open new paths of investigation as to his service.

It turns out that any small piece of information, or items such as the coins mentioned above, can help a researcher piece together a story that might be hidden from view. Little bits of information from the discharge papers that noted Fort Hayes and the coins led to questions and answers that helped fully develop the part of his story from his time before becoming a Ranger. This part of his story is just as important as when he was a Ranger, because his time as an Infantryman led to his selection into the Rangers.



MVSC, Kansas City Public Library, Kansas City, Missouri

Figure 18: Union Station, 1945; Missouri Valley Special Collections, Kansas City Public Library, Kansas City, Missouri

A little piece of extra trivia is that my wife is from Kansas City, Missouri, and I would find a special connection with Union Station, as my wife, kids and I find it fascinating and visit there almost every time we make it into town in order to see the Lionel displays, Union Station Science City, the nearby Crowne Center or Liberty Memorial. It is a family favorite of ours. Little did I know all these years that my grandfather passed through the place on his way to war. A 1945 photo of Union Station is in Figure 18.

I also received a copy of the newspaper clippings kept by his mother. These were from the East Palestine newspaper, *The Daily Leader*. His mother did not date the articles or clip the dates from the papers themselves. Unfortunately, a search of the newspaper, local library, Ohio Historical Society and Library of Congress revealed that the newspaper archive from 1943 no longer exists. The article on the left is likely from the 13th or 14th of January, 1943, while the article on the right is likely from the 14th or 15th of January 1943. The existing *East Palestine Morning Journal News* confirmed the loss of their archives. A photo of the clippings is in Figure 19.

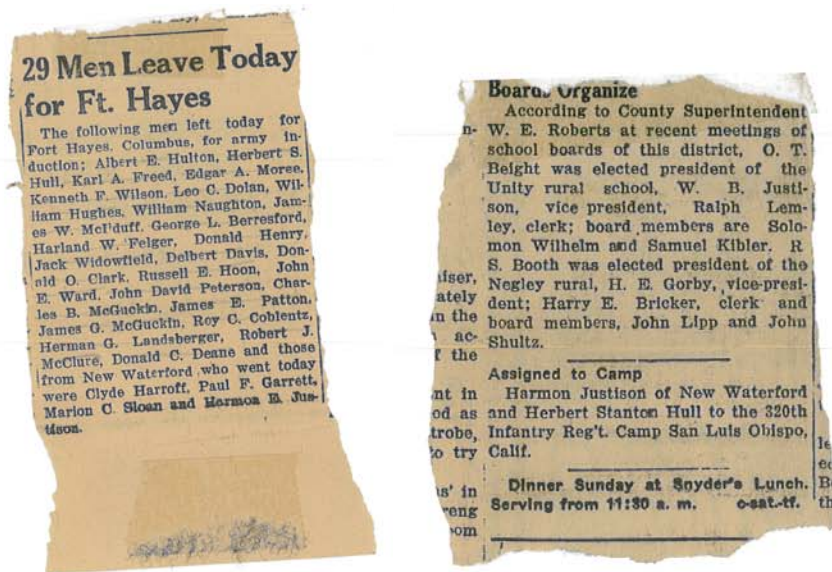


Figure 19: East Palestine newspaper, The Daily Leader, January 1943

Now is an important time to discuss part of his being lost to history. On July 12, 1973, a disastrous fire at the National Personnel Records Center (NPRC) destroyed approximately 16-18 million Official Military Personnel Files (OMPF).<sup>15</sup> This fire is seen in Figure 20. No duplicate copies of these records were ever maintained, nor were microfilm copies produced. There were no indices of the files created prior to the fire. The damage resulted in an estimated loss of 80% of all U.S. Army personnel records for soldiers discharged between November 1, 1912 and January 1, 1960. (NARA, St. Louis) As a result of this fire, S/Sgt Hull's military personnel records were destroyed. The U.S. government has prepared a partial replacement file based on their work in recreating his file from other sources as they have slowly been doing for as many veterans as is possible over the years.



Figure 20: Conflagration underway in 1973, Aerial View of MILPERCEN, National Archives (Photos – NARA)

Fortunately for our family, S/Sgt Hull was discharged under a disability rating of 30% by the military and his medical care was turned over to the VA. The VA was copied on many of his pertinent records and these records were and are stored separately from his personnel records which were lost. His Report of Physical Examination and Induction has been located as part of his Department of Veterans Affairs (VA) records held in archive at the Federal

Records Center (FRC) 0511 Dayton Storage Facility since 1974. Later in the book, the research and data sources required to develop this story will be fully described in detail, but for now it is important to keep in mind how the handwritten note shown in Chapter 1, Figure 1 is the basis for developing this lost page of history.

This all might seem heavy on the research end, but to any veteran, or more importantly family of a veteran trying to piece together the story of their loved one, understanding this type of information is very important. It is critical to become like a detective and sift through the bits and pieces of a life that remain as tokens to the living. To understand history is to find and identify people, places and events, and provide them a proper context so that value can be assigned to them. It is through this process that understanding becomes clear. It is through methodical research that a story based in fact can be told. One might uncover truths not known or open doors for future generations to uncover and debate by looking into the past. It is possible to repeat success and avoid failure by understanding the past.



### 3 THE 35TH INFANTRY DIVISION – 320TH INFANTRY REGIMENT

After Herb Hull's military induction and reception at Fort Hayes in Columbus, Ohio, he was shipped by train to Camp San Luis Obispo, California. The map in Figure 21 shows the Southern Pacific Rail Line coming into the town of San Luis Obispo from Los Angeles in the south and then running northeast to San Francisco. The military department constructed rail spurs in order to accommodate troop trains into Camp San Luis Obispo. It was used for the arriving and departing troops as well as for shipping in supplies (Figure 22). According to the Curator of the Camp San Luis Obispo, California State Military Museum, the Army built the rail line into the Camp to offload men in the warehouse area as seen in Figure 23. This particular route from Los Angeles to San Francisco was built in 1894 and eliminated the need for stage lines servicing the areas north over the Cuesta Grade. The map also notes the position of the California National Guard Camp that would become Camp San Luis Obispo located along State Route 1 and located 8 miles north and northwest of town. The map does not however accurately reflect the extensive building and construction taking place on the camp between 1939 and 1942 to account for federalization and housing the 10,000 troops on the growing Camp.

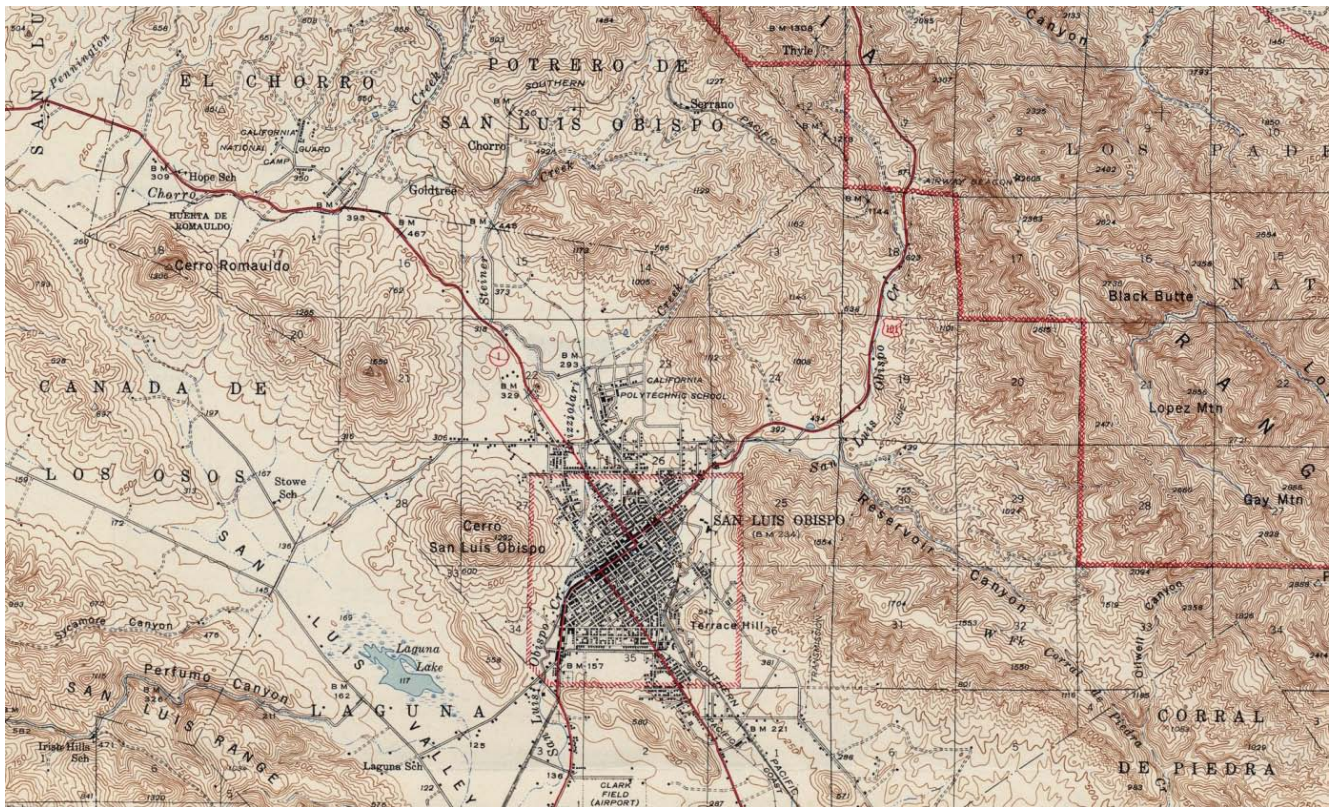


Figure 21: U.S. Department of the Interior Geologic Survey, San Luis Obispo, California, Scale: 1:62500, Edition of 1942



The town of San Luis Obispo’s population soared to supply workmen in 1940 to help construct the Camp. The need for housing was so great chicken coops and garages were converted to supply the high demand for housing needs. The area was known for its agriculture and had a thriving Japanese-American population that would find themselves interred shortly after the events of Pearl Harbor. The 35th Infantry Division would play a role in this interment effort in 1942 according to many unit historians. By January, 1943 however, the unit set about the business of combat preparations.<sup>1</sup>

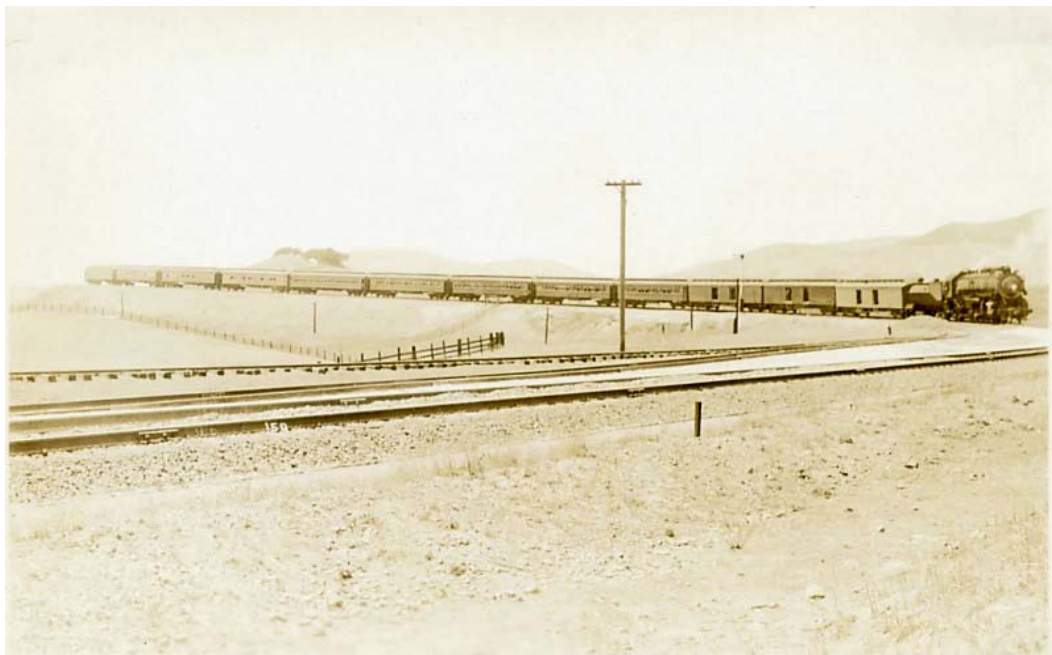


Figure 22: Troop Train Approaching Camp San Luis Obispo - Camp San Luis Obispo Museum, Image 370

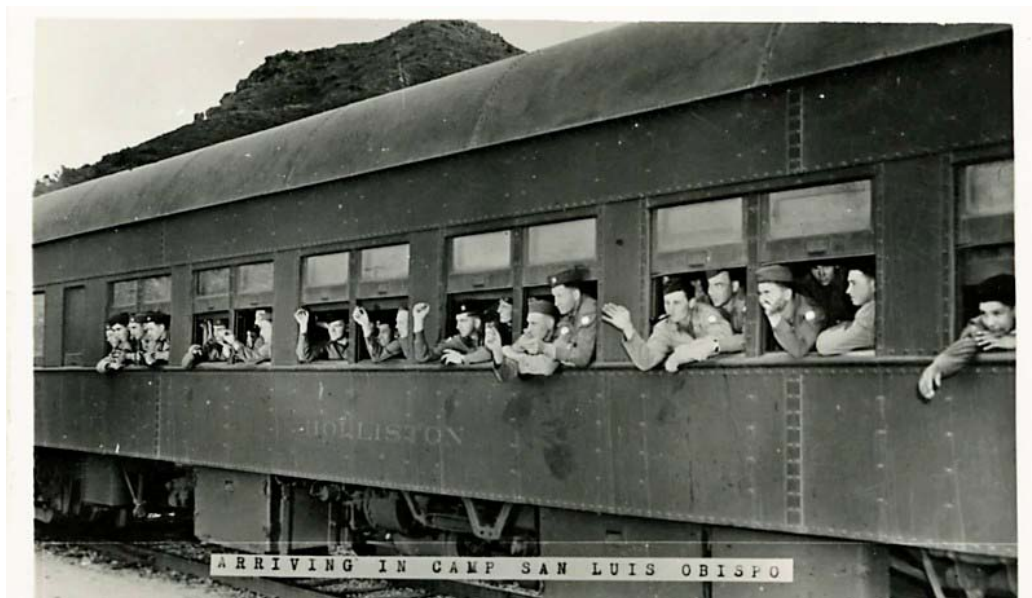


Figure 23: Troop Train arriving at Camp San Luis Obispo – Camp San Luis Obispo Museum, Image 298

Herbert Hull had in his possession two garrison covers (hats), one with the 35th Infantry Division Patch adorning as shown below with his partial serial number marked inside it, and a second hat referred to as a “cover” with markings inside including his name, and association with the 320th Infantry Regiment, 1st Battalion, Headquarters Company marked on the nametag inside the cover (Figure 24). This small bit of information scribed on the inside of his hats provided the first vital link at investigating this aspect of his service. Upon making the above linkage to the 320th Infantry Regiment and learning more about the unit, it was originally unknown what exact day PVT Hull arrived at



Figure 24: Herbert Hull's 35<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division garrison cover (author)

Camp San Luis Obispo from Fort Hayes, Ohio. A thorough in-person investigation of the records located at NARA in St. Louis revealed his unit associations within the 35th Infantry Division. Additional research through print and the internet revealed the history of the unit and provided the context for his service therein.

Camp San Luis Obispo was founded in 1928 north of the town of San Luis Obispo, in a topography of beautiful rolling hills in central California about 200 miles northwest of Los Angeles along the Pacific coast. The post was originally named Camp Merriam, until it was renamed in 1940 when the United States Army exercised its preemptive rights and leased Camp San Luis Obispo from the State of California and occupied the facility. The image in Figure 25 is a Wartime postcard of the post. These were common during the war, and many a soldier sent them home to family and friends. The U.S. Army fully commandeered the post in 1941 after America entered World War II. The federal government enlarged the post to over 10,000 acres and used it to train half a million soldiers and 42 infantry divisions. The federal government likewise built Salinas Dam 20 miles away to provide a dependable source of water for the base by 1943.



Figure 25: Camp San Luis Postcard: (public domain)



Valuable information was obtained through an article about the development of Camp San Luis Obispo by Dr. Dan Kreiger entitled *Camp's Drab Look Caught First Lady's Attention*. The article indicated that the position of Camp Merriam, later to be called Camp San Luis Obispo, was important due to its proximity to the Pacific Ocean and rail and highway connections to Los Angeles and San Francisco. The closeness of base to the agricultural heartland of California was also taken into consideration for a food source, as well as ample rugged landscape with which to train soldiers. For these reasons the Central Coast was picked by the War Department as a key military training area. Beginning in 1940, it was reported that the War Department secretly began the process of expansion by leasing nearby ranches to Camp Merriam to obtain rights on more acreage.<sup>2</sup>

They began construction immediately. This effort was hampered by 36 inches of rain in 1941. Much of the rain fell in the Chorro Valley, right where the Camp was. The area was not able to naturally drain, nor were there manmade drainages constructed to be able to deal with this amount of water. This would prove a hindrance in future years. The flooding water resulted in the loss of millions of dollars in lost equipment and materials and bloated construction costs. One account stated: "We stayed in a tent area erected for construction workers and ate in a mess hall. Once on my way to eat, I stepped out of my tent into a driving rain, missed the steps and ended up knee-deep in mud." It is also noted that ultimately, First Lady Eleanor Roosevelt became distressed at the dismal appearance of the camp and personally picked out the paint scheme for the buildings on the post, selecting cream colored exterior walls and green roofs.<sup>2</sup> The structure shown in Figure 26 is typical of the accommodations.

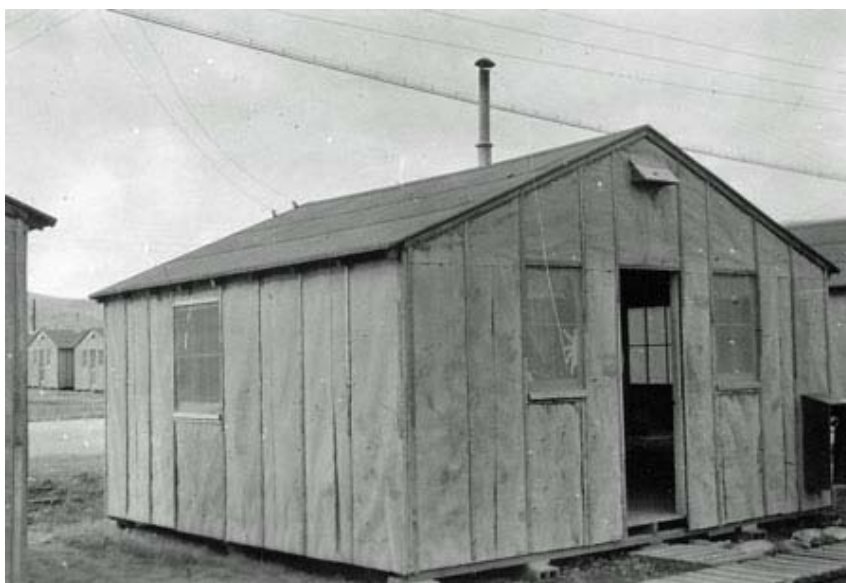


Figure 26: Typical tar-sided "tent" accommodations for soldiers – Camp San Luis Obispo Museum, Image

PVT Hull was assigned as a member of the 320th Infantry Regiment which was part of the 35th Infantry Division. The 320th Infantry Regiment was a military unit largely made up of conscripted soldiers. A point discovered much later in the research was that from January through April of 1943, the 35th Infantry Division was assigned to the Fourth Army. This explains the inclusion of the Fourth Army patch amongst his belongings. It must have been picked up or given to him as a souvenir during his time in California. Figure 27 shows the Fourth Army patch to the left, the 35th Infantry Division patch in the middle, and the unit crest of the 320th Infantry Regiment to the right.



Figure 27: Unit patch, Fourth U.S. Army (L), 35<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division (C) and 320<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment (R) Crest

The Fourth U.S. Army, known as the "A-Plus' Army", was one of four field armies created in the continental limits of the United States in 1932 with the purpose of:

1. Planning: to provide agencies to complete the development of war plans prepared by the War Department General Staff;
2. Command and staff: to form higher commands prepared to take the field and execute the plans prepared;
3. Training: to provide agencies for the conduct of command post and other suitable peacetime training exercises;
4. Mobilization: to provide an adequate force, within the minimum of time with the maximum of training, sufficient to protect any general mobilization that may be necessary;
5. Emergency defense: to provide a force sufficient to handle all emergencies short of general mobilization.

The Fourth U.S. Army was activated at Omaha, Nebraska. Its mission was to protect the Pacific Coast, and served as a training army, equipping and preparing about half the combat troops sent overseas during WWII. The Fourth U.S. Army oversaw the Seventh Corps to which the 35th Infantry Division was assigned in 1942. The Fourth U.S. Army became part of what was known as the Western Defense Command. PVT Hull would again find himself attached to the Seventh Corps in France.<sup>3,4</sup>

When France fell in the summer of 1940 to the Nazi Blitzkrieg, President Roosevelt called for the draft as previously discussed. The act of mobilization also resulted in calling up almost a million national guardsmen resulting in their federalization. By December of 1940, the Kansas National Guard was brought up. The 35th Infantry Division was ordered into Federal Service by Executive Order 8605 on December 23, 1940. The 35th Division underwent its initial shakedown phase of training beginning in January 1941. During the Division's conforming to the active army structure they went through a purge of older and disabled officers and men. The division participated in the famed Louisiana Maneuvers from August through September, 1941. The 35th Infantry Division received stocks of new equipment, including M1 Garand rifles prior to these maneuvers, which was odd for a National Guard unit at that time. During the time the unit became federalized, the division still retained the old 'square' structure of 4 regiments in two brigades that the United States Army utilized during World War I. After the 1941 training in Louisiana, the division was transferred to the Western Defense Command following the December 7, 1941 attack of Pearl Harbor. This resulted in the unit being stationed in California.

In March of 1942, the 35th Infantry Division underwent "triangularization" losing two of its regiments and both brigade headquarters in order to fit the new United States Army mold of an effective combat infantry division.<sup>5</sup> This reorganization from four to three regiments per division resulted in a reduction of soldiers from 22,000 to about 15,000 men. The thought behind the new structure was to have two of the regiments in combat at a time, while the third regiment stood in reserve to the front line forces. There were a total of sixty-six infantry divisions in World War II. In late 1942 the Division was spread along the long California coast as part of the Southern California Sector of the Western Defense Command.

By January, 1943, the division moved north for further training at Camp San Luis Obispo, California. The division then finalized its wartime regimental organizational structure which included the 137th Infantry Regiment (Kansas National Guard), the 134th Infantry Regiment (Nebraska National Guard), and the 320th Infantry Regiment (newly formed by draftees). In general, Army Divisions were formally activated, which is to say, be put into existence, followed by a period of filling out. The 320th Infantry Regiment went through this cycle in January 1943. During the expansion phase which came next, enlistees and draftees were brought into a unit to bring it to their full authorized strength. The unit then typically underwent a one year training cycle consisting of 17 weeks of basic and advanced training, thirteen weeks of unit training, 14 weeks of combined arms training in conjunction with large-scale exercises and 8 weeks of final training before preparing to move overseas. As part of the reorganization of the Division, and the organization of the 320th Infantry Regiment, the conscripted soldiers arriving in California in January 1943 had to undergo basic training and become a solid part of the 35th Infantry Division.<sup>6,7,8</sup> PVT Hull found himself amongst these men.

The entire division moved to Camp Rucker, Alabama and participated in the April 1943, U.S. Army, Tennessee Maneuvers, Advanced Divisional Training and Maneuvers. This Regiment had previously fought as part of the 80th Division during World War I before being disbanded in the interwar years. For the purposes of developing the 320th

Infantry Regiment, Camp San Luis Obispo became what the Army referred to as a Training Center.

“The 320th was activated at Camp San Luis Obispo, Cal., on Jan. 28, 1943. Formed from a cadre of the 131st Inf. sent from Fort Brady, Mich., and from men transferred from the 134th and 137th, the 320th became the youngest third of the triangular, streamlined the 35th Division. The outfit suffered growing pains in its training and organization, at Camp San Luis Obispo and at Camp Rucker, Ala., where it arrived April 1. In the latter Camp frequent long hikes with full packs weren’t enjoyed during the torrid Southern summers. Whenever fighting became strenuous in the European Theater of Operations (ETO), however, the boys began to put in a good word for Rucker. Still, always there would be one Joe in a breeze group to declare: “No, by Gawd! I’d sooner be here.””

*STORY OF THE 320TH INFANTRY*, Published in Hameln, Germany, on D Day plus 365, June 6, 1945. 320th Public Relations Office.<sup>9</sup>

In a document held at NARA at College Park, 320th Infantry Regiment, Headquarters, General Orders No. 3 dated February 1, 1943 named the officers for the unit with Colonel Don M. Scott, Commanding. The Executive Officer was Major William Northam. The Adjutant (S-1) was Captain John Kirchner. The Personnel Officer was Captain George Jamieson. The Plans and Training Officer was Captain McGrew Harris. The Supply Officer (S-4) was Captain George Walker, Jr.<sup>10</sup>

In a document that set up part of normal camp life for new recruits, 320th Infantry Regiment, Headquarters, General Orders No. 5, dated February 15, 1943 a guard schedule was established for Camp San Luis Obispo for the security of the post. This order established the Interior of the Guard of the Regimental for the safety and security of the Regimental Area. The Regimental Guard was set up using a fixed post system consisting of an Officer of the Day, Officer of the Guard, four non-commissioned officers, and twenty seven privates. The sentries were armed with rifles and bayonets, with eight rounds of loaded ammunition each, with instructions that no round was to be chambered while on patrol. This duty instilled discipline into the soldiers, while at the same time, provided a needed mission for the unit and post.<sup>11</sup>

The World War II-era Obstacle Course was part of the Army’s effort to physically train and prepare recruits for the rigors of combat. The Army’s physical training regimen consisted of different activities including military drill, calisthenics, marching, rifle exercises, swimming, personal contests and group athletics. The Obstacle Course was the primary method for developing recruits abilities in running, jumping and climbing. An instructor would demonstrate the correct method for overcoming one obstacle. The unit would practice the obstacle 3 or 4 times, and then run 100 yards. This process was repeated each day on a different obstacle until all the obstacles on the course were covered. Once the unit had received training on all obstacles, the Soldiers would run the full course. As they developed proficiency, the soldiers would run the course against time, and eventually carry equipment through the course including rifles and light packs.

Another aspect of the Combat Basic Training Course provided to new soldiers included physical training or conditioning known as PT. The PT requirements of soldiers in World War II included passing a physical fitness test known as the Army Ground Forces Test consisting of pull-ups, squat jumps, pushups, sit-ups, and a 300 yard run. There was a modified form of the test used if administered indoors. The World War II version of the testing focused more on the quality of the soldier in performing the tasks than that of the absolute number of repetitions performed.<sup>12</sup>

New recruits were given instruction in military courtesy and close order drill, such as is seen in Figure 33. Other training included instruction in sex hygiene, malaria control, mines, booby traps and map reading. The soldiers spent some time in bivouac putting their newly acquired military field skills into practice. Figure 28 exemplifies the field conditions of the infantry soldier as it demonstrates an inspection of a two man bivouac.



Figure 28: Example of Army Bivouac setup: - Camp San Luis Obispo Museum

A critical component of basic training was having each soldier receive his personal weapon (usually an M1 rifle). Once issued, Soldiers underwent extensive training on the care and maintenance of their weapons followed by marksmanship training. The weapons were secured in gun racks located in the barracks, this ensuring their availability when Soldiers conducted mounted drill, marksmanship training and field maneuvers and exercises. Figure 29 typifies training aids used during weapons training, while Figure 30 shows the soldiers at the range honing their craft.

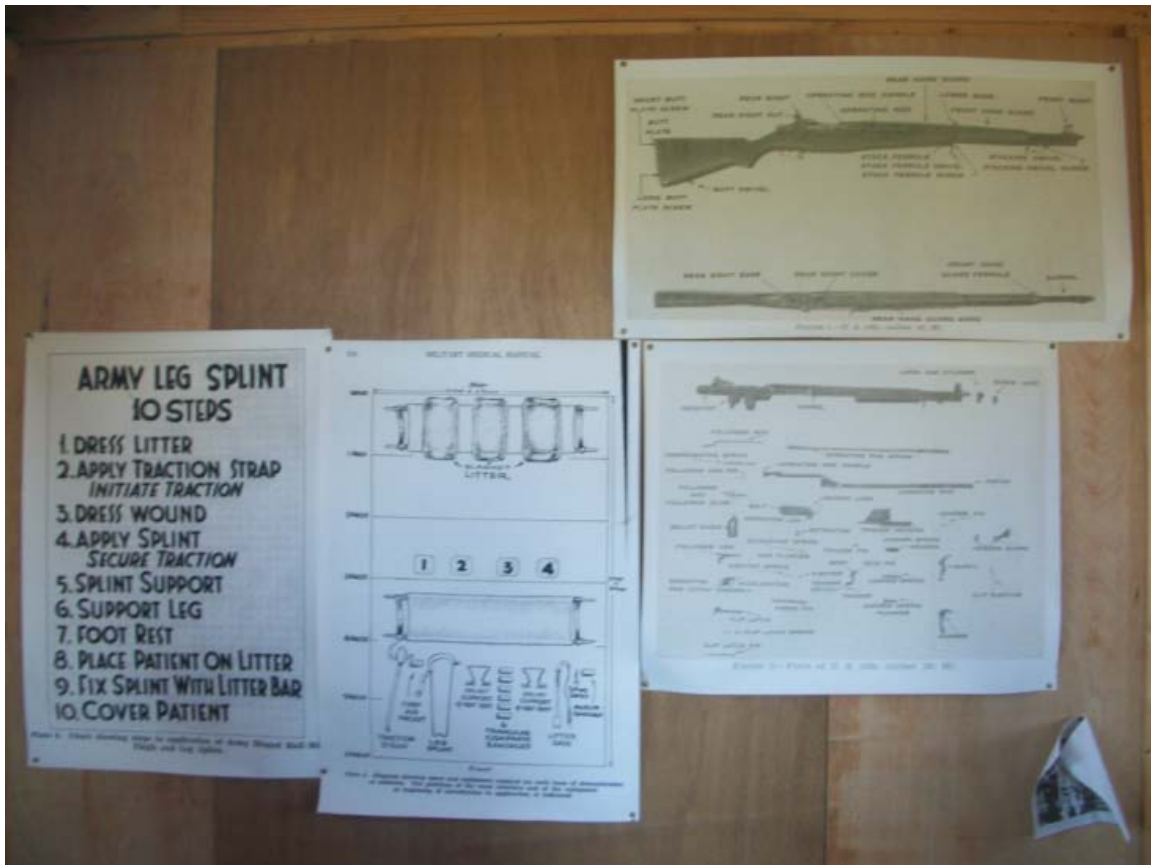


Figure 29: Taken from U.S. Army Heritage Trail, USAHEC, Carlisle, Pennsylvania



Figure 30: US Army rifle training of basic trainees: NARA Photo

Early proof of Private Hull's arrival at the camp was identified through talking with my aunt in the early spring of 2012. She revealed that she is in possession of a letter between Private Hull and his sister Doris postmarked February 4, 1943 indicating his arrival and life at Camp San Luis Obispo, and then she provided a copy of the letter. This correspondence notes that there was horrible mud everywhere at the camp, he was terribly homesick, and was concerned over the well-being of his mother.

Dear Doe [Doris],

I am sorry I didn't write soon there wasn't no use. I've wrote mom every nite but she must not be getting them. If you'll send me an address I'll write to him and I sure wish I was with him and not in this mud hole. How is little Judy now? Has she got any teeth yet or can she talk? I'd like to be home rocking her just like I used to do. Have you seen Grace any more? I sure miss her a lot. Has Tim Patton left for Columbus yet? Harmon Fersteson (sp?) isn't in my company anymore, and I'm kinda homesick for someone I know. Please write to me as often as you can and I'll try to keep writing to you. I miss you more than I can say because you and me always did get along good. Good bye for now and I'll write as soon as I can and Please tell me in your next letter if mom is worrying to much about me and you might even giver her a big kiss for me.

Love, Herb

The reference to the mud hole is accurate as the National Weather Service records for January 1943 indicate a total of 10.83 inches of rain for the month when the monthly average is just 4.95 inches.<sup>13</sup> This sort of letter between a soldier and their family is not uncommon, nor are the types of feelings conveyed, as the transition from civilian to soldier is rather drastic for a person to grow through. Figure 31 shows the camp and surroundings.



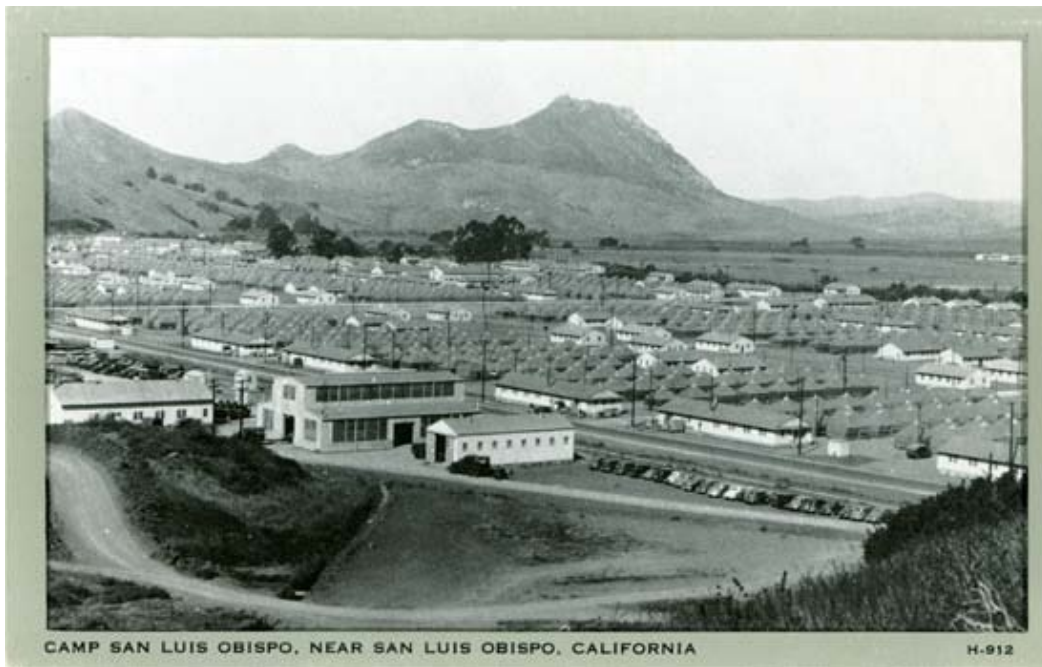


Figure 31: Postcard of Camp San Luis Obispo: - Camp San Luis Obispo Museum

While a member of the 320th Infantry Regiment, Private Hull had been designated as a Rifleman in the Infantry Branch of the Army. His association with the Infantry is noted on his uniform by the insignia below that appears on the lapel of his uniform.



Figure 32: U.S. Infantry Branch Insignia, enlisted

This position is described in Army Training Manual (TM) 12-427, Military Occupational Classification of Enlisted Personnel dated July 12, 1944. The classifications for Rifleman were unchanged in this version of the TM over its predecessor, Army Regulation (AR) 615-26, dated 15 September 1942. It is important to note here, that by the time he became a member of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, his specialty had been changed to Squad Leader, Automatic Rifleman (746). This latter specialty is what appears on his Discharge WD AGO FORM 53-55 in Block 30.

### **RIFLEMAN (745)**

Rifle Noncommissioned Officer, Security Noncommissioned Officer: Loads, aims, and fires a rifle to destroy enemy personnel and to assist in capturing and holding enemy positions. Places fire upon designated targets or distributes fire upon portions of enemy line, changing position as situation demands. Must be able to use hand weapons, including rifle, automatic rifle, rocket launcher, rifle grenade launcher, bayonet, trench knife, and hand grenades. Must be trained in taking advantage of camouflage, cover and concealment, entrenching, recognition and following of arm and hand signals, and recognition of enemy personnel, vehicles, and aircraft. Must be familiar with hand-to-hand fighting techniques. Must understand methods of defense against enemy weapons.<sup>14</sup>

It took several months of researching the 35th Infantry Division and the subordinate regiments in order for me to determine how PVT Hull was associated with the unit. Additional clues came in the form of new information provided from family members as I went on. He was found in the official records by inspecting Pay Roll Record Form 366, Headquarters Company, 1st Battalion, 320th Infantry Regiment, Camp San Luis Obispo, California for month of January 1943. This record is located at the National Archives at St. Louis, Archival Records, Auxiliary and Organizational Records, in the Archival Research Room, within the World War II Enlisted Rosters, 320th Infantry Regiment, Microfilm #15597. Page 34 of the record states:

Hull, Herbert S. 35597467, Date of Induction - January 14, 1943, Allotment: \$5.00 + \$6.30; Transferred in grade of Private from Headquarters, Reception Center, Fort Hayes, Ohio to 320th Infantry Regiment, Camp San Luis Obispo, California per paragraph 23 Special Order (SO) #15 Headquarters Reception Center, Fort Hayes, Ohio dated January 20, 1943. Assigned to Headquarters Company, 1st Battalion per SO #18, Headquarters, 320th Infantry Regiment dated February 3, 1943. Pay due from date of induction 01 N dod \$6.50 per month from January 1, 1943 for indef per authorization C1 A Pay Reevv indef per authorization Due U.S. \$.30 for GPLD.<sup>15</sup>

This record definitively places him in California on February 3, 1943 and affirms his induction at Fort Hayes, Ohio. I had to invest time in reviewing and understanding a number of Army Regulations (AR) and Training Manuals (TM) in order to decipher the various documents about him or the units he was associated with. Important to note, is that although the record is written in military shorthand, it provided where he had been, where he was going and what military order was the basis for each of the actions.

Private Hull appears in the Pay Roll Records for February and March. In the April, 1943 Pay Roll Record, reference is made to him as a loss to the 320th Infantry Regiment, and is noted as having been transferred to the 134th Infantry Regiment, M Company at Camp Rucker, Alabama. The wording provided this information: The following enlisted men (EM) transferred to 134th Infantry, Camp Rucker Alabama per SO 65, 35th Infantry Division, dated 18 Mar 43. Until this record was identified in August, 2013 in St. Louis, Missouri, our family had no knowledge of his association with the 134th Infantry Regiment. It was a real treat to be able to identify a long lost and missing piece of his service. It was from the 134th Infantry Regiment that PVT Hull would later be recruited, volunteer for, and be accepted into the Rangers. In March, PVT Hull sent a second letter home to his sister Doris. In it, he described how life in the Army seemed to be improving for him.

Dear Doe [Doris],

Just a few lines to wish you a happy trip when you go see Albert, and just imagine how he will feel when he sees you because I know how I would feel if Grace or Mom and Dad came to see me. I've wrote to everyone in the family tonight and I'm just about out of ideas but I'll try to make it as long as possible. As you know, I'm in a new Company and it looks as though I may have got a break after all because this outfit is a place where a fellow can learn something if he wants to and I think I'll go in the Intelligence. That is where all the maps and plans are made up for the big drives that the troops makes but there's one disadvantage, we'll always be out in front laying the plains and drawing maps of enemy there. Well Doris, this is all I can think of now, so I'll say so long. Take good care of that little girl til I get home.

Love, Herb

This is where I indicated that he wanted something more in the Prologue. He wrote that he was not happy to be there, and that he had a desire to get himself positioned to take some sort of intelligence training to set him apart from being a standard infantry soldier. What struck me was that he wanted something more. Sometime between March 18 and April 5, 1943, the 320th Infantry Regiment boarded a troop train and headed east to Camp Rucker, Alabama. PVT Hull was assigned to his new regiment and would join them on arrival at the new post.



Figure 33: 6<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division training on parade field, close order drill – Camp San Luis Obispo Museum, Image



## 4 THE 35TH INFANTRY DIVISION – 134TH INFANTRY REGIMENT



On August 31, 2012 I paid a visit to the NARA and NPRC in St. Louis, Missouri.<sup>1</sup> The original purpose of the trip was to investigate the microfilm records of the 320th Infantry Regiment and 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion. A review of the pay records of the Headquarters Company, 1st Battalion, 320th Infantry Regiment dated April 30, 1943 for the month of April indicated that PVT Hull was shown as a loss to the Regiment. He was listed as one of many men to be transferred to the 134th Infantry Regiment at Camp Rucker per Special Order (SO) 65, 35th Infantry Division dated March 18, 1943. This clue opened an unexpected avenue of research. Fortunately, I was in exactly the right place at the time to further investigate this lead. Upon pulling the microfilms for the 134th Infantry Regiment, it took many hours to work my way through pay records of the various companies until I was able to identify that he had been assigned to Company M. The regimental crest of the 134th Infantry Regiment is shown next to the 35th Infantry Division patch above.

This revelation was very important for many reasons. I had obtained unconfirmed leads about a connection to Camp Rucker from various items received from my aunt that arrived along with his uniform such as unsigned Camp Rucker postcards (Figure 35). I also had a photo of him that my mom had given me dated July 22, 1943 that was taken at Camp Rucker based on the inscription on the back of the photo. I knew that Camp Rucker had been a posting of his at some point. The missing pieces of this aspect of his service began to fall together, while at the same time begged that new questions be asked. The pertinent records of the 134th Infantry Regiment are at NARA St Louis, microfilm research room, Microfilm Index #13, Army World War II Enlisted Rosters, 0134 INF REGT, 15501, Pay Roll records for April 1943 for the 134th Infantry Regiment. The record placing him in the unit is as follows: Page 20, Payroll of Company M, 134th Infantry Regiment, from April 1, 1943 to April 31, 1943. Line 14 reads;

Hull, Herbert S. 35597467, Inducted - January 14, 1943. Transferred as Private from Private from 320th Infantry Regiment per paragraph 3 80-65, Headquarters, 35th Infantry Division, APO 35, Camp San Luis Obispo, California dated March 18, 1943. Assigned to this organization per paragraph 1 30-71, Headquarters, 134th Infantry Regiment, APO 35, Camp Rucker, Alabama dated April 5, 1943. Joined organization April 5, 1943.

The portion of his personnel records that would have indicated this part of his service in various units was burned in the 1973 fire at the National Personnel Records Center in Saint Louis.<sup>2</sup> A resulting loss in this fire documenting his

THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

service in the 35th ID was a form referred to as a WD AGO Form 20 – Soldier’s Qualification Card<sup>3</sup> (Figure 34). This record followed him throughout his military career as it did for all soldiers. It is possible that Herbert Hull was provided with a copy of the document upon discharge.

**SOLDIER'S QUALIFICATION CARD (Back)**

NOTE: DO NOT ATTEMPT TO FILL OUT THIS CARD WITHOUT FIRST READING INSTRUCTIONS CONTAINED IN AN 418-23 VERY CAREFULLY

(19) PREVIOUS MILITARY EXPERIENCE

ARM OR SERVICE	YEARS OF SERVICE	HIGHEST GRADE	SPECIAL TRAINING RECEIVED	DATE	ORGANIZATION AND STATION	GRADE	PRINCIPAL DUTY
3	SGT	1942	BASIC DRILL	1	1942		

(20) RECORD OF CURRENT SERVICE

DATE	ORGANIZATION AND STATION	GRADE	PRINCIPAL DUTY
26 AUG 44	SUPPLY CLERK 835 (P) (245)		

(21) ASSIGNMENT LIMITATIONS

(22) SERVICE SCHOOLS ATTENDED

(23) EDUCATION

(24) LANGUAGES

(25) TALENT FOR FURNISHING PUBLIC ENTERTAINMENT

(26) WEAPONS QUALIFICATIONS

(27) TEST RATINGS

(28) OTHER INFORMATION

(29) REMARKS

(30) INTERVIEWER AND ENLISTED MAN SIGN

(31) CLASSIFIER

(32) DATE OF INDUCTION

(33) DATE OF RECEIPT

(34) PREFERRED

(35) TRANSFER

THIS CARD MUST ACCOMPANY THE SOLDIER

STEP 2 RECEIVING COMPANY ENTERED

STEP 1 NAME AND ASN IMPRINTED

STEP 5 COMPLETED BY CLASSIFICATION INTERVIEWER

STEP 4 ITEMS 16 AND 17 ENTERED

STEP 6 INTERVIEWER AND ENLISTED MAN SIGN

STEP 7 CLASSIFIER

STEP 8 CODED BY PUNCHING

STEP 3 QUALIFICATION TEST SCORE ENTERED

NOTE: All entries on Soldier's Qualification Card, WD AGO Form 20, will be accomplished as prescribed in TM 12-425.

Figure 34: Example of WD AGO Form 20 – Soldier Qualification Card (Source TM 12-223)

If he ever had a copy of the Soldier Qualification Card in his possession, it has been lost. This document would have provided:

- Record of any service schools he had attended in block 22
- Record of current service by date, organization & station, grade and principle duty in block 29
- Individual weapons qualifications in block 31

The 134th Infantry Regiment was originally the First Nebraska Volunteer Infantry Regiment, dating back to 1854. There were Native American uprisings associated with the United States westward expansion which necessitated that the Nebraska volunteer militia be organized for protection. During the Civil War, the First Nebraska served under General Grant at Fort Donelson and Pittsburgh Landing, and then with General Fremont in Missouri. The unit served as mounted cavalry in 1863, and concluded the War in Arkansas. After the Civil War, the First Nebraska Volunteer Infantry Regiment served in the Sioux Indian War. During this period, the famous W. F. “Buffalo Bill” Cody was associated with the unit in various capacities including as a scout, with the regimental commander, or as an aide-de-camp for the Nebraska Governor. A friendship developed between the unit and the Pawnee Nation during this timeframe. The Sioux Indian War concluded with the U.S. and Pawnee forces battling the Sioux at the Battle of Wounded Knee. It is after this that the regimental motto was developed from the Pawnee – LAH WE LAH HIS, meaning “The Strong, The Brave”. This phrase was chosen in honor of the Pawnee assistance to the regiment in battle. The motto suggested valor and honor from the past, but it was a challenge for men who would serve in the regiment in the future.<sup>4</sup>



Figure 35: Camp Rucker Postcards in possession by PVT Hull (author's collection)

A close look at the regimental crest reveals a palm tree. This is in connection with the regiment's service in the Spanish-American War in the Philippines. At that point in history, the unit was known as the First Nebraska Volunteer Regiment. President William McKinley federalized the unit on April 26, 1898, and they mobilized under the command of Colonel John Stotsonberg from Lincoln, Nebraska. The Filipino combatants were fierce and dedicated. At one point during the campaign; the First Nebraska conducted a charge against enemy-held positions at Quinua. Brigadier General Irving Hale, Commander, Second Brigade, Second Division, VIII Corps, who was an eye-witness to the action, exclaimed, "There goes the First Nebraska, and all hell can't stop them!" This saying became inexorably attached to the unit. During the Spanish American War, they were combined into a brigade with the Twentieth Kansas Volunteer Infantry Regiment. The Twentieth Kansas would later become the 137th Infantry Regiment. Part of the service of the Regiment in the Philippines is depicted on the regimental crest by the Katipunan Sun in the top left of the emblem. This symbol is from a secret society of the common people of the Philippine Islands that formed in 1892 when the Filipinos were unable to secure reforms peaceably. The regiment was mustered out of Federal service on August 23, 1899, and was not called up again until April 1, 1913.

Under the palm tree on the regimental crest is a serpent coiled around the trunk denoting duty along the Mexican border in 1916-1917. They were stationed at Llano Grande, Texas until the spring of 1917. During World War I, the unit was federalized and attached to the 34th Infantry Division. This is noted on the crest by a red steer skull. The 34th Infantry Division was comprised of National Guard units from Iowa, Minnesota, North Dakota, and South Dakota. On July 15, 1917, the Regiment was mobilized at Camp Cody, New Mexico, where it was redesignated the 134th Infantry, 34th Division. Upon reaching France in September, 1917, the unit was cannibalized to supply replacements for other units already in theatre. This resulted in no combat action for the regiment at large, although the men of the regiment saw action in the units to which they were sent.

The unit was redesignated the 134th Infantry, 69th Brigade, 35th Division, on June 22, 1921.<sup>5</sup> They served as Nebraska National Guard troops until December 23, 1940, when the Regiment was called into the Army of the United States as a part of the 35th Infantry Division. The 35th Infantry Division was comprised of National Guard units from Nebraska, Kansas, and Missouri at Fort Riley, Kansas in 1937. The 134th and 137th Infantry Regiments would later form the nucleus of the 35th Infantry Division that would begin and end World War II together. They participated in Fourth Army Maneuvers in 1940. The 35th Infantry Division was under the command of Major General Ralph E. Truman organized at the time as a "square" division. The Santa Fe Division consisted of National Guardsmen of Kansas, Nebraska, and Missouri, and included four infantry regiments, the 134th, 137th, 138th and 140th. The divisional patch was the blue and white Santa Fe insignia. The division insignia represented a white Santa Fe cross upon a wagon wheel with four quadrant projections on a blue field. The Santa Fe Trail was one of the main routes across the west from Independence, Missouri through Kansas, and into Oklahoma, Colorado and ending at Santa Fe, New Mexico during the westward expansion. When the trail became obscured due to the winds blowing across the dusty plains, the pioneers eventually marked the trail with crosses to guide the travelers, and it is these crosses that the patch symbolizes.<sup>6</sup>

The following years would see additional training and duty until the onset of World War II. The regiment assembled at Camp Joseph T. Robinson, Arkansas in early January 1941, for training. On June 2, 1941, elements of the 35th Division were assigned to support the Tennessee Maneuvers "war games". The Tennessee Maneuvers were the first of the maneuvers, beginning in fall of 1941 which were designed to prepare the troops for the rigors they would experience on the battlefield with over 4,500 Divisional troops involved. In August, 1941 the Regiment conducted advance work as a unit as it participated in the largest scale maneuvers ever held in the United States, in mock fighting across southern Arkansas and northern Louisiana at the Louisiana Maneuver Area. While many National Guard units across the country had become complacent and relatively disorganized in the interwar years, the 134th Infantry Regiment had been able to remain at its authorized strength and effectiveness. The unit had high morale and interest, and even had a waiting list of applicants. Many of the outstanding enlisted men who had previously served now held commissions as officers in the unit. Due to the readiness of the unit the 134th had been issued the M1 Garand Rifle where most other National Guard Units at the time used older World War I era weapons. Through this time, the unit had been assigned to the Second Army. By World War II, National Guard troops were generally looked upon more favorably in certain military circles than their conscripted counterparts, as they were all volunteers and had some military experience. Company M, the Third Battalion's machine gun company was from Seward, Nebraska.

One week after the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor, the regimental headquarters issued the movement order, HQ 134th Infantry Regiment, Field Order No. 1, on December 14, 1941. An excerpt of this order reads:

HEADQUARTERS 134TH INFANTRY REGIMENT

Camp Joseph T. Robinson  
Little Rock, Arkansas

14 December, 1941

Field Order

No. 1

Maps: None available

1. a. War has been declared on this country by the AXIS POWERS.
- b. The 35th Infantry Division stationed at Camp Joseph T. Arkansas, will move by rail, destination unknown.
2. This regimental combat team will move at once by rail with all personnel, equipment, and transportation, except as indicated below, destination unknown, and duration of movement unknown...
  - j. ...Ammunition: The ammunition officer will immediately draw one day's mobilization supply of ammunition and same will be issued as follows: 10 rds. to each rifleman, and one clip of .45 Am. for each pistolman. Balance to be equally distributed within the Regiment according to the firepower of the weapons.
3. a. All leaves, furloughs, and passes are canceled and officers and men are directed to report to their units...

On December 14, after the attack on Pearl Harbor, orders were received moving the Regiment assigned to the 35th Division, to the west coast as part of the Southern California Sector as part of the Western Defense Command. The Division moved on a high priority by rail over several routes. The unit was consolidated at Fort Ord, California. Subsequently, the 134th Infantry Regiment spent a year in 1942 on coastal defense duty along a 185 mile stretch of coastline. The Regiment spent a short stay at Camp San Luis Obispo in January, San Francisco as a part of the Internal Security Command in March, and Los Angeles in April, finally settling in Ojai near Ventura. The Army's fast-changing new methods of waging all-out global war were introduced quickly to the Infantry Divisions in March 1942. Amid all of this action and duty on 1 March 1942, came reorganization as the U.S. Army issued orders of triangularization of infantry divisions across the entire Army.

The Californian's came to respect the Regiment and came to call it their "adopted Army." In August, 1942, the Second Battalion was selected to form the basis of a Task Force sent to Adak Island in the Aleutian Islands in Alaska on a secret mission to secure Adak and construct an airfield. The Second Battalion was permanently transferred to the 197th Infantry Regiment. For its performance in the Aleutians, the battalion received a commendation from the War Department. The rest of the Regiment remained on the west coast and received 900 men and 40 officers to replace the Second Battalion on Christmas Day. This required the Regimental leadership to make adjustments in personnel from the remaining two old battalions in order to balance out experience within the unit.

In January, 1943, the 35th Division reverted to the direct control of the Army Ground Forces and left the Southern California Sector to re-concentrate at Camp San Luis Obispo. Major General Eugene Murray remained in control of the Southern California Sector, and Brigadier General Paul Baade, Assistant Division Commander, succeeded him to the command of the Division. The 35th Infantry Division had retained its fourth regiment, the 140th Infantry Regiment, until moving to Camp San Luis Obispo in January, 1943. The 138th Infantry Regiment also left the Division. The primary mission of the unit became training again rather than security, with emphasis on discipline with a training focus marches and range-firing of all weapons and field exercises for squads and platoons even amidst the heavy rains.

In order to equalize the state of training of the three regiments of the Division, Major General Paul Baade, now the Commanding General, ordered a sweeping exchange of personnel between the old regiments and the newly-activated 320th Infantry Regiment. The 137th Infantry Regiment was moved to Camp San Luis Obispo. As a result of this latest reorganization, one third of the men in the 134th Infantry Regiment and one third of the men in the

137th Infantry Regiment were sent to be a part of the new 320th Infantry Regiment that had been filled from newly arrived conscripted soldiers from Fort Dix, New Jersey, Georgia and other locales to a lesser extent. In return one third of the new recruits from the 320th Infantry Regiment became part of the 134th Infantry Regiment and one-third went to the 137th Infantry Regiment. PVT Hull was one of the soldiers from the 320th Infantry Regiment to be integrated into the 134th Infantry Regiment. This move gave each regiment one-third of the new recruits and two thirds of trained men and national guardsmen to ensure combat effectiveness throughout the Division.

All of this reorganization was necessary to make the Division a well-balanced fighting unit. It hit the 134th Infantry Regiment especially hard due to the loss of its Second Battalion to Alaska not a half a year before. Several accounts of members of the 134th Infantry Regiment offer resentment of the newly absorbed troops from the 320th, but this doesn't seem to have affected the unit in the long term. The Regimental Commander took action to save the original Nebraskan National Guard members who had been with the 134th when it was called into Federal Service.<sup>7</sup> Those original 2072 men were the men who had volunteered for this Regiment, and were the needed core with which to build an esprit de corps for the Regiment. This would prove critical in the months and years to come.

A result of this meant that the three infantry regiments all had to redo what seemed like basic training to familiarize themselves with each other. This included close order drill, map reading, trips to the rifle range, and everything else involved in basic training. The infantry companies would take long hikes into the rugged terrain to places such as Morro Bay.<sup>4</sup> In a wartime memoir, Mr. Ferry Schoonover of the 137th Infantry Regiment recounted;

“Three things that I remember most about the training at Camp San Luis Obispo: 1) Practicing guard mount in the sticky, gummy, soil in the rain, and how hard it was to march with that goo on our feet!! 2) Going out in the surrounding hills on compass problems and trying to find our way in those dark eerie-rainy nights!! 3) Getting poison oak all over my body and going to the medics and getting calamine lotion to put on the rash.”

(Ferry G. Schoonover<sup>8</sup>)

The current Camp San Luis Obispo Museum Curator commented that the “goo” is the clay that the Spanish had built all of the local missions from. The clay still takes on the messy consistency during wet periods. Poison oak is still very prevalent in the region.

The entire Division moved to Camp Rucker, Alabama, on 1 April 1943 for advanced divisional training. The 35th Infantry Division now firmly consisted of the 134th Infantry Regiment, the 137th Infantry Regiment and the 320th Infantry Regiment. This divisional training is important later because the fact that Hull participated in this training in the summer of 1943 helped to make him eligible for the Rangers. One of the requirements for the Rangers was that soldiers had participated in a divisional training exercise. By spring 1943, the components of the Division were substantially established and would remain the same later as the unit proceeded into combat with one final shakeup of personnel occurring at the time of the transcontinental movement of the Division in the spring of 1943. This reorganization within the 35th Infantry Division was likely a large part of the reason for his assignment to the Regiment.

The importance of all of this unit history is that it helps to define the heart of a unit. The heart of a unit is comprised in part by the heritage of it. The idea of living up to heroic or honorable deeds of those men who have served before is something that gets inside a motivated soldier in a good unit. A unit like the 134th Infantry Regiment had this at its heart. It had seen and felt the touch of history. This unit was ideal to forge the beginnings of many future United States Army Rangers. A thorough review of records from multiple sources indicates Herbert Hull entrained on March 22, 1943 and traveled with the 320th Infantry Regiment to Camp Rucker Alabama and joined his new unit on April 5, 1943.

Troop trains were first used by the American military in the Mexican War in 1846 to move troops across the continent to engage in battle. The Civil War saw large scale movements of entire armies to the various engagements that most Americans are familiar with. World War I resulted in extensive use of the rail system to move men and equipment. The use of the word referring to troop trains as “mains” evolved as jargon by railroad personnel as a result of the two World Wars.<sup>9</sup> Troop movements were always classified, identified only by a Military Authorization Identification Number, or (MAIN), for secrecy. A military troop train could be made up entirely of troop cars, or it might be mixed with civilian passenger cars, or with military or civilian freight cars. That secrecy extended to the train



crew as well, who were told only their segment of the soldier's final destination.<sup>10</sup> To move a World War II triangularized division of around 14,000 men and their equipment required the use of as many as 21 trains with over 200 coaches, 40 baggage cars, 30 kitchen cars, and as many flat and box cars as were necessary to move vehicles and other equipment. It is possible that for security and timing, all the trains moving a division-sized unit might not all take the same route on the network. An interesting note is that almost all U.S. servicemen rode a troop train at some point while Stateside between 1941 and 1945, which equates to over 40 million military personnel. Much of the troop train traffic rode on what were normally the freight only lines of the major rail companies. In 1943, the U.S. Office of War Information produced a film called *Troop Train* to educate servicemen and women. Several screenshots from this film are in Figure 36.

If troop movements were scheduled to last over 12 hours in length, Pullman coach space was assigned to the train if available. A Pullman could sleep around 30 personnel at a time. The Pullman Company went into the war with a surplus of some 2,000 cars and was thus well equipped to handle their requested mission. For the movement, two men were assigned to both the lower and the upper berths to sleep. The space was converted into seating for four men during the day. The troop trains of the 35th Infantry Division travelled on the Southern Pacific rail line on the east-west traffic artery from California through southern Arizona including Tucson, through El Paso, Texas, on to San Antonio, past Camp Wolters, Texas, Houston and into New Orleans as part of this movement. The trains then continued along the gulf coast through Mississippi, near an Army Air Corps base near Biloxi, and on to Camp Rucker. There might have been slight deviations in route per train, with the Southern Pacific east-west traffic artery being the common denominator.<sup>9</sup>



Figure 36: Troop Train (1943) Images U.S. Office of War Information

Camp Rucker, now known as Fort Rucker, Alabama is located in the extreme southeast corner of Alabama mostly in Dale County. Portions of the base also lie in Coffee, Geneva and Houston counties. It lies approximately 75 miles southeast of Montgomery, Alabama. Its geographic location is at 31°20'37" North, 85°42'29" West (31.343654, -85.707995). It is located on the Ozark, Alabama USGS map quadrangle shown below as Figure 37. Modern Fort Rucker serves as the home of Army Aviation. The region is a physiographical part of what is known as the East Gulf Coastal Plain, which implies that the region is relatively flat with rounded and eroded hills, cuestas and flatwoods. As a subpart to the above classification, the region is dominated by what is referred to as the Southern Red Hills which are formed on sand, limestone marls, clay and silt with elevations in the hills reaching more from 200 feet to 400 feet above mean sea level. The area is typically considered forested with Loblolly shortleaf pine.<sup>11</sup> This information is important as to the selection of the place as an Army training camp, as well as to the training conducted.

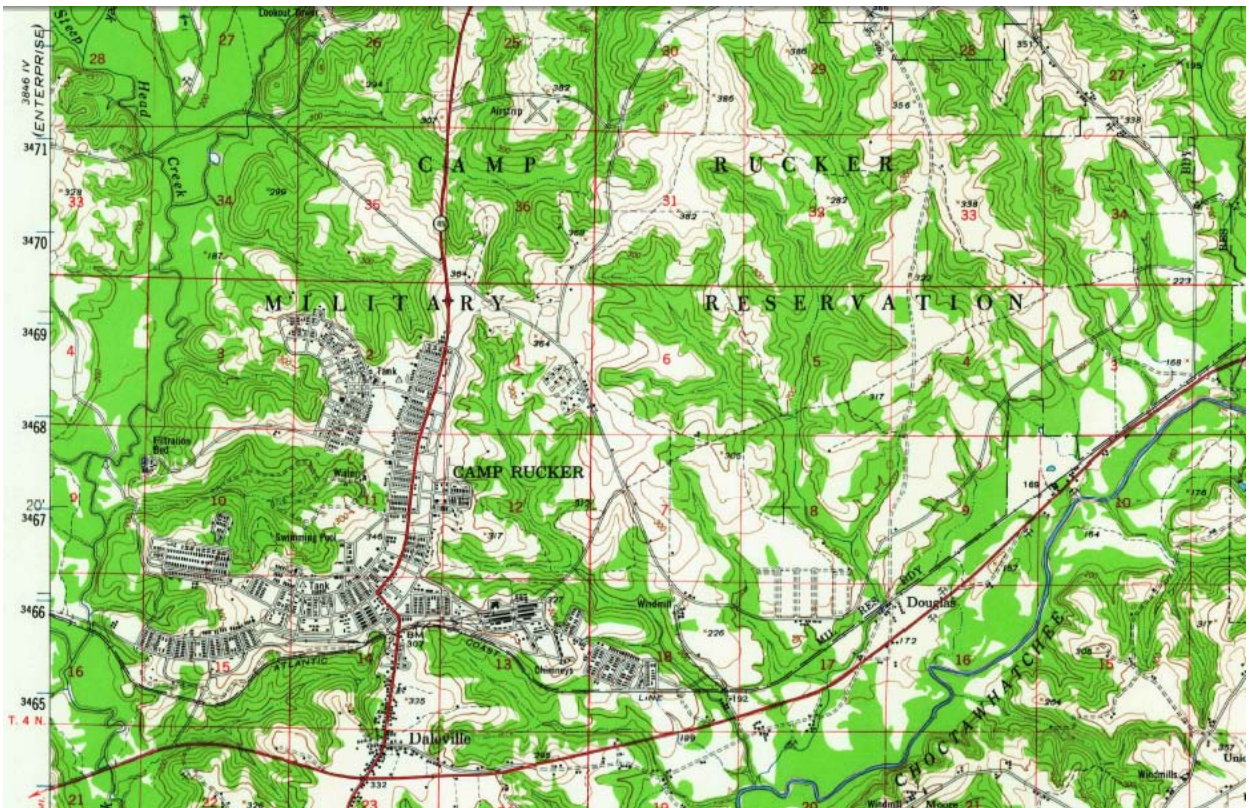


Figure 37: U.S. Department of the Interior Geologic Survey, Ozark, Alabama, Scale: 1:62500, Edition of 1948

To gain a better understanding of the importance of Camp Rucker to the Army and the training of military personnel, something of its history must be understood. From what is known from the time of European settlement, southeastern Alabama was controlled by the Muskoegans which is synonymous with the Creek Nation. These Native Americans were formed by a loose confederacy of about 17 tribes. This culture is classified as Late Mississippian. The archaeological and historic record indicates that permanent settlement in the immediate area around Camp Rucker was unlikely, and Indian trails have not been detected in the area. Indian wars waged around the area of Fort Rucker into the 1830s.

Areas surrounding southeastern Alabama did attract early European settlers as early as the sixteenth century when the Spanish attempted to settle what are now Mobile and later the development of the French Fort at Biloxi in 1699. The French maintained control over the Gulf Coast until ceding it east of the Mississippi River in defeat to the British at the Treaty of Paris in 1763, upon conclusion of the French and Indian (Seven Years) War. The British colony of Georgia containing the acquired territory of what would later become Alabama began to prosper under British rule and the population grew with improvements in agriculture.

Development continued under British, Spanish and American control through the end of the 1700s. The Louisiana Purchase of 1803 from France by the United States doubled the geographic size of the new nation. This led to a steady stream of settlement into the Mississippi River Valley and eventually what would become Alabama. The conclusion of the Creek War of 1813-1814 further resulted in European settlement of what became the territory of Alabama as the result of the forced cession of 9,321,000 ha (23,000,000 acres) of Creek lands. The Alabama territory boomed, and by 1830, it had 309,527 residents. The area around Camp Rucker had its first public land transaction in January 1824. The Federal Government continued to sell off tracts of land in the region into the early 1900s.

Unlike the southeast Alabama of today transected by all means of transportation, the region in the first half of the 1800s had very poor transportation routes. Rivers such as the Pea River provided some of the first access to settlers. Other reasons for poor growth of the region included poor soil conditions and a lingering Native American presence. Into the Civil War, much of the settlement in the area of Camp Rucker consisted largely of small farmers. The eastern portions of Alabama contain large areas covered in "wiregrass" and "piney woods" and were not known for fertile

agricultural soils. Cotton became an important crop in the region and livestock became somewhat important. The Camp Rucker area did not see direct Civil War fighting, although many men fought for the Confederacy from the region. After the Civil War, the region focused on cotton through the end of the early 1900s. By 1917, planters rapidly changed to peanut, corn and potatoes after a devastating boll weevil invasion.

Not until well after the Civil War did the first railroad arrive in the area. The Central Railroad reached the town of Ozark in late September 1888. Future rail linkages included the Alabama Midland Railroad from Troy to Ozark, and Dothan, and ultimately through Georgia to the Atlantic Coast, and lastly the Atlantic Coast Railroad. During the late 19th Century, the timber industry, driven by large stands of pine trees resulted in several offshoot industries such as lumber and turpentine production.

Alabama and more specifically, southeastern Alabama suffered greatly through the depression. Dale County's two banks failed in 1929 and the Federal Land Bank began to foreclose on area farms. The New Deal intended to make substantial investment into revitalization of agriculture. Prior farming practices had taken the poor soil conditions of the region and reeked havoc on the landscape through poor conservation. Practices that are taken for granted today such as crop rotation were non-existent in the previous hundred years and resulted in extreme soil depletion. In 1934, the U.S. Department of Agriculture purchased tracts of sub-marginal land and converted them to natural and wildlife refuges. A good portion of this land would later become Camp Rucker and at the time would be known as the Pea River Land Use Project. The federal government constructed Lake Tholocco by damming Claybank Creek. In 1940, the federal government turned the entire land holding over to the State of Alabama for a recreation facility.

After the hostilities erupted in Europe, the locals petitioned to return the land to the War Department with the purpose of creating a military base. The Army announced plans to establish a training facility at the site. The Camp was originally named the Ozark Triangular Division Camp in 1941. The War Department decided to rename it Camp Rucker in January 1942. Camp Rucker was named in honor of Confederate Colonel Edmund Winchester Rucker, who was later given the honorary title of General as he had become an industrial leader in Birmingham after the war.<sup>12</sup>

The J.A. Jones Construction Company was awarded contract of the project for the construction of 1,500 buildings in 106 days. The grounds, encompassing 58,000 acres (235 km<sup>2</sup>), were to include 11 churches, 15 post exchanges, five theatres, and a hospital. Camp Rucker was designed as an infantry training base. Like many other military facilities in the interior, it also served as a prisoner of war (POW) camp for 1,718 prisoners. This practice began in 1942 and continued through the end of the war and slightly beyond. The POW laborers constructed an altar and fittings in the Headquarters Place Chapel.<sup>13</sup> Camp Rucker would provide quarters for 3,280 Officers and 39,461 Enlisted Personnel. Considering the conservation movement begun in the early 1900s, it is interesting in today's thinking that the government converted a wildlife refuge to a military base. In September, 1942, the Army purchased acreage that would become Ozark Army Airfield, and later be named Cairns Army Airfield. Camp Rucker would later be designated as Fort Rucker in 1955.<sup>11</sup>

The first infantry division to train at Camp Rucker was the 81st Infantry Division known as the "Wildcats" in 1942. Three other infantry divisions would train at the Camp including the 66<sup>th</sup>, 98<sup>th</sup> and 35<sup>th</sup> Infantry Divisions in 1943. The regiment is the traditional Army unit that most history and heritage follows. An infantry regiment had a headquarters company and consisted of three rifle battalions, the 1st, 2d and 3d. Each rifle battalion consisted of four companies. The first three companies were rifle companies. The fourth company in each battalion consisted of a heavy weapons company. Companies A, B & C were the rifle companies in the 1st Battalion, while company D was the weapons company. Companies E, F & G were the rifle companies in the 2d Battalion, while company H was its Weapons Company. Likewise in the 3rd Battalion, companies I, K & L were the rifle companies, with company M being the weapons company. The letter J was purposefully unused due to the potential for mistakes in communications between the use of it and the letter I. Embedded in each regimental headquarters unit were attached a service company, cannon company, anti-tank company and a medical company that included chaplains. An Army photo of Camp Rucker is shown in Figure 38.





Figure 38: Camp Rucker in 1942.

Between 1943 and 1945, a U.S. Army infantry battalion was allocated 871 men. Each company had 187 men.<sup>14</sup> The company served as the basic standard administrative unit in the Army. Most companies were commanded by a Captain (O3). Each rifle company had a headquarters company, three rifle platoons and a weapons platoon. The rifle platoon consisted of a platoon headquarters element, and three rifle squads, consisting of 12 men each. The weapons platoon consisted of a headquarters element, a machine gun section and a mortar section.

The infantry heavy weapons company was different than a rifle company. They included six 81 mm mortars, seven bazookas, and eight heavy machine guns to offer greater firepower as needed to the unit at large. They consisted of a company headquarters, two machine gun platoons, and a mortar platoon. Each machine gun platoon consisted of a headquarters element, and two machine gun sections of 15 men. The mortar platoon consisted of a headquarters element and three mortar sections.<sup>15</sup> Each of the Machine Gun Platoons was assigned four .30 cal Browning M1917 heavy machine guns. Each of the four squads had a  $\frac{3}{4}$ -ton truck for weapons transport. The second and fourth Squads were armed with Browning Automatic Rifles (BAR)s, although more would typically be procured during combat.

Heavy Weapons Company (5 Officers, 178 men), comprised of:

- Company HQ (2 Officers, 29 men)
- Two Machine Gun Platoons, each (1 Officer, 44 men)
- Mortar Platoon (1 Officer, 61 men)<sup>16</sup>

To understand the importance of a heavy weapons company, the Army Field Manual (FM) 7-15, Infantry Field Manual, Heavy Weapons Company, Rifle Regiment, dated May 19, 1942 is the single best source of information.<sup>17</sup> Per the Army, the heavy weapons company consisted of a company headquarters, two .30 caliber machine-gun platoons and one 81 mm mortar platoon. The Army provided details of organization in a separate document called Table of Organization and Equipment (T/O & E 7-18). A copy of this is in Appendix B. The organizational structure of a Heavy Weapons Company is shown in Figure 39.

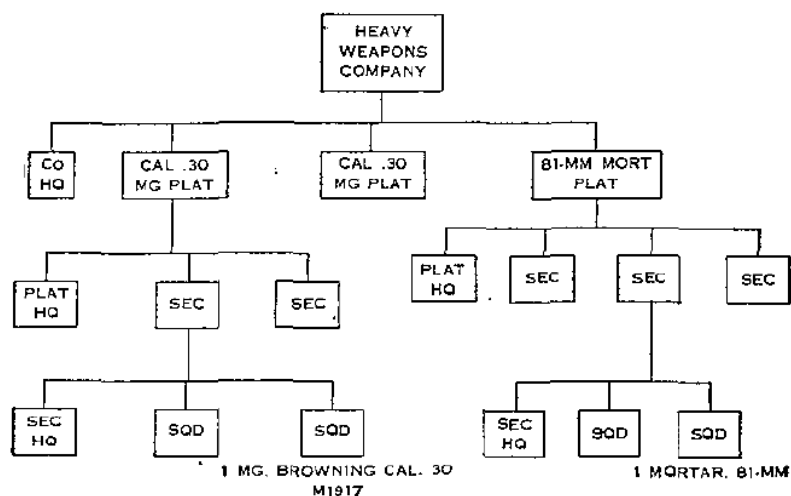


FIGURE 1.—Composition of heavy weapons company. (See T/O 7-18.)

Figure 39: Heavy Weapons Company organization FM 7-15

The .30 caliber heavy machine gun is a crew-served weapon that can deliver a large volume of continuous fire, and if fired at a medium rate of fire (125 rounds per minute), could be kept up indefinitely. If the weapon is employed in rapid fire (250 rounds per minute), it can be fired for several minutes at a time between breaks. It is a fixed mount weapon that has the capability of firing overhead fire, or firing at night at predetermined ranges. The weapon is not as mobile as an infantry rifle, due to size and weight, but makes up for it in firepower, as it has an effective range of up to 2000 yards. The Army employed multiple versions of this weapon including in most basic terms the water-cooled version as a heavy machine gun and a lighter air-cooled version. It was limited mainly by observation when used for direct fire and both by maximum effective range and the availability of accurate fire information when used for indirect fire. A well placed machine gun could halt an advance while in defense, or provide overwhelming fire support to attackers. The two variants of the machine gun are shown in Figure 40.



Figure 40: M1917 Water-cooled heavy machine gun (left) and M1919A Air cooled light machine gun (right) – Public Domain

Individual soldiers in the weapons company would also carry pistols, carbines, rifles and hand grenades dependant on their mission and their particular job duties in the unit for protection in close quarters. The weapons companies also employed a number of Browning Automatic Rifles (BAR)s. The early primary tactical use of the BAR was for antiaircraft defense or as local protection of the company transport against ground attack. Later on in the war the antiaircraft role was replaced with the M2 .50 caliber air cooled heavy machine gun known as “Ma Deuce”, but the BAR was still an integral weapon to the unit. Also employed by the units was the M9 antitank rifle grenade.

The Browning Automatic Rifle (BAR) was an automatic rifle used as a light machine gun by the United States from 1917 until the Vietnam War era. It was designed to provide U.S. forces with a standard automatic rifle during WW I. Its military nomenclature during WW II was the M1918A2. Both the weapon and ammunition were designed by famed gun maker John Browning and used .30-06 caliber Springfield rifle cartridges. It used the same ammunition



as the .30 caliber machine gun. The M1918A2 had a rate of fire of 300-450 or 500-650 rounds per minute with a muzzle velocity of 2,822 feet per second. It had an effective firing range of 100–1,500 yards with sight adjustments, and a maximum effective firing range of 4,500-5,000 yards. The weapon came standard with a twenty round magazine clip. The design allowed advancing infantrymen to fire from the shoulder, the hip or use a bipod mount. Soldiers could advance with the weapon while firing, and formed the basis for a tactic called “walking fire” or “marching fire.” The weapon was issued at the squad-level as a light machine gun for supporting or cover fire.<sup>18</sup> The weapons of a Heavy Weapons Company included the weapons seen in Figure 41 beyond the basic infantry rifle and heavy machine gun.



Figure 41: Browning Automatic Rifle - BAR (left) M1 Carbine (middle) and M1911 .45 caliber pistol (right) – Public Domain

From a tactical perspective, the heavy weapons company was not capable of independent action. They could not take, or hold ground indefinitely without the rifle units. They were capable of strong fire concentrations at critical points. The mission of the heavy weapons company was to give continuous close support and protection to the rifle companies. The protection they offered included protection against air attack, protection of the flanks, protection of reorganizations and consolidations, and protection of assembly areas and bivouacs.

Regarding the tactical employment of heavy weapons company FM 7-15 revealed every aspect of how this type of company was to be employed in the structure of an infantry regiment. The company would make reconnaissance at the direction of the battalion commander. With the proper intelligence and information, these companies would move to appropriate initial firing positions in order to provide adequate firepower as the mission dictated. They would anticipate the fire support needs of the rifle units. They would protect the flanks of the regiment. When they assessed the enemy, they realized that the enemy is the least certain factor to be concerned about. This was due to a lack of knowing the strength and exact dispositions of the forces. The terrain as it exists in the particular zone of action or defense area was to be evaluated in order to determine their best use of it for both attack and defense. At the same time they had to analyze how the enemy would use it to their advantage. The terrain was deemed critical as it afforded observation, concealment, and fields of fire to the enemy for use in firing against, or launching surprise attacks on, our attacking, or defending, troops. Likewise it afforded favorable approaches (wooded draws, ditches, cultivated fields, and so on) for the advance of friendly troops in the attack or for the movement of hostile troops in the defense. The Army taught that considering the above items together, the unit leader must arrive at an answer to the following questions:

- What is the situation, friendly and hostile, as it exists on the ground and in the air?
- What can the enemy do on the ground?
- What must I do, on this ground, to use my weapons and men to best advantage in accomplishing my assigned mission?

The answers to these questions served as the basis for action in any situation.

The heavy weapons companies focused on the concept of fire control which includes all operations connected with the preparation and actual application of fire to a target. Any lack of proper fire control results in loss of surprise effect, premature disclosure of position, misapplication of fire on unimportant targets, and wastage of ammunition. Discipline and correct technical training are fundamental in assuring fire control. Per the Table of Organization and Equipment for a Heavy Weapons Company, as with any military unit, each soldier had a specified job or duty:

“Basic privates are trained as replacements and as messengers. Until actually assigned as replacements, they are employed as messengers or ammunition bearers... All messengers are also trained as observers and may be used to man observation posts... Leaders who have become casualties are replaced; ammunition bearers or basic privates replace other casualties. Adjustments are made by reassignment of key men. Ammunition

supply is replenished. By utilizing its individual as well as crew-served weapons, each platoon provides its own local protection while the reorganization is in progress."<sup>17</sup>

The caliber .30 machine-gun section consisted of a section leader and two squads. Each squad was comprised of a corporal (squad leader), a gunner, an assistant gunner, ammunition bearers, and a chauffeur. The squad leader leads the squad to its designated location. He was charged with the selection of the exact firing position, and its preparation and occupation: entrenchment; camouflage; observation and adjustment of fire; fire discipline, and the employment of his ammunition bearers to replenish the ammunition supply of his squad. As to how the squads operated or conducted their fire, the section was considered the basic fire unit. Both machine guns would engage the enemy target in order to provide greater density and effect of the fire. This provided better odds at effectively overcoming an enemy force.

The weapons company had specific duties to perform in the event of any enemy attack from hostile air forces, mechanized or infantry forces. They had the basic weapons with which to meet any challenge. They trained in providing a flank guard to the remainder of the regiment while on the move as seen in Figure 42 below:

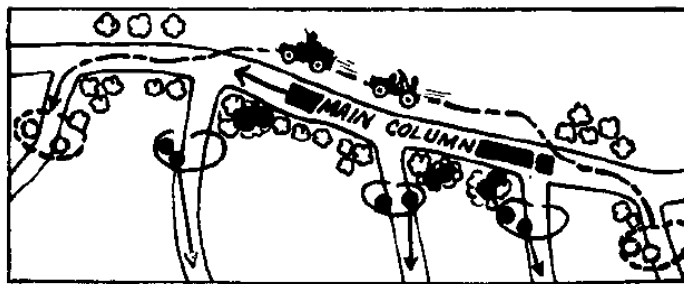


FIGURE 4.

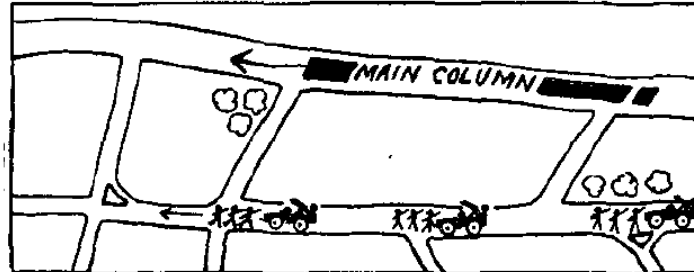


FIGURE 5.

Figure 42: Flank Guard, Heavy Weapons Company, Rifle Regiment FM 7-15

During offensive combat on attack missions, the heavy weapons company had several general missions. These were to:

1. To give close support to leading rifle companies- This was accomplished by using heavy machine guns and mortars to engage by fire hostile elements.
2. To protect flanks of battalion.
3. To protect battalion against hostile low-flying airplanes.
4. To support attacks made in conjunction with tanks
5. Cooperation and coordination with field artillery and cannon company

The heavy weapons companies were also responsible for supporting night attacks, attacks in wooded areas, conducting of raids, and support of the attack of towns and villages and attacks along or across rivers. The companies were also responsible for creating dummy works which served to mislead the enemy and disperse his fire on Allied

forces. The heavy machine guns were employed in order to establish what is referred to as an effective field of fire as noted in the following figures.

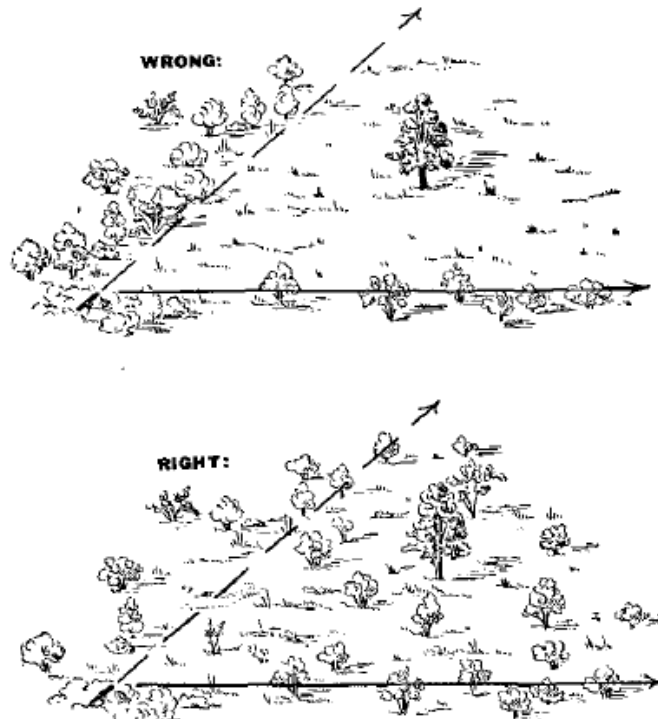


FIGURE 20.—Wrong and right methods of clearing field of fire.

Figure 43: Machine Gun Field of Fire, *Heavy Weapons Company, Rifle Regiment FM 7-15*

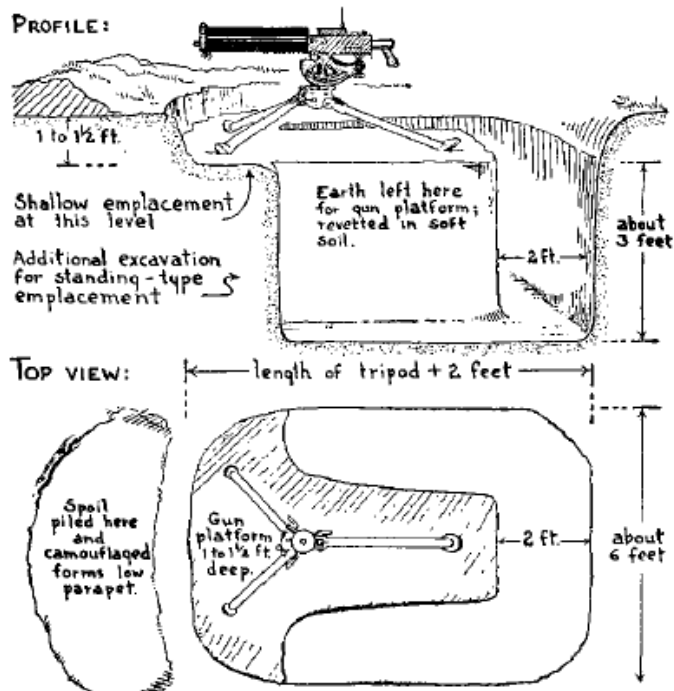


FIGURE 33.—Dimensions of shallow and standing type heavy machine-gun emplacements.

Figure 44: Machine Gun Emplacement, *Heavy Weapons Company, Rifle Regiment FM 7-15*

The .30 caliber machine gun had three soldiers assigned to it, a gunner, assistant gunner and ammunition bearer. It was largely inconsequential whether a particular soldier trained on a water-cooled or air-cooled variant. The internal mechanism was largely the same for both weapons, and the only real difference was that the lighter air-cooled models were often closer to the front line. (Ed Gooding, Soldier, Texas Ranger)<sup>19</sup>

Based on the surviving records of PVT Hull, it is known that he was a Rifleman while with the 320th Infantry Regiment. It is likely that as a PVT while in the 134th Infantry Regiment, Company M, he would have served in the capacity as described in the pages above based on Army procedures. As a result of the loss of his Soldier Qualification Card, WD AGO Form 20, detailed official knowledge of his service in this regiment is limited beyond what the Army procedures were. Based on Army procedure, he likely had qualified on some or all of the weapons previously discussed. By the time of his service with the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, he had become a Squad Leader and Automatic Rifleman. According to the requirements of becoming a Ranger which will be discussed later, he would have had to have been qualified as an Expert Marksman in at least one of the weapons.

One historian wrote “the men who trained with the Santa Fe at Camp Rucker will long remember those days.”<sup>20</sup> The combat ranges and battle courses gave the men rigorous and thorough advanced training putting not just the regiment but the entire division in shape as a top-notch fighting team. The camp provided varied terrain that included tactical maneuvering ground for infantry units, and a lake to practice amphibious landings. There were large ranges for artillery training, smaller ranges for small arms and automatic weapons practice. The sweltering heat of summer was noteworthy to many soldiers.<sup>21, 13</sup> The 134th Infantry Regiment participated in intensive training under excessive heat in what was referred to as the “the hot Alabama sun” in preparation for the upcoming Second Army Maneuvers in Tennessee from November 1943 to January 1944.

The weather records for Ozark, Alabama indicated that although not a record-breaking year, 1943 was a hot year with temperatures exceeding the monthly averages between April and August. The daily high temperatures began to climb into the 90’s in late April and stayed there for the most part through the end of the five-month period. It appeared as if brief sporadic respites from the temperature arrived due to cold fronts every three to four weeks. For the months of June, July and August, the camp area had 27, 22 and 25 days over 90 degrees Fahrenheit respectively, with a monthly average of 11 days over 95 degrees Fahrenheit. After spending months in the cold wetness of California, the heat and humidity the men in full uniform experienced would have been a physical shock.

Due to the massive reorganization efforts undertaken in both the Division and Regiment, at first the training seemed like basic training all over again at Camp Rucker in order to familiarize the newly forged men as an effective unit. Training of the 134th Infantry Regiment included:

- Scouting and patrolling
- First aid
- Military courtesy and discipline, including Saturday morning inspections
- Reviews of weapons training
- Realistic combat training
- Long marches over dusty roads
- Obstacle courses
- Platoon proficiency tests
- Battalion proficiency tests
- Regimental combat problems
- The Camp Rucker infiltration course and combat reaction course
- Attack of a mock Nazi village and fortified position
- A week long exacting regimental combat team exercise in the Conecuh National Forest, south of Andalusia, on the Alabama-Florida state line
- A severe test where the regiment was required to march 25 miles in eight hours with full field equipment
  - Some of the Regiment made this march at night in order to avoid the heat

THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

During a meeting in attendance by the entire Regiment, it was suggested that the famous remarks of General Hale would serve as a battle cry for the unit. Within one month's time, the words "All Hell Can't Stop Us" appeared on doors and other places throughout the regimental area.<sup>5, 6, 7</sup>

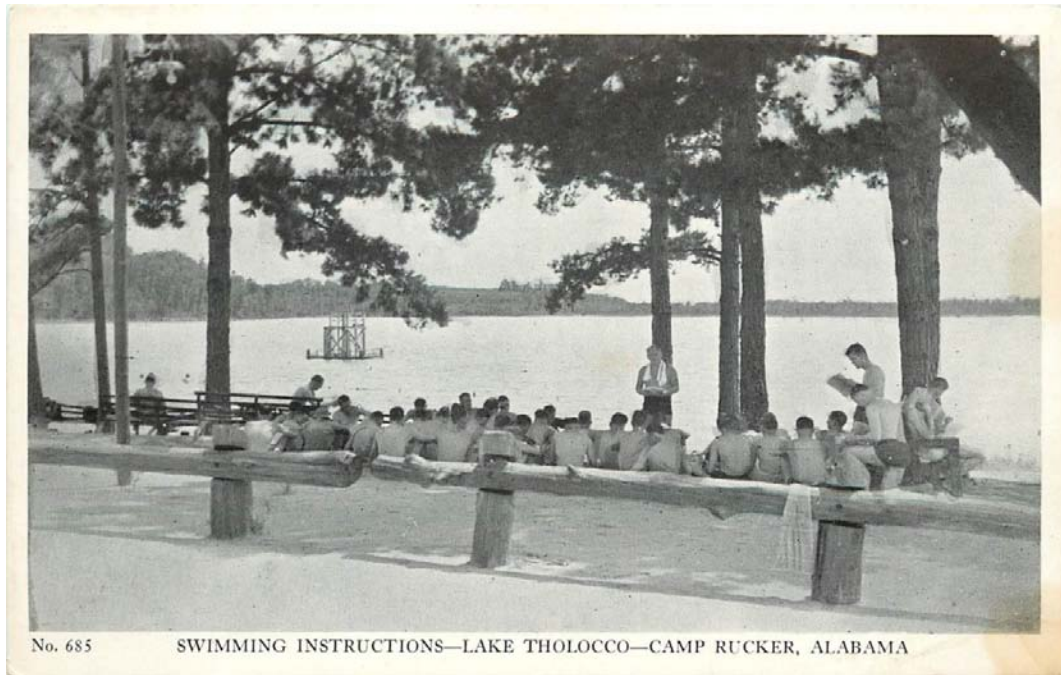


Figure 45: Alabama Department of Archives and History



Figure 46: Alabama Department of Archives and History<sup>22</sup>

The training in Figures 45 and 46 are typical of infantry training during World War II. They exemplify the type of activities undertaken by the men as they prepared for battle. The photo below is of the 134th Infantry Regiment, Company M. The source for the photo indicated that they were taken in 1943. It is unknown if PVT Hull is in of the photo. If nothing else, it provides some sense of the unit.



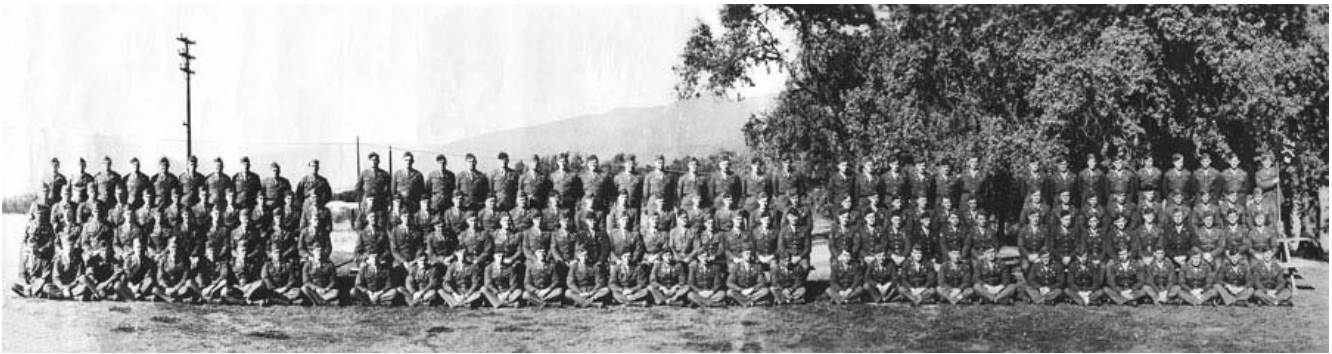


Figure 47: 134<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment, Company M, 1943 (Roberta Russo)

A picture of PVT Herbert Stanton Hull taken at Camp Rucker, dated July 22, 1943 is Figure 48 below:



Figure 48: PVT Herbert Stanton Hull, July 22, 1943, Camp Rucker, Author's collection

## THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

To answer the question of what happened next, the story appears to be the same for many of the men who were approached, then selected to join the newly forming 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion. Herbert Hull was ultimately recruited for the newly formed 5th Ranger Battalion from the ranks of the 35th Infantry Division while stationed at Camp Rucker Alabama in the late summer of 1943. I have found a few accounts very similar to this one during my research, but this one says it well. The recruiting scouts for the unit would travel to various posts near the Rangers' new home in Tennessee and would do the sort of thing described below.

"All you men interested in being Rangers, report to the Orderly Room for your papers for your interview" said our 1st Sgt. at reveille one morning in September of 1943. I had no idea what he was speaking of, but several obviously did for they went. At noon when they returned, they related how a Ranger Battalion was being formed. It would have a few weeks training and then would go overseas. It would be in on 'The Big One'. That sounded good, and my buddy Harry Vogler and I looked at each other. 'Let's go, V.J.' and I said: "All right, Harry J. Let's go!" We went that afternoon for the interview and, perhaps surprisingly, were chosen. Within days we were on a truck heading for the railway station and Tullahoma, Tennessee. We volunteered for various reasons... Harry and I simply didn't like the idea of training another group of trainees and not getting into fighting for many more months. That may sound silly today; but if I was going to be in the war, I wanted to be in the most exciting part of it!"

Victor J. "Baseplate" Miller, Sgt., Co. E, 5th Ranger Battalion, U.S.A.<sup>23</sup>

Among the requirements for joining the new Ranger unit were:

- Ability to meet the physical requirements of a parachutist.
- Qualify in all arms the battalion possessed
- To have been part of a unit which had experienced a division-size maneuver.

(Taken from *Rangers in World War II – Black*)<sup>24</sup>

Private Hull found himself transferred as noted in the September 1943 payroll records of the 134<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment.

Hull, Herbert S., 35597467, Jan 14/43, Transferred as Private from Private to 5th Ranger Battalion, Camp Forrest, Tennessee, per par 2, 30-197, Hq 35th Infantry Division, Dated 1 October 1943.

## 5 BECOMING AN ARMY RANGER IN THE 5TH RANGER INFANTRY BATTALION – CAMP FORREST



I have a definite perspective as to what a Ranger is. For those brave men who have earned the right to wear the mark of the United States Army Ranger, the Ranger Tab or previous Ranger insignia; it means much more than I am sure that I can do justice. The tradition and term “Ranger” first appeared in United States history dating back to around 1675. During this era, there were many small wars between the colonists and the Native Americans or by proxy with British and French interests behind the conflicts. The first Rangers were professional soldiers who would “range” between the frontier forts in order to provide early warning and reconnaissance against hostile raids. When on the offense, these men would locate targets such as villages acting as scouts and guides. The militia or other colonial troops would then be brought to bear against the opponent if the enemy force was more than the Rangers could take on their own. These first Rangers were used during the French and Indian War, and many American school kids have learned about a famous group of those men, Rogers’ Rangers at some point. Major Rogers served in the Colonial Army, where he honed his war craft while engaging the French and their Native American allies. He spent a great deal of time studying the strategy of his opponents, and then used their own tactics on them, beating them at their own game. He would go on the offense against his enemies by leading raids with his scouts into enemy territories.

Major Robert Rogers drafted a code of rules known as Roger’s “Standing Orders” that are still included in the modern Ranger Training Manual. These Orders still hold true for a modern warfighter. The orders are:

### STANDING ORDERS, ROGERS' RANGERS

1. Don't forget nothing.
2. Have your musket clean as a whistle, hatchet scoured, sixty rounds powder and ball, and be ready to march at a minute's warning.
3. When you're on the march, act the way you would if you was sneaking up on a deer. See the enemy first.

4. Tell the truth about what you see and what you do. There is an army depending on us for correct information. You can lie all you please when you tell other folks about the Rangers, but don't never lie to a Ranger or officer.
5. Don't never take a chance you don't have to.
6. When we're on the march we march single file, far enough apart so one shot can't go through two men.
7. If we strike swamps, or soft ground, we spread out abreast, so it's hard to track us.
8. When we march, we keep moving till dark, so as to give the enemy the least possible chance at us.
9. When we camp, half the party stays awake while the other half sleeps.
10. If we take prisoners, we keep' em separate till we have had time to examine them, so they can't cook up a story between' em.
11. Don't ever march home the same way. Take a different route so you won't be ambushed.
12. No matter whether we travel in big parties or little ones, each party has to keep a scout 20 yards ahead, 20 yards on each flank, and 20 yards in the rear so the main body can't be surprised and wiped out.
13. Every night you'll be told where to meet if surrounded by a superior force.
14. Don't sit down to eat without posting sentries.
15. Don't sleep beyond dawn. Dawn's when the French and Indians attack.
16. Don't cross a river by a regular ford.
17. If somebody's trailing you, make a circle, come back onto your own tracks, and ambush the folks that aim to ambush you.
18. Don't stand up when the enemy's coming against you. Kneel down, lie down, hide behind a tree.
19. Let the enemy come till he's almost close enough to touch, then let him have it and jump out and finish him up with your hatchet.

--MAJOR ROBERT ROGERS, 1759

During the Revolutionary war, the use of Rangers became less “officially” important to the United States Army due to the type of combat engaged in. However State militias did employ the ranger methods locally and on the frontier.<sup>1, 2</sup> During the fight for independence, Colonel Daniel Morgan led a group of motivated soldiers known as “Morgan’s Riflemen”. Francis Marion, known as the “Swamp Fox”, organized a band of frontiersmen and other unconventional militiamen who served as enough of a thorn in the side of Lord Charles Cornwallis to keep him engaged with his army in the southern states instead of marching north to route General Washington’s forces there. By 1813, the U.S. military accepted the term and practices of the “Ranger”, and twelve Ranger companies were inclusive to the Army. Some 20 years later, 600 mounted Rangers served as Ranger Cavalry in the Black Hawk War. The legendary Texas Rangers were birthed from this and survive today as the highly acclaimed Texas law enforcement agency. The Texas Rangers repulsed attacks on their border from Mexican and Native American forces. During the Civil War, the Union Army did not use “Ranger” units; however, they utilized special type units for the war. The Confederacy did form Rangers based on a Confederate law known as the Partisan Ranger Act. The most famous of these was Confederate General John Hunt Morgan.<sup>3</sup> He would lead raids into Ohio from Sparta, Tennessee, not too distant from Tullahoma. General Morgan’s Rangers were defeated by Union forces on July 26, 1863 in one of the northernmost incursions of Confederate forces into Union territory. The engagement is known as the Battle of Salineville, Ohio which is approximately 30 miles from Herbert Hull’s boyhood home. General Morgan was captured near the town of West Point, Columbiana County, Ohio. The term “Ranger” fell by the wayside until World War II, although scouting, raiding and other special warfare tactics have routinely been used by the United States military throughout our history.

I have learned much about the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion as a result of this research. First and foremost is that in a generation of heroes, these guys were something special. They were an all volunteer outfit. They had amongst the first formal special warfare training developed by the U.S. Military. They and their fellow Ranger Battalions were often called upon to perform against impossible odds and seemingly impenetrable targets from North Africa, to Sicily, Italy, France, Germany and the Philippines. It is not my intent to recreate the story previously told by men who were much more qualified than I to tell it, such as Glassman, Black or Raaen. My intent is to build upon their work and fill in missing gaps in data and story.

Between 1940 and 1942, the British heavily employed the use of their elite commandos to protect their threatened interests and to take the fight to the Germans in a very surgical way. They had developed a commando school and had their training methods down to an art. Once America was attacked on December 7, 1941, it began to gear up for a global war on multiple fronts. As part of this wartime focus, attention turned to the British commando system for possible applicability to the American military. In April 1942, Colonel Lucian King Truscott reported to General George Marshall, Army Chief of Staff in Washington D.C. for the assignment of looking hard at the British commandos. This would be the beginning of a four month process of crafting the organizational structure for what would become the 1st Ranger Infantry Battalion.

The British had organized their commandos to fit the limitations and characteristics of British landing craft and naval organization. The commando platoon size was based upon the number of men who could fit aboard a Landing Craft Assault (LCA). The commando troop could fit aboard two LCAs; and a battalion-size unit called a commando could be carried by a flotilla. Colonel Truscott determined the new American forces should be organized like British commando units for the purpose of combined operations.<sup>4</sup>

After finishing the work of evaluating the commandos, Truscott drafted a letter to Major General Russell P. Hartle, Commanding General of United States Army Northern Ireland Forces (USANIF) and V Army Corps (Reinforced), with the purpose of organization of the unit. This letter led to another letter titled "Commando Organization" written by Major General James E. Chaney, Commanding General of United States Army Forces British Isles (USAFBI), on June 1, 1942. The men joining the unit would be trained by the British and take part in combat operations under British control. When the men received training and exposure to combat, the men would be returned to their original organizations, and the cycle would repeat.

The guidelines established by this letter were clear on what measures to follow in selecting personnel. All officers and NCOs were to be of superior leadership quality. They were to have initiative, sound judgment and common sense. The unit was only to accept fully trained soldiers of the best type. It was imperative that all men have good stamina, natural athletic ability, without physical defects, and be capable of the maximum exertion and endurance expected from a man of that age. The guidance did not establish an age limit was established. The new unit was to seek certain military and civilian skills; such as self-defense, marksmanship, scouting, mountaineering, seamanship, small boat handling, and demolition. This included seeking men who were familiar with things like railway engines, power plants, and radio stations. The reason for this was to provide the unit with organizational knowledge of how to destroy things in the most effective manner on raids.<sup>4</sup>

It is said that General Dwight Eisenhower made a comment that the American unit should not be named commandos as that term is distinctly British. This is kind of funny, since the original Rogers Rangers were themselves British subjects. The modern United States Army Ranger was thus born anew from history's long memory. Providing for Ranger training of soldiers was seen by some in the Army brass to be disruptive to Divisional training schedules. The organization of Ranger units was resisted by the commanders of many units because it was thought that such elite units would take away their best fighters who would be the natural leaders and role models in combat. General Ben Lear, Second Army Commander, secured permission for and authorized the formation of additional Ranger Battalions amidst this controversy. It was officially the position of the Army that these men would be rotated back into their regular units at some future date to act as combat specialists.<sup>5</sup>

The first Ranger units developed and deployed were the 1st Ranger Infantry Battalion which formed June 19, 1942 under the command of Lieutenant Colonel William O. Darby. The 3rd and 4th Ranger Infantry Battalions formed on May 21, 1943 from cadre moved over from the 1st Ranger Infantry Battalion. They were considered Provisional Battalions until sufficiently trained on July 21, 1943 when the Provisional status was dropped. The 29th Ranger Infantry Battalion formed in December 1942. These men participated in three raids of German positions on the Norwegian coast and in Brittany along with the British No. 4 Commando. The Army decided to disband that unit by November 1943 as the 2nd and 5th Ranger Infantry Battalions were set to depart for England in short order. The Ranger-trained men from the 29th Ranger Infantry Battalion unit were reabsorbed by the 29th Infantry Division and their training proved important to the D-Day invasion on Omaha Beach. There were also some other highly specialized outfits created that saw action across the world that were not designated as Rangers that were every bit special warfare soldiers, sailors and Marines. The 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion activated on April 1, 1943 followed



shortly thereafter by the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion which activated on September 1, 1943. Lastly, the 6th Ranger Infantry Battalion activated in the Pacific theater on September 25, 1944 and went on to fame as the liberators of the Japanese Cabanatuan Prisoner of War Camp.<sup>6</sup>

When PVT Hull wrote home in the February 1943 about his desire to be able to do more in the Army, little could he know that decisions regarding the necessary invasion of France were being made at the highest levels of the Army that placed him on a collision course to become a member of the then non-existent 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion. His dedication and growing skill as a soldier and those larger decisions made by others would change his life forever.

Tullahoma, Tennessee was founded in 1850 from an agreement of five men who owned the land. It was named based on Native American words “Tulla” and “Homa” which together mean “land of yellow flowers”. It then served as a railhead and shipping point for the region of Tennessee between Nashville and Chattanooga. The railroad was completed through the town in 1855. From 1850 to 1940 the main source of income for the town was the presence of the railroad, which was the main line from Nashville to Chattanooga and points in all directions. For most of its existence, it was just a quiet, sleepy little southern town. The Confederate Army used it as a supply base for their army under General Braxton Bragg during the latter part of the Civil War. The Union Army eventually outflanked the Confederate forces there and moved on to Chattanooga about 50 miles to the southeast, which in the grand scheme of the Civil War eclipsed Tullahoma’s role in that war. The town’s 1000 foot above sea level elevation results in a natural lack of malaria bearing mosquitoes and it also has excellent drinking water resources resulting in a lack of typhoid.

The area did well by the tobacco industry in the early part of the twentieth century. There was extensive logging to support that industry around 1900 that left Tullahoma stripped of timber. By the time of World War II, second-growth scrub oak timber remained in the area that was to encompass the area around Camp Forrest. This second-growth forest was often burned yearly in the winter in order to reduce the underbrush. This reduced the commercial value of these lands. The earlier deforestation of the region resulted in the desirability of these lands however as a surrogate for European terrain that was affordable to the government. Tullahoma had some small industry including metal product fabrication, some furniture building, baseball production (including the largest baseball manufacturing plant in the U.S.), clothing and lumber, all-in-all supporting about 1,100 industrial jobs in the area. The downtown is shown in Figure 49.



Figure 49: Tullahoma, Tennessee, 1940's era postcard: public domain

The Nashville, Chattanooga, and St. Louis Railway (NC & St L) gave the State of Tennessee approximately 1,040 acres of land on the outskirts of Tullahoma for the establishment of the National Guard summer camp that would

become Camp Peay in 1926 encompassing 1,040 acres. The establishment of this base brought in around 1,500 troops per year for their two week training cycle. For annual maneuvers the camp could accommodate 2,500 men. There was a 75,000 gallon water tower and tank with a complete water, sewerage and fire protection network. There were adequate streets and lighting. The post had one administration building, 20 kitchens and mess halls, six bath houses, one large warehouse, one garage and 20 trucks of five ton capacity.<sup>7</sup> The 85,000 acre Camp Forrest would eventually grow from Camp Peay. By 1940 Tullahoma saw what seemed like endless trains at all hours.



Figure 50: Tullahoma Railroad Station - 1940's era postcard public domain

Tullahoma had about 4,500 residents according to the 1940 United States census. By the end of the war, the population would rise to 75,000, and during the periods of the Tennessee Maneuvers, the population would swell to 145,000. Many soldiers returned to the region after the war that had passed through Camp Forrest to settle down. This doubled the population of Tullahoma even after the demolition of Camp Forrest. U.S. Highway 41 which connected Tullahoma and Manchester was paved from Nashville to Chattanooga, but Coffee County only had a total of about 75 miles of paved roads in 1940. Many of the other routes in the county were dirt and in the process of being graveled. The city of Tullahoma had mostly reliable electricity, but the rural areas did not. The railroad enabled newspapers from larger cities to arrive on the day of publication. There were many churches in Tullahoma in 1940; however, they were all from the mainline Protestant denominations. As was the case in the southern United States, segregation was the norm and enacted in law. The local train station is shown in Figure 50.

Several public officials were integral to the site selection and development of Camp Forrest in 1940. These men included United States Senators Tom Stewart and Kenneth McKellar of Tennessee. Senator McKellar was a powerful member of the Senate Appropriations Committee, and advocated strongly for part of the military build-up in Tennessee. He used his influence to convince the Army that Tullahoma would be an ideal location for an army base. State Treasurer John Harton, Sr., Governor Prentice Cooper, and Senator Stewart would later be credited with the realization of Camp Forrest by Tullahoma's mayor. By enacting the draft the President set the tone for the build-up of the military. The Tennessee Senators had convinced General George C. Marshall that Tullahoma was ideal because land could be acquired cheaply there. Other attributes included good transportation, cheap housing areas, and appropriate terrain for maneuvers. It also had a ready civilian workforce that was just emerging from the Great Depression that was ready to be put to work. To make Tullahoma viable as a military center, the road and rail systems would have to be improved, as would the electrical and communications and other infrastructure. After selection as a military base, Camp Forrest was born that resulted in a robust period of construction culminating in the construction of some 1,300 buildings.<sup>8</sup> This included development of an air training base called William Northern Field located four miles north of Tullahoma. This airfield became the third largest airfield in Tennessee.



Figure 51: World War II Camp Forrest Postcard: Public Domain

Camp Forrest owed its name to Confederate General Nathan Bedford Forrest from the Civil War. The base was located on what is now known as the United States Air Force Arnold Engineering Development Center (AEDC). The War Department issued a directive in January 1941 changing the name from Camp Peay to Camp Forrest. It was located in the Cumberland Mountains of Tennessee two miles east of Tullahoma. The first troops to move to the new camp were the 181st Field Artillery Regiment from the federalized Tennessee National Guard. It was a training area for infantry, artillery, engineer and signal units, as well as serving as a hospital and other functions. Camp Forrest had infrastructure similar to many military bases around the nation. There was a main post office located at the intersection of Forrest Boulevard and Main Road. There were 38 post exchanges (PX)s located throughout the base. Camp Forrest had two segregated Service Clubs. The “whites” Service Club was located on Forrest Boulevard, and the “colored” Service Club was on Post Road. The post library was located next to the Service Club on Forrest Boulevard, with a Guest House located on the other side of the Service Club. Camp Forrest had an athletic office, available golf, a sports arena, tennis courts, six bowling alleys, archery range, nearby swimming and boating, volleyball, boxing and wrestling facilities. The camp had four movie theaters that ran two shows nightly. To help soldiers connect with loved-ones, a 24-hour Public Telephone Center, was provided on 8th Street, between Forrest Boulevard and Avenue F. The entrance to the camp is shown in Figure 51.

The 3,500 capacity Station Hospital was located on Main Road about one and a half miles from the Camp Headquarters. The Main Station Hospital served the units participating in the Tennessee Maneuvers. There were Dispensaries located in the various unit areas for "sick call". A dental clinic was located on Forrest Boulevard. A permanent Hospital Train was stationed out of Camp Forrest to serve the hospital. The adequate and dependable water supply was pumped to the camp from the Elk River about 5 miles away to the south. The electrical power for the base was provided by the Tennessee Valley Authority (TVA). The main 250 unit Showerhead facility was located at the east end of the camp near the intersection of Avenue L and Cavalry Road. The camp had occasional issues with bedbugs, cockroaches, rats, and there were bouts of diarrhea, enteritis, influenza, and venereal disease to combat. There were four chaplains permanently stationed at Camp Forrest. The various assigned units also had chaplains attached, usually at the Divisional level. The post had 12 chapels located throughout the camp. The main chapel was located on Block 6, F Street. Figure 52 shows one of the firing ranges.

There were drill fields available in each unit area, as well as a large review field in the center of the base. There were suitable tank and artillery ranges, and water features to provide engineers training in the use of floating bridges and other river crossing techniques. All small arms ranges as well as bayonet and grenade training areas, gas chambers and obstacle courses were within thirty minutes marching time from the cantonment and housing areas.





Figure 52: Camp Forrest, Tennessee Rifle Range: NARA

All Camp Forrest barracks were constructed as two story structures with a two barrack unit housing one company known as a Type 700 barracks. The interior of the main bay were constructed with lines of cots with the heads to the exterior walls. At the foot of each cot sat the famous footlockers and an open wardrobe stood between each bed to hang up one's uniforms and other clothing. The second floor bunk area was reached via a staircase and there was an outside fire escape ladder. The first floor included a "day-room" at one end. This area could be used by the soldiers for reading and writing letters, reading magazines, playing cards or include other basic recreational equipment. Each barracks had a small, private room for the platoon sergeants and training cadre. Each barrack had sinks for shaving and hand washing. The latrines were located outside, but nearby, and showers were centrally located to the unit area. Each barrack building was heated by hot water radiators with a boiler house containing coal fired boilers located between each two barracks, which also served to provide hot water. A photo of this barracks type is in Figure 53.

Camp Forrest became perhaps the second largest base for training in the United States during World War Two, reportedly behind Fort Bragg, North Carolina in terms of acreage. It is estimated that of the total eight million Americans who saw service during the war, 250,000 of them passed through or were associated with Camp Forrest in some fashion. The Army used Camp Forrest to train eleven infantry divisions and two battalions of Rangers, amongst other units. It was also used to train units that had short-term training cycles at the base. The facility included the base contingent, medical and supply units, inductees, and those attending special schools, the Airmen at William Northern Field, civilian employees, and prisoners of war. The airfield was used to train B-24 heavy bombers of the Army Air Corps. This is pretty amazing considering the short duration of the camp's existence from 1940 until 1946.<sup>5</sup>



Figure 53: Camp Forrest Type 700 Barracks. NARA

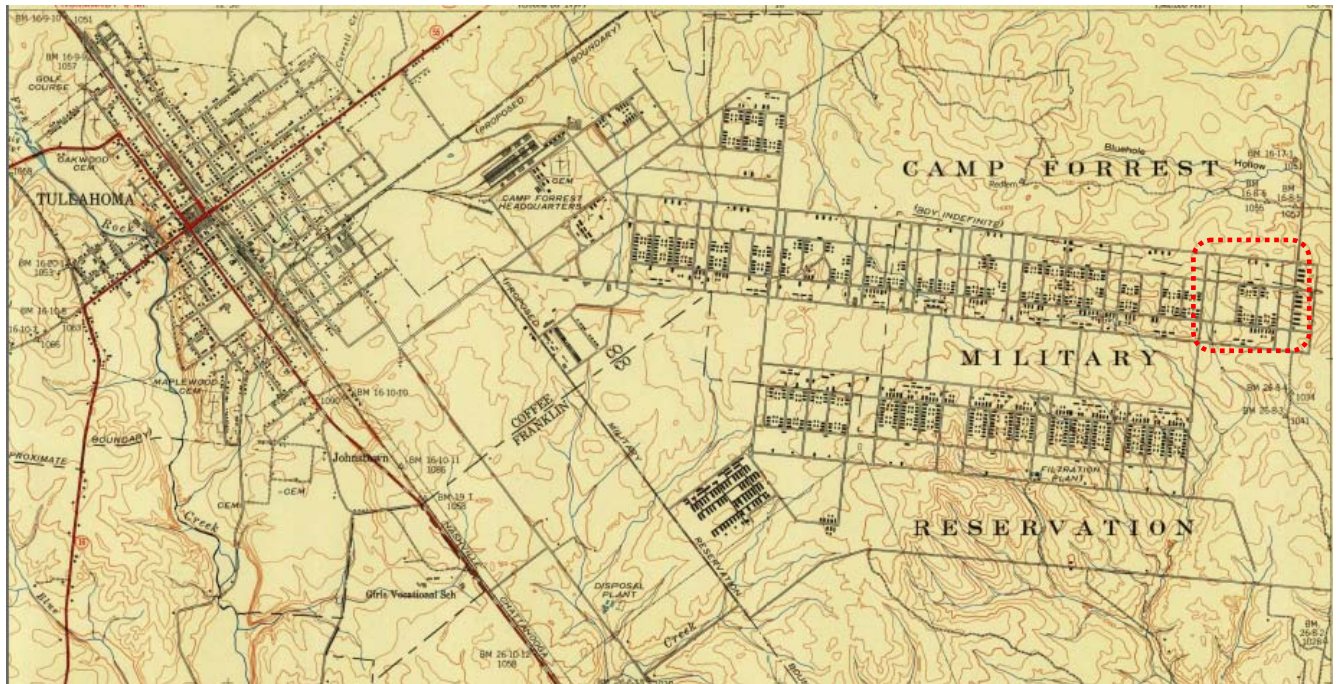


Figure 54: Tennessee Valley Authority Maps and Surveys Division in Cooperation with the War Department, Corps of Engineers, Camp Forrest Quadrangle, 1:24,000, 1941, revised 1944. Red dashed rectangle denotes reported 5<sup>th</sup> RN INF BN area (Bradley).

In the United States Army, at the outset of the war, there were four field armies established under General Douglas MacArthur before he moved on to the Philippines. The 2nd Army was established in Tennessee with the mission of building and hardening the basic and specialized training advised by the War Department Mobilization Training Program. The War Department General Headquarters in Washington DC provided instructions to the VII Corps Commander to prepare and direct a series of divisional exercises. The Tennessee Maneuvers became one of the premier Army training events in the continental U.S. with red versus blue opposing forces engaging roughly



between Murfreesboro and Chattanooga to the north and south and between Shelbyville and Manchester to the east and west. During these exercises, Camp Forrest became the main logistical hub for the units involved between 1941 and 1945 due to its principal railhead. The Tennessee Maneuvers included six staged exercises; with two command post exercises, three field type exercises, and a final free two-sided field maneuver pitting the two opposing forces against each other throughout the maneuver area. Figure 54 shows the camp and highlights the Ranger area.

Camp Forrest became a Prisoner of War Camp on May 12, 1942. The facility handled over 22,000 POWs during the war, most of them Germans, but also Italians and Japanese. The United States had 12 camps for prisoners of war during World War II. The first 1,495 German prisoners of war from overseas to arrive were on 2 June 1943. During the three months that the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion was present at the post, there was an average of approximately 3,500 POWs onsite each month. The military began to repatriate former soldiers after the surrender of Italy and continued to do so from Camp Forrest through April 13, 1946.

Based on the success of the first Ranger School in Great Britain, the Army developed a Ranger school established at Camp Forrest in January 1943 and attached to the Second Army. The original intent of this school was to train men from various Infantry Division units in two week cycles. The School became known as the Second Army Ranger School under the command of Lt Colonel William C. Saffrans, who would later become the first commander of the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion. The Army Ground Forces ordered the school closed citing that taking troops from units for short specialized courses was disruptive to Division level training.<sup>9</sup>

The 305th Combat Engineer Battalion was activated 15 July 1942 as part of the 80th Infantry Division at Camp Forrest. They constructed several projects and demolished several bridges in Tennessee. Their most important project was the construction of a Nazi Village for the Second Army Ranger School which went on to provide invaluable training for both the 2<sup>nd</sup> and 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalions, amongst other troops.<sup>10</sup>

In the months prior to the activation of the battalion, military planners of the Army Ground Forces Command had been weighing the needs of any forthcoming invasion of Western Europe from England through France. The success of the other Ranger units prompted this decision to activate the 2nd and 5th Ranger Infantry Battalions. Army Ground Forces then issued the command for the activation of the 2nd Ranger Battalion on April 3, 1943 initially under the command of Lieutenant Colonel Saffrans. He would eventually be succeeded by Major James Earl Rudder. After the change of command the 2nd Ranger Battalion began to take shape. Major Rudder was a genial former football coach from Texas. He proved to be an effective and popular leader, hosting monthly "gripe" sessions with his troops and improving their food and quarters. Part of his effectiveness is that even though he was a good listener, he insisted on high standards in the unit.<sup>11</sup> This style of leadership would later play an important part leading up to and on D-Day.

The unit had the benefit of instruction from various former 1st Ranger Infantry Battalion officers and non-commissioned officers (NCOs) that were no longer fit for combat and had been sent Stateside. Like the other three Ranger units, the training of the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion was based on that of the British Commandos. On August 1, 1943, they were re-designated Ranger Infantry.<sup>2</sup> In response to European Theater of Operation's need for a stronger assault force for operation OVERLORD, Army Ground Forces authorized the 5th Ranger Battalion in September 1943. It was decided by the European theater commander that they wanted both the 2nd and 5th Ranger Infantry Battalions in Great Britain by the end of the year, therefore the training of the new units was rushed in order to allow for both units arrival by early 1944.<sup>9</sup> During September 1943, the 1st, 3rd and 4th Ranger Infantry Battalions had completed their work in Africa and Sicily. In the first week of September they conducted an assault on Italy at Salerno, with the mission of securing the Chiunzi Pass. They were known as "Darby's Rangers" at this point, all operating under the famous Ranger leader. These men would fight on until they were nearly annihilated at Cisterna, Italy by German forces.<sup>12</sup> Many of the men who later volunteered for and joined the 2nd, 5th and 6th Ranger Infantry Battalions would do so on the basis of hearing about the exploits of "Darby's Rangers."

The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion was activated and spent time training at Camp Forrest. This is where preliminary Ranger training was conducted between September and November 1943. The following General Order was the legal basis for the activation of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion. It was formed in response to the need for additional Rangers to become involved in the forthcoming assault on Fortress Europe. After fighting with heavy losses in North Africa, Sicily and Italy, the 1st, 3rd, and 4th Ranger Infantry Battalions were no longer effective as

THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

fighting forces by the end of January 1944. All Ranger Battalions consisted of volunteers from other military units who met certain standards. The battalions would train to undertake various specific hazardous duties in their respective areas of operations. Each of the Ranger Battalions consisted of six companies, including a Headquarters and Headquarters Company, four Ranger companies A-D, a special weapons Company E, and a Service Company F, and each company consisted of two 31-man platoons. The original record is held at NARA, Archives II, College Park, MD, Entry: 427, WWII Operations Reports 1944-1948, [File # INBN 5-0, file 5-1.13 General Orders], located in boxes 16916-16919.

HEADQUARTERS, FIFTH RANGER INFANTRY BATTALION  
Camp Forrest, Tennessee

GENERAL ORDERS)

1 September 1943:

Rules. ....1 )

Section I . . . . . Activation of 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion.

Section II . . . . . Assumption of Command of 5th Ranger “ “.

SECTION I

Pursuant to authority contained in letter, Hq 2d Army, file AG 322.171-1 (G\*\*\*BF) Subject: Ltr Order No. A-302 (Activation of 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion) dated 20 August 1943, the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion is hereby activated at Camp Forrest, Tennessee, this date.

SECTION II

Pursuant to authority contained in Army Regulations 600-20, The undersigned assumes command of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion of this date.

[signed]  
Owen H. Carter  
Major, Infantry  
Commanding

The activity of setting the unit up predates the order above. Prior to September, a small cadre of officers and enlisted NCOs and other men came together to set about the work of recruitment and establishment of the unit. These men established the recruitment effort of posting notices at military bases with Division-sized units, as was one of the requirements of the men who would become Rangers. A copy of the pamphlet for Airborne troops is shown in Figure 55. Private Hull either saw a flier or was approached, volunteered, interviewed for and was evaluated for inclusion as a Ranger in the battalion as were many other men. He met all of the requirements as follows:



### Qualification Requirements for Parachute Troops

- Must volunteer for parachute duty.
- Must be alert, active, supple, with firm muscles and sound limbs; capable of development into an aggressive individual fighter, with great endurance.
- Age — 18 to 32, both inclusive.
- Weight — Maximum, not to exceed 185 pounds.
- Height — Maximum, not to exceed 72 inches.
- Vision — Distant vision uncorrected must be 20/40 each eye, or better.
- Feet — Greater than a nonsymptomatic 2nd degree pes planus disqualifies.
- Genitourinary system — Recent venereal disease disqualifies.
- Nervous system — Evidence of highly labile nervous system disqualifies.
- Bones, joints, and muscles — Lack of normal mobility in every joint, poor or unequally developed musculature, poor coordination, asthenic habitus, or lack of at least average athletic ability disqualifies.
- Medical history — History of painful arches, recurrent knee or ankle injuries, recent fracture, old fracture with deformity, pain or limitation of motion, recurrent dislocations, recent severe illness, operation, or chronic disease disqualifies.
- Blood pressure — Persistent systolic pressure above 140 millimeters or persistent diastolic pressure above 90 millimeters disqualifies.
- Other than as listed above, the physical standards to be the same as prescribed for entrance into the Regular Army.

**JUMP INTO THE FIGHT**  
with the Parachute Troops!

Courtesy of [pararesearchteam.com](http://pararesearchteam.com) by Donald and Sophia van den Bogert

Figure 55: U.S. Army Airborne recruitment pamphlet

Among the requirements for joining the new Ranger unit were:

- Ability to meet the physical requirements of a parachutist.
- Qualify in all arms the battalion possessed
- To have been part of a unit that had experienced a division-size maneuver.

(Taken from *Rangers in World War II* – Black)

The requirements of a parachutist were posted in an Army publication called *Jump into the Fight; Parachute Troops*, US Army, 1942. Other than as listed below, the physical standards to be the same as prescribed for entrance into the Regular Army.

Qualifications Requirements for Parachute Troops:

- Must volunteer for parachute duty.
- Must be alert, active, supple, with firm muscles and sound limbs; capable of development into an aggressive individual fighter, with great endurance.
- Age – 18 to 32, both inclusive.
- Weight – Maximum, not to exceed 185 pounds
- Height – Maximum, not to exceed 72 inches.
- Vision – Distant vision uncorrected must be 20/40 each eye, or better.
- Feet – Greater than non-symptomatic 2nd degree pes planus [flatfoot] disqualifies.
- Genitourinary system – Recent venereal disease disqualifies.
- Nervous system – Evidence of highly labile nervous system disqualifies.
- Bones, joints and muscles – Lack of normal mobility in every joint, poor or unequally developed musculature, poor coordination, asthenic habitus [slender and bony framework], or lack of at least average athletic ability disqualifies.
- Medical history – History of painful arches, recurrent knee or ankle injuries, recent fracture, old fracture with deformity, pain or limitation of motion, recurrent dislocations, recent severe illness, operation or chronic disease disqualifies.
- Blood pressure – Persistent systolic above 140 millimeters or persistent diastolic pressure above 90 millimeters disqualifies

A review of the initial Unit Roster dated September 21, 1943 revealed that the majority of the young men to volunteer for the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion were from the 98th, 78th, 75th, 26th, and 35th Infantry Divisions as well as the 10th Armored Division. Other men came from the 1st and 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalions, 54th Armored Regiment, 2nd Army, 10th Armored Regiment, 50th Armored Reconnaissance Battalion, 55th Armored Engineer Battalion and others. Stories of the recruitment process from a few of the veterans who have written about it over the years bear out similarities. Of note explaining the process of becoming a Ranger are the stories of Victor “Baseplate” Miller, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, Company F, and James Robert Copeland, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, Company B. The men would either see fliers hung in their Divisional Training areas, or there would be a request for volunteers to become members of a new elite unit that would come down through the chain of command verbally. Once a man volunteered, there would perhaps be an interview process, and then the men might wait for a great deal of time before they heard anything back. A copy of the page from the initial roster including Hull is shown in Figure 56. This is the defining proof that he was an original member of the battalion.

At some point, all of the men who made the first cut would be given travel orders to be taken by train to a “secret” destination. They would arrive by train in Tullahoma, often travelling by night which added to situational confusion. According to James Robert Copeland, the rides on the trains were quiet and there were no officers in their train carriage or information provided during the trip. Upon arriving at Camp Forrest, Ranger NCO’s would board the trains and begin the time-tested yelling that many new recruits or special warfare soldiers undergo in order to begin molding them to the needs of that military organization. He reported that the men had to stand at attention on

the train platform and essentially had a very rude awakening. Regarding the training cadre, Mr. Copeland is quoted as stating in his biography "They were a serious bunch, I didn't mind it so much; it was wartime, so a lot depended on discipline."<sup>13</sup> The battalion went from having around 3,000 volunteers to a group of 34 officers and 503 enlisted men by September 21, 1943.

After meeting the requirements and being accepted by the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion leadership, Private Hull was included in the initial Unit Roster dated 21 SEP 43. These records of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion are at NARA St Louis, microfilm research room, Army World War II Enlisted Roasters, 0005 RN INF BN, 15772, Pay Roll records for September, 1943. The last payroll record showing his transfer out of the 134th Infantry Regiment from September, 1943 is included in the 134th Infantry Regiment are at NARA St Louis, microfilm research room, Microfilm Index #13, Army World War II Enlisted Roasters, 0134 INF REGT, 15501, Pay Roll records for September 1943 for the 134th Infantry Regiment. I would find these records in an August 31, 2012 visit to the National Personnel Records Center in St Louis, Missouri. These are not the first hard records of my grandfather that I discovered on my journey. The first actual record of him that I did find was a copy of a Company Morning Report noting his promotion to Sergeant on December 16, 1943, and then of the Company Morning Reports for September 2nd and 4th, 1944, showing his wounds in France. Those were all in the Colonel Robert W. Black collection holdings of the United States Army Heritage and Education Center (USAHEC) in Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania that I discovered on March 27, 2012, and will further discuss later.

The September 1943 Pay Roll record of 134th Infantry Regiment, M Company showed the transfer of Private Hull to 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion on September 7, 1943. These two pieces of information, along with the Company Morning Report showing him wounded in action on 2 SEP 44 discussed in Chapter 19 form the conclusive proof of him as a Ranger in the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion that I had been desperately trying to find for a long time. Also important, but not shown is the Pay Roll record for the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion for September, 1943 that shows his transfer to the unit.

That record reads: Page 24, Line 18; Hull, Herbert S. 35597467, Inducted January 14, 1943, Transferred as Private from Private to 5th Ranger Battalion, Camp Forrest, Tennessee, per paragraph 2, SO #197, Headquarters, 35th Infantry Division, dated 7 Sep 43.

The Pay Roll record for the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion for November, 1943 reads: Page 8, Line 3, Hull, Herbert S., 35597467, Private, Date of Induction, January 7, 1943, \$6.50, Appointed Technician Fifth Grade (Tec 5), from Private, per paragraph 2, SO #28, Headquarters, 5th Ranger Battalion, dated November 5, 1943.

This is important because it shows him rising very quickly through the ranks from the rank of Private to Staff Sergeant (S/Sgt) between November 5, 1943 and February 1, 1944. In order to rise this quickly through the ranks is extremely impressive while in a training status and not yet involved in combat. He must have shown his superiors exceptional leadership potential in all areas of his training in order to accomplish this, keeping in mind that this was a unit of the best of the best of infantrymen in the whole of the Army. A conversation with Captain Whittington's daughter confirmed that her father must have thought highly of him due to the fast promotions track.

The Pay Roll record for the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion for December, 1943 reads: Page 4, Line 18; Hull, Herbert S. 35597467, Inducted January 14, 1943, Appointed Sergeant (Sgt) from Tec 5, December 15, 1943 per paragraph 3, SO #44, Headquarters, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion dated December 15, 1943.

The Company Morning Report for the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion for December 16, 1943 reads: 35597467, Hull, Herbert S., Tec 5, Code 03; Appointed Sergeant as of 15 December 1943.

The above Company Morning Report record showing the promotion to Sergeant is in two locations. The first is at USAHEC, U.S. Army Military History Institute, Robert W. Black Collection, 1939-1991, Box 5, Folder 2, 5th Ranger Battalion, Companies A-F, Morning Reports, Oct 1943-May 1945. The USAHEC is where I first found any conclusive proof of his service in the battalion in any kind of battalion records on March 27, 2012 while researching at USAHEC, Carlisle, PA. I sent this news out to both General John C. Raaen, Jr., and to Colonel Robert R Black.





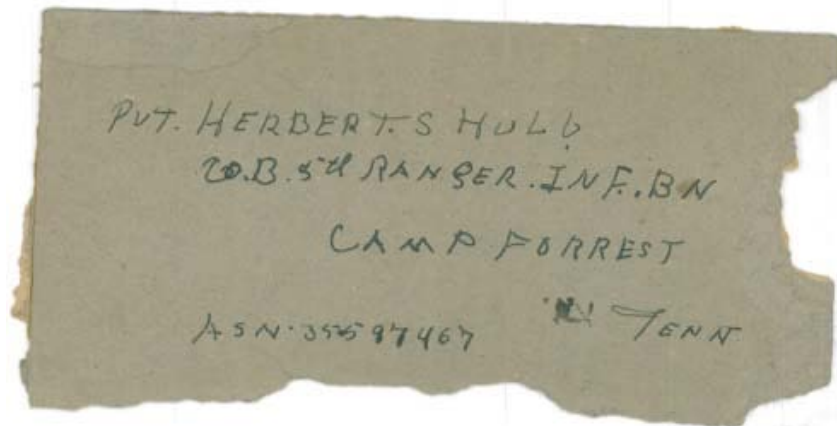


Figure 57: Parcel flap from war held by Hull family.

A 5th Ranger veteran named Randall Ching described the process for becoming a Ranger in depth. He explained that he was born in San Francisco in 1924. When the Great Depression hit, his father immigrated with his family to China in 1933 to provide a better life for his family. The Japanese invaded China during the 1930's and when Randall was 14, he joined the Chinese Red Army to fight against the Japanese. He remained in the Army for three months and he never told his parents of it. After the draft was enacted in the U.S., Randall's father told him that he better return to fulfill his duties to the United States. Randall told me, "So, my father put pressure on me, he say "You're 17 now, next year you're gonna be 18, and since the Congress of the United States passed the draft law, then you better go back and answer your draft because 18 years old if you don't answer your draft, you could lose your citizenship." Ching had to wait nine months to book passage out of Hong Kong to San Francisco. When he finally got passage, it happened to be on the last ship from Hong Kong landing in late October 1941. After this time the Japanese sealed off the shipping routes and they bombed Pearl Harbor on December 7.

Private Randall Ching first trained at Fort Leonard Wood, Missouri as part of the 75th Infantry Regiment. He told me, "Oh before this, when I got in the service, they asked me, "You're Chinese", the first question they asked me "you wanna be a cook?" I said "Hell no, I don't wanna be a cook, I said "give me a rifle", (chuckle) so I got into the Infantry as a rifleman..." Randall talked about his friend Carl West and said, "and oh, by the way, Carl West describes the Infantry, was also from the 75th. He say all these people {can't make out} got the Infantry {can't make out}, but actually that 75th Infantry Division is a replacement Division. They train the troops in basic training, and they ship them out as replacements. So, actually, they were kind of lax because the people training, the people in basic training were also Green." Upon completion of basic training, he received a furlough and went to San Francisco.

He told me in an interview, "when I came back from furlough, they asked for volunteers for the Rangers, so I said "What the heck, I will join the Rangers and see what happens (chuckle)... I finished basic training, and then the Ranger came up, I thought I would join the Rangers, and they surprised the hell out of me, they accepted me, because I'm the only Chinese in an all Caucasian unit... And, that's when I first met your grandfather. He was a Buck Sergeant then. So all through the training from Camp Forrest, Tennessee to Fort Pierce, Florida, amphibious training, and up to Fort Dix, and from Fort Dix to Trenton, New Jersey, he was very careful about me because I was the youngest one in the unit, and because of the English problem. I spent 8-9 years in China, so in China, you only speak Chinese. So rarely the English, so I kinda lost the English... I knew him from when we activate 1943, the Rangers, until 1944, September. And then we had Hull for exercise, boat {can't make out}, body-building, weapon familiarization, demolition charge, we learned the way things exploded with demolition."

Randall's daughter Bonnie asked him if he ever had cultural problems with his fellow Rangers being the only Chinese man in the unit. Randall said that the men never gave him a bad time over it. They would make fun of the fact he didn't speak English very well. Randall told me, "Once I remember I think in Tennessee in the mess hall, you know, so. Yeah, we had a mess hall {can't make out}, I have chow, the breakfast, we went up there to get in line, I told the 'messy' "Hey Mess Sgt! We got the same thing yesterday!" And the Staff Sgt say, "Go see the Chaplain" The Chaplain, we always do that yeah. I thought to tell him, "Hey Sgt, he doesn't speak Chinese!" Everybody laughed. (chuckles) The man, at the back of the line somewhere you know, "How come you no speak English, you got in the

Rangers, and then {can't make out} say, "Hey fellow, we got another one. Another one like that mess sergeant. He thought about me, how come he don't speak English, how come he got in the Ranger, and the other guy say, "Hey fellow, we got another one!" Everybody laugh. Yeah, I did speak a little."

"When they are doing the organizing in Camp Forrest, Tennessee, they tried to put everybody prospectively in some category or some responsibility, and this Sergeant is from the old Ranger back in Anzio, Italy. They came back after Anzio, well, the Ranger Battalion in Italy was dissolved. The old veterans were sent home. The new volunteers, didn't have the time to come home, so they ship them out to other units. Some of the old Rangers came back from say the 1st, 3rd or 4th Battalions, when they form the 2nd Ranger Battalion, some went from Italy, they volunteer as the, into the 2nd Ranger Battalion, so they let them volunteer. The way that like to volunteer Ranger anymore, or be going over seas, they use them as a trainer at Camp Forrest Tennessee to train the 5th Ranger Battalion. Well, this fellow, a Staff Sergeant from the 4th Ranger, he come and ask me "You want to be a messenger boy?" Well I said "No, I don't want to be a messenger boy". So they designated Weast to become the messenger boy."

Randall Ching explained his perspective of the formation period of the battalion. He said, "They got 3,000 volunteers. They only accepted about 1,000 or 700, more than 700, but during the training camp, they start weeding out. The ones that doesn't qualify {can't make out} the ones that don't qualify shooting, doesn't qualify the march, the physical exam, exercises they don't qualify, they didn't pass, they sent them out. All through the phased training, there's some people who doesn't qualify, they kick them out." His daughter clarified with him that he had passed the physical examinations and the marksmanship tests. He affirmed that to her. He then went on to say something very telling of the Rangers. Later on, the men would not seem to receive the same citations and personal decorations for acts of valor as compared with men who served with other units. He explained why by stating "See, when we, when we joined the Ranger, they told us, "Don't expect any recommendations. Yeah, recognition, or recommendation. Just do your job. That's all they wanted me to do. That's it. Besides the marksmanship, I kept up with all the training."

"The reason, is that I think that they didn't kick me (Ching) out is that I can shoot. During the basic training at the 75th Infantry Division, I got a rifle range. I was an above average Expert on Rifle (M-1). At 250 yards, I always hit the bull's-eye. 6 out of 8 shots. Six round clip, oh, eight round clip. I usually about 6 rounds or 5 rounds or six rounds, pretty consistent. On the prone position, on the kneeling position, its always right around 5 or 6 out of 8. This one is in my record. And then one time that's at 400 or 500 yards, standing position, rapid firing, I put 7 rounds out of 8 in the bull's-eye. That's also in my record. They took the target, signed by the range officer, verify it, also, signed by the Company Commander, verify it, and that's on my resume, so that's why they kept me. I also kept it. From the 75th Infantry Division, on to the Rangers, I kept it all through the war. I kept that rifle, because I understand that rifle. But, I am also pretty good with, I also qualified with a pistol, sub-machine gun. Also qualified for Automatic Rifle (BAR). I also qualified for Light Machine Gun. But my main weapon was my rifle because I could hit anything from 100 yards to 400 yards. That's why they kept me. That's why I was the only Chinese in the Ranger {chuckles}". His daughter asked him, "Really, the target, the target sheet was your resume." These men were shooters. Their abilities in this area made them lethal.

The purpose of Ranger training was to develop forces that could strike very quickly behind enemy lines in surprise attack in order to soften up the enemy for regular troops to move in. The original intent was to have six weeks of intensive training stateside and then move to England for final training. Training of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion began on September 14, 1943 and was assisted by a few former members of the 1st Ranger Infantry Battalion. Their initial training was to follow the pattern that had been established by the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion. The 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion had modeled their organization and training based on the 1st Ranger Infantry Battalion "Darby's Rangers". They also based a good deal of their training on the concepts developed by the Army Ground Forces and their Second Army Ranger School. Some of the training cadre that had been associated with 1st Ranger Infantry Battalions passed their battlefield experience on to the men. Some of the methods used in the Camp Forrest Ranger School were reportedly also taken from training methods used at a United States Marines combat training center in California. Many of the new recruits had heard of Darby's Rangers and were eager to train and fight in a similar unit. All of the men accepted by the unit possessed above average physical and mental abilities in general. The photo-essay at the end of this chapter documents the Second Army Ranger School. This training and the locations pictured would prove most important in the early phases of establishing both the 2nd and 5th Ranger Infantry Battalions at Camp Forrest in 1943 and is very representative of the training of all Rangers at Camp Forrest.

The Camp Forrest Ranger Training combined many elements of rigorous and specialized infantry training including advanced physical conditioning, tactics from a battalion down to squad level, and field craft. The men would be trained to undertake various hazardous missions and duties as if they were second nature. The ultimate purpose of the Ranger battalions was a mystery to the men as they trained. The entire Ranger training program stressed toughness and infantry fighting skills. A typical day's training might include reveille, followed by a mile run, breakfast, one hour of heavy calisthenics, and the conduct of specific training for the day. The men were also subjected to the veritable Army Training Films on such memorable topics as venereal disease and other health issues. The men lifted 14 foot long logs over their heads in groups, boxed and wrestled each other in pits and participated in "rugged" group games. The intense physical training was designed to help weed out those lacking in strength and stamina. The Rangers trained all over Camp Forrest and sometimes in the surrounding towns, farms, rivers, hills and cliffs. There were designated firing ranges on camp lands, including a rifle range on the former Lem Motlow property off Cumberland Springs Road on Old Shelbyville Highway and another one on Ledford Mill Road. Small arms and mortar crews trained at both of these ranges. Troops also practiced river crossing and cliff-scaling skills all over the surrounding area.<sup>5</sup> Another account by Ranger Thomas E. Herring recalled that a typical day in Ranger training might be as follows:

"A typical day was "arise at 0500, fall out for roll-call, return to barracks to make beds, and at 0600 eat breakfast. Following breakfast we returned to barracks to get our gear in order for the rest of the day\* At 0800 we assembled by company and marched to the physical training area for an hour of physical training, followed by an hour of hand-to-hand combat. Following this we would indulge in squad tactics until lunch. After lunch, we'd get lectures, weapons indoctrination, etc. About 3 p.m. we'd go on a fast road march of approximately seven miles, wearing field packs and side - arms. We eventually were able to do the seven miles in one hour. The marching built up our endurance to a high degree, which proved extremely beneficial in combat."<sup>5</sup>

About two weeks after arriving at Camp Forrest, an obstacle course replaced part of the physical training regimen for the Rangers. The obstacle courses required the men to climb walls, run across rope bridges, traverse hand over hand on a rope across a stream with explosive charges going off beneath them in the water, walk across a log, climb on cargo nets, and climb up a rope hand over hand and then run to the end of the course. The men did all of this with rifle and full gear in around twenty minutes. They would run other obstacle courses with the cadre using live ammo with machine guns firing over the heads of the men. If a man stood up too high, he could be hit by a bullet. The men were subjected to five mile speed hikes three days per week, nine mile speed hikes about twice per week, and one twenty-five mile hike on Saturdays, arriving back at camp by lunch. Many of the hikes would be accomplished in the hot weather with full field packs. Each battalion would conduct a sixty-five mile hike, with half of it across county by compass. Tennessee was hot and dusty. The men were required to complete a five mile march in one hour and a nine mile march in two hours. "The policy mandated that, "If a man fell out on a hike, he would be considered physically unfit for Ranger service and would be transferred". This policy would remain in force throughout training."<sup>14</sup> There are multiple accounts of men quietly marching on untreated sprained and broken ankles in order to remain in the unit. The standard training was heavy on physical endurance.

The men learned land navigation using compass courses, using pacing techniques, the expert use of maps, star navigation and other means. The Rangers might be sent into the hills with not much more than a compass and were instructed that they had to find their way back to camp. Other times the men might be sent out with only a small amount of food. The various squads had to go out on a field problem that required them to live off the land, berries, edible plants and wild game and cook their own food. They might have to find water sources, purifying it with iodine before drinking. They were issued machetes to carry for cutting through brush and vines in the field.

They had cliff climbing training on sheer cliffs in the Cumberlands, some of which had undercuts, and the men would wash out if they refused to climb. The Rangers also trained in rappelling, which was a new experience for many, and sometimes scary. If a man was descending a cliff where the overhanging cliff face ended in an undercut, the men may find themselves with no place to put their feet for a bound as they dangled in space. In some of these cases the men might panic, and if they did, they might let go of the rope and crash on the rocks below. An example of this is in Figure 58.

## THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

The men would swim and practice stream crossings using rope bridges or floating on improvised flotation devices. The Rangers used the Elk River to learn how to make rafts of brush cut with machetes. Two people would use each of their shelter halves (tents) to roll up the brush to form a small raft to paddle across the river. The Rangers were taken to a mill pond called Cumberland Springs where they had to go into the water with full gear and rifle and swim to the other side. It was reported that Lieutenant Bernhard Pepper, Commanding Officer, Company F, led his men in one deep water exercise only to learn that he could not swim at the time. He had to be rescued. Not daunted by what must have been a minor embarrassment, he would go on to lead in Company B during the assault on Fort de Toulbroch'.



Figure 58: 2<sup>nd</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion practicing cliff climbing at Camp Forrest, Tennessee - NARA

The Rangers conducted night exercises, infiltration techniques and trained in night patrols being taught how to slip into an enemy camp under cover of darkness, take out the guards and blow up the installation if necessary. Thomas E, Herring 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, reported: "Later in the training at Camp Forrest our training routine included night situations such as cross-country routes via compass, mock attach on assigned objectives at night--although a couple of these became more serious, and finding one's own way and means of reaching a distant objective. All this was later utilized to our advantage in combat in Europe."<sup>5</sup> The men had to train relentlessly on combat exercises at the squad, platoon and company levels. Using the mock Nazi village and other obstacles that had been constructed by the 305<sup>th</sup> Combat Engineer Battalion, "Commando" raids, village fighting, street-to-street and house-to-house fighting was learned and perfected. In addition to bombers at Northern Field, the Army flew Piper Cub artillery liaison aircraft and P-51 Mustangs. Occasionally, the planes might participate in exercises by dropping sacks of flour on the men to simulate being bombed under combat conditions.

They engaged in hand-to-hand combat including: Judo, Karate, knife fighting and bayonet training. An account of initial knife fighting in F Company recalled that on a given morning, the men were all given fighting knives and were told to practice on each other, resulting in multiple wounded soldiers. The result for the men was to get stitched up and get back to work. There was a sense of esprit de corps instilled in the men and they became highly motivated.

All Rangers were expected to train on and qualify as expert on all of the weapons that the unit possessed. They also trained on other types of infantry small arms and weapons such as enemy weapons including the development of



the understanding of the mechanical function of these weapons. The men would also train for familiarity on all crew served weapons the unit possessed. Records of Headquarters, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, for D Company produced by Mr. Jerry Styles revealed that D Company qualified on the .30 Caliber M1 Rifle on October 7, 1943, based on Special Order No. 15. They then qualified on the .45 Caliber Submachine Gun on October 28, 1943, based on Special Order No. 26. It is likely that the other companies in the Battalion qualified on or about those dates, however, additional records were not located. Weapons loading is shown in Figure 59.

The weapons of the 5th Ranger Battalion included the following weapons based on *Rangers in World War II*, by Robert R. Black, Pg 341:

- Automatic Pistol, .45 Caliber, M-1911
- Carbine, .30 Caliber, M-1 and M-2
- Rifle, .30 Caliber, M-1
- Browning Automatic Rifle, .30 Caliber, M-1918A2
- Thompson Submachine Gun, .45 Caliber, M-1928A1
- Grenades
- Bayonet

Crew served weapons that the men had to familiarize themselves with included:

- Boyce (Boy's) Antitank Rifle, .55 Caliber
- Rocket, AT HE, 2.36 Inch
- 60 mm Mortar M-19
- 81 mm Mortar M-1
- Browning Machine Gun, .30 Caliber HB M-1919A4



Figure 59: Loading weapons at range of Camp Forrest (NARA)

The Rangers practiced using hand grenades, explosives handling, including manufactured and improvised explosives, and were trained in demolitions including where to place the charges to be effective. They trained to dig fox holes, crawl into them letting a tank pass over and destroying it from beneath. In his autobiography, Victor Miller reported:

THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

“We did have training in everything as well as our specialty of mortars and machine guns. One day we practiced throwing hand grenades until there was only one left. Eddie Neuman and I began to argue over which one of us should throw it. Finally 1st. Sgt. Sandy Martin Jr. made the decision. "Neuman, pull the pin and throw it to Miller and let him throw it!" Yes! Neuman pulled the pin and tossed it to me. One is supposed to have five seconds after the handle is released, but you may not! It seemed an eternity for the smoking object to reach me. I didn't waste time in throwing it forward into the pit. I wouldn't repeat that in the present time! One fumbled catch and we would have all been gone.”

Victor J. "Baseplate" Miller, Sgt., Co. E, 5th Ranger Battalion, U.S.A.



Figure 60: Photos typical of Ranger training. Photos are from various Ranger Battalions.

The Rangers special weapons section in Company F was issued .30 caliber light (air-cooled) machine guns and 60 millimeter mortars instead of the standard .30 caliber heavy (water-cooled) machine guns and 80 millimeter mortars assigned to a typical infantry regiment. When the men first received their various weapons they were often coated in a heavy coating of protective cosmoline. This coating required hours of cleaning by the men to get the weapons operational. The special weapons section also received .55 caliber Boyce anti-tank rifles from the Canadians. These weapons fired from a bipod support fired armor-piercing bullets, but they had tremendous recoil. The Rangers trained on these as well. Typical training photos are shown in Figure 60.

Harry Wilder recounted a story of the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion training at Camp Forrest that exemplifies the type of thinking looked for in a Ranger.

“One of the characteristics Rangers were supposed to develop was that of resourcefulness. Often training exercises were set which were unorthodox. On one occasion the Battalion was informed just before Taps that they were to answer roll call the next morning at a site several miles away. No questions would be asked about how they got there. At the appointed hour most of the Rangers had turned up in jeeps. However, these jeeps were all assigned to other units who were, at that moment, calling headquarters at Camp Forrest to report their vehicles stolen. Four Rangers arrived in a Tullahoma police car. They had been walking through town when a civilian policeman stopped them and asked if they had a pass. They overpowered the policeman, handcuffed him, and took his car. The Camp Commander was not amused but the Ranger's instructors were delighted.”<sup>5</sup>

The mock village constructed on Camp Forrest reportedly stood as the first of its kind in use in the U.S. Army. It was built as part of the Ranger program at Camp Forrest to prepare soldiers for street fighting.<sup>5</sup> The Rangers and other Army trainees received instruction in commando raiding tactics, house-to-house combat in the village mock-up. They would participate in a seemingly endless cycle of combat exercises, by squad, platoon and company. This was done to rapidly bring the units to the peak of perfection. The potential training value of this device so impressed General Ben Lea that he ordered it copied for general infantry training throughout the Second Army command area. These tactics have lived on in today's military and law enforcement communities, and have become increasingly realistic and sophisticated. This village is shown in Figure 61 and in the photo essay at the end of this chapter.



Figure 61: Ranger training at Camp Forrest, 1943.

From September 6 to October 26, 1994, archaeologists from the Transportation Center at The University of Tennessee-Knoxville conducted an archaeological survey of 162 ha (400 acres) on Industrial Site B, at Arnold Engineering Development Center, Arnold Air Station in Coffee and Franklin counties, Tennessee. These investigations resulted in the identification of one historic archaeological site known as 40FR201. This site was a World War II training area consisting primarily of pillboxes, mock buildings, climbing wells, and impact craters that may be part of the mock village.<sup>8</sup> The site is located near Rollins Creek on the Capitol Hill United States Geological Survey (USGS) mapping.

In the fall of 1943, Company B was forming up into its organizational structure through the rigors of training and constant evaluation and watchful eyes of the cadre. After the war, one time Sgt Walter McIlwain would provide a list of the members of 2nd platoon to Carl Weast that had been prepared in the fall of 1943. It would have been dated between late October and December based on the ranks of the men against official records.

**B Company, 5th Rangers  
Camp Forrest, Tennessee  
October 1943**

**2nd Platoon**

Platoon Leader, 2nd Lieutenant Jay Mehaffey  
Platoon Sergeant, S/SGT Chester B Warich  
Platoon Messenger, PFC Carl F. Weast  
Platoon Sniper, PFC Francis J Piette

**1st Section**

Section Leader, Sgt Walter N McIlwain  
Squad Leader, Assault Squad, PFC Howard M. Goldberg  
Rifleman, PFC Rene R. Brunelle  
Rifleman, PFC Robert Jarke, Jr  
Rifleman, PFC Robert S. Goodwin  
Rifleman, PFC Theodore Webernan  
Squad Leader, Light Machine Gun Squad, T/5 Herbert S. Hull  
1st Gunner, T/5 Leroy A. Anderson  
2nd Gunner, PVT Bernard C. Akers  
Ammunition Bearer, PVT Johnnie E Bixler

**2nd Section**

Section Leader, Sgt Edward J. McEleney  
Squad Leader, Assault Squad, PFC Peter L. Cardinali  
Rifleman, PFC Thomas G. Devlin  
Demolition, PFC Louis Banks  
Rifleman, PFC Francis J. Healey  
Rifleman, PFC Randall Ching  
Squad Leader, Light Machine Gun Squad, Sgt Albert F. Sweeney  
1st Gunner, PFC Paul L. Winslow  
2nd Gunner, PFC Albert P. Gipson, Jr  
Ammunition Bearer, PVT Elmo E. Banning  
Ammunition Bearer, PVT Harvey M. Montgomery

Most of these men would remain together through at least D-Day with some exceptions. Only seven of these men would make it through to the end of the war together. The rest were killed, dropped due to becoming casualties or those who did not make it past the training.

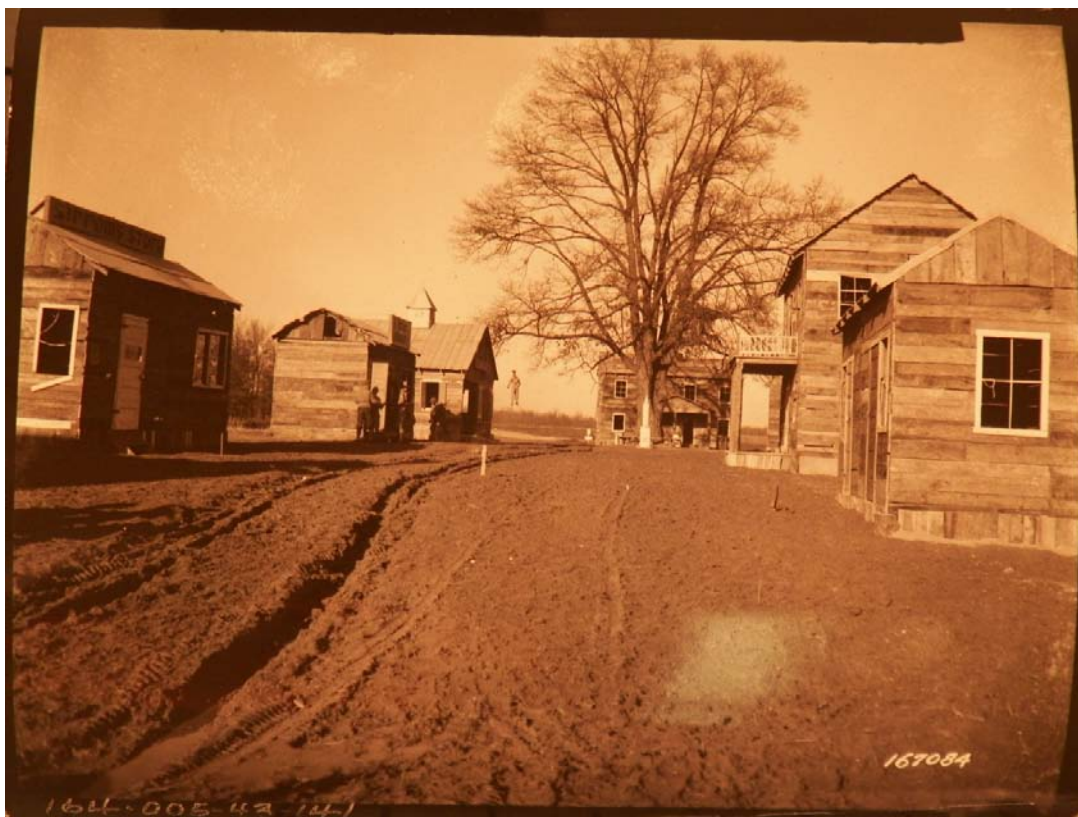
T/5 Herbert Hull so impressed his superiors that he was made a Squad Leader of a .30 caliber light machine gun squad while at Camp Forrest. I have heard from JR Copeland, Randall Ching and the family of Carl Weast that Herbert Hull was a good soldier and was admired by both enlisted men and officers around him even at this point.

Randall Ching looked carefully at the names of men assigned to B Company according to a roster list made by Sgt McIlwain in October 1943 at Camp Forrest. He noted that the men in the company remained essentially the same in terms of who landed on D-Day. Ching explained the organization was changed in England as the Rangers better learned of their objectives and trained for them. S/Sgt Hull would transfer from B Company, 2nd Platoon 1st Section under S/Sgt McIlwain to become the 2nd Section Leader. This will become important later in the story. As he reviewed the names of the men, Randall Ching had memories well up regarding his friend. Speaking to Hull's character, Ching explained that Hull wanted to make sure he knew and understood any instructions because Hull was worried about Ching's English, and wanted to ensure his soldier's safety.

The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion was initially forged at Camp Forrest. From here, they would board a train and arrive at Fort Pierce, Florida for the next phase of their training. The Headquarters Company Morning Report shows that 1st Lieutenant John C. Raaen, Jr, had departed on November 1 for this joint Army/Navy training facility to prepare some special training for the men.

The following pages are a photo-essay showing the Ranger training facilities and men taken at Camp Forrest Tennessee during the war. The original photos are held at NARA in College Park, Maryland. The photos are named according to how they are labeled in the original collection.





SC 167084: General View down Main Street of model Nazi village. Camp Forrest, Tenn. 1/12/43; Second Army Ranger School. Signal Corps Photo, Photographer T/5 George Clayton



SC 167083: Two instructors of wire entanglement class lying under double apron barbed wire entanglement preparatory to cutting wire, Camp Forrest, Tennessee. 1-16-43, 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School, Signal Corps Photo, T/4 Richard H Spencer.





SC 167082: Two instructors of the wire entanglement class demonstrating method of cutting barb wire using cloth wrapped around pliers to muffle the sound caused by cutting. Camp Forrest, Tennessee. 1-16-43, 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School. Signal Corps Photo, T/4 Richard S. Spencer



SC 167085: Students entering building in model Nazi village during a simulated mopping up operation. The building contains booby traps and dummies. The Rangers advance through the village firing live ammunition at dummy targets and bayoneting dummies placed throughout the village. Camp Forrest, Tennessee; 1-12-43; Second Army Ranger School

THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY



SC167086: Sgt Edward N. Draper and PVT Mussel D. Scarboro advancing through the streets of model Nazi village in a demonstration of methods of mopping up at Camp Forrest, Tennessee; 1-12-43; Second Army Ranger School, Co K, 3<sup>rd</sup> BN., 319<sup>th</sup> Infantry; Nazi Village south of Range O: Photographer T/4 Edgar S Bagley



SC 167088: Left to right: S/Sgt Bishop Scarboro, Cpl Elmer L Cochran (top), Sgt Edward S Draper demonstrating method of entering and covering building while mopping up enemy village at Camp Forrest, Tennessee; 1-12-43; Co K, 3<sup>rd</sup> BN, 319<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment, 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School; Photographer, T/4 Richard H Spencer





SC 167087: Left to right: Sgt Edward S Draper, Sgt J. Perus, Pvt Russel D. Scarboro, in a simulated attack on the city hall of a model Nazi village, in a demonstration of methods of mopping up. Camp Forrest, Tennessee; 1-12-43; Co K, 3<sup>rd</sup> BN, 319<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment, 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School; Photographer, T/4 Edgar S. Bagley



SC 167090: A simulated demonstration of capture of a model Nazi village mined with booby traps. Infantry troops are armed with M1 .30 Cal rifles, Thompson .45 Cal sub-machine guns. Camp Forrest, Tennessee. 1-15-43; 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School: Photographer T/5 George Clayton

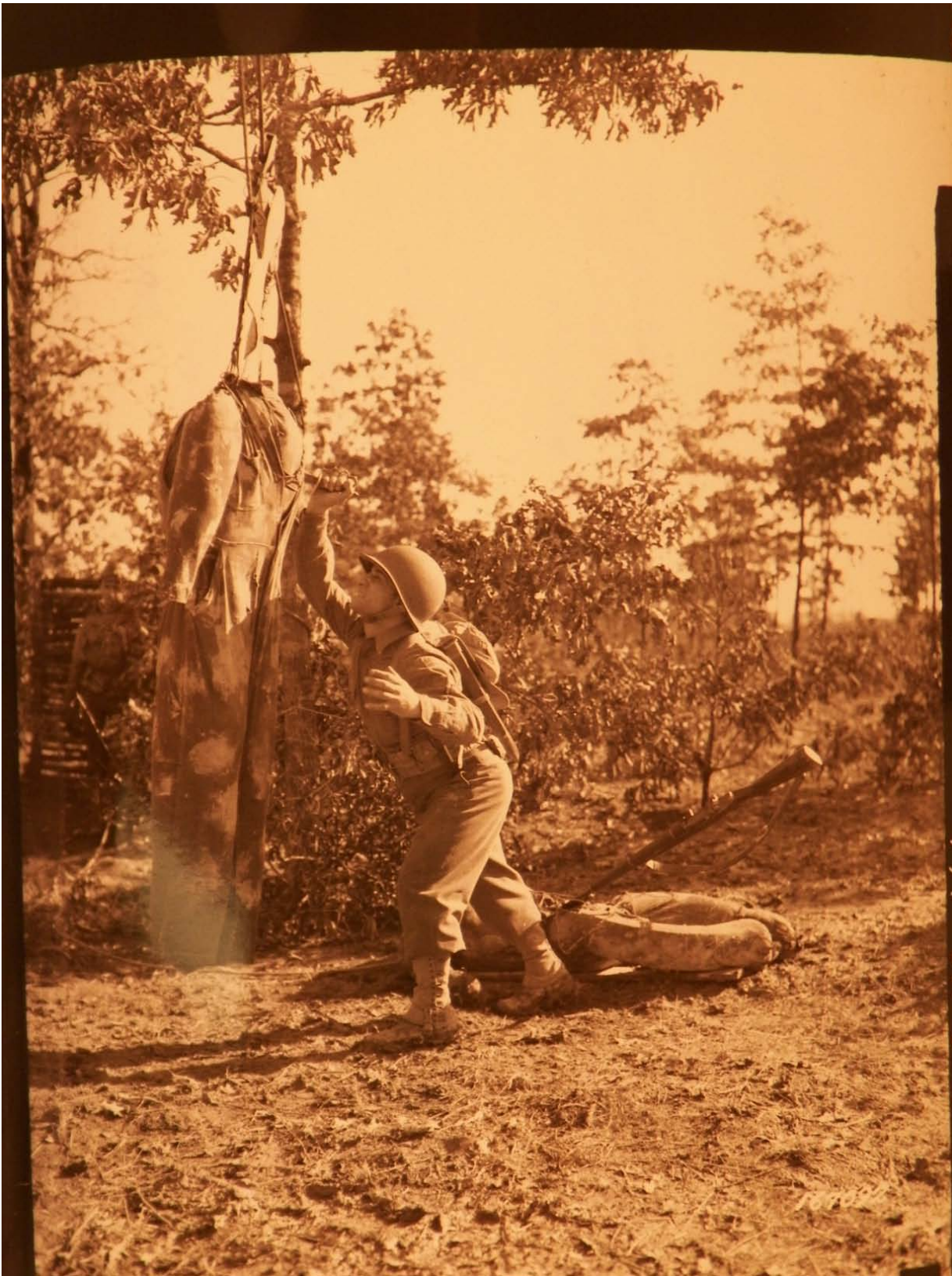


THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY



SC 167089: Sgt. Joe Perna bayoneting dummy during demonstration of mop up of enemy village. Camp Forrest, Tennessee, 1-12-43; Co K, 3<sup>rd</sup> BN, 319<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment, 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School; Photographer, T/4 Richard H Spencer.





SC 167092: Private 1<sup>st</sup> Class, F.F. Santucci demonstrating how to use a trench knife on "blitz" bayonet course constructed for the training of Rangers, Camp Forrest, Tennessee: 1-12-43: Co I, 319<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment, 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School: Photographer T/5 George Clayton





SC 167102: Ranger Students doing a class exercise known as the "windmill" in hand-to-hand combat course, Camp Forrest, Tennessee; 1-18-43; 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School; Photographer T/4 Richard H. Spencer



SC 167101: Two Ranger students participating disarmament of an opponent, armed with a knife, during a hand-to-hand combat class. Camp Forrest, Tennessee: 1-20-43: 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School: Photographer T/4 Richard H. Spencer





SC 167104: Two Ranger students demonstrate dirty fighting tactics in hand-to-hand combat class, 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School, Camp Forrest, Tennessee: 1-25-43: Photographer T/4 Richard H. Spencer





SC 157098: Pvt. Geo. McCravey being disarmed by S/Sgt. J.W. Douglas of his bayonet in hand to hand combat clas, Camp Forrest, Tenn. 1/15/43. Photographer T/4 Richard H. Spencer



SC 167097: Pvt. Geo. McCravey applying counter for downward knife thrust of S/Sgt J.M. Douglas in hand to hand combat class. Camp Forrest, Tennessee: 1-15-43: Second Army Ranger School: Photographer T/4 Richard H. Spencer



THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY



SC 165100: 2<sup>nd</sup> Lt. Wm E. Vazzana and Sgt. J.R. Compton instructors at Camp Forrest, Tenn., demonstrating the straight-arm block used in hand-to-hand fighting. 1/12/43. Photographer: T/4 Edgar S. Bagley.



SC 167099: 2<sup>nd</sup> Lt. Wm. E. Vazzana and Sgt. J.R. Compton instructors at Camp Forrest, Tenn. Demonstrating the rear stranglehold used in hand-to-hand fighting. 1/12/43. Photographer: T/4 Edgar S. Bagley.





SC 167094: Pfc. F.F. Santucci demonstrating how to use the bayonet on blitz bayonet course constructed for training of Rangers, Camp Forrest, Tenn. Company I, 319<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment, 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School: 1/12/43. Photographer T/5 George(NMI) Clayton.



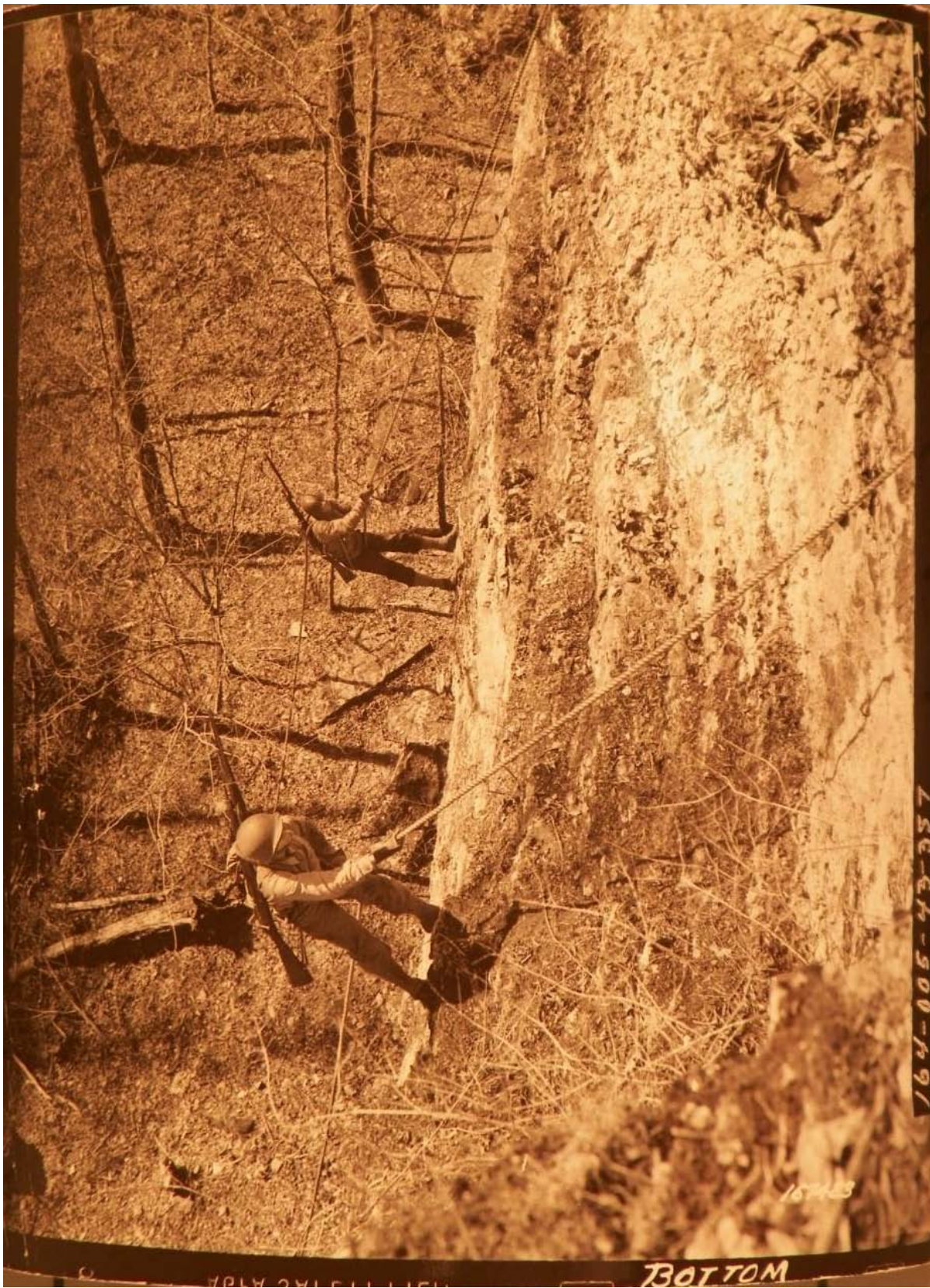
SC 167095: Gun crew firing .30 Cal Browning heavy machine gun, Camp Forrest, Tennessee. Left to right; PFC L. Edelman. Pfc. C. Rudnicki, Cpl., E.R. Elmann, and Pvt Joseph Barrett: 1-7-43: 2<sup>nd</sup> Section, 1<sup>st</sup> Plt, Co M, 318<sup>th</sup> Inf on Range B, Spencer Range: Photographer T/5 George Clayton

THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY



SC 167489: A car hit by a rocket fired from a rocket launcher at the U.S. 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School, Camp Forrest, Tenn 1/18/43.  
Photographer T/4 Richard H. Spencer





SC 167483; Pvt Nicholas Gomes and Pvt 1<sup>st</sup> Class Mike Danatsko demonstrate how to descend a cliff me means of ropes. Class in cliff scaling, Camp Forrest, TN; 2/6/43; Company C, 319<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment, 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School; Photographer T/4 Edgar S Bagley.





SC 157481: Model of dressed timber bridge (1 inch = 3 feet) H-15 loading. Constructed as training aids for teaching men theory and methods of bridge design and construction. 12/29/42 Photographer T/4 Edgar S Bagley



SC 157478: Army Ranger School Demonstration of Infantry crossing toggle rope bridge while under fire from machine guns, rifles, hand grenades, mortars. Estill Springs, TN. Camp Forrest, TN; 1/20/43; 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School; T/5 George Clayton





U.S. 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School, Camp Forrest, Tennessee, January 1943





SC 167484; Staff Sergeant L.J. Bush of Coxville, WV, inserts an anti-tank rocket 2/36 inch M6 into the anti-tank rocket launcher M1, as Sergeant C.W. Critchfield of Corpus Christi, TX prepares to fire by taking aim and sight on the target. Photo batched with 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School photos, although it depicts Camp Gordon, GA.



SC 16746: Pvt 1<sup>st</sup> Class, L.S. Heaton and Pvt. C.O. Aiggin demonstrating two different types of head camouflage at Ranger School. Pvt Heaton's helmet and face are daubed with mud, dust, and particles of grass. Pvt Higgin's face is marked with grease paint and his helmet is camouflaged with leaves stuck into a net. Camp Forrest, Tennessee. 1/14/43. HQ Co., 1<sup>st</sup> BN., 319<sup>th</sup> Inf, 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Ranger School.





SC 164160-B: 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Rangers...cross a stream on a toggle-rope bridge under simulated battle conditions. Demonstration at Camp Forrest, Tennessee, January 23, 1943, preceding graduation. Signal Corps Photo by BPR Ralph Morgan



SC 164161-B: 2<sup>nd</sup> Army Rangers...cross a stream on a toggle-rope bridge under simulated battle conditions. Demonstration at Camp Forrest, Tennessee, January 23, 1943, preceding graduation. Signal Corps Photo by BPR Ralph Morgad



## 6 SCOUTS AND RAIDERS SCHOOL – FORT PIERCE, FLORIDA

The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion left Camp Forrest on November 3, 1943, arriving by train at Fort Pierce on November 5, 1943. Based on the rail facilities in the town, the Rangers would have formed into companies and marched through the town of Fort Pierce, passed the fire house at the west end of the bridge, crossed the Indian River on the swing bridge where a gate had been installed and ended their march on South Hutchinson Island. They were to attend the combined U.S. Army/U.S. Navy Amphibious Scout and Raider School (Joint) at the U. S. Naval Amphibious Training Base (USNATB), Fort Pierce, Florida.<sup>1</sup> The area of the base is shown on the map in Figure 62.

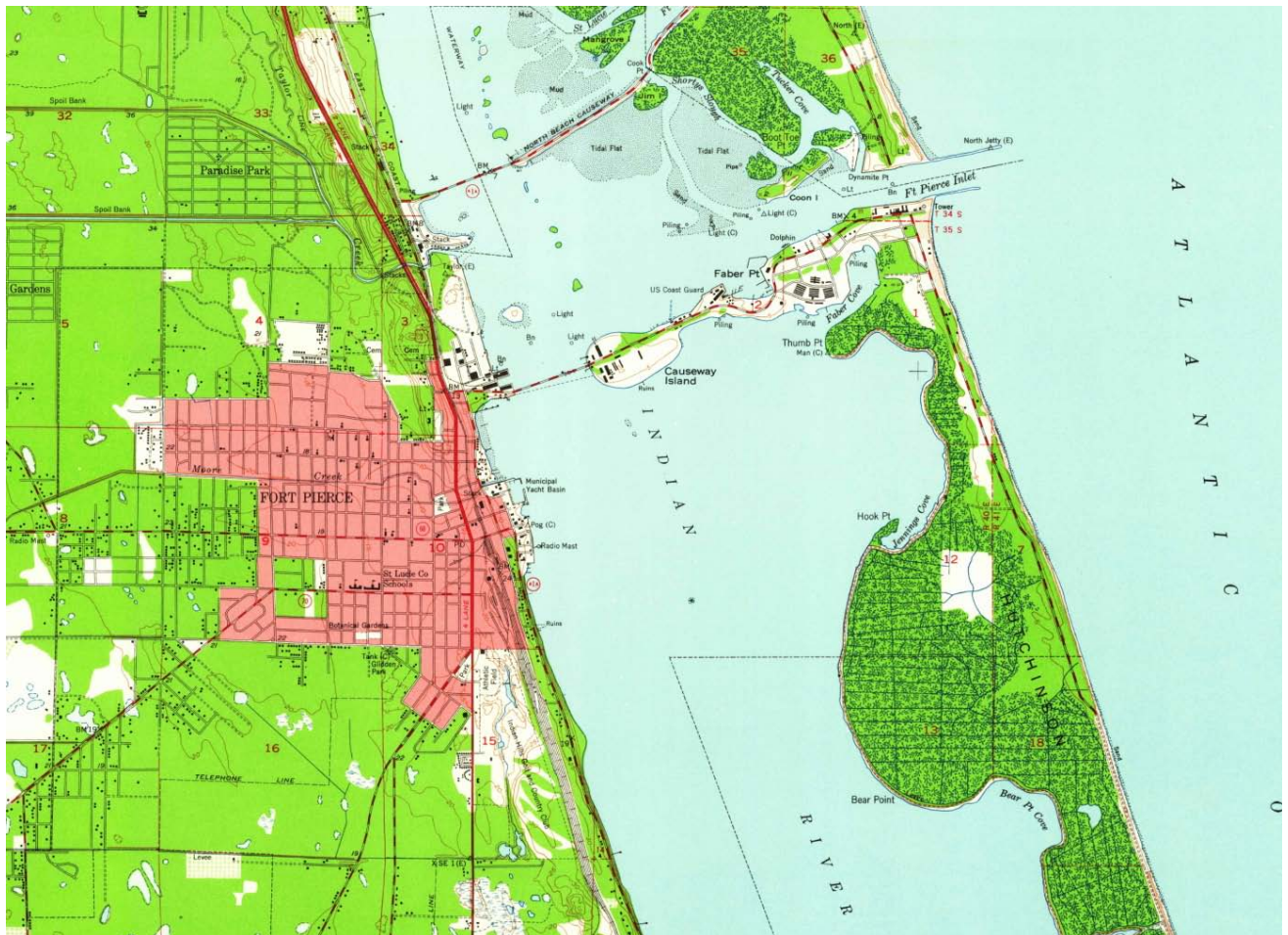


Figure 62: U.S. Department of the Interior Geologic Survey, Fort Pierce, Florida, 7.5 Minute Quadrangle, Edition of 1949

The Spanish were the first Europeans to settle in the area of what is now known as St. Lucie County, Florida. The Spanish established the Santa Lucia colony between Vero Beach and Stuart, Florida in approximately 1567. Old

Spanish maps refer to the area as Santa Lucia, which is believed to be named in honor of the Roman Catholic Saint Lucia. The Spanish began construction of a fort at this location. When the Spanish entered the French and Indian War on the side of France, they lost Florida as a result of the French loss to the British at the First Treaty of Paris in 1763. At the conclusion of the American Revolution, the British returned Florida to the Spanish at the Second Treaty of Paris in 1783. The Spanish crown formally laid claim to these lands from 1783 to 1819. The tribe known as the Seminoles lived in the region. They were Creek Indians from the areas that became Alabama and Georgia. Runaway slaves also began to populate the barrier islands. The Spanish referred to this region as the Treasure Coast, named after the famed sinking of a Spanish treasure fleet in 1715.

The United States and Spain had various border disputes over Florida until in 1819; Secretary of State John Quincy Adams signed the Florida Purchase Treaty placing Florida in U.S. hands. The area of Florida began to be populated by U.S. citizens in 1821. Florida became a United States Territory by Congress in 1832. It later became a State in 1845. The U.S. Army set up a series of forts in Florida during the Second Seminole War between 1835 and 1842. Colonel Benjamin K. Pierce sailed down the Indian River in 1837. A year later, he would build a fort in Santa Lucia. This Colonel was brother to future 14th U.S. President Pierce.

The first rail line to enter the area was the Florida East Coast Railway in 1894, thus enabling the region to grow. St. Lucie County was thus established with Fort Pierce as the County seat on July 1, 1905.<sup>2</sup> Fort Pierce is often referred to as the Sunrise City. It grew from an initial population of around 300. The elevation of Fort Pierce is 16 feet above mean sea level. It is located at 27°26'20"N, 80°20'8"W. St Lucie County is about 38 miles north of West Palm Beach, and about 220 miles south of Jacksonville, Florida on the east coast of the State. The area is characterized by its long barrier islands and low, relatively flat inland areas typical of the central Florida coast, complete with white sands.<sup>3</sup>

The town of Fort Pierce would be changed as the U.S. Naval Amphibious Training Center Fort Pierce was established and marked by the installation of a gate that was set up on January 26, 1943. This gate was installed at the east end of the bridge to South Beach, resulting in a base running from Vero Beach to Port St. Lucie. Fort Pierce was selected as an ideal location for Training in Amphibious Warfare because it had protective barrier islands which were low-lying and sandy, with narrow beaches, sand dunes and marshes. The large number of beaches and estuaries were perfect to act as surrogates for conditions in both the European and Pacific Theaters of Operations. The mild Florida weather allowed the military to conduct year-round training at the facility. This area was considered by the Army and Navy leadership to be ideal for beach landing exercises. The Navy built barracks, a hospital and dozens of other facilities as sailors and soldiers trained for beach invasions. The facility would see over 140,000 personnel throughout the war. Many local residents would rent out rooms for the duration of the war to accommodate the men, women and children who would be off at war. The installation encompassed both North and South Hutchinson Islands and over 19,280.49 acres located along the islands running from Vero Beach to near Port St. Lucie. Part of this acreage was submerged lands or marshlands, inlets and estuaries. German submarines attacked merchant ships off the coast of South Beach on many occasions; in one case sinking as many as three ships in two days. A good aerial of the base (Figure 63) was taken in 1944 by the U.S. Department of Agriculture as part of their routine aerial photos taken throughout the nation as part of their soils analysis duties. These photos are held at the University of Florida.

The former Navy base no longer exists today. There are scattered remnants of the training that went on if one looks very hard. The islands were low-lying and bounded by the Indian River to the west and the Atlantic to the east. They rise only 10 to 15 feet above sea level with narrow beaches backed by sand dunes giving way to marshes on the Indian River. The Ft. Pierce Inlet State Park sits on North Hutchinson Island where a great deal of underwater demolition training took place. The former hospital was located on South Hutchinson Island just to the west of the South Jetty Park Beach, located at the intersection of Seaway Drive and South Ocean Drive. The hospital became the Old Days Inn, and later the Mariner Bat Motel Property before finally being torn down just a few years ago. The hospital building represented one of the oldest structures remaining from the base. The Navy UDT-Seal Museum is located at 3300 N. Highway A1A, North Hutchinson Island, Fort Pierce, FL 34949. This museum has taken the time to chronicle the installation and schools located there. The staff was helpful when contacted for this work.

The Scout and Raider School and those men who trained at it owe their training to several new types of thinking in amphibious warfare experimented with and perfected during World War II. The reason for this was two-fold; the first was the bitter fighting that was occurring in the Pacific, where the Japanese gave no quarter, and the second was

the seemingly impenetrable fortress Europe. One organization to look at was the Naval Combat Demolition Units (NCDU) of the United States Navy. The first of these men would volunteer and train in Dynamiting and Demolition School at Camp Perry, Virginia. These sailors were then sent to the Naval Amphibious Training Base at Solomons Island, Maryland, in Chesapeake Bay with a small group of other sailors. After an uneventful deployment to Sicily, several of these men were reassigned by Admiral J King, Commander in Chief, U.S. Fleet, and Chief of Naval Operation to the newly formed Naval Amphibious Training Base at Fort Pierce Florida.



Figure 63: U.S. Department of Agriculture Aerial Photo showing Fort Pierce.

The Atlantic Fleet had a Joint Scout-Observer Group that operated until 1942. This effort would be the direct forerunner of the Scout and Raiders School. Up until that time, the United States Marine Corps and Army had operated together. The Army preferred covert night landings, while the Marines preferred their more traditional mode of landing in daylight accompanied by Naval shore bombardment, and aerial bombardment to soften up their targets. These differences in doctrine led the Army to team with the Navy, when it was eventually mutually decided to



develop the school. The original location of the Scout and Raider school was in Little Creek, Maryland. The Army had originally operated Camp Gordon Johnston, Florida and the Dunedin training base for amphibious training. When the joint school began, they closed Gordon Johnston.<sup>4</sup>

A tenacious U. S. Naval Officer by the name of Lieutenant Commander Draper L. Kauffman, Commander, Navy Bomb Disposal School, was reassigned to Fort Pierce with the mission of launching the Navy underwater demolition program. Lt Cmdr Kauffman adopted the Scout and Raider Physical Training (PT) course in what the men came to refer to as "Hell Week." In the future, this would evolve in the UDTs in the Special Warfare community and ultimately into the Navy Basic Underwater Demolition (BUD/S) or Navy SEAL training.<sup>5,6</sup> This physically and psychologically challenging experience called BUD/S training is a requirement for any modern prospective Navy SEAL. The first class of NCDU Naval trainees arrived and began to train in June of 1943 at Fort Pierce.<sup>1</sup> These men would and are referred to today as Navy Frogmen, although if you ask a Naval historian or Navy person, they would say that the true frogmen were the UDTs.<sup>8</sup> The conditions of Fort Pierce were primitive, and not enough thought had taken place as to the logistics of this kind of base. The cadre did not have an idea as to what types of obstacles to train for, or how to demolish them. All the logistics of the base were in a shambles including lodging, equipment and clothing. The first four units to be trained became the backbone of what was called the demolition force of the Atlantic Theatre. As intelligence began to mount regarding the Atlantic Wall, the Navy eventually moved into high gear and they began to recreate conditions observed in France for future classes to train on. This included such things as ship salvage, rocket disposal, mine recognition, and the assault demolition practices of the British. They began to understand a particular German obstacle referred to as the Belgian Gate that would attempt to hinder the approaches in Normandy. The local residents of Fort Pierce who are still alive to this day who were there during the period recall the explosions from the demolitions rocking the town.

The Scouts and Raiders School moved to Fort Pierce in January 1943. This School lasted at Fort Pierce until December of 1943 when the Navy took over the school exclusively. The instructors and trainees were from both Army and Navy units. The Navy personnel received an eight-week course that began in March with the purpose of becoming core cadre for future sailors and soldiers. The Army units would receive amphibious scout training as a four-week course. The training included rigorous physical fitness. It was focused on teamwork, hand-to-hand combat, seamanship, navigation, small craft engines, weapons, rubber boats, swimming, hydrographic survey, beach reconnaissance (Figure 64), first aid, survival, infiltration exercises ashore eluding patrols and sentries, voice and Morse Code radio operation and signaling and beach marking with semaphore flags and lights.<sup>10, 11</sup> The training course included a heavy physical component including running, swimming, obstacle course and log PT. Much of the training was conducted at night with focus on operation of Landing Craft Personnel (LCPs) for scouting and delivering small parties ashore (Figure 65). In May, the Navy training was extended to 12 weeks when extensive demolitions training was added. The Army ceased operations at the School in December and the Army cadre and instructors were reassigned in February 1944 and then "Joint" was dropped from the name. The Navy continued to operate the school until September 1945.



Figure 64: Fort Pierce, Florida – Typical training photos from WW II (NARA)

It is reported in multiple sources that the heat, insects, food and living conditions were intolerable at the base for much of its existence. In the early days of Fort Pierce, many men died mysteriously. It was only then that the high numbers of mosquitoes were identified as the carriers of disease and a danger to the men who trained there. Sand flies were also in abundance and a nuisance to the unsuspecting soldier or sailor. There were reported suicides on the base due to cracking up over the bugs.<sup>13</sup> Others would simply run and immerse themselves in the water to escape the swarms, even at the risk of drowning. One resident is quoted as saying “I don’t know if God Himself could have lived there with all of the sand flies and mosquitoes”.<sup>12</sup>

Even though it was a joint school, Fort Pierce was a Navy base and was organized as such. The Navy ran it similarly to the organization on board a ship. To most of the men in the Army, things like only saluting an officer once a day, was very strange. The result of bringing on board the Army instructors and officers truly made Fort Pierce a joint combined arms effort. The use of army fatigues equipment and weapons likewise seemed different to the Navy personnel undergoing the training at the school.<sup>15, 16</sup>



Figure 65: Fort Pierce, Florida – Typical training photos from WW II (NARA)

Victor Miller discussed learning the use of rubber boats for the purpose of training for assault landings. He indicated in his biography that his company was hardly dry in the two weeks of training. He discussed how the men trained to enter the water in the following quote: “The scheme is to have three men on each side, each holding a rope loop attached to the boat. Behind is the commander, the coxswain. He waits till one large wave breaks on the beach, or three in succession, and shouts to go! As they rush into the ocean, the water gets deeper.” They would chant out “ones in”, “twos in”, “threes in”, until “coxswain in”, at which point the boat would be underway with the Rangers paddling hard to move out into the ocean. In practice as he described, the waves often would not cooperate, but they eventually caught on.

He talked about training one night where the objective was to make an assault of the beach in rubber boats. They were next to cross the barrier island and then re-launch on the inter-coastal waterway to make their final assault on an airport on the mainland. He talked about the sea being phosphorescent likely due to the plankton or other sea life. The navigation across the island was hampered by thickets of mangrove. He discussed crabbing with several fellow Rangers which was comical to many of them. Many of the Rangers accounts discussed how the islands were insect infested. Figure 66 is a collage of many of the typical training activities conducted at the facility.



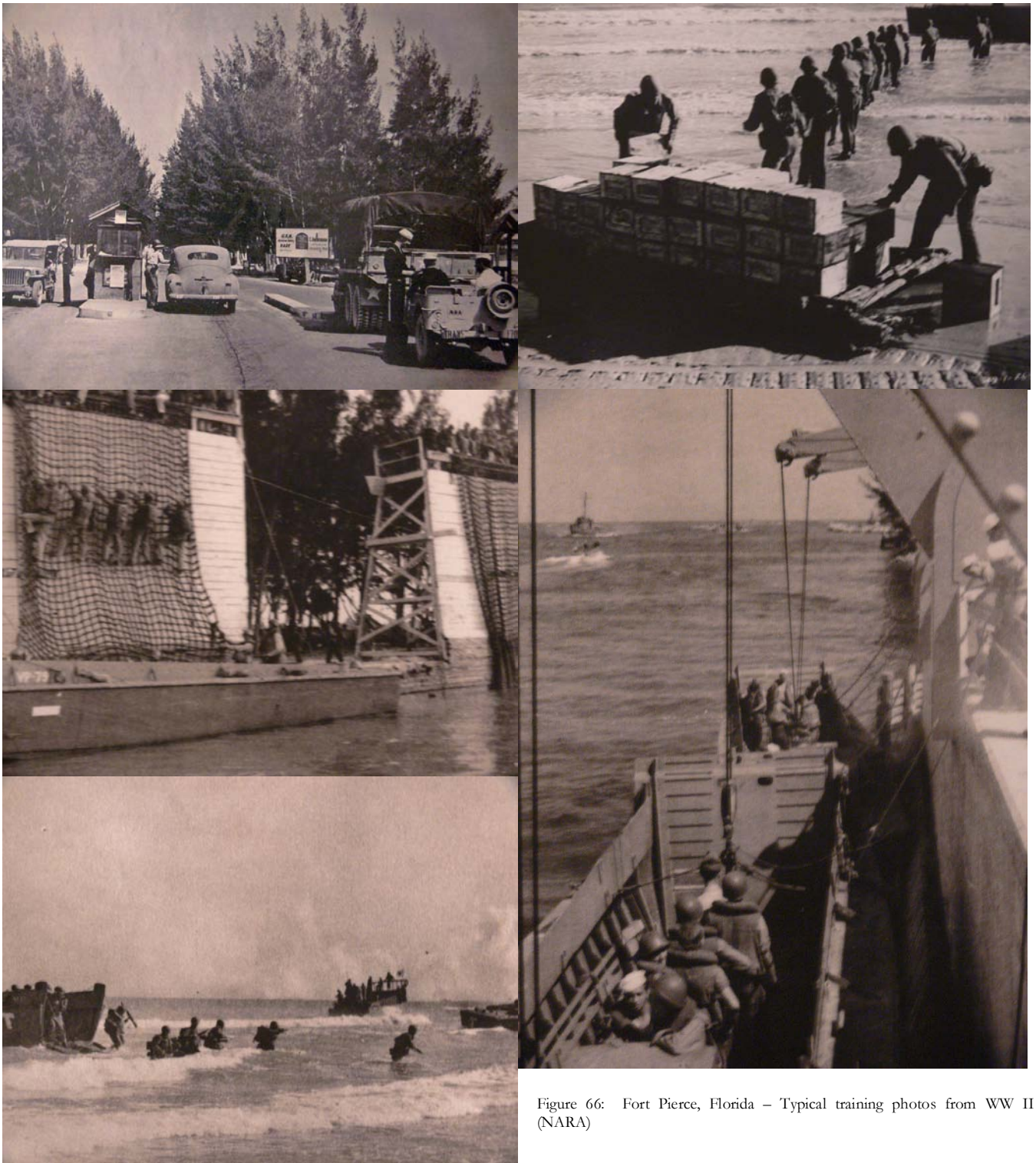


Figure 66: Fort Pierce, Florida – Typical training photos from WW II (NARA)

The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion stayed in pyramidal tents while at the school. The Rangers practiced small-scale amphibious raids with rubber boats (Figure 67) and all kinds of other landing craft such as the British LCAs (Landing Craft Assault) and famed Higgins boats (Figure 68).<sup>7</sup> They learned how to maneuver them and how to recover a capsized craft. As part of this they went into an untiring, intensive, further specialized training cycle in practical use and maintenance of rubber boats. The unit mastered the art of Coastal Raids including the real life capture of towns like Fort Pierce. They practiced the maneuver of other strong-points. They practiced in the tactical study and employment of Combined Naval Operations. These skills would help save their lives on the beaches of Normandy,



and would become an important part of their Ranger training in the months to come.

The Hand-to-Hand Combat course taught the Amphibious Scout was developed from combinations of the forms Ten Shin Shinyo Ryu system of Jiu Jitsu. Physical fitness and an alert mind were imperative. Repetition of movements until real speed and precision were learned was the key. The method of fighting contains bone breaking holds based on principles of leverage timing, momentum, equilibrium, vital touches and the principle of non-resistance. The art taught how to take on an armed attacker while one is unarmed. The student learned how to assault the body of an enemy by targeting areas such as the temples, ears, throat, heart, genitals, and other vital areas.<sup>17</sup> The United States Navy would eventually compile this training in a manual called Hand to Hand Combat for Amphibious Scouts, United States Naval Amphibious Training Base, Ft. Pierce, Florida; by C. Gulbranson, Captain, USN, Commanding.

Known training areas at the Fort Pierce Amphibious Base include: 10.4 miles of North Hutchinson Island and at least seven other areas on North Hutchinson Island, Fort Pierce Inlet, and South Hutchinson Island including Turtle Cove, Angler's Cove, Round Island Park, Pepper Beach, Sea Turtle Beach, and Normandy Beach.<sup>15</sup> It is unknown how many of these areas were used by the Rangers, but many of them must have been.

The final test of the Rangers at the school was to assault both the Fort Pierce military installation and town itself. Their mission included the Rangers isolating the North and South Islands, fort Pierce, Coast Guard Security Tower and Coast Guard Channel Boat. The City of Fort Pierce had its own separate civil defense system made up of Coast Guardsmen and civilian guards. Several units had gone through this training exercise before and the military school command had pre-warned the town prior to the exercise. This type of activity was not new to the Rangers after their time at Camp Forrest. The Rangers used black and green camouflage face paint and broke into small assault squads. Each squad or team was tasked with specific targets such as the power station, command and control facilities. The men used their continually honed skills to use and infiltrated the enemy beachhead. The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion would become the only unit to train at the Scouts and Raiders School to capture the Commander of the North and South Islands Naval Command. They seized mock installations and moved stealthily past the Navy and Coast Guard sentries around Fort Pierce.



Figure 67: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 211. Crews of two landing craft rubber (LCR) bring their vessels onto the beach at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 28

## THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

November 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 198, photo 43902). ERDC/CERL TR-10-10 pg 133

A team of ten Rangers from A Company including Richard Hathaway, Jr. secured a crossing site on North Island for use by the battalion. This mission required these men to capture Coast Guard enlisted sentries and their guard dogs. The men approached the island by rubber boat in complete dark and entered the water once the boats hit the surf to mask their scent. They stashed their boats and took position along a coastal road. After in position, a Coastguardsman and his patrol dog became their first victim. The A Company Rangers then secured this site and held it for the rest of the battalion to land and cross at this location. Moments before the remainder of the companies landed, the team challenged a jeep moving along the road using black-out lights. This jeep was carrying the Naval Commander of the North and South Islands and three staff officers. As the Rangers dealt with their prisoners, the companies scheduled to land did so and began to move east to west across the island. Major Carter spoke with the Naval Commander and then the Commander congratulated the Rangers on being the first unit to capture him and his men.

A small patrol of Rangers approached the Coast Guard Security Tower. One man swam the swift flowing channel and climbed the outside ladder of the structure. Another Ranger climbed the braces on the rear of the tower and the Rangers captured the tower and its three Coast Guard personnel. This rendered the tower out of play, hindering the Coast Guard's ability to raise an alarm.

Company B was to pass through the A Company crossing site on North Island carrying their rubber assault boats. They were then to capture the east and west ends of the bridge between Fort Pierce and North Island. Their next objective on the mainland was to capture the civilian telephone exchange. Captain Whittington's men placed their weapons and equipment in the boats and carried them across the island until they reached the muddy shores of the Indian River. With the bridge captured, the remainder of the battalion was able to use the captured bridge to cross on foot into the City of Fort Pierce. There, the battalion captured the airport, railroad station, broadcasting station, police station and fire station.

Captain Whittington and his First Sergeant Grant E. Constable caused a stir due to their forceful and swift attack. They climbed the outside of the telephone exchange covered in mud and camouflage with their submachine guns and they entered through a window, announcing "Don't anybody move." This alarming action ended up causing one of the women operating the switchboards to do the wrong thing with the switchboard, triggering an alert Security and Warning Alert System of the East Coast all the way to Washington, D.C. During the war the entire East Coast was under blackout as directed by the rules of Civil Defense to guard against enemy attack. The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion was the only unit to so completely capture the base and town.<sup>9</sup>

Other important military concepts grew in importance as the unit took shape. Intelligence and counterintelligence were very important to the ultimate success of the Ranger units. Secrecy was deemed of utmost importance to the Rangers training and movements. Passing of certain information through the mail or other means was restricted during this time. If a man sent a letter at the wrong time containing information on movements, etc, he might find himself under arrest or facing other punitive action.

Figures 68-84 illustrate the combined Army-Navy training conducted at Fort Pierce. Randall Ching recalled a funny memory regarding the log in shown Figure 77. While his section was performing the exercise, the Rangers lifted the 600 pound log over their heads. As Randall is very short, the log was raised up and out of his reach. He held on to the log as it was hoisted in the air with him dangling underneath the beast, as his buddies held the additional hundred pounds added by his dead weight. He chuckled as he told his kids and I the story, concluding with telling us how he had to do quite a few push-ups as a result of the infraction. The cadre did not think it as funny as he and his buddies did.



Figure 68: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 124. Training for amphibious operations where an Army duck receives its loading orders by wig-wag from atop mock-up of assault transport at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 28 November 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 198, photo 43898). ERDC/CERL TR-10-10 pg



Figure 69: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 212. Seabees in a chow line after a practice invasion at unknown location, 8 October 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 377, photo 82511). ERDC/CERL TR-10-10 pg 134



Figure 70: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 271. Navigation class phase of raider training at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 9 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 862, photo 264385).





Figure 71: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 214. A Landing Craft, Vehicle, Personnel (LCVP) loaded with rifle squad ready for disembarking in training operations on the Atlantic coast at unknown location, 1 August 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 392, photo 85064).



Figure 72: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 215. Seabees in landing boats prior to an invasion scene at unknown location, 8 October 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 377, photo 82524).



Figure 73: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 216. Seabees leap from their boats in an invasion scene at unknown location, 8 October 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 377, photo 82518).



Figure 74: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 217. Seabees leave the boats and fall flat on the sand in an invasion scene at unknown location, 8 October 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 377, photo 82516).



Figure 75: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 263. The commandos were tough (Becker, 1946, p 51). ERDC/CERL TR-10-10 164



Figure 76: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 267. Phase of raider training at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 10 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 862, photo 264404).



Figure 77: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 268. Log PT phase of raider training at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 10 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 862, photo 264408).





Figure 78: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 269. Seven-man rubber boat phase of raider training at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 10 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 862, photo 264395).



Figure 79: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 270. Seven-man rubber boat phase of raider training at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 10 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 862, photo 264398). ERDC/CERL TR-10-10 169



Figure 80: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 274. Obstacle course phase of raider training at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 9 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 862, photo 264392).



Figure 81: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 275. Obstacle course phase of raider training at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 9 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 862, photo 264391).



Figure 82: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 276. Training of Scouts and raiders for hand-to-hand combat at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 10 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 539, photo 210908).



Figure 83: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 277. Training of Scouts and raiders for hand-to-hand combat at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL., 20 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 539, photo 210912).





Figure 84: USACE<sup>16</sup>: Figure 278. Training of scouts and raiders for hand-to-hand combat at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 20 December 1943 (NARA College Park, MD)

Upon completion of the training at Fort Pierce, Private Hull and the other Rangers might have received a completion certificate that looked like the one pictured below in addition to the blue version of the Amphibious Forces Patch which was for the Army, while the red one was for Navy and Marine Corps personnel (Figure 85). Research suggests however that the school had not yet begun to issue these course completion cards until later in the war. This did however clear up the mystery as to why my grandfather had this patch among his belongings. If not issued upon completion of the course, he might simply have picked it up at the PX. Based on the wording on the card, he would have been eligible to receive and wear the patch as were all the other Rangers who went through the training at Fort Pierce.

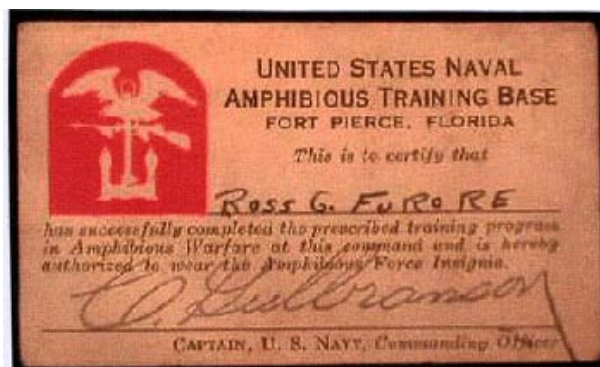


Figure 85: U.S. Naval Amphibious Training Base course completion card

This training continued untiringly, and during all it, the sharp eyes of experienced instructors weeded out the officers and men who were not all that was required for a Ranger to be. They trained here until November 20, 1943 when they departed for Fort Dix, New Jersey.

## 7 FORT DIX AND NEW YORK CITY

Lt. Colonel Owen Carter and his men of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion next moved to Fort Dix, New Jersey for advanced training in final preparation of their forthcoming movement overseas. The unit arrived and was assigned to European Theater of Operations United States Army (ETOUSA) and attached to the First U.S. Army on November 20, 1943. It is known that the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion had received the blue and gold diamond Ranger patches on September 29, 1943. It is not known exactly what date the men of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion received their diamond shaped Ranger patches, but it is likely that by this time these patches adorned their uniforms.

Fort Dix, New Jersey is located in Burlington County. It is spread in part over Springfield Township, Pemberton Township, and New Hanover Townships. It is located at 40°~~00~~<sup>20</sup>"N 74°36'40 "W. It is approximately 15 miles southeast of Trenton, New Jersey. It lies approximately 56 miles southwest of the southern tip of Manhattan Island, and it is about 29 miles west of the Atlantic seaboard. The Fort had a land area of 10.39 square miles. Most of Burlington County is considered coastal and alluvial plain with little relief. The lowest point at sea level along the Delaware and Mullica Rivers and the high point of 260 feet above sea level in South Jersey. Today, Fort Dix is the common name for the facility known as Joint Base McGuire-Dix-Lakehurst (JB MDL). Climatologically, the November average high temperature is 57 degrees Fahrenheit (F) with an average low temperature of 35 degrees F. The average high in December is 45 degrees F, with a low of 27 degrees F. In November 1943 the actual monthly low temperature was 24 degrees F and the monthly high was 70 degrees F with a monthly total of 2.38 inches of rain and no snow. In December 1943 the actual monthly low temperature was 9 degrees F and the monthly high was 55 degrees F with 1.27 inches of rain for the month and no snow.<sup>1</sup> This was quite the change from sunny Florida, and began to better acclimate the men to weather conditions in Europe.

The fort is named for a famous leader in U. S. History as are many United States military posts. It is named for a veteran of the War of 1812 and Civil War, Major General John Adams Dix. He also served as Governor of New York and Minister to France. The construction of the facility commenced in June 1917. On July 18 of that year, the War Department decided on the name of Camp Dix for the cantonment. The Camp served as an important training and staging ground for the 78th, 87th and 34th Divisions for World War I. After the Great War the camp became a demobilization center due in part to its location and for being the largest military reservation in the Northeast. Being stationed here is the only reason for why my grandpa might have had a patch for the 78th Infantry Division in his possession. He must have liked it and picked it up as a souvenir I am guessing.

In between the World Wars, Camp Dix served as a training center for Army, Army Reserve and National Guard units. On March 8, 1939 the War Department renamed the facility Fort Dix and also incorporated Fort Dix Army Airfield as part of the base. The air field adjacent to the installation dated back to 1926 and was formerly named Rudd Field. The newly named Fort Dix was used as a permanent Army post. It served as a reception and training center for conscripted soldiers. It was responsible for the training of ten divisions and many other units. It became the largest military training and staging post in the Army during the war. Fort Dix Army Airfield was used for anti-submarine warfare. At the conclusion of the war, both the Army post and Army Airfield served a vital role in receiving men and equipment from overseas. Over 1.2 million soldiers separated from the military at Fort Dix. What

is interesting to me is that considering the role it played in the war, not much is in print concerning Fort Dix as compared to other bases.<sup>2</sup> In the photo below (Figure 86), note the railhead along the bottom half of the picture and the airfield on top.

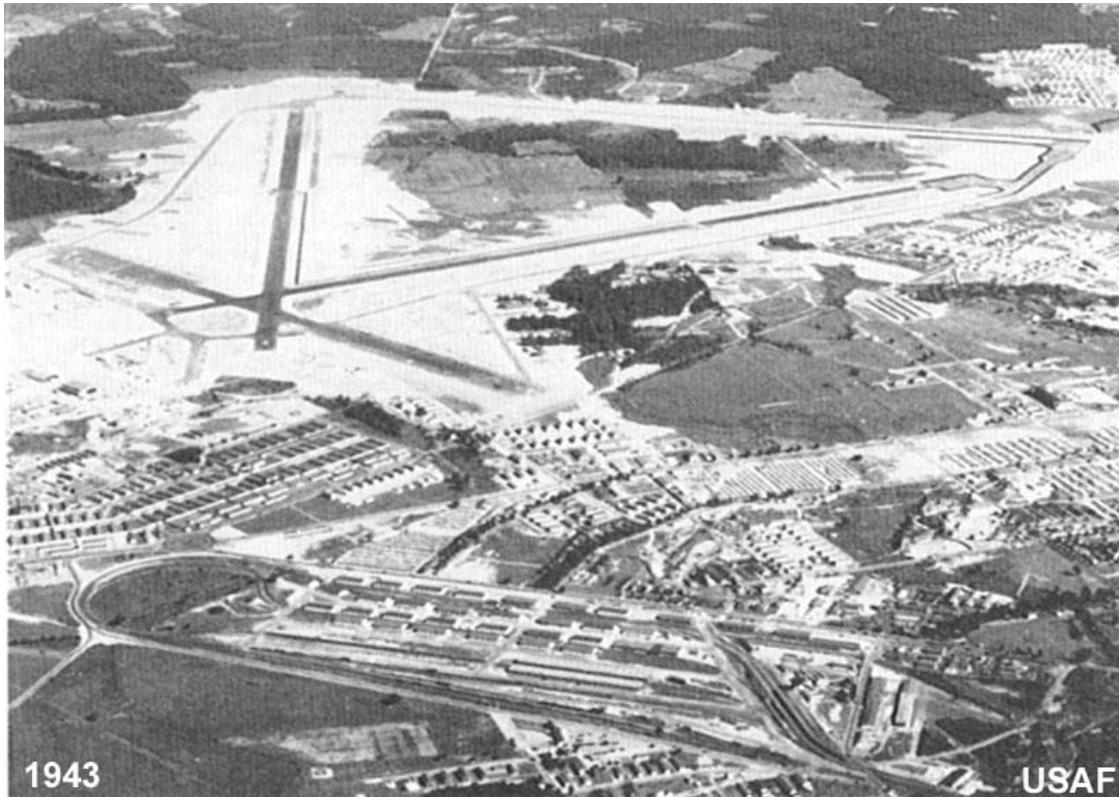


Figure 86: Fort Dix New Jersey, view looking generally east: 1943 USAF photo

The official unit records are very spartan during this period, as are the informational resources from the more noted published authors like Black, Glassman and Raaen. The accounts by James Robert Copeland, B Company, and Victor Miller, F Company, offer the most candid descriptions as to the actions of the battalion during their stay at Fort Dix. Importance was also placed on the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion history for researching this chapter, as it has been indicated that the training of both battalions was similar in many respects.

The result of compiling the accounts of training conducted at Fort Dix for the 2nd and 5th Ranger Infantry Battalions seems to indicate that the training regimen lessened to a degree while at the Fort. Men were able to take furloughs and passes fairly liberally. According to the 5th Ranger Battalion Company Morning Reports for B Company alone, no less than 46 of the enlisted men and two of the officers including Company Commander George Whittington went on furlough in December. This seemed to be the practice across the board in the Battalion. It was here that the Rangers underwent final unit level preparations before their overseas movement and after hard work; the men were treated with a much earned break.

After the training was completed in Trenton, New Jersey, Hull, West and Ching were issued a two-day pass or “liberty” to go and visit New York City. According to Ching’s daughter, “Randall remembers seeing NYC with about \$ 50.00 in his pockets. His monthly pay (as a private in the Army) was \$75.00 a month. Six dollars and fifty cents was automatically deducted for life insurance from the army (a soldier’s family was paid 10,000 dollars if killed in action) and twenty dollars was sent to his parents.” They took the train from Trenton into the city arriving at Grand Central Terminal “Station” located at 89 East 42nd Street in Manhattan. A large group of Rangers made this journey into the city. It is believed that other members of the battalion who travelled to New York included Vern Detlefsen, Wilsie Ryan, JR Copeland, James Stevenson and Arthur Hodges. In meeting with Ranger Copeland in 2013, I saw a picture of these men sitting in a New York City club with some lady friends Copeland referred to as “local natives.”<sup>3</sup> JR Copeland provided me with a picture showing some Rangers and himself enjoying an evening out in New York (Figure 87).



Figure 87: Rangers Detlefsen, Ryan, Copeland, Stevenson and Hodges seated left to right at night club in NYC 1943.  
(Photo courtesy of JR Copeland)

Hull and Ching broke away from the group upon arrival as they were not interested in drinking and carousing and started seeing the sites of NYC on their own. The friends watched people in a Penny Arcade on Times Square intersection in New York City. The penny arcades of Times Square included such notable attractions as Hubert's Museum, "Home of the Trained Flea Circus," and other exhibits. Carl West took the next picture of the two friends. As an aside, Randall and his daughter provided a copy of this picture to our family in 2014 (Figure 88). We had not seen this photo before. The Blitzkreig Bar was a photo booth in Times Square. It had a fake background made to look like a bar with the name. Blitzkreig is German for lightning war. Servicemen would stop by to have a souvenir photo taken, sometimes alone, with buddies or sometimes with local young ladies standing with them while smiling seductively. The props included cigarettes and liquor bottles.<sup>4</sup> This is ironic because neither man drank liquor.





Figure 88: Photo of Randall Ching and Herbert Hull taken in Penny Arcade in Times Square, NYC at set named the “Blitzkrieg Bar” (Courtesy of Randall Ching)

Randall Ching recounted, “We took the picture, went around and see the movie.” Pvt Ching and Sgt Hull went to see the movie *For Whom the Bell Tolls*, with Gary Cooper and Ingrid Bergman. They spent twenty-five cents apiece to see the film at a discounted rate for GIs. This movie was based on a best seller by author Ernest Hemmingway. It was produced and directed by Sam Wood and was distributed by Paramount Pictures. This information assisted in identifying the location the men watched the movie at as the major studios had specific theatres where their films ran in and around Times Square. The Rivoli Theatre was located at 1620 Broadway at 49th Street in Times Square. It was a 2,270-seat building constructed in the Greek Revival style in 1917. The theatre was noted for its excellent acoustics.<sup>5</sup> *For Whom the Bell Tolls* was a love story set amidst the backdrop of the Spanish Civil War on 1937. The Technicolor movie opened at the Rivoli on July 14, 1943 and ran 28 weeks until January 1944. The New York Times hailed the film as “the best film that has come along this year...” Over one million patrons viewed the film at this location during its run. It was an interesting choice for two trained special operations soldiers to go see prior to shipping overseas. The men went together to the movie because neither one of them drank alcohol, hung around in bars or had an interest in carousing with wild women. This is ironic considering the staged photo of them at the “Blitzkrieg Bar”. There were numerous theaters in and around Times Square that played a wide range of movies. At intermission there was live music inside a majority of the establishments.



Figure 89: Rivoli Theatre, Times Square, NYC (Source, New York Public Library)

After the movie, the Rangers went to a drug store that was playing loud swing music. While there they ate hot dogs and drank Coca-Cola, Cherry Coke, Coke floats and Lemon Coke. Randall said, “That’s all we drank, oh, ice cream soda, ice cream soda, they didn’t have milkshake at that time I think.”

The December 25, 1944 edition of LIFE Magazine featured the world’s largest telephone center in the heart of Times Square. The article indicated that an average of 20,000 letters and 13,000 postcards were written and sent from there a month. The center saw over 475,000 servicemen per year to make calls home. The phone center was across the street from the Riolto Theater and adjacent to the New York Times Building. The theater was slightly to the left of the phone center when facing Broadway.<sup>6</sup>

Another Times Square establishment that catered to the Servicemen was the Stage Door Canteen located at 216 West 44th Street under the 44th Street Theatre. It was begun and run by the American Theatre Wing, War Service Inc. at the beginning of the war. It offered dancing, food and non-alcoholic drinks. Celebrities came to work shifts and entertain the men. It could accommodate 500 people at a time and was open seven nights a week.<sup>7</sup>

To Ching, Sgt Hull was tall and lanky and reminded him of Jimmy Stewart. Ching recalled he always had a smile on his face and was a pretty easy going guy. Randall said of Sgt Hull, “He was a very nice person for one thing, I know that... He was very dedicated. It was fun to be with him, but when it come down to serious business, he very strict. When there is firing anyway, he no joke around.” Their leave in NYC was for about 36 hours. Hull and Randall walked up and down the streets asking for directions to famous sites and the nearest USO. They finally found a USO near Time Square and had lunch, coffee and donuts and to "rest their feet". The men then spent the night at the USO Club. The downstairs had a lot of dancing, coffee and donuts and the upstairs of the club had cots for GIs staying overnight in the city. According to the New York Times, “Since World War II, the U.S.O. has maintained its



busiest and most famous facility in the heart of New York, just off Times Square.”<sup>8</sup>

The USO was founded February 4, 1941 at President Franklin D. Roosevelt’s request with the mission of lifting the spirits of service members and their families. It opened its first center in a small storefront smack in the middle of New York’s Times Square. “It was a unique experiment that brought together six service agencies that had been working independently to support the military. The six stars on the USO logo continue to pay tribute to these organizations: the Salvation Army, National Catholic Community Services, National Jewish Welfare Board, National Travelers Aid Association, and the YMCA and YWCA. Ultimately growing to about 3,000 centers during World War II, the USO provided a “home away from home” for the military, Whiting said. USO centers hosted dances, social events, movies and music. They also offered quiet refuge where troops could write a letter home or enjoy a free cup of coffee and a snack.”<sup>9</sup> After the President requested the organization of the USO, the government began assisting them construct buildings for their mission. In 1941, the War Department asked them to entertain the troops. This led to the travelling shows with entertainers like Bob Hope, Dinah Shore and others in a separate subsidiary known as the Camp Shows. In New York City, a huge USO sign was erected in Times Square containing a portrait of FDR that read “The USO deserves the support of every individual citizen.”<sup>10</sup> The facility was first located on 44th Street at Times Square. At the time Hull and Ching spent a December 1943 weekend there, the USO was under the leadership of Prescott Bush, father of President George H.W. Bush.



Figure 90: World War II Postcard showing Pepsi-Cola Times Square Servicemen’s Center (Public Domain)

Coca-Cola economically seemed to be favored by government contracts during the war. Complaints of this seemed to go ignored so Pepsi-Cola’s president Walter Mack bought a Cuban sugar plantation to increase productivity and product quality and built three large Pepsi-Cola Servicemen’s Centers. These were located in Washington D.C., San Francisco and New York’s Times Square. These facilities offered Pepsi, food, shaves and showers and other services such as reading and writing centers.<sup>11</sup> The Pepsi-Cola Company (Figure 90) provided facilities for servicemen to record phonographic records with messages to be sent home to loved ones.<sup>12</sup> There was a large Pepsi-Cola sign installed above the USO Center in shades of red, white and blue using colored mirrors and glass that lit and shimmered in daylight as well as night, and made the best of the blackout requirements placed on coastal cities. In 1941, New York City Mayor La Guardia required that all of Broadway’s lights could be turned off with one switch. The lights went off on April 29, 1942 for the duration of the war.<sup>13</sup>

On the second day, Ching and Hull boarded the ferry to Liberty Island and visited the Statue of Liberty. While up in her crown, Ching wanted a better view and crawled out on to a ledge to take a look. He said that Sgt Hull was too modest to follow him. After their visit to the Statue of Liberty, the two men travelled to the Empire State Building. They went up the elevator to the 20th floor or so, and then caught the express elevator straight up to the 90th floor. They went out onto the observation deck which at the time was wide open without the extensive fencing and cover in place today. These two icons are shown in Figures 91 and 92 below.



Figure 91: Liberty Island, Photo by National Park Service.



Figure 92: US Army photo taken in 1939 of B-17s over New York City showing Empire State Building. NARA, SC 331724



Randall Ching's daughter relayed what I found to be a hilarious story. She wrote: "My dad remembered a prank he, your grandfather and two other servicemen played on passerby on the streets of NYC. All four Rangers would point to a building up in the sky and pretended "something amazing was happening." Then they would watch the crowd gather and laugh at them trying to see what they pretended to be seeing." My wife pointed at me upon reading this and said "You inherited your grandpa's sense of humor." In a separate instance, Ching's daughter recounted "Dad recalls laughingly how your grandfather and he "slept on the marble staircase landing in Grand Central Station." Apparently, they "returned a couple of hours early to catch the train back to Trenton, so decide to take a nap"."

When I sent Randall Ching and his daughter a high resolution digital version of the 1943 photo of my grandfather in Chapter 4, his daughter wrote "I just showed my Father the picture that you sent me of your grandfather, and my Dad nearly jumped out of his pants, and he says, 'He's damned sure, he's damn right' that that man standing in the bar with him in New York City is your Grandfather." Randall spent a great deal of time trying to make sure he was accurately remembering his friend after 70 years. When the connection of identity was finally realized in his mind he opened up to me with great care.

As far as the training goes at Fort Dix, the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion resumed land-based training in terms of shooting, marching and other more traditional Army activities. The Rangers trained in advanced tactics, including five-day tactical problems at both company and the battalion level. They conducted speed marches with a continued emphasis on physical fitness. They continued with weapons firing and familiarization including captured German, Japanese and Italian models. Some of the men considered the weapons training at Fort Dix the most intense portion of the training conducted there. They were provided instruction in demolitions, and crew served weapons such as mortars, machine guns and anti-tank weapons. They received training in the proper use of gas masks at Fort Dix. They continued their Commando training. The Rangers further trained in the art of sabotage and reconnaissance. They began to incorporate the use of enlisted medics at the line unit level from the Medical Detachment. The remainder of the medical personnel developed the tactics of running a battalion aid station.

Randall shared his recollection of how he remembers really meeting Sgt Hull. "Oh, by the way, you asked me how I met your Grandfather. I'll tell you that. I met your Grandfather I think between the Fort Dix and England. What happened was your Grandfather was a machine gun leader, section leader. He got light machine gun, he got three men and himself. A light machine gun is a clumsy weapon. You had to set it up, you got a gunner, and two people carrying ammunition. As a Ranger, we are a light, fast moving unit. You don't have time for setting up a light machine gun, which is mostly for defense. So they gave us all the Automatic Rifle. So now we got six companies, A, B is Assault Company, C, D, is Assault Company. E and F is heavy company, heavy weapons. They will take care of the machine guns and heavy mortar. E Company got 60 mm, F Company got 81 mm mortar. They also got light machine gun. They are the support companies. For us, in case we attack, we need heavy weapons support, they will support us. That's when they got the machine gun over there. That's when your grandfather was assigned to an Assault Squad. That's how I met your grandfather. I met him, because first we had a machine gun orientation, we shoot and know how to use a machine gun... So our Section was assigned to your grandfather, he's the instructor... That's your grandfather as the instructor. That's how I met him." He was referring to the M1917 machine gun.

One piece of information that nagged at me through the research of military records concerned the weapons Sgt Hull was trained in and an expert with. I asked him how good he was with weapons and what weapons he was qualified "Expert" with. Randall Ching provided first hand thoughts regarding the marksmanship abilities and qualifications of Sgt Hull. He said that he was good with all the weapons in the unit qualified as an Expert in the machine gun, Browning Automatic Rifle, Rifle, sub-machine gun, and pistol at least. When they met, Hull was a light machine gun Squad Leader in the 1st Section. Ching noted that to his recollection, Hull always had a leadership position in the platoon. He would eventually move to 2nd Section as the Section Leader after the battalion reorganized to lighten up Assault Sections from the heavy burden of machine guns. After the reorganization, he no longer carried a machine gun. Ching seemed to remember him maybe carrying a submachine gun. Hull was such an expert in the machine gun that he was the instructor in how to shoot and maintain the weapon for the Company.

Ching stated that at some point during the training, every person in the Ranger Battalion received a Government Issue watch. He noted that that was special as no one else that he remembered got them like that. The Rangers used them to synchronize time to handle the demands of the maneuvers. They allowed the men to set and reset time as

needed for coordination purposes. He said, "So I got the Lan Jean, and your grandfather got a Bolivar watch."

A particular treat occurred on the week of August 5, 2013 while writing this chapter. I had been corresponding with Mr. Graves for the past several months regarding the potential to place me in contact with Mr. Copeland. On this week, I was finally able to have a phone call with Mr. James Robert Copeland and his daughter. I spent around one and a half hours on the phone with them. After introductions, I asked him if he remembered my grandpa. He said that he did. He stated, "He was a good man. He took his job seriously. He took care of his men." He told me that he did not know him in the 35th Infantry Division, and that they first became acquainted after joining the Rangers. He told me they were both Privates. He indicated that as he recalled, he was a PFC and Herb was a Private. He went on to say "they were great friends." Both men had come from the 35th Infantry Division to the Rangers. It was a real honor to speak with Ranger Copeland, and I hope to remain friends with him and his family.

After arriving at Fort Dix, Ranger James Robert (JR) Copeland was attached to the special weapons section within B Company. This was done because of his knowledge of rifles and shotguns and the expertise he had demonstrated to that point. In the weapons section, he trained on rifles, shotguns, pistols, automatic rifles, machine guns, bazookas, mortars, grenade launchers and other individual weapons. He reported training on crew served weapons. Figure 93 shows one of the weapons ranges on Fort Dix. He told his biographer Mr. Gary Graves, "They taught me how to tear every weapon apart piece by piece and put it back together again, JR' said, and I was damn good at it." His expertise and skill as a Ranger got him promoted from Tec 5 to Sergeant on December 4, 1943 and made him a 'Special Weapons Unit NCO,' (Non-Commissioned Officer). "The Rangers did things differently; they were tough and they were serious," JR said. "If you knew something special then you were recognized for it. If a person had a talent for something they let him do it. The Rangers were much smarter than the normal Army," he said. "They didn't pigeon-hole you—making you just another grunt soldier. They made you 'the individual' a weapon too, they liked to say."<sup>3</sup> He also discussed some of the free time afforded to him while at Fort Dix, including trips to New York and meeting with family. Ranger Copeland concluded his thoughts by saying that he had learned a lot at Fort Dix, and that the knowledge went on to serve him well on D-Day. He noted that his skill and personality made him stand out amongst his fellow Rangers, catching the eyes of his superiors. He would later see another promotion.



Figure 93:Fort Dix Rifle Range postcard: Public Domain

Ranger Miller indicated in his autobiography several points of interest. After leaving Fort Pierce, he recalled heading up the East coast by train. He recounted being housed in pyramidal tents with wooden floors and a heating stove in the center. He recalled being out in the field most of the time at the base being kept busy with training



exercises. As part of the training, he recalled participating in opposing forces exercises where one company would defend a town at night while another would attack. He recalled hiding in the woods throughout the day. He recounted being tasked once to assist some of the officers in his company conduct the ever-present Army inventory on unit property. This little hint of standard Army life was neat to read about. He lastly indicated that the activities at Fort Dix “were rather mild.” Considering the types of things that the unit did to train, this makes sense. His autobiography is full of colorful stories of a personal nature that add to its value.<sup>14</sup> USGS mapping and an aerial photo of the fort are in Figures 94 and 95.



Figure 94: U.S. Department of the Interior Geologic Survey, Columbus & New Egypt, New Jersey, 7.5 Minute Quadrangles, Edition of 1948



Figure 95: Aerial View of Fort Dix, NJ: Postcard, Public Domain

One difference between the training of the two Ranger battalions seems to have been that the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion moved to Camp Ritchie, Penn Mar, Maryland for the purpose of a three day military intelligence course. Camp Ritchie is located in Central Maryland in the northeastern corner of Washington County off of State Route 550 near the Pennsylvania State line. The site is situated approximately 20 miles north of Frederick and 15 miles northeast of Hagerstown. The War Department activated the camp as a Military Intelligence Training Center. General Raaen later shared with me that the 5<sup>th</sup> Rangers simply did not have enough time for this training before shipping out.

The Company Morning Reports provided a measure of answers in addition new questions regarding the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion's time at Fort Dix. The record shows that on December, 11, 1943, some of the officers from Headquarters Company departed on train from Fort Hamilton, New York at 1900 hours. Fort Hamilton, NY was the headquarters for the New York Port of Embarkation (Figure 96). They departed by truck and arrived at Pier 86 and on December 12, they boarded NY659 and 9664 NNX at 2100 hours. On December 19, this group reported being on NY659, 9664 NNX, and on December 20, reported arriving in Crew Wales, England, where they disembarked and boarded a train at 1530 hours.



Figure 96: Fort Hamilton, NY: US Army Photo

This record captures the movement of a small advanced party sent to England to prepare the way for the Battalion to follow. Another record revealed the mechanism of the movement of the Battalion from Fort Dix to Camp Kilmer, their next stop. The December 20 HQ Company Morning Report indicated:

HQ 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion departed from Fort Dix, NJ on December 20, 1943 at 1210 by rail for permanent change of station per letter file 370.5/296 (GMHMC ?) Hq XIII Corps Fort DuPont, Delaware dated November 10m 1943. Arrive Camp Kilmer NJ December 20, 1943 at 1420 with a strength of 5 Officers.

Even though the official information gathered on the Ranger's time at Fort Dix is limited, as far as the search for my grandfather went, there could not have been a more important chapter in the exploits of the unit in terms of finding him. As I noted in Chapter 5, I visited the USHEC in Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania on March 28, 2012. It was during this visit that I reviewed the holdings for both Colonel Robert W. Black and Major General John C. Raaen, Jr. In reading Colonel Black's files, I came across a copy of the B Company Morning Report for December 16, 1943 (Figure 97). This singular record represented the first concrete proof found from the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion that showed Tec 5 Herbert Hull as belonging to the unit before they moved overseas to Europe. This record shows his promotion to Sergeant. It was the conclusive evidence to prove that he was not a replacement Ranger as had been originally postulated by Mr. Styles and General Raaen at the beginning of this quest. It validated so much of the oral history of the family. Both Colonel Black and General Raaen were pleased with this find, encouraged me and told me





## 8 CAMP KILMER – PREPARATION FOR MOVEMENT OVERSEAS

Arriving at Camp Kilmer, New Jersey on the 20th of December 1943, the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion was assigned billeting at Bldg #T-947 Area #9 and other buildings in this area. The map below (Figure 98) denotes the area assigned to the Rangers. Camp Kilmer was a staging area as part of the final preparation of men and their units before heading for the New York Port of Embarkation (NYPE) on January 7, 1944.

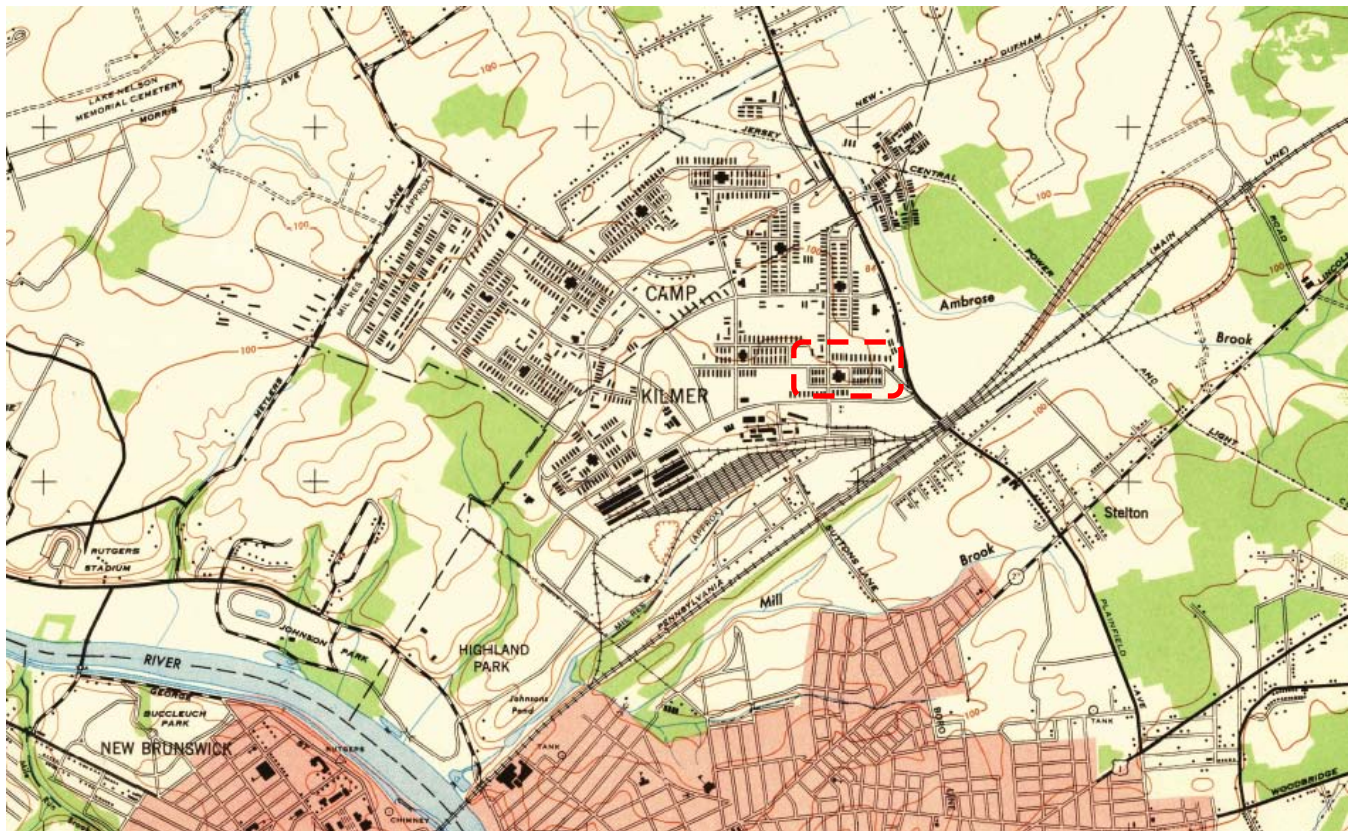


Figure 98: U.S. Department of the Interior Geologic Survey, Plainfield, New Jersey; Scale: 1:24,000; Edition of 1947: Area nine assigned to 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion is marked in red.<sup>1</sup>

I was able to place the unit specifically at this location by means of a personnel identification card for my grandpa provided to me by my aunt. She found this as part of his belongings that she had stored away in a box once I had begun my research. This type of card was mandatory for all personnel preparing to depart overseas. It contained basic personal information for the soldier, and was signed by the company commanding officer. In Sgt Hull's case, it was signed by Captain George P. Whittington. A copy of this card follows (Figure 99) with a map produced by the Army (Figure 100) showing the numbered areas of the Camp. It is these little clues that can help a family or veteran trace the military service of the veteran.





Figure 99: S/Sgt Hull Identification Card from Camp Kilmer

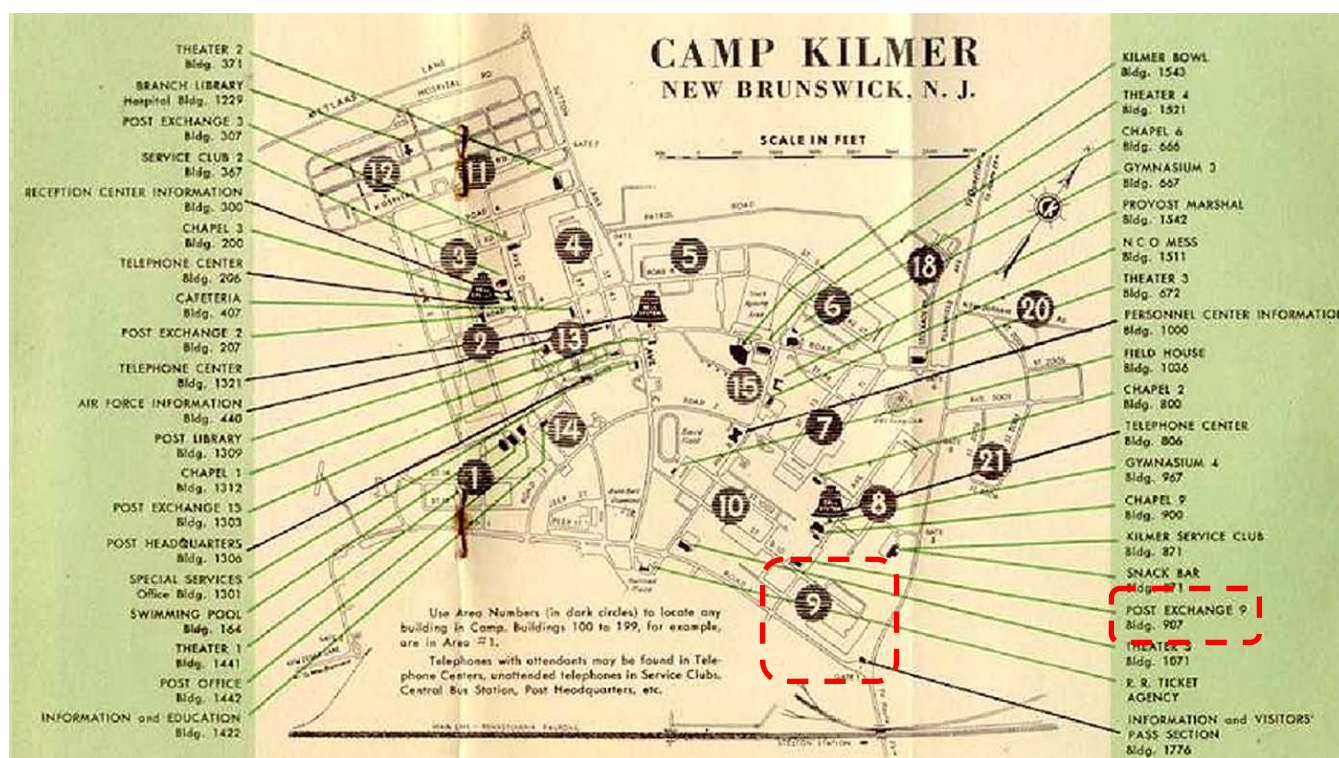


Figure 100: U.S. Army Installation Map of Camp Kilmer showing locations of various areas and important areas. Area nine assigned to 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion is marked in red: Courtesy of Rutgers University Library.<sup>2</sup>

Camp Kilmer was located in Piscataway and Edison (formerly Raridan) Townships in Middlesex County, New Jersey. It is located at 40°31'00"N 74°26'45"W. It was two miles north of New Brunswick and four miles south of Plainfield. New York City is 22 miles to the northeast and Philadelphia, Pennsylvania is 33 miles to the southwest. The Pennsylvania Railroad mainline served the Camp with service to New York City. Many of the troop movements would take soldiers by train to ferry stations in Bayonne and Hoboken, New Jersey which is opposite the NYPE along the Hudson River. There was a large flyover loop which crossed four mainline tracks that allowed movements into the large train loading yards associated with Camp Kilmer. The Port Reading branch of the Reading Railroad also served Camp Kilmer as did the Amboy branch of the Lehigh Valley Railroad. It was located near US Route 1. The location of Camp Kilmer in association with the surrounding area is shown in Figure 101.



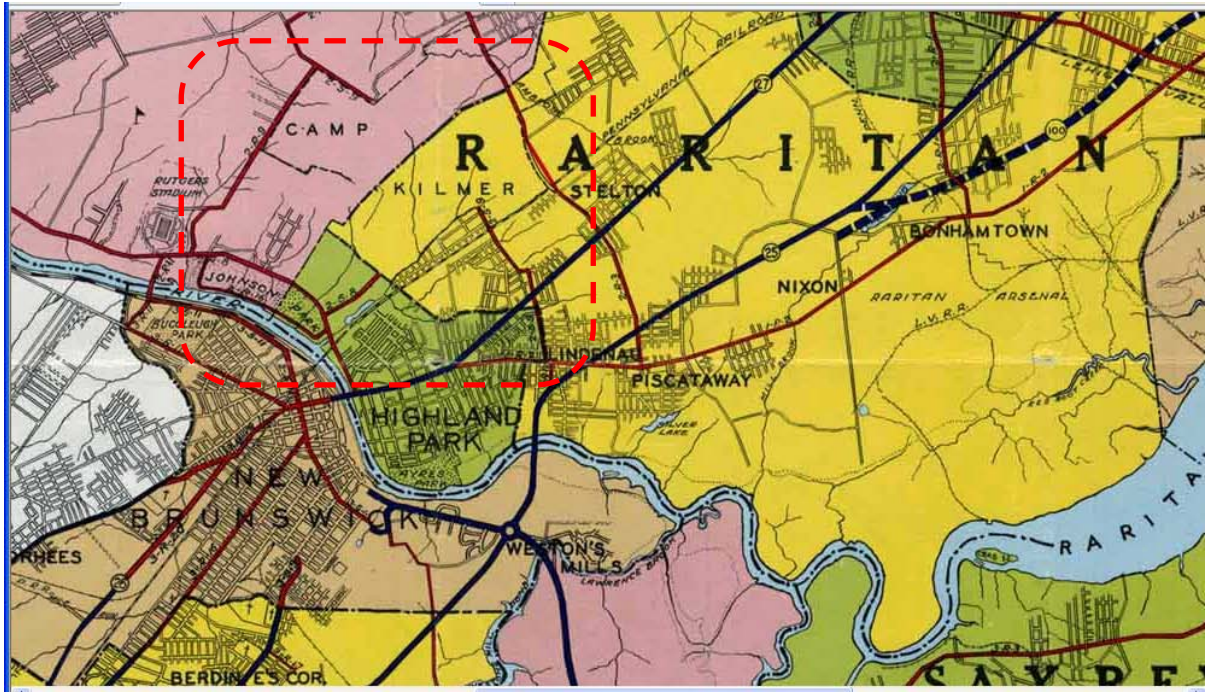


Figure 101: 1947 map of Middlesex County, Acme Photo and Blueprint Company, Inc: Public Domain<sup>3</sup>

Piscataway was founded in 1666, and officially incorporated in 1798. The community, the fifth oldest municipality in New Jersey, has grown from Native American Indian territory, through a colonial period and is one of the links in the earliest settlement of the Atlantic seacoast that ultimately led to the formation of the United States.<sup>4</sup>

Edison, formerly known as Raritan Township, was first settled in the late 1600's, when it was part of Woodbridge and Piscataway townships. One of the many passengers carried on the Pennsylvania line to Raritan was Thomas Alva Edison, later to be known as the "Wizard of Menlo Park". It is said that he chose the Menlo Park site for his laboratories because it was the highest point along the Pennsylvania Railroad between New York and Philadelphia. The establishment of Thomas Edison's industrial research laboratory - he preferred calling it his "invention factory" - in 1876 brought global fame to the township as it became the site for some of the most innovative research and manufacturing feats in world history. While there, Thomas Edison invented items that led to more than 400 patents. These Menlo Park inventions include the phonograph, the electric railway (which incidentally, ran along present day Middlesex Avenue) and the incandescent lamp. In 1954, a group of citizens proposed a change in the name of the township, partially because of the confusion arising from the fact that several municipalities in the state were named Raritan. The name the voters selected was Edison.<sup>5</sup>

Camp Kilmer owes its name to World War I soldier-poet Sgt. Alfred Joyce Kilmer who grew up in nearby New Brunswick, New Jersey and authored a famous poem entitled Trees. He was known nationally and internationally as a famous journalist and poet. He enlisted in the U.S. Army during World War I serving in the New York National Guard 69th Infantry Regiment. During World War I, the unit was part of the 42nd Infantry Division. Kilmer was killed in action when he was struck by a sniper during a scouting mission at the Second Battle of the Marne on the morning of June 30, 1918 in the Aisne-Marne offensive. He was posthumously awarded the Purple Heart by the U.S. Army as well as the Croix de Guerre by the French Republic. A memorial dedicated to him was on the base during the war and is shown in Figure 102. The site of the camp was selected in late 1941 by the War Department as war was imminent. It was selected as it was considered the best location to serve the NYPE due to its proximity to transportation including rail, road and water. It was constructed on farmlands acquired by the government for the war.<sup>6</sup> The Army began construction in early 1942. They activated Camp Kilmer in June 1942 after only six months of construction. It was organized as part of the Army Service Forces Transportation Corps. This entity had the responsibility for all troop movements within the continental United States during the war. Camp Kilmer encompassed 1,573 acres, with 1,210 buildings.<sup>7</sup> Included in the buildings were: wooden barracks, seven chapels, five theaters, nine PXs, gymnasium, three libraries, four telephone centers, 1,000 bed hospital, post office dental clinic, one commissary, one meat-cutting plant, and four fire stations. It was served by 28 miles of roadway and 11 railheads that



fed into the Pennsylvania Railroad mainline according to a Camp Kilmer historian. The camp buildings were largely constructed of wood. They were painted in a bright contrasting color pattern for a desired camouflage effect which was similar to that used on ships during World War I. Over 11,000 construction workers were needed to build the Camp.<sup>8</sup>



Figure 102: Camp Kilmer Postcard: Public domain

Camp Kilmer was used to quarter troops preparing for movement to the European Theater of Operations. It eventually would become the busiest processing center for troops leaving for and returning from Europe. Over 2.5 million soldiers were processed through the center. Kilmer was responsible for staging over 20 divisions including some 1,300,000 servicemen prior to embarkation. It is said that Camp Kilmer was one of the most essential processing and administrative posts in the United States during World War II. It was also used to soldiers and their units which had come into port in the United States. These units would be processed before being shipped to various facilities for training. As with many other military facilities, a POW Camp was operated at Camp Kilmer, housing Italian POWs. It was reported by members of the 20th Engineers who passed through the post that there was little to do outside the camp. Many of the soldiers would befriend local residents while there.

At Camp Kilmer, the Commanding General of the US Army garrison was responsible for all of the First Army units and activities assigned to the post. This included training and operations of units, preparation, coordination, and implementation of plans with other entities. This included Air Raid, Civil Defense, Domestic Emergency, Mobilization and Local Defense. He was responsible for implementing all directives issued by the Commanding Officer of the First United States Army. To help provide efficiency in its military function the Army ran Camp Kilmer more like a small city than a typical army facility. Steps were taken to provide servicemen with various types of entertainment and activities. Over 20 softball diamonds, 30 volleyball courts, and 160 horseshoe courts had been constructed for recreation. The post had its own baseball and football teams. They had their own band and orchestra, and there were also dances and movies including USO-Camp Shows that put on productions at Camp Kilmer. The troops had visits from professional athletes and top Hollywood stars.<sup>9</sup> An example map handed out to newly arriving troops is shown in Figure 103.

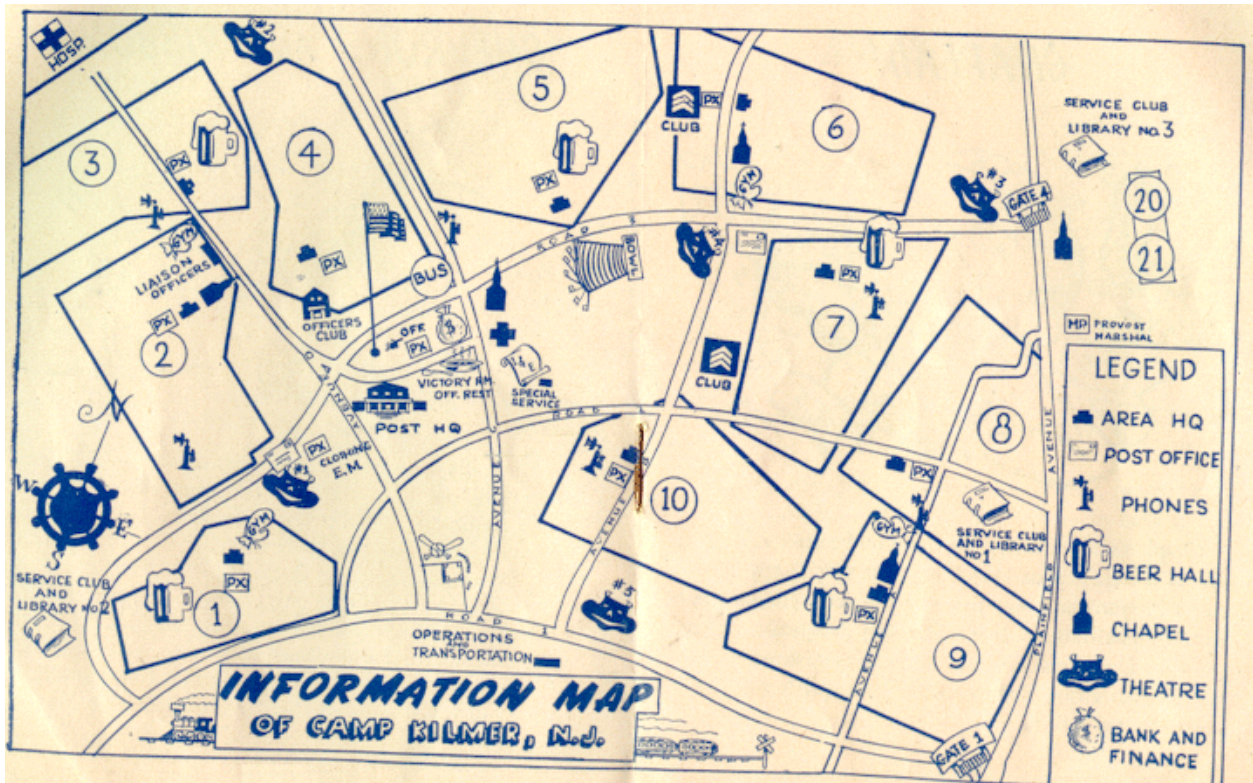


Figure 103: Map of Camp Kilmer included in US Army Publication: Welcome to Camp Kilmer

Since the post no longer exists, the following information is helpful to locate the area. Rutgers Ecological Preserve is about 1 mile to the southeast of the area of former Camp Kilmer. The post was located near Interstate 287, Interchange 2 with Lincoln Highway (Route 27). To see it, travel South to Plainfield Avenue. Turn right (west) on Plainfield and go to Kilmer Road. This intersection is the former Gate 1 to Camp Kilmer. The interchange is about 2 miles to the northeast of the Ranger area.

The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion would have received a document called an Alert Order, Preparation for Overseas Movement. I have yet to find this document that ordered them to England. I did find a later version of this type of order that included them as part of the Alert Order provided by the Headquarters, V Corps to which the unit was assigned as of April 20, 1944. That order provided for the movement of the 1st, 2nd, and 29th Infantry Divisions. This type of order provided instructions as to the concentrating, marshalling and movement of affected units. These orders also placed the affected units under the command of the European Theater of Operations. The military provided a book for servicemen and women to assist them in better understanding the process of their movement from the United States to Europe. It was called Preparation for Overseas Movement, European Theater of Operations, United States Army, Short Sea Voyage; 10 Jan 44.<sup>10</sup>

The United States Army produced a very good report after the war to summarize how the logistical requirements of moving units worked throughout World War II. This report is known as Preparation of Units for Overseas Movement - Study No. 21.<sup>11</sup> The report states that “the culminating function of Army Ground Forces (AGF) was the delivery of units to ports of embarkation as required by theater commanders. Even though in actual practice most units shipped overseas received considerable training in their respective theaters, AGF was held responsible, except in cases of specific exemption by the War Department, for bringing units to a state of complete combat readiness before releasing them to port commanders for staging and shipment. A War Department directive of 2 March 1942 which created Army Ground Forces indicated “The mission of the Army Ground Forces is to provide Ground units properly organized, trained and equipped for combat operations.”

The report discusses in detail how a unit would be handled for movement overseas. It says that there is often an “assumption that normally units were ready for combat when they completed the prescribed cycle of training and that a call for overseas shipment entailed nothing more than a final checking of personnel and equipment and a routine

movement to port. But conditions which prevailed during most of the period from 1942 to 1945 made the processing of units a difficult and complicated matter.” Many steps and measures were taken, particularly between 1942 and 1944 to increase the efficiency and ability to move up to Division size units from the States to England or other points in Europe. Things such as chronic shortages of personnel and of equipment often hampered the ability to maintain combat readiness. Often a unit would find themselves robbed of men and equipment at the last minute as a unit with a higher priority needed fitted out just prior to deployment. Due to the nature of the unit, this did not happen to the Rangers as they worked their way through this process from what I have been able to find.

The AGF responsibilities for final processing of units for overseas movement - which came to be referred to as Preparation for Overseas Movement (POM) - included the following:

1. designation of specific units when the War Department gave notice that certain numbers of various types were needed;
2. informing major subordinate commands of the earmarking of units under their jurisdiction for early overseas shipment;
3. drafting of movement orders for issuance by The Adjutant General to all major commands concerned, specifying units to be moved, shipment code numbers and the agency charged with execution of the movement and giving general information as to equipment, clothing, personnel, and mode of travel;
4. collaboration with other War Department agencies in the preparation and revision of detailed instructions for guidance of all echelons, having a part in bringing units to a state of combat readiness and moving them to port;
5. issuance of supplementary information on points not covered in movement Orders and War Department instructions;
6. coordination the Army Service Forces (ASF) to expedite filling of equipment shortages and to assure movement of units within a reasonable time after they were alerted; and
7. periodic checking, through command channels, of pertinent Ground Force agencies and activities to assure compliance with current instructions.

As part of the POM, units were transferred to intermediate stations called “staging areas” for last-minute processing before moving to loading docks. Camp Kilmer was such a staging area. A staging area was regarded as adjunct to the port of embarkation, and units on arrival therein passed to the control of the port commander. In the case of Camp Kilmer, the NYPE controlled the activities at the Camp in relationship to troop movements.

The War Department revised POM policies, on January 5, 1943. This was supposed to revoke the requirement that HQ Ground Forces inspect ground units in staging areas. The time spent at a staging area was also reduced to a maximum of two weeks. This did not fully eliminate inspections of units at the staging areas, which led to ongoing complaints regarding unwarranted inspections and delays. The AGF recommended on November 30, 1943 that units earmarked for shipment to Great Britain be relieved of inspection and shortage reports except for such articles of equipment as they were supposed to take with them in the interest of saving time and effort. The staging areas were to be used by unit commanders to ensure their men were able to travel. Issues such as physical qualification for overseas service, dental treatment, eyeglasses, missing or incomplete identification tags, and incomplete immunizations were all to be addressed. They were to have all weapons qualifications finalized. As part of the POM, unit equipment had to be deemed serviceable combat and certified combat ready. Subsequent to changes in the POM in the fall of 1943, divisions began to be alerted in accordance with preset agreed upon dates. The command element of the NYPE would take care of issuing alert instructions letters, status reports, movement orders, and issuing directives for transfer of equipment. If the POM were to be looked at as a simplified process, and a unit were to depart in the first week of January, the following steps would be expected as an example:

October 15: The unit is alerted by telegram; dates for Infantry regiments and VQ (provisional headquarters detachment):- personnel, 13 November: equipment, 28 October. Dates for other elements to arrive to come at later date.

October 17: The dates for infantry regiments and VQ changed personnel, 12 November, equipment, no change.

THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

- October 18: WD movement order received.
- October 19: Received port call for infantry regiments and provisional headquarters detachment Camp Kilmer, NJ, 15-17 November.
- October 23: Readiness dates as follows for division less infantry regiments and provisional headquarters detachment: personnel, 25 November: equipment, 15 November.
- October 25: Port call for infantry regiments and VQ cancelled.
- October 27: Notice received that new dates would probably be forthcoming by 15 November, spare parts of division directed to stop packing but ordered not to unpack, infantry regiments and VQ 95% complete on packing, none of the balance of division complete; boxes all completed.
- November 3: Division directed to unpack minimum of equipment necessary to carry on training.
- November 16: New York announced as port.
- November 21: VQ deleted and new readiness given division: personnel, 24 December: equipment, 10 December, advance detachment.
- November 25: Port call received for Camp Kilmer, NJ as follows: Advance Detachment, 21 December: Unit, 26 December - 2 January: equipment to arrive no later than 29 December.

AGF took a poll of lower commands in August 1944, to solicit comments on POM procedures. They received an almost universal complaint concerning the mass and complexity of current instructions. One observation indicated "The sources of instruction available to a unit, for preparation for overseas movement are so numerous and involved that it is difficult for the unit commander to keep abreast of all requirements." Another frequent complaint throughout the war was that there was often an overabundance of inspections, excess of reports, and multiplicity and redundancy of instructions. Inspections often happened by officers representing various levels of command with differing standards and methods of inspection. This complaint follows suit with the 1944 poll. This is the process that the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion went through between October and December 1943. Portions of the process began to happen at Camp Forrest and continued through their time at Camp Kilmer. Several pictures of the Camp are in the pages that follow (Figures 104-109).

Upon arriving at Camp Kilmer as their staging area, the Rangers did their final preparations before departing for Europe. Troops sent personal effects home, received medical injections and the needed supplies before deployment. The men of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion found it odd that they would march in full field equipment onto wooden platforms only to pretend to load train cars. This was supposed to assist them in their final Stateside train ride to the NYPE. The Rangers would take a train from Camp Kilmer to a New Jersey ferry terminal at the NYPE.





Figure 104: US Army Photograph of Camp Kilmer, NJ



Figure 105: US Army Photograph of Camp Kilmer

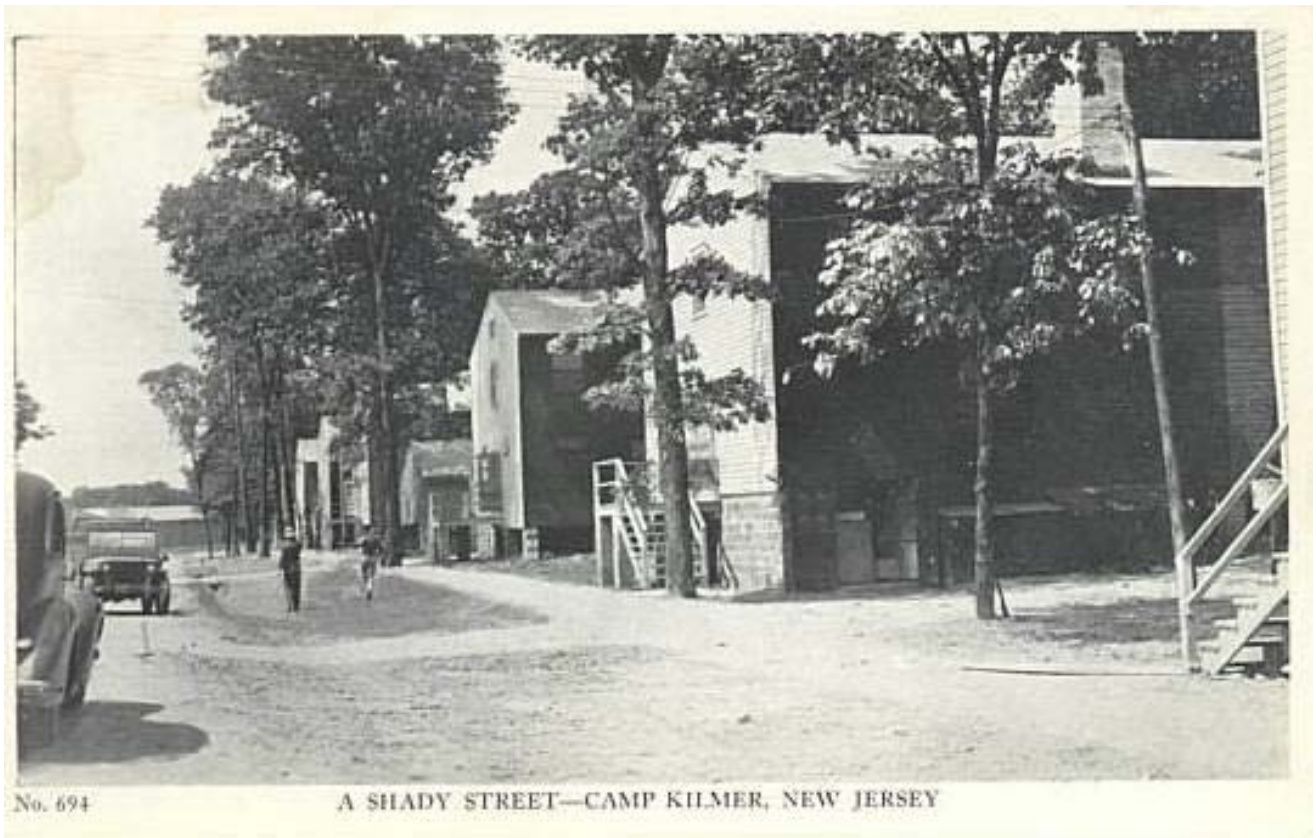


Figure 106: Postcard of Camp Kilmer: Public Domain



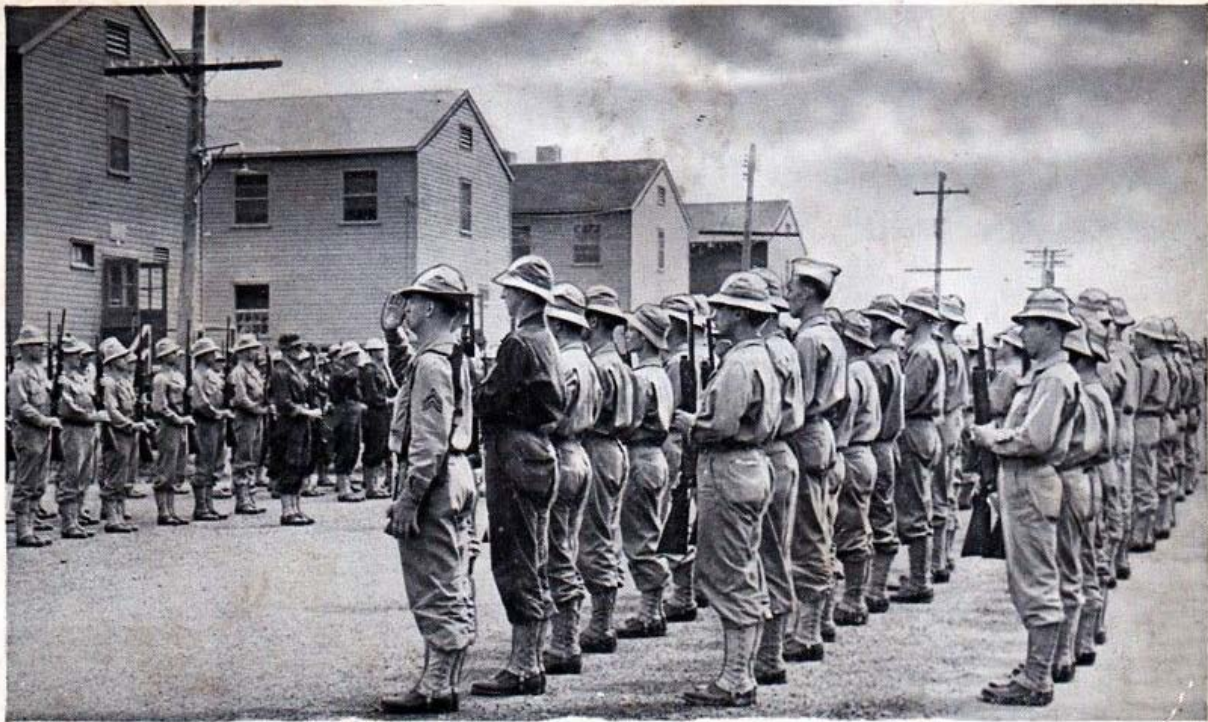
Figure 107: US Army Photograph of Camp Kilmer Gate 1





**HEADQUARTERS BUILDINGS, CAMP KILMER, N. J.**

Figure 108: US Army Photograph of Camp Kilmer Headquarters



**DETAIL ASSEMBLING FOR DRILL, CAMP KILMER, N. J.**

Figure 109: Camp Kilmer postcard showing Usual Camp Duty: Public Domain

THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

Units might travel to the port in one of two ways, either by travelling from Camp Kilmer, New Jersey by train on the Pennsylvania Mainline to a ferry terminal at Hoboken that that took them to the New York Port of Embarkation, or soldiers would move out in a motorized convoy from Camp Kilmer through the Lincoln Tunnel to Pier 72 at 42nd Street and 12th Avenue in New York City. They would then be herded like cattle onto the waiting troop transport ship. They would carry the weight of their 100 pound duffel bags, packs with bed rolls, rifles and steel helmets with them as they moved. The Rangers used the ferry to cross the Hudson River.

**COMPANY MORNING REPORT** ENDING 2400 (GMT) (MONTH) 194 (YEAR)

STATION *HMS MAURETANIA (NY 752) NY*  
 ORGANIZATION *COB 5th RANGER INF. BN.*

SERIAL NUMBER NAME GRADE CODE  
*01521461 MREHAFLOK 2nd DLT  
 FY DS AT NYPE  
 BROOKLYN NY 315  
 20109303 SWEEMER (AWOL) PVT  
 FY HWOL TO 071200*

**RECORD OF EVENTS**  
 7 JAN 1944 HMS MAURETANIA  
 NYPE LEFT (SEA) 1645  
 KILMER NJ 1645 ARRIVE  
 NYPE 1900 DEPART  
 TRAVELLED BY RAIL 40 MINS  
 EMBARKED HMS MAURETANIA  
 NYPE AT 1915 ENROUTE  
 TO SECRET DESTINATION

OFFICER STRENGTH	FLD O & CAPT		1ST LT		2D LT		WO		FLT O	
	PRESEN	ABSEN	PRESEN	ABSEN	PRESEN	ABSEN	PRESEN	ABSEN	PRESEN	ABSEN
ASSIGNED	1		1		1					
UNASSIGNED										
ATTACHED FR OTHER ORGN										
TOTAL	1		1		1					

AVN CADET & ENLISTED STRENGTH  
 PRESENT ABSENT  
 65 65

MESS ATTENDANCE  
 ESTIMATED NUMBER OF RATIONS REQUIRED FOR DAY OF THIS REPORT: 3  
 BREAKFAST: 3, DINNER: 3, SUPPER: 3  
 MEN AUTHORIZED TO MESS SEPARATELY: 0, MEN ATCHD FOR RATIONS: 3, MEN ATCHD TO OTHER ORGN FOR RATIONS: 0, MEN PRESENT: 65, LESS: 65, PLUS: 3, TOTAL: 68

PAGE 1 OF 1 PAGES  
 SIGNATURE: *George P. Whittemore*

**COMPANY MORNING REPORT** ENDING 2400 (GMT) (MONTH) 194 (YEAR)

STATION *HMS MAURETANIA (NY 752) NY*  
 ORGANIZATION *COB 5th RANGER INF. BN.*

SERIAL NUMBER NAME GRADE CODE  
*NO CHANGES*

**RECORD OF EVENTS**  
 8 JAN 1944 HMS MAURETANIA  
 NYPE LEFT NYPE 0700 ARRIVED  
 TO SECRET DESTINATION COLLISION  
 WITH FREIGHTER. NOTED RETURNED  
 TO NYPE AT 1100 MORNING. ELLENT

OFFICER STRENGTH	FLD O & CAPT		1ST LT		2D LT		WO		FLT O	
	PRESEN	ABSEN	PRESEN	ABSEN	PRESEN	ABSEN	PRESEN	ABSEN	PRESEN	ABSEN
ASSIGNED	1		1		1					
UNASSIGNED										
ATTACHED FR OTHER ORGN										
TOTAL	1		1		1					

AVN CADET & ENLISTED STRENGTH  
 PRESENT ABSENT  
 65 65

MESS ATTENDANCE  
 ESTIMATED NUMBER OF RATIONS REQUIRED FOR DAY OF THIS REPORT: 3  
 BREAKFAST: 3, DINNER: 3, SUPPER: 3  
 MEN AUTHORIZED TO MESS SEPARATELY: 0, MEN ATCHD FOR RATIONS: 3, MEN ATCHD TO OTHER ORGN FOR RATIONS: 0, MEN PRESENT: 65, LESS: 65, PLUS: 3, TOTAL: 68

PAGE 1 OF 1 PAGES  
 SIGNATURE: *George P. Whittemore*

Figure 110: 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company, Morning Reports, January 7-8, 1944.

Above is the B Company Morning Report showing that the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion left Camp Kilmer, New Jersey on 7 JAN 44 at 1645 hrs (4:30 p.m.) by rail and arrived at the New York Port of Embarkation at 1900 hours (7:00 p.m.).



## 9 NEW YORK PORT OF EMBARKATION – THE VOYAGE FOR ENGLAND

In order to fill one of the luxury ocean liners that had been converted for use as troop transports such as the HMS *Queen Mary*, HMS *Queen Elizabeth*, HMS *Mauritania*, SS *Normandie* or others, the military had to enlist as many as 21 troop trains. Ships like the *Queen Mary* could manage to transport 13,000 troops at a time comprising an entire infantry division. These troop trains could be comprised of as many as 200 coaches and 40 baggage cars. Camp Kilmer, located near Edison NJ, was the largest embarkation staging post in the United States, and processed more than 2.5 million troops for the European Theatre during World War II.<sup>1</sup>



Figure 111: U.S. Army Signal Corps photo: Camp Kilmer, rail yard. (Courtesy of Dan Cupper, Railroad Historian)

Its rail terminal had a capacity of fifteen 20-car troop trains, with track leading to the rights-of-way of the Pennsylvania Railroad (PRR), the Lehigh Valley Railroad, and the Philadelphia & Reading Railroad (Figure 111). In World War II, soldiers were notified that they were on "Alert" status within twelve hours of shipping out. At that point, they would remove their division sleeve patches and other distinguishable insignia. Their helmets were then chalked with a letter and number that indicated their marching order from camp to train to port. This would establish their seating and efficient movement along with their fellow troops (Figure 112).

TROOP MOVEMENTS TO THE OVERSEA COMMANDS

129



TROOPS LEAVING CAMP MYLES STANDISH for the *Boston Port of Embarkation*.

Figure 112: Troops preparing for overseas movement. (Wardlow; Center of Military History)

The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion departed from Camp Kilmer on January 7, 1944 at 1645 hours en route to the NYPE. They travelled 40 miles by rail on a troop train initially along the PRR mainline to the New York City area, ultimately arriving at the Weehawken Ferry Terminal, New Jersey. I researched this using unit records and through interviewing Major General John C. Raaen, Jr, where we figured this out together. They arrived at the NYPE at 1900. They then boarded their transport ship, the HMS *Mauretania*, at 1915 hours. I am personally fascinated with the logistics and planning required for movements of people and equipment. I really took time to look into the ways in which the units moved across the globe, which is something that most sources regarding World War II units do not seem to cover in any great detail.

If one statistically combines the military staging capacity of Camp Kilmer, New Jersey with that of Fort Hamilton, New York and Camp Shanks, New York, the result is the largest staging area in the world. According to research into the rail system in the 1940's, there would have been several possibilities as to how soldiers in general made their journey by rail from Camp Kilmer to the New York Port of Embarkation (NYPE). These options included:

- The troop train might take a unit to Penn Station, NYC, where they then would have marched or trucked to the Piers, a walking distance of about two miles.
- That the troop train used the ferry terminal at Weehawken, New Jersey after pulling in to station across the Hudson from NYPE.
- Troops might march to the Piermont Pier where early in the war ferries were used to transfer men to Manhattan. Later in the war, the War Department commandeered the pier and used its mile long length as a deep water port to load troops directly onto transport ships.<sup>2</sup>

According to my collaboration with General Raaen in October, 2012, he indicated that he did not recall having to march any appreciable distance from train to pier, and that the ferry option sounded more accurate. We also concluded that the ferry was immediately opposite the troop transport slips, which narrowed the choice down to the ferry terminal to Weehawken.



Figure 113: The ferry terminal at Weehawken, New Jersey during WW II. (New Jersey Division of Archives and Records).



Figure 114: Weehawken railroad terminal in 1947 with a great locomotive juxtaposed with the NYC skyline (University of Louisville Library).



Soldiers arriving at the Weehawken ferry terminal by train or on foot from nearby Camp Shanks would transfer to ferries (at what the USGS mapping referred to) bound for Manhattan and board the waiting troopships just across the Hudson River.<sup>3</sup> The Weehawken complex contained five ferry slips, sixteen passenger train tracks, a car float facility and extensive rail yards. Figure 113 shows several ocean liner/troopships along the west side piers in the background at the NYPE. The piers primarily used for the troopships were and remain known as piers 88, 90, 92 and 94 on the Hudson River. Today the Weehawken Ferry Terminal is gone, but very close to its original location is the Weehawken Port Imperial. The Ferries of Port Imperial played a very important role in the “Miracle on the Hudson.” On January 15, 1999, US Airways Flight 1549 crashed landed by ditching in the Hudson River right near the USS *Intrepid* at Pier 86. The location of the ferry terminal is also approximately one-quarter mile north of the location of the famous Alexander Hamilton and Aaron Burr pistol duel where Hamilton lost his life on July 11, 1804.

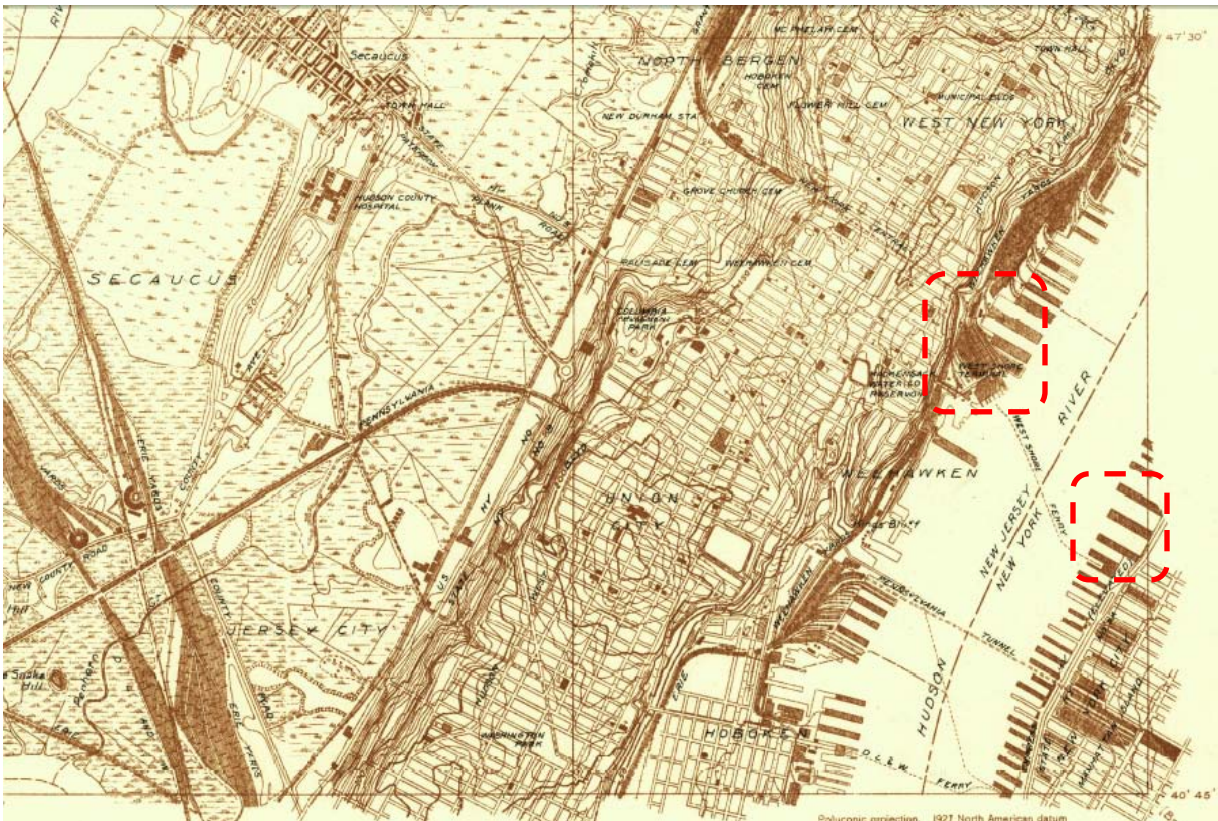


Figure 115: USGS 1935 Weehawken, NJ The West Shore Ferry Terminal is on the west side of the Hudson River and the NYPE is to the southeast across the Hudson River.

The NYPE is now known as the New York Passenger Ship Terminal. It also is referred to as Luxury Liner Row, the New York Cruise Terminal or Manhattan Cruise Terminal. The terminal consisted of Piers 86, 88, 90, 92 and 94 along the West Side Highway between West 46th and West 54th Streets along the Hudson River, on Manhattan Island. When naming the piers along the Hudson River on Manhattan Island, the logic was to add the number 40 to the cross street intersecting with the West Side Highway. The current terminal was constructed in 1935 in replacement of the old Chelsea Piers. The piers were built to a length of 1,100 feet. To meet this desired length, the engineers excavated from Manhattan Island and removed bedrock to accommodate the large vessels. It has and continues to serve as New York City’s Luxury Liner Terminal. Pier 94 is no longer used to handle vessels, and has been converted to exhibition space. Pier 86 has been converted into a museum and home of the U.S.S. *Intrepid* Aircraft Carrier. For many decades, these piers were the only ones in New York City capable of handling oceangoing passenger liners. Now, additional terminals have been constructed elsewhere in the metropolitan area.<sup>4</sup>

The Ports of Embarkation served a very important role in the United States ability to wage war on multiple continents simultaneously. These added to our being called the “arsenal of democracy”. Each port of embarkation was assigned one or a few areas of responsibility for overseas areas or theaters. The NYPE was responsible for northern Europe and the Mediterranean. Our ability to send equipment overseas would have been for naught but for

our ability to move personnel to wage war. The ability to move such large amounts of personnel and equipment required long-range planning at the highest levels of our military establishment in Washington D.C. The chain of command next fell to the port commanders at the ports of embarkation. They were responsible to control the movement of troops and equipment from their home stations to their troopships. The commander was responsible to inspect and process all troops and equipment and make sure they were combat ready. The port commanders were responsible for bringing units to full strength before they left the staging areas for oversea service. It was logical that the port commanders controlled the movement of both troops and equipment from home stations to ports of embarkation due to their unique role in the overall process.

The Chief of Transportation advised the ports of embarkation as far in advance as possible concerning the troops and organizational equipment that they would be expected to embark during succeeding months. As soon as dates were determined, movement orders for specific units, replacements, or fillers were issued to the port commanders indicating the ports through which they were to move. At this point, the system would identify and name specific ships to move the units. TA priority lists were developed that indicated what priority a specific unit had in the movement process. The units were then called forward to the port of embarkation from their home unit by way of the staging areas. The port commanders would also notify the theater commanders. They would do this after a ship sailed by sending a sailing cable overseas giving the actual time of departure. A loading plan was also developed to efficiently embark all personnel in an orderly manner. These would often be upset by changes in unit priorities.

This entire planning effort required fast and secret means of communications between the Office of the Chief of Transportation, the ports of embarkation in the zone of interior, affected units, and the oversea theaters. The advances in technology for communication and encryption were simply amazing during this time. The military used secure teletypewriters, encrypted telephones and other new technology. The need for fast and secure messaging and communications was met by the technology of the day with the end result being a secure network of communications that has evolved to this day.

Human intelligence was also very important, as the human element in intelligence work is often an overlooked and underestimated component of foreign intelligence services ability to gain valuable information about us, and vice-versa. One example of combating this element was an order forbidding the transmission of certain information such as sailing dates, names of vessels, and identification of units.

The next important element to consider in the process of moving military personnel on the scale as was done in World War II was the movement to the ports of units from their staging areas. The process generally began about six weeks prior to deployment. A movement order was issued by the Adjutant General including such information as a shipment number and special instructions to unit commanders. To better assist units and personnel prepare for deployment, the War Department prepared an instructional pamphlet entitled *Preparation for Overseas Movement* (POM), first issued in February 1943 with subsequent releases. Each port commander issued a pamphlet to incoming units containing information regarding the practices relating to the staging and embarkation of troops, the processing of equipment, and port security. The NYPE went a step further and produced a film describing the procedures contained in the POM.

The military moved the majority of troops to the staging areas by rail because the railroads provided the means to move large groups of personnel and equipment efficiently. The railway terminals were inherently designed to handle from eight to twelve trains simultaneously, further enhancing their desirability for use. Confining men aboard trains also enhanced security and assisted with discipline while moving.

Staging areas served a dual purpose. First, they served as a temporary station to assemble and organize units for embarkation. Secondly, they served as a station where troops could be processed in order to ready them for overseas movement. This entailed ensuring proper troop strength and equipment. On the individual level, they served to ensure that their physical condition was up to standard as were the training status and personal equipment of the individual service member. The NYPE followed higher orders in that they endeavored not to keep troops in staging areas more than fourteen days. The port commanders closely coordinated the movement of troops to the staging areas with troopship schedules. The complexity of the staging operation, the mental state of the troops, and the pressure under which staging usually was done combined to make this phase of the transportation task an especially difficult one.<sup>2</sup>

When units arrived at the staging area, the troops were placed under the charge of a billeting officer. This officer had a prepared billeting plan tailored for each unit. The enlisted personnel were conducted from the railhead to their quarters by members of the billeting team. They then almost immediately began processing for overseas movement. The staging areas medically processed men in three ways:

1. Weed out those individuals who were unfit for oversea service when unfitness was disclosed by the physical inspection made to detect infectious or contagious diseases, by the report of the individual on sick call, or by reports of commanding officers.
2. Provide any needed medical treatment to qualify individuals for oversea shipment with their units, if possible, including medical and surgical attention, the correction of dental defects, and the provision of eyeglasses.
3. Complete the inoculations required for oversea service.

The War Department had a policy that troops not be sent to the staging area until they had completed all their training and fired the course of marksmanship for their assigned weapon. The units were also expected to continue active training to prevent any lessening of the physical conditioning the units had built up prior to deployment. It was also thought that conditioning would assist in maintaining morale. Training included conduct on transports, how to abandon ship, evasion, escape and how to resist enemy interrogation. The men received and were trained in the use of gas masks. These procedures explain the training and actions of the Rangers from their stint at Fort Dix through to arriving at the NYPE.

Due to many units arriving unprepared for overseas movement upon arrival at the staging areas, a process of Showdown Inspections were used to ensure units and personnel were up to standards when it comes to deployment. As part of these inspection procedures, the soldiers spread out their personal equipment before an inspection team, usually in their barracks, and the members of the team immediately took steps to correct the deficiencies.

The personnel preparing for deployment would also receive attention in areas of personal matters. This phase of preparation included ensuring troops' affairs were settled regarding insurance, pay allotments, purchase of savings bonds, taxes, wills, powers of attorney, and various aspects of domestic relations. Each service member's service record was carefully checked, and pay was verified.

While at the staging area, the troops were afforded maximum allowance to take a furlough, and to participate in "special service activities", which included athletics, theatricals, motion pictures, concerts, libraries, and clubs for the entertainment of the soldier, and lectures and discussions for his orientation to the life that lay ahead. The command placed special emphasis on morale at the staging areas. They were interested in maintaining the emotional state of the troops as moving overseas often was conducive to disorder.

Secrecy in matters of troop movements was intensified while at the staging areas. There were often rampant rumors within units set for deployment. On occasion secret orders would carelessly get leaked.

Many measures were employed to make soldiers realize the importance of not giving out information that might be of value to the enemy, but complete censorship could not be imposed. Because of the effect on morale, it was not considered advisable to hold troops incommunicado between the time of their arrival at the staging area and the date they were alerted for embarkation. Yet their conversation in public places, their local and long-distance telephone calls, their letters to friends and families, and the visits of friends to the staging installations furnished constant opportunity for the leakage of information on the time and direction of prospective movements.<sup>2</sup>

The military placed great importance on these matters and the Intelligence services assigned to monitor this were kept busy throughout the war fighting the battle of counterintelligence. The primary purpose of secrecy was to avoid disclosing sailing dates and unit designations. During the early months of the war instructions were issued to insure that information pertaining to prospective troop movements and ship sailings was restricted to the smallest practical numbers of persons, both in the War Department and at the ports.

One thing that contributed to the secrecy of the movement of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion in its overseas



movement was the result of what famous public television painter Bob Ross use to refer to as a “happy accident.” There were shortages of Military Police personnel available to cover all of the action occurring at the staging areas, ports of embarkation and aboard ship. This afforded the Rangers an opportunity to serve as the MPs aboard their troop ship and provided a measure of cover to the observer as to their true identity. This also explains the embarkation of the battalion on January 7, when the vessel sailed on the 8th. The men would have had to familiarize themselves with their assigned duty and the spaces of the ship in the hours before the ship filled with the remainder of the troops.

The preparation for embarkation began at the staging area twenty-four to seventy-two hours in advance of the troops' departure. This preparation involved coordination between the Troop Movement Division of the port, staging area officials, and the commanders of the units or casual groups involved. It included the formulation of a detailed plan covering the movements of the troops from the time they left the staging area until they had been installed in their quarters on the ship. The passenger list, initially prepared at the staging area with names arranged alphabetically, was the key document. From it groups were set up and schedules were established for transporting the troops to the pier and for embarking and billeting them. The usual practice was to chalk on the soldier's helmet the number that appeared opposite his name on the passenger list. This was done as soon as the unit was alerted and the number indicated his place in all movements that took place subsequently. While the bulk of the troops and their TAT (to accompany troops) equipment were being organized for embarkation, an advance party was already on the ship preparing for their arrival. This party included a loading detail, a guard detail, a mess detail, and a medical detail.<sup>2</sup>

The men were provided two barracks or duffle bags. The first bag would be an “A” bag that remained in the soldier's possession for the voyage. The soldier would also travel with their individual weapon, helmet, gas mask, and pack. The second bag, identified as the “B” bag would be stowed in the cargo spaces.

The Unit's movement from the staging area to the NYPE was arranged by the port transportation officer. At New York, troops leaving Camp Kilmer or Camp Shanks usually were transported by rail to Jersey City, where they were transferred to ferry boats that discharged them at the river end of the pier where the transport was docked.



**NIGHT EMBARKATION.** *Troops are checked with the passenger list at the embarkation desk (above), and file over the gangway in numerical order (below).*

Figure 116: Troops embarking onboard troop ships. (USCMH)

The troops remained in passenger-list order, according to the numbers on their helmets from the staging area to the transport ships. The troops would be checked off on a passenger list at the gangway to board the ship as they boarded often in single file. While on the pier, they might receive refreshments from Red Cross workers. The personnel team likewise checked the men against the passenger list and the service records. And the unit commander or some other officer was there to identify each individual as they boarded. When passing this checkpoint, the troops received their compartment number and immediately boarded the ship (Figure 116). The Company grade officers would often follow their men aboard ship to observe the billeting of their men. When no one responded to the name read, that name was scratched from the passenger list and the corresponding service record was withdrawn. The field officers usually boarded the ship later.

As soon as embarking troops crossed the gangway they were taken in charge by members of the loading detail and guided to their quarters (Figure 117). This was part of the duty to which the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion was assigned aboard the HMS *Mauretania II* for her voyage on January 8, 1943. The arriving soldiers were instructed to arrange his equipment as snugly as possible in the limited space assigned to him and then to get into his bunk and remain there until announcements were made that the embarkation had been completed upon arrival at his compartment. It was the Rangers who issued these instructions to others for this voyage. Many of the troops were just happy to have a rest upon hearing these instructions. Such movements as were necessary were closely controlled by the guard detail. These controls were necessary because, if the troops already on board had been permitted to move about, the billeting of those arriving later in the crowded compartments would have been impeded.<sup>2</sup>

NIGHT EMBARKATION. Troops are checked with the passenger list at the embarkation desk (above), and file over the gangway in numerical order (below).



Figure 117: Troops embarking aboard ship (USCMH)

The port embarkation staff worked out the billeting plan after the ship arrived in port. The objective in billeting enlisted men was unit cohesion as that aided the exercise of command and the control of movement. A unit's non-commissioned officers were billeted with the enlisted men, and commissioned officers of company grade were placed in staterooms as near their men as possible. Officers normally were assigned to staterooms by the port commanders in accordance with their military rank.

Troops travelling overseas would be able to communicate with family via V mail upon arrival at their port of call to assist in security. The V-mail form would be completed and the new APO of the soldier's unit would be sent to reduce the possibility of misdirected mail.

Throughout the war, planning and procedures were developed to ensure smooth embarkation. The use of these methods ensured that all personnel understood their expectations. The use of improvisation was reduced, thereby increasing efficiency. It is for this reason that an entire infantry division was able to board a vessel like the HMS *Queen Elizabeth* or HMS *Queen Mary* effectively. These graceful ladies were able to embark as many as 15,000 soldiers on a single voyage; the loading was accomplished in as little as five hours from the time of arrival of the first troops at the pier to the passing of the last man over the gangway.

It is historically important to understand what the HMS *Mauretania II* was. The vessel was and remains part of the proud heritage of the British luxury liners of the 20th century. She was part of the merger between the Cunard and White Star Lines.<sup>5</sup> The famous ladies in her lineage include the RMS *Lusitania*, RMS *Titanic*, RMS *Britannic*, RMS *Aquitania*, RMS *Mauretania (I)*, RMS *Queen Mary*, RMS *Queen Elizabeth*, RMS *Lancastria*, RMS *Laconia*, RMS *Olympic* and RMS *Homeric*. Several of these ladies had served their nation with distinction in either World War I or World War II. In the maritime and naval tradition of the United Kingdom, it is proper and customary to use prefixes to denote

longer titles of vessels. In the British Navy, the use of the title His or Her Majesty's Ship (HMS) denotes a vessel in service of the nation. A civilian vessel of the United Kingdom carries the prefix Royal Mail Steamer or Royal Mail Ship (RMS). If a vessel was pressed into service as many of the transatlantic liners were, then for the duration of their service during wartime they would carry the prefix HMS. The ship name *Mauretania* was taken from a province in ancient Rome on the northwest coast of Africa. The *Mauretania*'s sister ship, the RMS *Lusitania* was named after a Roman province to the north in present day Portugal. Both Roman provinces straddled the Strait of Gibraltar.

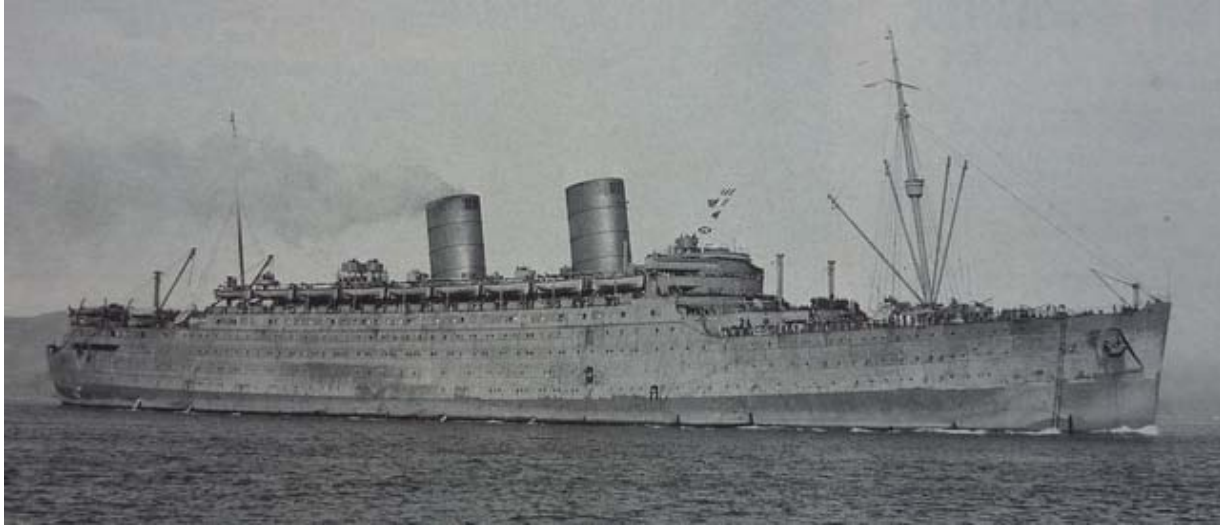


Figure 118: The HMS MAURETANIA II painted in her wartime grey. (public domain)

The RMS *Mauretania II* was laid down on May 24, 1937 as hull number S.S. 1029. She was launched on July 28, 1938 and was completed in May 1939 and ready for sea trials. This vessel was successor to the RMS *Mauretania* built in 1906 that sailed until retirement 1936. The RMS *Mauretania II* was a medium sized Cunarder built at Cammell Laird yard in Birkenhead, England. She was the first ship constructed for the new Cunard-White Star, Ltd. This company was the result of the 1934 merger between the Cunard Line and the White Star Line. She was designed for the London to New York service and was the largest vessel ever to navigate the Thames and use the Royal Docks, and at the time was the largest ship to be built in an English shipyard. She made her maiden voyage from Liverpool to New York on June 17, 1939. She is shown in her wartime paint in Figure 118.

The RMS *Mauretania II* had a tonnage of 35,739 gross. She was 772 feet in length with a beam of 89 feet. Her design was very similar to that of the RMS *Queen Elizabeth* on a smaller scale. She was powered by two Parsons single reduction-gear steam turbines. She was capable of producing 42,000 shaft horsepower and has twin driving propellers for a cruising speed of 23 knots. Based on photographic evidence, I have researched her loaded draft at 37 feet based on photographic evidence. Her peacetime crew consisted of 802. Her civilian passenger capacity was 1,360. As a troop ship, she would often carry up to 6,500 troops.<sup>6</sup>

The *Mauretania* was requisitioned as a troopship by the British Ministry of War on March 6, 1940. Once the *Mauretania* was requisitioned by the British government and pressed into service, it became designated HMS *Mauretania*. She had been in service for less than six months at the outbreak of war in Europe. The *Mauretania II* was defensively armed with two 6 inch guns and some smaller weapons, painted battle gray and was then dispatched to America in December 1939 to protect her from marauding German forces. She arrived in New York and was ultimately berthed on the north side of Pier 86 where she was joined by the HMS *Queen Mary*, HMS *Queen Elizabeth* and SS *Normandie*.<sup>5</sup>

According to the National Museums Liverpool, Records relating to HMS *Mauretania's* wartime service are held at the National Archives in the United Kingdom under the ship's official number 166267. She sailed from the NYPE on March 20th leaving the harbor providing no signals of any kind. She arrived in Sydney, Australia on April 14th by way of Bermuda, the Panama Canal and Honolulu, Hawaii. It was there she was converted into a troopship in 1940. All of her luxury trimmings were removed. She was fitted out to accommodate up to 6,500 troops with the installation of bunks, hammocks and mess tables. She was defensively outfitted with two six inch guns, three 12



## THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

pounder guns, three 40 mm guns, twenty-two 20mm antiaircraft guns and two rocket launchers. She remained in that service through the end of the war, traveling 540,000 miles and carrying over 350,000 troops.

The HMS *Mauretania II* went on to serve until 1944 as a troop transport on what is called the 'Suez Shuttle' between Bombay, Colombo, Durban and Port Tewfik. She narrowly avoided a collision with the SS *Ile de France* on May 15, 1942. After the allied victory in North Africa, the *Mauretania II* returned to the North Atlantic to aid in the build-up of troops between the United States and the United Kingdom. Due to her speed, she would often travel alone. She was a desired target of the German U-boat fleet. On more than one occasion, she found herself hunted by German U-boat Wolf Packs, avoiding being sunk with pure power and speed. She is shown in action in Figures 119 through 121.

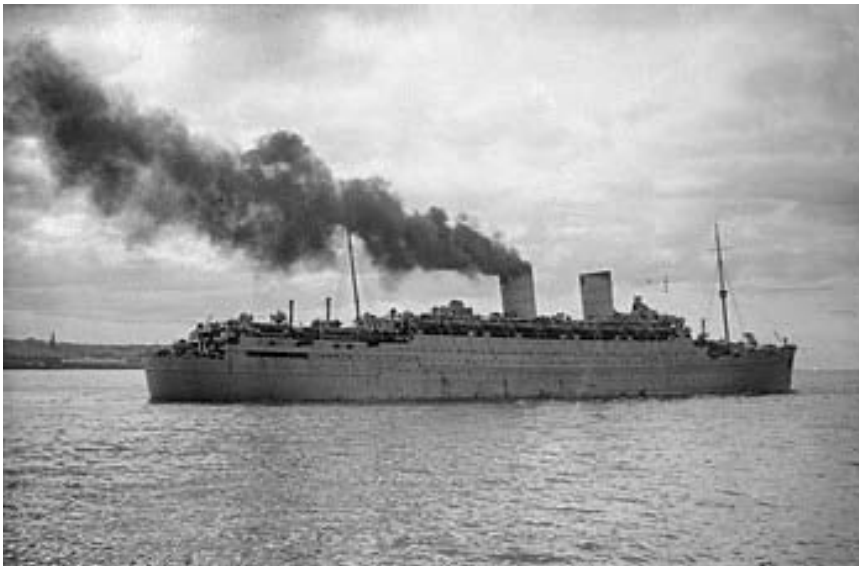


Figure 119: In her grey wartime paint, the MAURETANIA II leaves Liverpool for a safe haven in New York on 10th December, 1939. (MINISTRY OF DEFENCE (FOXHILL))

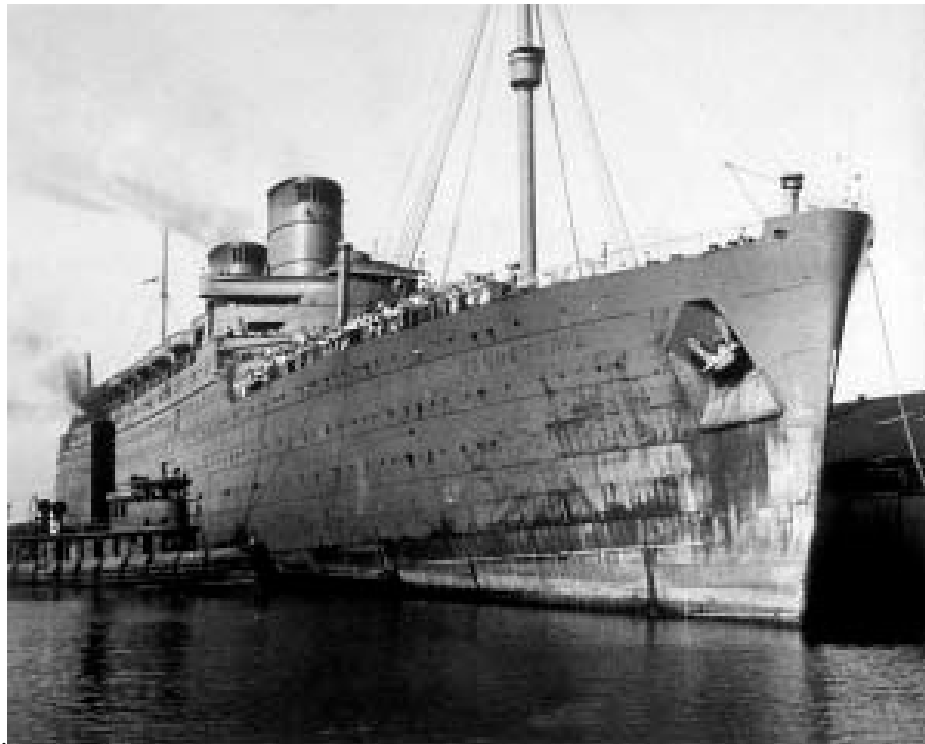


Figure 120: *Mauretania II* docks in Newport News w/2,036 German prisoners 9/16/42. (Public Domain)

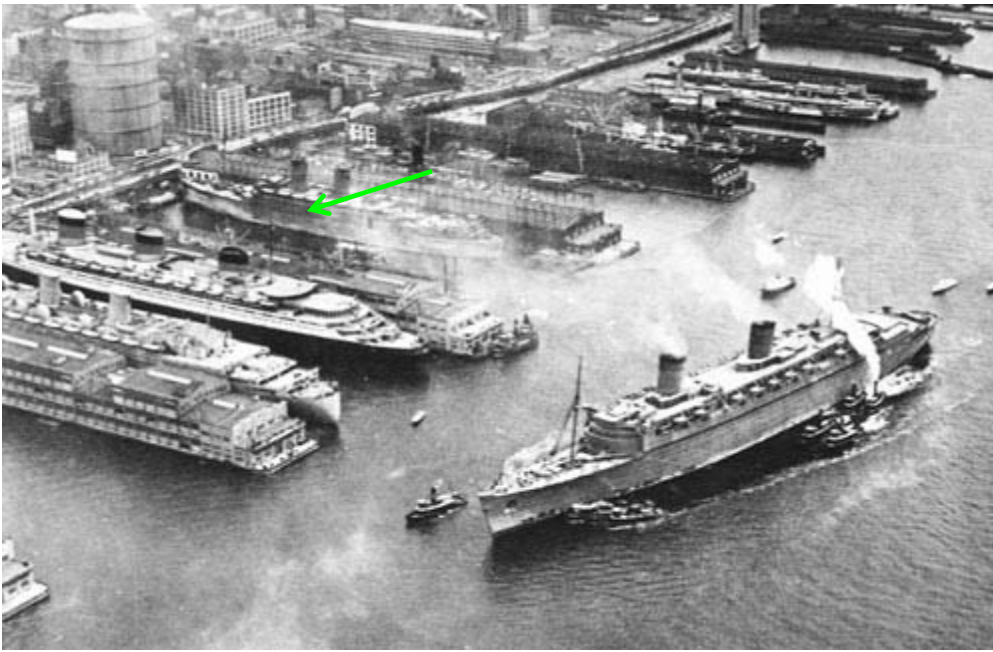


Figure 121: The new *Queen Elizabeth* arrives off Pier 90 to join *Queen Mary*, *Normandie*, *Mauretania* and *Franconia* (Public Domain)

With the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion on board, the *Mauretania* took on her remaining complement of embarking troops. Among the units making this voyage able to be identified were the United States Navy's US 6th Naval Beach Battalion, the United States Army Air Corps, 84th Troop Carrier Squadron, part of the 437th Air Group (glider). Also sailing was the 54th Replacement Battalion, ETO.<sup>7</sup> General Raaen also recounted a Tank Destroyer unit on board as he made friends with an officer that he identified as Leonard Pourney, although I could not identify this unit. He recalled this officer was decorated for heroism later in the war. These units would have embarked during the night. There are likely other units that shared this voyage, as many of the units listed were battalion sized.

The HMS *Mauretania* backed out of its slip at the NYPE at 0700 hours on January 8, 1944 en route to a secret destination. It then got underway south down the Hudson River piloted by a harbor pilot. She passed Battery Park at the confluence with the East River at the southern tip of Manhattan Island. She then sailed passed Governors Island to the port (left) side, Ellis Island and Liberty Island to the starboard (right) side of the ship.

Soon we embarked on the *Mauritania*, a luxury liner only five years old but now fitted to carry troops. This was a British ship which was fast enough to go unescorted across the Atlantic for it could outrun the submarines. At least, this is what we were told! We were quartered on a deck which had bunks attached four or five high on each wall. My memory is that they folded up during the day. The space between these walls and the outer wall of the ship had hooks which supported hammocks at night. All space was used. Our windows were covered so no-one could see in to see troops, and we could just barely see out a bit of open space at the top. We did see the Statue of Liberty as we slowly passed it. (Victor J. "Baseplate" Miller)

What happened next is a story that has historically been underreported in its potential significance to the outcome of the personnel aboard the HMS *Mauretania II*. It was recorded in the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion Company Morning report that the vessel struck a freighter at 0900 hours on the morning of January 8th. In reality, the HMS *Mauretania II* collided with the SS *Hat Creek*, a United States Navy T2 tanker that was equipped to transport either gasoline or oil depending on its mission requirements (Figure 122). This collision could have ended in a maritime disaster that killed thousands and navigationally choked the New York Harbor for some time. It could have affected the outcome on Omaha Beach where the Rangers landed on June 6, 1944 had the collision resulted in the loss of the ship and all or most hands. Considering that it was an oiler that struck *Mauretania*, it is a blessing to the men of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion that this potential disaster did not find them on the open sea. Had this accident happened in the open ocean at speed, or had the tanker broken open and exploded for some reason, the story of the unit could have turned out much differently. I also doubt that most of them knew how close a call they had that day.



Figure 122: The T2 tanker *Hat Creek* in August 1943 (NARA Number 80022 from Record Group 80, General Records of the Department of the Navy, 1798-1947. The photo was taken on 16 August 1943. The picture was researched by Dave Whittaker, Suffolk, VA)

This collision is worth looking at from different angles and in detail. The story comes into better focus that way. This research has revealed telling stories as told by various men from various units aboard that day. When compiled, the story of this incident becomes very important. Accounts from then Lieutenant John C. Raaen, Jr., Sgt James Robert Copeland and Victor Miller of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, help set the story. In addition to this are the accounts of Doctor Lee Parker, US 6th Naval Beach Battalion, 1st Lt. James L Larkin, 84th Troop Carrier Squadron, and a biography of William McLain, 54th Replacement Battalion as told by Robert Gorrell.

The SS *Hat Creek* was designated as a United States Navy T2-SE-A1 Tanker, commonly referred to as a T2 tanker or Navy Oiler. These were the largest of the Navy's oiler vessels. The SS *Hat Creek* was built at the Alabama Drydock and Shipbuilding Company in Mobile, Alabama in July 1943.<sup>8</sup> It was identified as hull number 251 and USMC number 5354.<sup>9</sup> The 500 of these vessels constructed were the workhorses of the U.S. Navy in terms of petroleum resupply. This vessel survived the war and was renamed multiple times under different owners. In 1957 it was renamed the *Amoco Virginia* after some refitting. On November 8, 1959, this vessel suffered a catastrophic accident in Houston and caught on fire and exploded while at a port facility killing many people. It burned for nearly a day and required intervention from Navy and Air Force firefighting assets due to the ferocity of the fire aboard.<sup>10</sup> Although unrelated to this or another collision, that event on this same vessel confirms how bad the collision could have been. Additionally, the T2 tankers had a design deficiency in cold weather that made them susceptible to breaking up amidships. Two T2 tankers, the SS *Pendleton* and the SS *Fort Mercer*, fractured and broke in half killing many of the crewmen aboard in 1952, on the very same day off the East Coast. The United States Coast Guard did heroic work that day and rescued many of the crewmen of both vessels. Later engineering analysis determined that the steel used in the wartime to produce these types of vessels had too high a sulfur content causing the hulls to become brittle under low temperatures.

The vessel had a length of 523 feet and a beam of 68 feet. She had a draft of 30 feet. Her 12,000 shaft horsepower, engine enabled her 5,399 kW turbo-electric transmission and single screw to propel her at a cruising speed of 15 knots with a range of 12,600 nautical miles. SS *Hat Creek* displaced 22,231 tons with deadweight of approximately 16,000 tons. The SS *Fort Mercer* was a sister vessel of the T2 SE A1 type, commonly referred to as a "T2 tanker." She was one of the two vessels that broke in two not far from New York in the winter of 1952. She was reported to be built on longitudinal framing system with 9 cargo tanks, with tanks Numbered 2 to 9 inclusive being divided by two longitudinal bulkheads so that there were 2 wing tanks, port and starboard. There was also a center tank Number 1 that was divided by a center line bulkhead into 2 tanks. The dimensions of the vessel were a length of 503', beam of 68', depth of 39'3", draft of 30'2", and freeboard of 9' 2-3/4". Her cargo carrying capacity was 10,266 gross carrying 141,158 barrels of petroleum product. This configuration would be very similar to the SS *Hat Creek* at the time of the collision. This meant that like the HMS *Mauretania II*, she had very tight tolerances of available travel lanes within New York Harbor and had to stay in prescribed navigational channels with the appropriate depth due to her size.

The reported weather conditions in New York on January 8, 1944 at the time of the collision at 0900 hours were a



temperature of 20.3° Fahrenheit (F), with a wind chill of 10.6° F and dew point of 5.4° F. The humidity was 52 %, with a sea level pressure of 30.22 inches. The winds were 8 miles from the NNW and the visibility was 6 miles.<sup>11</sup> Based on the engineering deficiencies noted earlier, the conditions could have been right for the SS *Hat Creek* to have had real structural issues if the other physical circumstances of the collision had lined up. Had the *Mauretania* struck the tanker in a full broadside collision, the results would have been disastrous. This was decided by a matter of seconds in terms of how the vessels collided. In what to the casual observer appears to be a matter of scoffing at one or both skippers, might actually be a brilliant act of seamanship to time the collision to occur bow to bow. This might not be the case, and the skipper of the *Hat Creek* was clearly at fault, but any other collision would have been much, much worse.

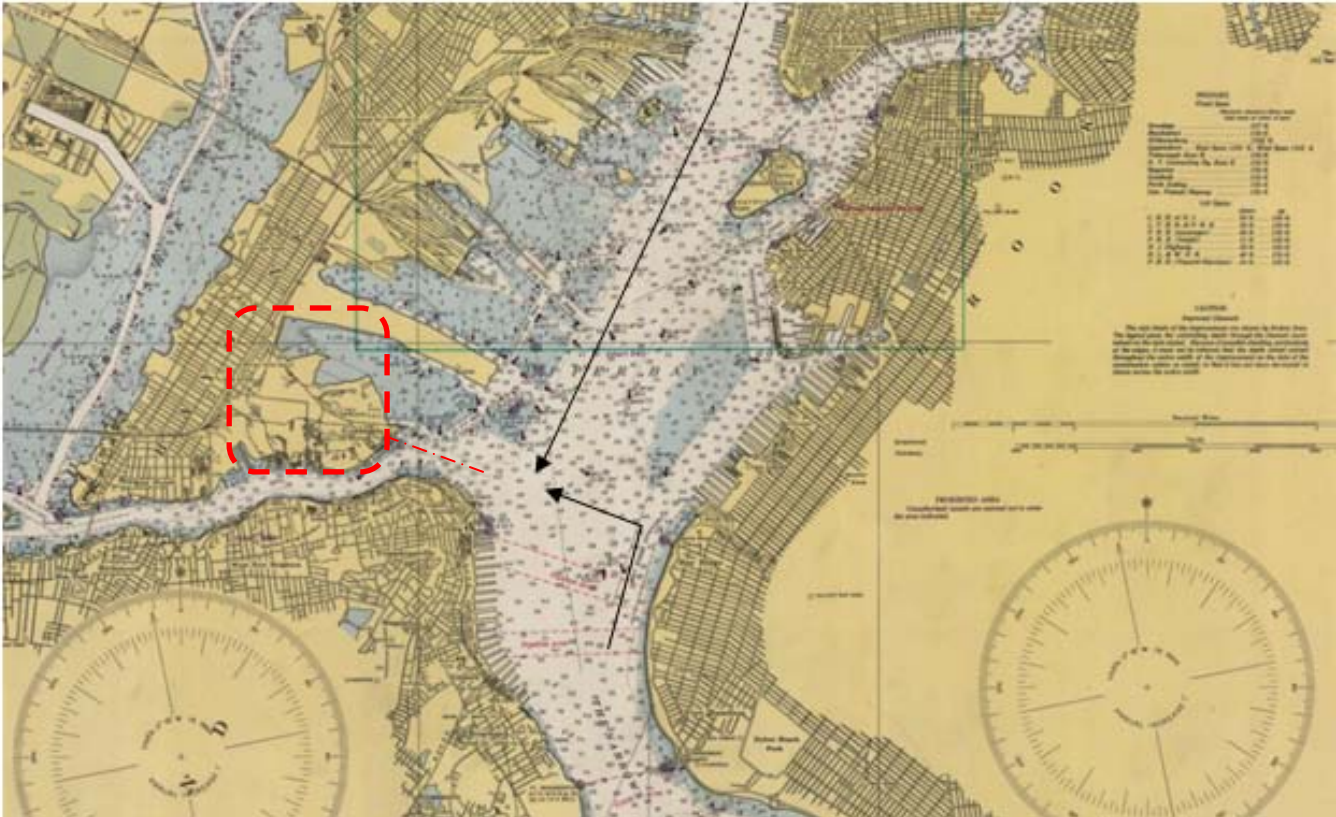


Figure 123: New York Harbor, June 1944, U.S. Department of Commerce, U.S. Coast and Geodetic Survey, Sheet No. 369-06-1944. Arrows are the estimated positions of the HMS *Mauretania* and SS *Hat Creek* at 0900 hours on January 8, 1944

The navigational chart above highlights the challenges in the New York Harbor. The *Mauretania II* was travelling south along the deep water channel of the Hudson River, entering the Upper Bay past Battery Point at the southern tip of Manhattan Island. Following the navigational rules posted for the harbor, the route of HMS *Mauretania* is shown on the map as headed southward on a heading of approximately 210°. The SS *Hat Creek* likely came from the south and came to a stop near the Bay Ridge Channel on the Brooklyn side of the harbor. She then must have turned to Port from station keeping, lining up with the Bayonne petroleum terminal just to the north of Staten Island and put on steam as she attempted to cut across the main navigational channel of the harbor. There was a channel leading into the mooring cells for tankers running at a bearing of approximately 280°. Of all features in New York Harbor at the time, this would explain the reported right angle of the two vessels. One other factor that was an issue for the HMS *Mauretania II* was that according to U.S. Coast Guard navigational information regarding New York Harbor in 1944, the stretch of water in the channel of the Hudson River from Battery Park south past Governor's Island is the most treacherous in New York's Upper Bay due to cross currents of the East River through the reach. She would have had her work cut out just to stay in line in the channel (U. S. Department of Commerce<sup>12</sup>).

Dr. Lee Parker was a combat surgeon on D-Day who served with the US 6th Naval Beach Battalion. He was

originally from Georgia. He landed and assisted the wounded on Fox Red Sector of Omaha Beach, Normandy. He was interviewed on September 10, 1999 about his wartime experience by Ms. Jan Herman, Special Assistant to the Navy Surgeon General.<sup>13</sup>

Doctor Parker recalled in his interview that during the voyage, former Chief of Naval Operations (CNO) Admiral Harold R Stark was aboard to voyage back to his station in Europe as Commander of U.S. Naval Forces in Europe. He was headquartered in London and had been given the additional title of Commander of the Twelfth Fleet in October 1943. This placed him in charge of all Naval operations in the Atlantic.

He indicated that in a correspondence to his wife he told her that they had just gotten underway and were headed for open sea when during the first “Abandon Ship Drill,” the *Mauretania* ran into an oil tanker. Doctor Parker recounted that the SS *Hat Creek* approached from the New Jersey starboard (right) side on a perpendicular path to the HMS *Mauretania II*. He indicated that the collision occurred in broad daylight. This was the only account that placed the SS *Hat Creek* to starboard. He indicated that not much damage was done to either ship and that they put back in to the pier they had just left for repairs consisting of welding plates on the ship. He also told his wife that the Pilot had made the decision to put in to port as a result of the collision. He indicated that a report must be made of the collision. “It was certainly a strange and almost unbelievable sight to see two large ships approaching each other at right angles, both ships refusing to give way to the other. We all could see that they must collide but couldn't believe such a thing possible. However, it did happen and I'm glad to say that our ship, being the larger, rolled a lot less than did the tanker.” The description given in his account was that they pulled her back in and welded plates on the front of her throughout the night. Admiral Stark was said to have gotten off during the repair, to return early the next morning before setting sail. Another source indicated that as the ship was docking, scaffolding was erected and flood lights were set up to illuminate the area for nighttime repairs.<sup>14</sup>

Additional detail of the collision is given in an online biography by Mr. Rob Gorrell concerning his grandfather, Robert S Butcher, who served in the Headquarters and Headquarters Detachment, 54th Replacement Battalion, US Army during WWII.

“The *Mauretania* sailed on 8 January 1944 –a Saturday – and was still well within the harbor when she was rammed in the bow by another ship and compelled to return to dock. In “tying up” she struck the dock, causing further damage to the ship. She sailed again about 1630, 9 January 1944. William McLain described the event: The ship departed the dock in a clear day with blue sky from horizon to horizon. It cleared the harbor with the vast sea before it, only one other ship, heading in, on the entire ocean. He was curious to see how they would pass. As they closed in, they seemed to be playing a game of “chicken”. Then they hit, the other ship’s prow striking the *Mauretania* at the front port side. Both ships came to a stop, then the *Mauretania* turned about and went back into the port for inspection. She was found to be dented but seaworthy. The fuel tanks were topped off and the eight-day voyage continued”.<sup>15</sup>

Mr. Gorrell’s son provided me with the picture shown in Figure 124 showing the view near to where the collision had occurred.



Figure 124: View from HMS *Mauretania* leaving New York Harbor, January 1944. Courtesy Rob Gorrell

Ranger Victor Miller described that the “ship soon heeled over just a bit”. He went on to say that he overheard someone say "The Statue of Liberty's coming back!" He indicated that they had been rammed by an oil tanker and required three days for repairs. He had read later somewhere that the damage to the *Mauretania* had been repaired by pouring concrete in the bow with this being “the fastest repair on job record”.<sup>16</sup>

Ranger James R. Copeland described that they had hit a freighter requiring the ship to return to the dock for repairs that took a day. He also indicated that concrete had been used to patch the ship. He said in his biography that the Rangers all thought the Captain was amusing. “We all laughed our asses off – we were told how the ship’s captain was the best – but he found the only other ship within a thousand square miles to run into.”<sup>17</sup>

General Raean described the incident this way. He said that about the time they would have been or had passed by the Statue of Liberty, he came up on deck. He told me that to this day, he has yet to see the Statue of Liberty. He had come on deck on the port side of the ship. He recalled watching the tanker from about one mile away. He told me that the tanker was approaching from port at about a 90 degree angle. He said that he remembered seeing the green light from the tanker and that the *Mauretania* was showing a red light. He watched as the two vessels closed the distance. Neither turned the wheel and then collided.

When considering the layman’s term right-of-way for sailing vessels, it is properly described accordingly. Vessels at sea do not actually have any "right of way". A vessel is either in the position as the "stand on vessel" or the "give way" vessel. At no time should any vessel actually navigate its way into a collision. No one in command of a vessel may assume a "right of way" up to a point of collision. When two ships intersect the ordinary rule is that the ship on the left must give way. The stand on vessel to the right sees the green light on the starboard (right) of the vessel approaching at the intersect course. The give way vessel sees the red light on the port (left) side of the stand on ship approaching from the right. If the courses are intersecting, the helmsman usually gives way to the red light by reducing speed and going around the stern (rear of the stand on vessel. This would safely take the vessel through the wake of the stand on vessel. Another rule is that all vessels are to give way to powered vessels that are constrained by their draft or restricted in their ability to maneuver. By maritime tradition the application of the saying "If to starboard red appear, tis your duty to keep clear" should be followed by all helmsmen. Figure 125 illustrates this.



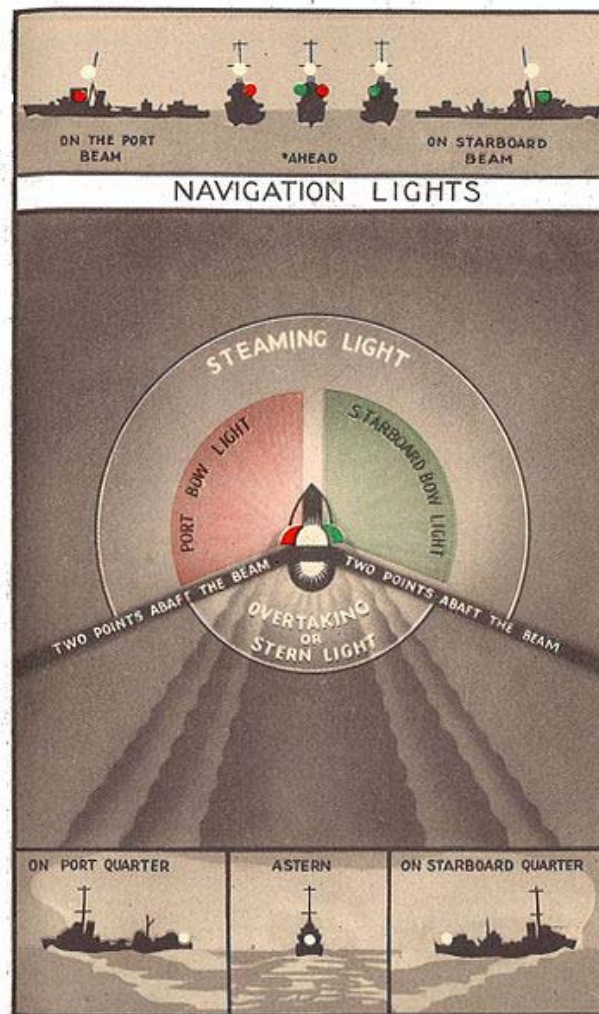


Figure 125: Navigation lights (Seaman's Pocket-Book, 1943)<sup>18</sup>

I will not take the time to assign blame for this collision as I am unqualified to do so. I have spent this time discussing this part of the story because had there been a maritime disaster, I might not exist to write this work. The Rangers eventually made it to sea. The following are excerpts from the Company Morning Reports from B Company:

- 7 Jan 44: Embarked HMS *Mauretania* at 1915 hrs for secret destination
- 8 Jan 44: HMS *Mauretania* departed NYPE at 0700 hours enroute to secret destination
- 8 Jan 44: HMS *Mauretania* collided with freighter at 0900 hrs
- 8 Jan 44: HMS *Mauretania* returns to NYPE at 1100 hrs.
- 9 Jan 44: HMS *Mauretania* left NYPE at 1700 hrs. 1st day at sea, morale excellent
- 10 Jan 44: HMS *Mauretania* 2nd day at sea, enroute to secret destination, morale excellent
- 11 Jan 44: HMS *Mauretania* 3rd day at sea, enroute to secret destination, morale high.
- 12 Jan 44: HMS *Mauretania* 4th day at sea, enroute to secret destination, morale excellent
- 13 Jan 44: HMS *Mauretania* 5th day at sea, enroute to secret destination, morale excellent
- 14 Jan 44: HMS *Mauretania* 6th day at sea, enroute to secret destination, morale excellent
- 15 Jan 44: HMS *Mauretania* 7th day at sea, enroute to secret destination, morale excellent
- 16 Jan 44: HMS *Mauretania* 8th day at sea, enroute to secret destination, morale excellent
- 17 Jan 44: HMS *Mauretania* 9th day at sea, enroute to secret destination, morale excellent
- 18 Jan 44: HMS *Mauretania* arrived Liverpool England at 0800 hrs, distance travelled by water transportation 4000 miles.
- 19 Jan 44: Disembarked HMS *Mauretania* at 0405 hrs, left Liverpool England at 0600 hrs. Arrived at Leominster England at 1030. Distance travelled by rail 150 miles.

The HMS *Mauretania II* was more than capable of making the voyage from New York to Liverpool in 5 days and twelve hours. This particular voyage took ten days. According to Dr Parker, the voyage was very rough. He indicated that when they hit the rough seas, many plates from the galley broke as they hit the floor from the tossing about. This resulted in multiple reports of sea-sickness on the voyage. Reports of the lack of the English food sitting well with American troops did not help matters. He recalled that the voyage used lookouts and that he did not recall any issues.

“It was quite cold in January on the North Atlantic, but we were forced to go out onto open decks during the day. We huddled out of the wind. One day the Captain said over the loudspeaker: "I say, some of you must move around to the other side of the ship! You're making it list until I can't steer it!" Besides the cold, there was the food, or lack thereof! We had to go down into a smelly, hot area to eat. A lot of people were seasick, and they couldn't be too choosy where they were sick. The food didn't do anything to entice you not to be sick! I have always wondered how much our Government paid the British to haul us to England to save them. I am sure it was far more than the service and food we received. I did feel sad when I read the *Mauritania* was sent to be cut up for scrap 11/20/65 at the age of 26.”

Victor J. "Baseplate" Miller, Sgt., Co. E, 5th Ranger Battalion, U.S.A.



Figure 126: Cramped troop accommodation on the *MAURETANIA*

The conditions for the enlisted men were cramped as illustrated in Figures 126 through 129.



Figure 127: Cramped conditions in the *MAURETANIA*'s first-class dining saloon for some of the 6,500 troops the ship could carry.

According to the biography of the 54th Replacement Battalion, the passage was described as uneventful. It was reported that some of the ship's crew had indicated that this trans-Atlantic crossing was the slowest the *Mauretania* had ever taken. The great ship had been forced far off course to escape suspected enemy submarines. It was known that the HMS *Mauretania* was one of Germany's most desirable targets for the U-boat commanders. In another unrelated account of a crossing of the Atlantic, it was said that the Nazis attempted to keep tabs on the whereabouts of the vessel. In one instance, a U-boat had reported her position to other nearby submarines, and the HMS *Mauretania* had to pour on speed along with evasive maneuvers to avoid the trap being laid for her on all sides. It is unknown if this attempted trap was associated with this particular voyage, but it might have been considering the length of the voyage. Mr. McLain reported that the crossing on January 8 was made without an escort as were many of her voyages, due to her speed. A plane flew overhead for the first two days of the eastward trip. Robert S Butcher indicated that the ship ran into such foul weather on the crossing that he became so sea-sick that he swore never to sail again, but his grandson was unsure if this recollection applied to the voyage to England or the voyage home after the war. "The waves were so large that the huge ship seemed to flex and that the spray would freeze in the air before reaching the back of the *Mauretania*" according to Mr. McLain.

Dr. Parker's quarters on board were in a stateroom that had been converted. He indicated that the room had been shored up for some reason. He went on to say that 4x4 timbers had been installed as the framing for bunks. The room held a total of eight officers.





**CROWDED ACCOMMODATIONS ABOARD A TROOP TRANSPORT**

Figure 128: Typical enlisted mens sleeping quarters aboard ship



**IMPROMPTU ENTERTAINMENT ABOARD SHIP**

Figure 129: Typical entertainment aboard ship provided by the soldier's themselves

The key to successful troopship administration was the competence of the transport commander, requiring sound administrative skill in controlling the activities and conduct of a large number of troops under difficult circumstances. The transport commander was assigned by, and exercised his authority as a representative of, an Army port commander. Before each voyage he made a thorough inspection of his ship and prepared a plan for utilizing the

facilities in a way that would best serve the troops and other passengers who were scheduled to embark.

The transport commander was in command of all personnel on board except the ship's crew and the naval armed guard. He was the chief of the permanent military complement on the vessel, and in matters affecting the administration of the ship his authority was superior to that of the officers who were traveling as passengers, even though they might outrank him. His relationship with the unit commanders was that of a station commander to the commanders of units bivouacked at his station.<sup>2</sup>

There were problems in integrating the British and American forces and naval systems in terms of procedures and customs. This included seemingly simple things as food and facilities requirements of personnel from each nation involved. The two governments reached agreements as to minimum standards to be provided for personnel traveling aboard each others vessels.

Troops were often fed two full meals per day aboard ship, with the ships' cooks working around the clock in some cases in order to feed the thousands of personnel aboard. The sales commissary aided the morale of the troops as they provided the soldier an opportunity to purchase cigarettes, candy, soft drinks, and other comfort items. The transport services attempted to maintain morale by providing opportunity for sports, theatricals, movies, and other forms of entertainment. The troops were provided with books, magazines, phonograph records, and Army News Service broadcasts. Some soldiers carried their own musical instruments and the ports solicited donations of instruments to be place aboard ship.

Once underway, the transport commanders would issue debarkation schedules and appropriate instructions in order that they might be studied at the unit level. The expectation was that plans be made to accomplish debarkations smoothly and quickly. These instructions were drawn up in accordance with the established practices of the ports. Sometimes revisions were required to the plan based on special orders issued by the port commanders.

Research indicates the vessel arrived in Liverpool, England on January 18, 1944 after a ten day voyage at sea based on the B Company Morning Reports. Liverpool is located almost due east of Dublin, Ireland. Victor Miller reported that they approached England to the north of Ireland. "Ireland was off to the south as we sailed through the green Irish Sea to land at Liverpool. We gazed at the British workers with stubs of cigarettes hanging from the middle of their lower lips as they worked the docks." Rob Gorrell's work indicates that the HMS *Mauretania* reached the mouth of the Mersey River on January 17 by sailing from the north between Scotland and Ireland. He further wrote that the vessel lay in the harbor overnight. I found elsewhere that the conditions were not appropriate for mooring at the time of arrival. The outer harbor minefield reportedly had not been properly opened wide enough to account for the ship. A minesweeper was brought in and then the following day the vessel docked. The troops were greeted by a British military band.

Further confirmation was received from the National Museum of Liverpool England. Mr. John Winrow of the museum was kind enough to provide me with a copy of the picture of the *Mauretania* docked at Liverpool through the mail. Figure 130 shows the main dock offices. Figure 131 features the main Princess Docks where the passenger liners could berth. The HMS *Mauretania II* is featured in Liverpool in Figures 132 through 134.



Figure 130: Princess Dock, Liverpool, England looking northward (Public Domain)



Figure 131: Princess Dock, Liverpool, England looking southward (Public Domain)



THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

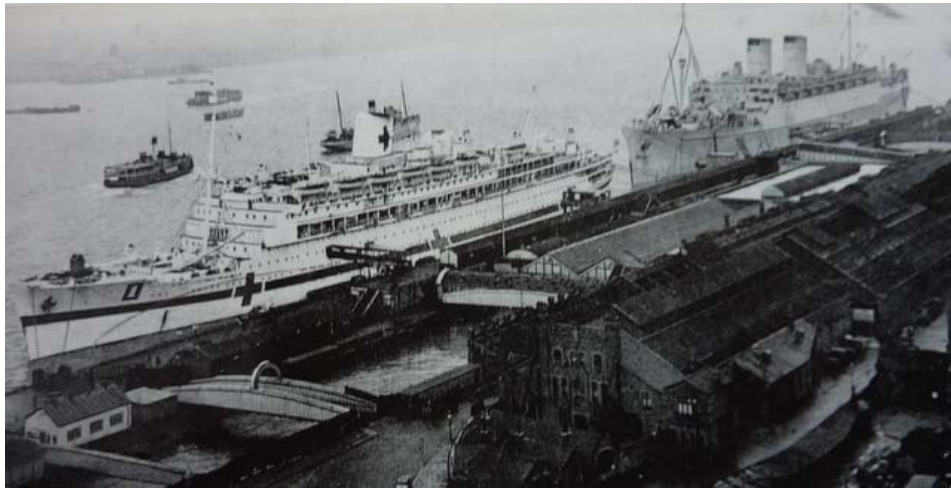


Figure 132: The HMS *Mauretania* berthed in the Mersey River at the north end of Princes Landing Stage, Princess Dock, Liverpool, England. Ahead of her is the hospital ship *ORANJE* (Liverpool Museums, UK).



Figure 133: The *MAURETANIA* backing off Princes Landing Stage, Liverpool, on her way to join another convoy. Her escort is taking up position. (Liverpool Museums, UK)



Figure 134: Troops crowded on to the *MAURETANIA*'s foredeck. Note the 'de-gaussing' cable, which neutralized the ship's magnetic field, and so helped in stopping magnetic mines being attracted to the ship (Liverpool Museums, UK)

According to information provided by the National Museum of Liverpool, next the troops boarded trains at Riverside Station in Liverpool located very near the docks.

“The American troops had probably travelled in comfortable Pullman trains from their base camps to New York’s Grand Central Station (or other stations) en route to the troopship. One wonders what they made of this scenario as, after getting off the boat, they trudged along the platform of Riverside station trying to find a seat in one of the vintage non-corridor coaches of a British train. If this was also their first experience of overseas service, this station’s shattered roof was their first sight of a bomb-damaged structure. Evocative scenes for all ex-servicemen.”

Liverpool & the Mersey, Maritime Heritage, National Museums Liverpool

The Liverpool Riverside Train Station was located three to four blocks from the Princess Docks to the east on the west side of Bath Street. It was constructed by the Mersey Docks and Harbour Board on December 6, 1895. It was constructed to service the Trans-Atlantic liners that sailed from Liverpool to New York City and other ports of call. The station was built specifically to service the Princess Landing Stage along the Mersey River. On the railroad side, the Liverpool Riverside Station was at the end of a branch line connecting the London North Railway (LNWR) at the Waterloo Goods Station. From there, the line ran through two tunnels up to Edge Hill where mainline connections could be made on the LNWR. The Liverpool Station had three platform faces. There was a single roof covering all of the platforms. There was a walkway adjacent to a roadway leading to the port referred to as the Princess Parade. This walkway was covered to shelter passengers from the weather.<sup>19</sup> Mapping and a photo showing the railway station are in Figures 135 and 136.

Next, as indicated by the unit records and by the account by Victor Miller, the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion travelled 150 miles by rail to Leominster England arriving at 1030 hours on January 19, 1944. They spent about a month in Leominster conducting rigorous training. 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion Medic Richard “Doc” Felix indicated that Leominster was a place of intense training for the Rangers after moving there by train from the port.<sup>20</sup> It was between this chapter and the medical aspects of SSG Herbert Hull’s evacuation and treatment discussed later that proved the most challenging things to research.

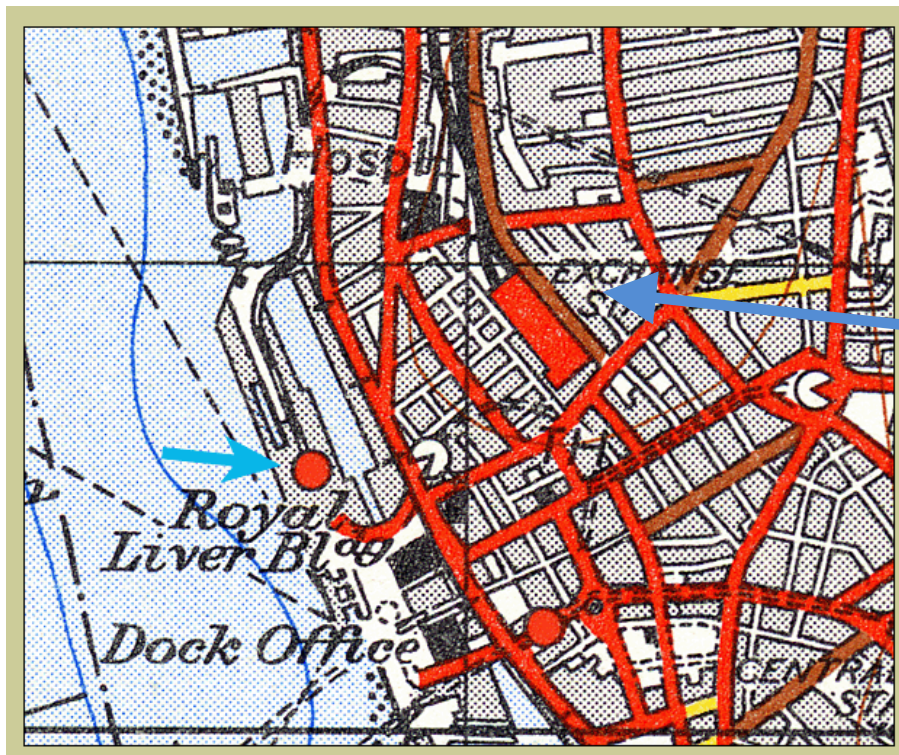


Figure 135: Map showing Princess Dock and Liverpool Station (unknown author)



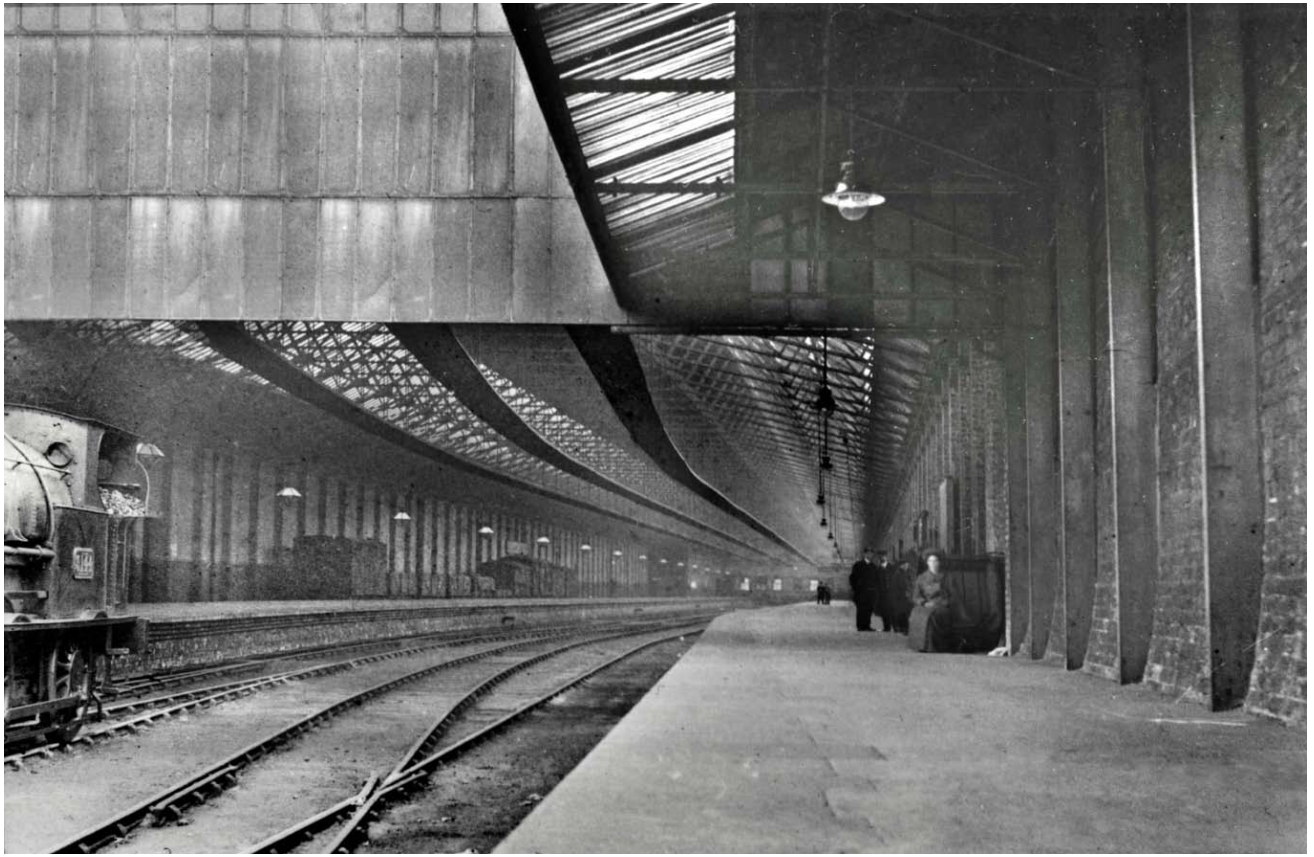


Figure 136: Liverpool Riverside Station (Courtesy Nick Catford, From the John Mann collection)



## 10 LEOMINSTER, HEREFORDSHIRE, ENGLAND

Leominster (pronounced Lemster) is located in the County of Herefordshire, England. It is located 12 miles north of Hereford and 11 miles south of Ludlow. It is approximately 80 miles south of Liverpool and 50 miles north of Bristol. In exploring the town on the internet through various sources, it is very much like portions of central Pennsylvania that are characterized by rolling hills intermixed with farmlands and woodlands. By this I mean parts of Pennsylvania not in the Appalachian Mountains. From what I could determine, Leominster dates back to at or before 1000 A.D. A priory was established in the town in 1121 A.D. under King Henry II. The main street is shown in Figure 137.



Figure 137: Historic Postcard of Broad Street in Leominster, Herefordshire, England (Public Domain)

A good book on Leominster's role during World War II is *The Friendly Invasion of Leominster* by Fran and Martin Collins. It describes how many units; including the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, "invaded" the town for the purpose of winning the war in Europe. The landmark known as Barons Cross became home to the 76th and 135th U.S. Army General Hospitals. In addition to the Rangers, it played home in England to the 90th Infantry Division, 7th Armored Division, 736th Field Artillery Battalion and others.<sup>1</sup>



Figure 138: Picture of soldier taken at Leominster Station in England (Collins).

Arriving at the train station in Leominster at 1030 hours on January 19, 1944, the Rangers were billeted in and around the town. A wartime photo of the station is in Figure 138. Ranger Miller described living “in Quonset huts in a little enclave in the town.” General Raaen described to me that he had lived in a private home with a family. Some soldiers were said to have billeted in the grounds of Berrington Hall.

Rangers Copeland, Glassman and Miller all described the training cycle at Leominster to be very similar again to that conducted at Camp Forrest, with more intensity.<sup>2</sup> They hiked through the countryside. The country was described as having fields bordered with hedges, not unlike parts of France. On January 22, 1944, the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion was assigned from ETOUSA to VIII Corps.

Figure 139 shows a view of the 76th General Hospital clearly indicates the terrain and surroundings typical of the Leominster area. The map in Figure 140 is from what are referred to as the New Popular Edition (NPE) which is a complete set of 1-inch-to-the-mile mapping of England and Wales, published by the Ordnance Survey in the 1940s and is now out of copyright.<sup>3</sup> These maps are the equivalent to the U.S.G.S. topographic maps. A key to these maps is shown in Figure 141.





Figure 139: Aerial view of the 76th General Hospital, Leominster (NARA)

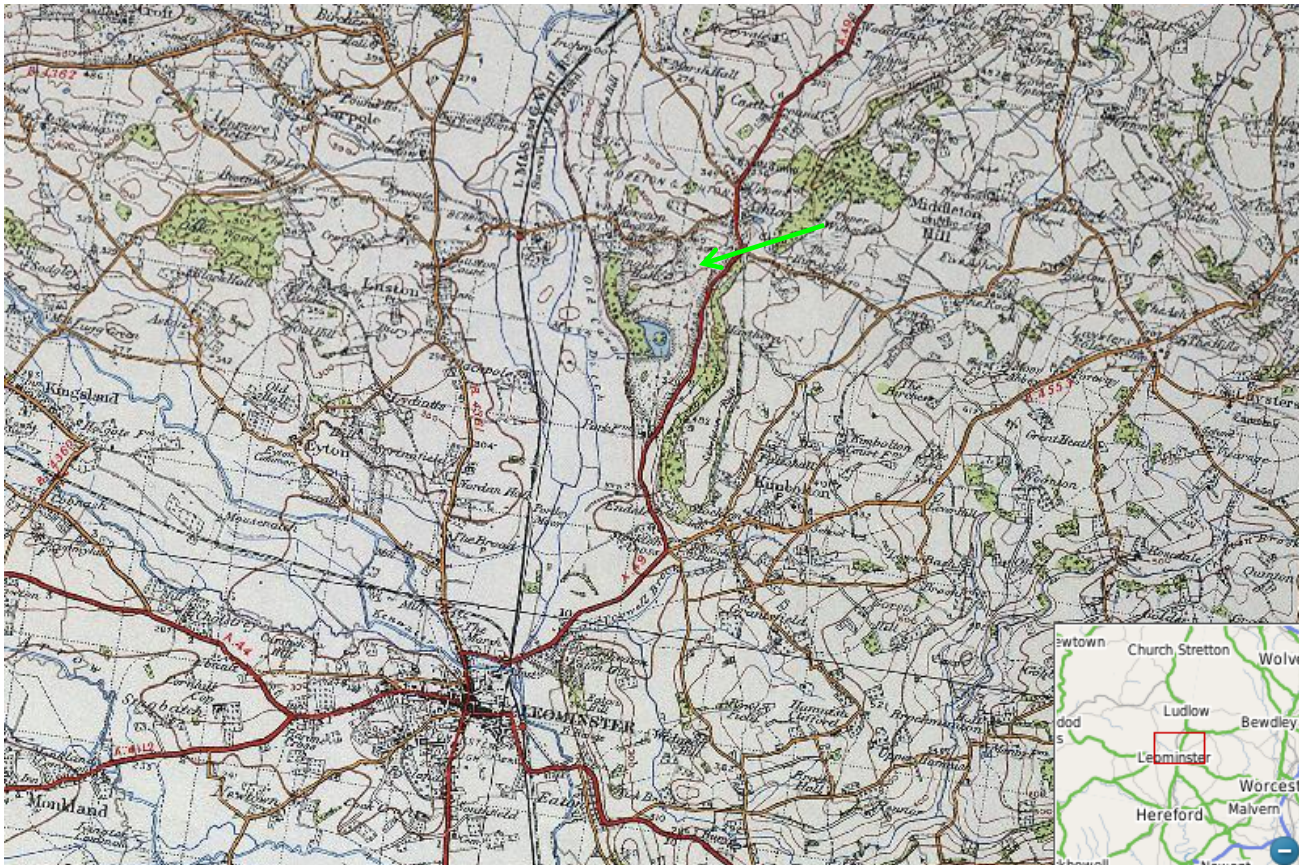


Figure 140: Location of Berrington Hall in relation to Leominster. (A Vision of Britain Through Time – Public Domain)



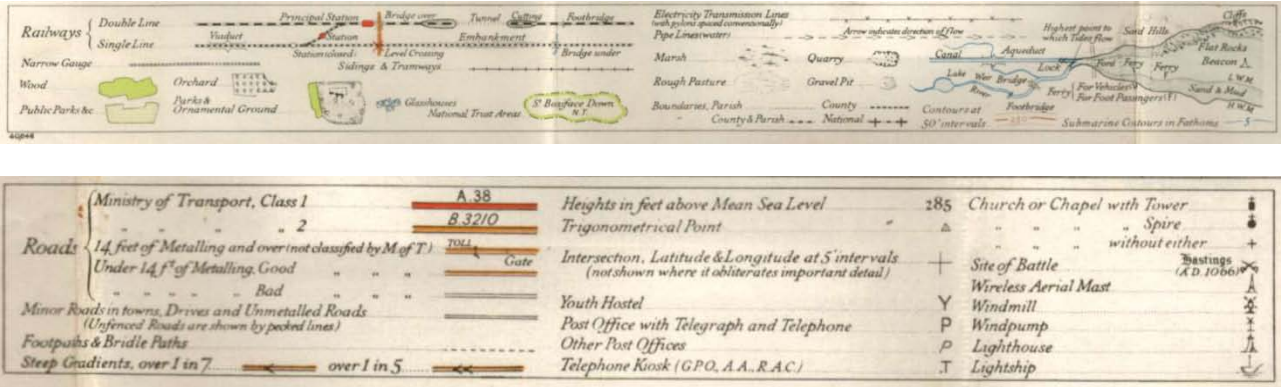


Figure 141: Key to English Ordnance Survey Maps.<sup>4</sup>

After arriving in Leominster, the records of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion and Sgt Hull proved most interesting when compared against certain pieces of evidence held by the family for decades. After arriving in Leominster on January 19, the Company Morning Reports detail that the unit conducted normal camp duties. This invariably means training. Sgt Hull showed up on the January 28, 1944 Morning Report as being ill. The report stated: Hull, Herbert S. 35597467, S/Sgt, Taken Sick on 1/28/44 in line of duty, disposition – Quarters. On January 31, 1944, the report stated: Hull, Herbert S. 35597467, S/Sgt, Taken Sick on 1/28/44 in line of duty, disposition - Return to Duty. The NARA St Louis location also maintains Company Sick Logs. It verified his illness on those dates.

February 4, 1944 brought his third promotion since he joined the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion in just a few months. He must have performed well for this to occur over that short a period as I had stated in an previous chapters. This was corroborated in a conversation with Ranger James R. Copeland in a phone call on August 7, 2013.

I asked Mr. Copeland if he remembered my grandpa. He said that he did. He stated, “He was a good man. He took his job seriously. He took care of his men.” He told me that he did not know him in the 35th Infantry Division, and that they first became acquainted after joining the Rangers. He told me they were both Privates. He indicated that as he recalled, he was a PFC and Herb was a Private at the time.

He went on to tell of another man who had come in as a Sergeant. He could not recall his name. He recounted that he and Herb had become good friends. He went on to say that they eventually rose in the ranks to Staff Sergeant, while the Sgt did not get promoted. Mr. Copeland said that he and Herb use to joke with the Sgt that “he and Herb were the brains of the outfit” joking with him about why they rose in rank above him. He went on to say again “they were great friends.”

I asked him why Grandpa Hull got promoted so quickly. He told me that he got promoted for being a good soldier. Their last promotion to Staff Sergeant was together in Scotland. He said that “They were both well thought of in the Rangers.” He told me that Herb had a machine gun squad of around twelve men. He said that “He always took care of his men and he placed them ahead of himself.” He restated that they were good friends.

On February 4th, 1944, ten Sergeants were promoted to the rank of Staff Sergeant in B Company. These men were: James R. Copeland, Vern L. Detlefsen, Pierre D, Gunnoe, Herbert S. Hull, Edward J. McEleney, Walter N. McIlwain, Gordon R. Powell, Surowitz, Thornhill, and Grady J. West. Four Rangers also were promoted from Corporal to Sergeant.

The Friendly Invasion of Leominster describes that the War Department had requisitioned land on the then western outskirts of town. The Army then built a nissen hut camp on land adjacent to Green Lane. The battalion, or part of it, was reported to have been billeted at this location.

The book describes how in one training event, a group of Rangers was woken up in the middle of the night and transported about an hour from camp in the back of a truck under blackout conditions. The men were then told to

get out of the truck and shown a map briefly with no place names. Their Captain told them they were in enemy territory and that they had to make their way back to the barracks for morning assembly. This group of Rangers then set off in the English countryside on their own devices to make their way back. They put their heads together and made some educated guesses as to where they were. They used the training from their previous training cycles to use and made their way back. They "captured" a local minister and his wife, ultimately befriending them. They then used the church steeple to get the lay of the land and complete their return journey. This was typical of accounts of training while there.<sup>1</sup>

**COMPANY MORNING REPORT** ENDING 1 February 1944  
 2400 (DATE) (MONTH) (YEAR)

STATION Leamington, England A.P.O. FOB  
 ORGANIZATION B. Co., 5th Ranger Inf. Bn. Infantry  
CO. (DET. ETC.) (REG'T. BRIG.) (ARMY OR SERVICE)

REPORT NUMBER	NAME	GRADE	CODE
8873848	Cordes	S/Sgt	
8873451	Harich	S/Sgt	
Shows 2 FM a/c Tech Sgt as of 1 February 1944			
1200742	Copeland	Sgt	
17450732	Detlefsen	Sgt	
18071738	Gunnoe	Sgt	
85507467	Hull	Sgt	
2022052	McElerey	Sgt	
8180771	McIlwain	Sgt	
8447265	Powell	Sgt	
8216308	Surowitz	Sgt	
8787299	Thornhill	Sgt	
14882170	Vest	Sgt	
Shows 10 FM a/c S/Sgt as of 1 February 1944			
14194157	Cardinali	Cpl	
15721568	Dickran	Cpl	
28627856	Goldberg	Cpl	
15826133	Hunter	Cpl	
Shows 2 FM a/c Sgt as of 1 Feb 44			

OFFICERS		1ST LT		2D LT		WO		PLT D	
NAME	GRADE	NAME	GRADE	NAME	GRADE	NAME	GRADE	NAME	GRADE

OFFICERS		SERGEANTS		ENLISTED MEN	
PRESENT	ABSENT	PRESENT	ABSENT	PRESENT	ABSENT

1. NUMBER OF MEN REPORTED FOR THIS REPORT:  NUMBER

2. NUMBER OF MEN REPORTED FOR THIS REPORT:  AVERAGE

3. NUMBER OF MEN REPORTED FOR THIS REPORT:  TOTAL

4. NUMBER OF MEN REPORTED FOR THIS REPORT:  TOTAL

PAGE 1 OF 2 PAGES

Figure 142: 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company Morning Report, February 4, 1944



Figure 143: Map of Leominster drawn by S/Sgt Hull in February, 1944.

The training cycle at Leominster included cliff scaling, rappelling, rope bridge crossing and various field exercises. S/Sgt Hull drew the map in Figure 143, undoubtedly for one such exercise. This would have been drawn between



February 4 and February 29, 1944 based on his rank noted on the map. This document had been folded and tucked away in some of his papers that my aunt provided to me shortly after sending me his uniform in 2012. It provided valuable research clues into his history in the unit. A close examination of the map reveals Leominster in the north and Wellington in the south. A direct comparison between this map and the ordinance survey maps reveals that this hand drawn map is intricate in detail. It notes a large area identified as Battalion area bounded by present day Monkland Road (A44) to the north, Wellington Wood to the south, Hereford Road (A49) to the east and A4110 to the west. There was a smaller Battalion area noted in and around Brierly Wood and Camp Wood in the northern portion of the area. This just goes to show how small, seemingly unimportant bits of information can develop into extremely important leads telling a much larger story. But for the map, I might not have known to look for his promotion between December 1943 and February, 1944.

In a conversation with General Raean, he described his time at Leominster in the following way. “Wellington is about seven plus miles south of Leominster. During the time I was there, late January into April, I think, I never went to the training areas. I was always on the road, picking up vehicles, weapons and other equipment for the battalion. We brought nothing except clothing and other personal items on the Mauritania. As for billeting, I think we were all in town. Some in warehouses, some in private homes. At least headquarters company and the officers were billeted in town. There were two pubs in town. The larger, the Royal Oak, was reserved for enlisted men. The smaller, can't remember the name, was due west of the Royal Oak, a couple of blocks and on the main east west street and was reserved for the officers. Both were small hotels.” Upon sending him a copy of the map my grandpa had drawn, he responded to me that he thought my grandpa was a very good map maker.”

Victor Miller told a story of the Rangers killing one of His Majesty's swans in a field that stood between the men and their objective, a local pub near Wales. The men did not know that wildlife in England belongs to the King, and that it was quite against the law to kill it.

In another instance, there were a series of altercations between men of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion and African American soldiers from a Quartermaster unit that was stationed in the area over racial tensions. It is unknown how involved the Rangers were in these fights, but the result was that the military leadership began to alternate days between white and black units being able to go to the local establishments. There reportedly was a raid of the Quartermaster unit, but the Rangers denied all knowledge of the incident according to the book by Collins. Randall Ching recalled this bigotry and told me that as a Chinese American, he attended on black and white nights.

Ching also told me of a funny club incident that involved Captain Whittington. It was well known in the unit that the Captain's young wife Agnes was very beautiful. While at the Officer's club one evening, another officer who saw a photograph of Whittington's wife, made an untoward sexual comment in reference to her in front of Whittington. Ching told me that “Whit” punched the man so hard in the mouth that he flew through the front door of the club, taking the door with him and landing on his back out on the ground. This story is certainly keeping in the spirit of the toughness attributed to the Company B Commander as a former boxing champion.

The Rangers completed their training cycle at Leominster on February 29, 1944 and then they boarded a train at 1530 hours. They arrived in Thornhill Dumfriesshire, Scotland at 2345 hours, after travelling a distance of 250 miles.

## 11 VACATIONING IN SCOTLAND

After training hard at Leominster, the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion departed on February 29 for Tighnabruaich, Scotland. They had an overnight layover in Dumfriesshire, Scotland arriving at 2345 hours after travelling 260 miles by rail. They departed by train at 0015 hours on March 1 and travelled about 90 miles by rail north to Greenock, Scotland and arrived at 0235 hours. From Greenock, they travelled 30 miles by water aboard the T.S.S. *Santonia* and sailed out the Firth of Clyde to the village of Tighnabruaich. They embarked at 0245 hours and arrived at 1000 hours. I was unable to determine any additional information about the T.S.S. *Santonia* listed in the B Company Morning Report. I was able to determine that T.S.S means Turbine Steam Ship. This class of vessels began to appear around the 1890s. It would have made sense to me to make use of these vessels to ferry people in and around the British Isles.

General Raaen told me that the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion “trained at Tighnabruach, Auchenlochan and Kames, three small villages on the Ardlamont peninsula. The Second on the Isle of Wight, as I recall without looking up references. The 5th was under the West Scottish Command, whatever that was. Commandos were heavily involved in our training.” In looking up the facts of this communication to expand upon it, I was able to map the three locations on the 1940 Ordinance Survey of Scotland Popular Edition as shown in Figure 146. I also uncovered two postcards on the next page showing the area from opposing directions (Figures 144 and 145). We continued our dialogue at a later date reviewing the new research and he recalled additional information. “Our training area extended from Kames to the west some 1500 meters (perhaps more), then south 5 km to the Ardlamont Bay. I remember standing on the bluffs overlooking Ardlamont Bay and having a Scottish Commando Officer pointing out the distant shore to the south of us. He said that's Campbelltown where the hated (and dreaded) Campbells live. The Campbells used to raid the Ardlamont Peninsula and carry off loot and women”.

What is known from various written accounts is that the Rangers spent time in Scotland for a one month training cycle. The accounts indicate that the Rangers trained at a site of British Commando Training and that the Commandos had a direct role in their activities. General Raaen recalled that “the 5th was under the West Scottish Command”. He also told me that the Commandos had been heavily involved in the Ranger's training. In researching the West Scottish Command, I was able to determine a few things, but what I will present here is not factually backed at this point by hard records, and presents an opportunity for additional research from the British side of things.

Research suggests that the area in and around Tighnabruaich was used by the British as a formal training base during World War II. There was a property known as Glen Caladh Castle or Glen Caladh House that lay on the approach to Loch Riddon on the western side and north of the Isle of Butte.<sup>1</sup> The history of the castle included famous British owners such as railway engineer George Stephenson (1781-1848), with possible undocumented ties to the famous author Robert Louis Stevenson.<sup>2</sup> The property was reportedly demolished in 1960 having succumbed to neglect and dry rot.<sup>3</sup> The British government requisitioned the castle and an unspecified amount of land in and around Tighnabruaich for use as a training base by British Combined Operations sometime during 1942.<sup>4</sup> The base was commissioned on November 11, 1942 and was in operation until September 9, 1945. Like many British training bases used for these types of purposes, the facility was organized and run as if a Royal Navy vessel. This is not unlike the organization of Fort Pierce, Florida in the United States. It was designated H.M.S. James Cook in honor of the

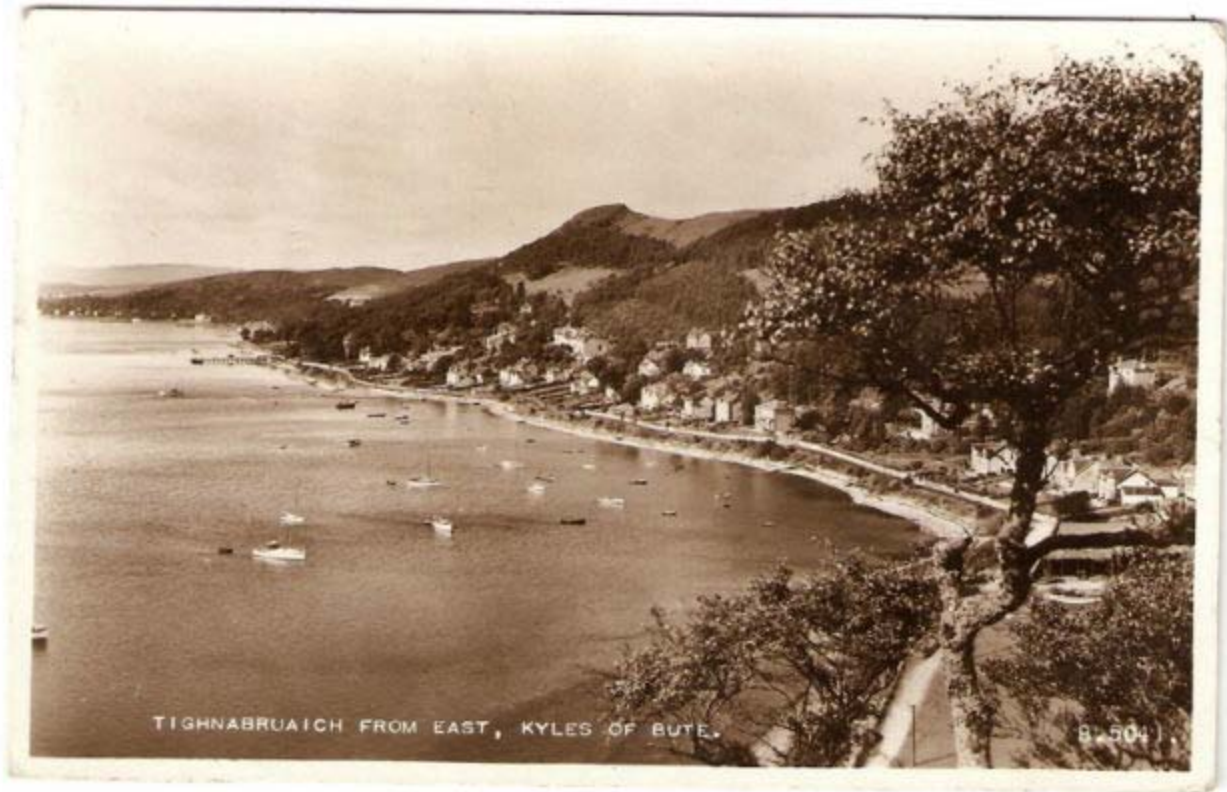


Figure 144: SJX Early Postcard, Tighnabruich from East, Kyles of Bute; Argyllshire, Scotland; (public domain)



Figure 145: Kyles of Bute at Tighnabruich - from original by Brian Gerlad - No.A.796, circa 1934 (public domain)



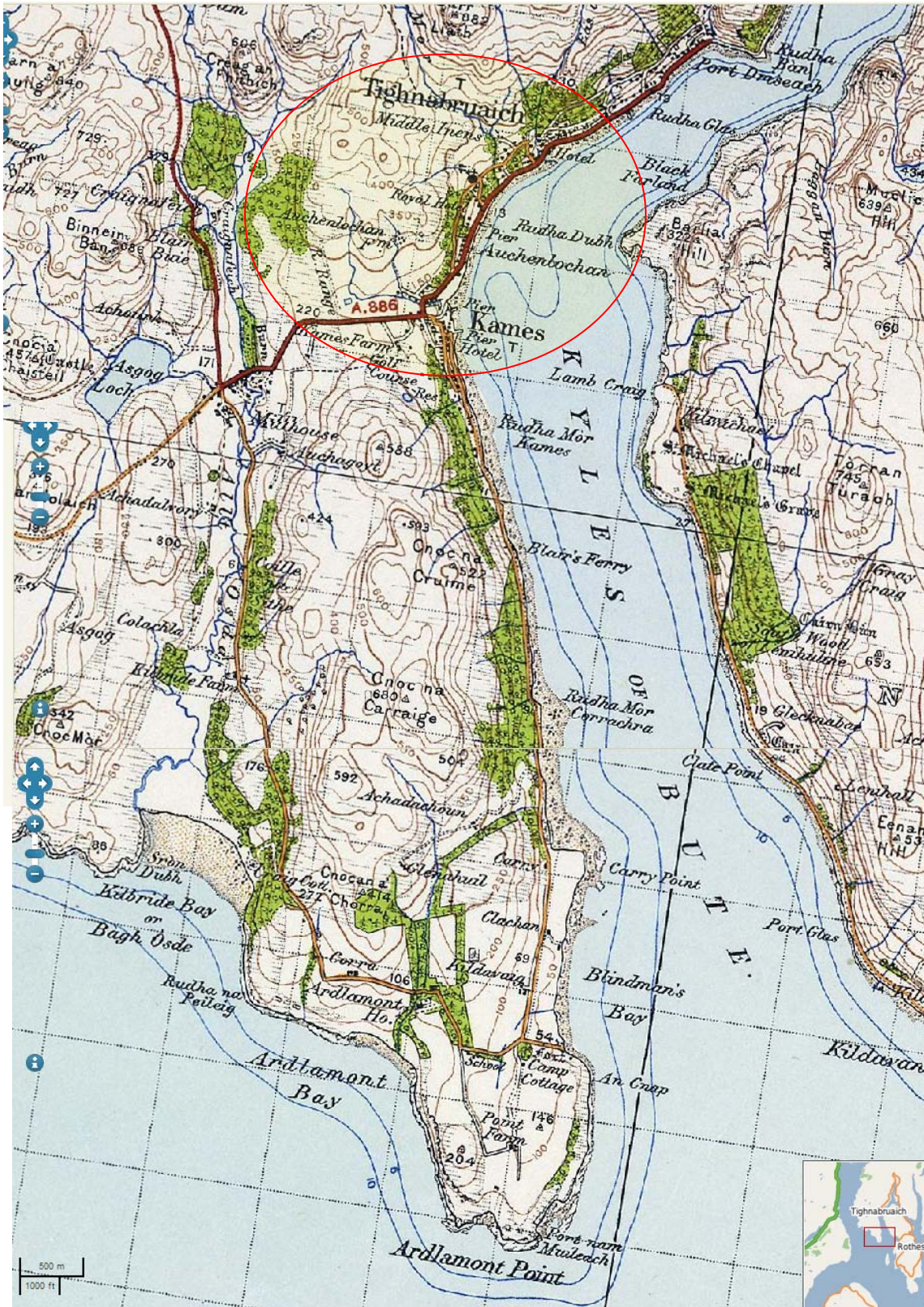


Figure 146: Map showing areas described in the email above. Auchenlachen, Kames and Tighnabruach are circled. Ordnance Survey of Scotland Popular Edition, Sheet 65 – Dunoon and Loch Fyne

founder of Australia. James Cook had introduced many navigational skills into the Royal Navy, and the use of his name was reflective of the training conducted at the facility. The training developed at this facility included that of instructing operators of troop landing craft how to land cargoes of men and equipment safely. This facility or portions thereof became known as the Beach Pilotage School from 1942 until 1945 and in March 1944, was under the command of Major General Robert Laycock.

Glen Caladh Harbour is located to the east and just below the castle. It is also referred to as Caladh Harbour and is in the Kyles of Bute just off the Cowal peninsula, north of the Isle of Bute. The small island of Eilean Dubh shelters the harbor as described on the Secret Scotland website. The etymology of the name of the island comes from Scottish Gaelic meaning Black Island. Eilean Dearg is situated to the north and the Burnt Islands are to the east.<sup>5</sup>

The Munros Mountains are the highest mountains in Scotland. They rise to over 3000 feet, which considering that Scotland is a series of islands collectively with the remainder of Great Britain are not much larger geographically than Pennsylvania is impressive in terms of relief on the landscape. Tighnabruaich is in this region of Scotland.

There does not seem to be much source material available regarding the H.M.S. James Cook. I have already indicated it was headquartered out of the Glen Caladh Castle. One report of the HMS Cook was that the base specialized in training for canoe-based operations. It has been indicated that they trained in “clandestine reconnaissance of enemy-held beaches ahead of amphibious assaults to check for underwater obstacles, enemy defenses, beach load-bearing capacities, etc.” It is believed HMS James Cook primarily served as a landing craft training base, and offered navigation courses leading up to D-Day. There are several names and designations that seem to refer to it, although I have been unable to determine which of these names was the official one. Names associated with it are:

- H.M.S. James Cook, Combined Operations Beach Training Establishment
- H.M.S. James Cook, Naval Beach Training Establishment
- H.M.S. James Cook, Beach Pilotage School

The Naval Beach Training Establishment providing training in the practice and theory of Navigational Training for officers of minor landing craft flotillas. It is said that many of the British personnel referred to the HMS Cook as the “Ton of Bricks”. The address for the facility was HMS James Cook, Combined Operations Training Establishment, Glen Caladh, Nr Tighnabruaich, Argyll, Scotland.

The British first introduced the term “combined operations” during the Second World War. It refers to multi-service activities. It may include elements of land, naval and air forces acting together under a single coordinated command. This thought serves as the basis for both British and later American Special Warfare doctrine. The single command came to be known as the Combined Operations Headquarters in the British system.<sup>6</sup> It was established on July 17, 1940. The British War Office set up the Combined Operations Headquarters in order to plan and execute harassment of the German forces on the European continent through raiding. The Command had the task of strategizing operations, training and outfitting the units to be utilized during these raids. The command also expanded in scope to cover all those units and personnel involved in landing craft operations. The insignia of the Combined Operations was an eagle over a submachine gun over an anchor. This emblem symbolized the nature of combined operations. It was the basis for the U.S. Amphibious Forces patch (Figure 147).





Figure 147: British Combined Operations badge

The Western Scottish Command that General Raanen given to me to in our discussions appears to be in reference to the British Scottish Command in defense of the United Kingdom. This seems to not be dissimilar to the commands set up in the U.S. during the war. This command seems to be the British Army structure that was charged with homeland defense. It was organized geographically. The area around Tighnabruaich seems to fall within the subcommand that General Raanen referred to. It makes sense then that the Rangers would have fallen under this command while training in Scotland for logistical and other purposes.

Not much physically remains of the HMS James Cook. Douglas Wilcox, an amateur explorer and photographer documented what remains on his personal blog.<sup>5</sup> He documented a rusting hulk of a derrick that lies in Glen Caladh Harbour. In the Wilcox exchange of information, he and others describe that the HMS James Cook was a shore based station for training landing craft crew. He explained that exercises in the Kyles of Bute and the surrounding area prepared servicemen to land on D-Day. Further discussion surrounded the British Combined Operations Pilotage Parties (COPPs) training at Tighnabruaich. Mr. Wilcox's blog also described Commando training near the Spean Bridge involving canoes. This might be an excellent topic to research in more detail in the future, as there does not seem to be enough developed about it.

There are several pictures that depending upon who has written a description of them attribute them to Ranger training in Scotland. It is unknown if these pictures are of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, but they are presented here as a point of reference to their training.



Figure 148: Ranger training in Scotland (left) and Rangers practicing assault landings in Scotland (right)(NARA)



The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion accounts of the training at Scotland are limited, but consistent. They describe a training phase that “the Rangers have never stopped discussing”<sup>7</sup> and “Scotland in March was a month of activities none of us will ever forget.”<sup>8</sup> As previously stated, all of the accounts indicated that this site was a location of British Commando training and that the Commandos were heavily involved in the Ranger’s training. It is unknown which specific Commando unit or units were involved with the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion in March 1944. It was reported that this region had two or three inches of snow on the ground when the Rangers arrived and that it was cold. All of the accounts seem to discuss the need for stoves in the quarters. The men shared a mess hall located along the coast, and had to make their way to it to eat. Some of the men made other arrangements during this time. Some of them broke bread with their hosts. Figures 148-150 show some of the rigors of Ranger training in Scotland.

The British War Ministry billeted military personnel in private homes under order of the King. For any student of American history, this was one of the chief complaints against the crown during the American Revolution, resulting ultimately in the Third Amendment of the United States Constitution as part of the Bill of Rights. This Amendment was in direct response to the British Quartering Acts passed by British Parliament during the Revolutionary War. The Third Amendment States: No Soldier shall, in time of peace be quartered in any house, without the consent of the owner, nor in time of war, but in a manner to be prescribed by law. For the Rangers in World War II, this little connection with our own national history was probably the furthest thing from their minds.

Ranger JR Copeland recalled “Without question, the Commando training prepared them for the difficult task ahead,” in his biography. He went on to say that the Rangers had never experienced any training like the British Commando training before.<sup>9</sup> This statement is pretty telling considering the training the men had undergone to date. The training included difficult marches and field problems in the Scotland countryside. This was described as the most tiring training endured by any soldier. Several of the Rangers, and the U.S. Army itself would later credit this training as being the reason that the Rangers succeeded on D-Day and later missions. Both Richard Hathaway and Victor Miller recall stories of live fire exercises that involved scaring, wounding or killing local livestock. They also reported scaring local residents with live fire on more than one occasion.

The Munros Mountains, often referred to as the “hills of Scotland” by the Rangers proved to be an interesting challenge by the men, as they had yet to train on this type of terrain. It is often said by the Rangers that “Rangers were made or lost” in Scotland. They conducted tactical field marches in these mountains going up and down the steep slopes. Victor Miller described hiking “up and across the many hills with their marshy pits we might sink into and go for about five miles” only to attack something when reaching the objective. These are techniques still used by Rangers today. Ranger Copeland stated “The Scotland hills made or broke any tentativeness held by soldiers wearing the Ranger emblem—some soldiers ‘washed-out’ even at this late stage of elite U.S. Ranger training.”

General Raaen gave me the following account:

“There were two types of training I remember. The first was assault training with live fire. We had many casualties and injuries during this training. In fact, we had a surgical team attached to us to have on the spot care for those wounded. I remember one incident. A Ranger company was in the attack. It used it’s 40’s against the entrenched enemy. The 40-mm mortar fire lifted and the company attacked. Meanwhile a thousand (?) meters away, an 81-mm mortar team was observing and saw the forties striking. Aha! Target of opportunity! The 81’s opened up on the same target. The 81-mm mortar rounds reached their target at the same time as the Ranger Company. Eight casualties. I forget how many dead. The surgical team was needed.

The other type of training that I remember was amphibious training. Here we used the same LSIs and LCAs that we were to have in the invasion. I don’t mean the same exact individuals, but the same ships and landing craft. One thing I’ll never forget. The troops coming back from landings and assault of the mountains behind the beach, claimed even though the slope was something like forty degrees, there was standing water six to eight inches deep. Tufts of grass held little pools of water to keep it from running down hill.”

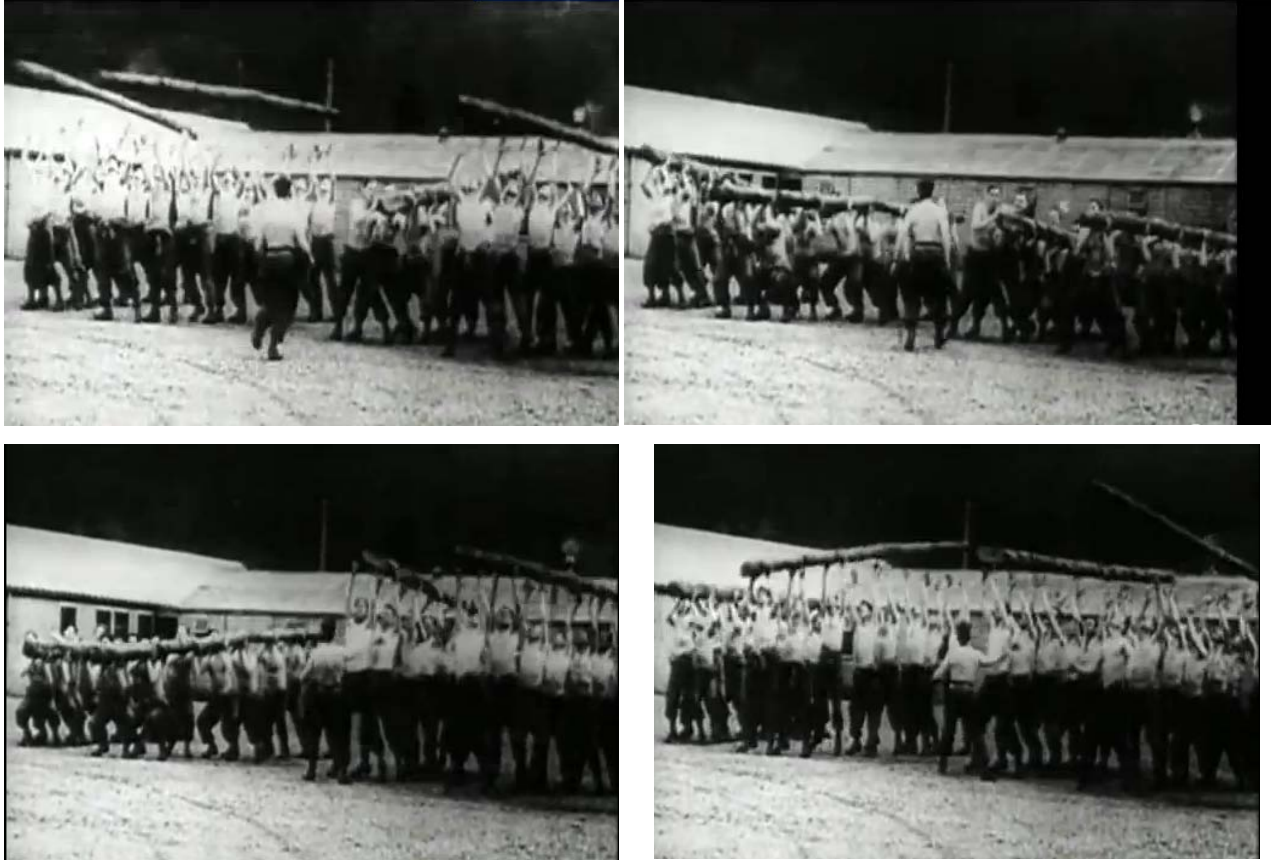


Figure 149: Ranger log training in Scotland from movie film. Note movement of logs. (NARA)

Skill sets previously learned and mastered were not left behind in Scotland, they were honed (figure 149). The men practiced and practiced amphibious landings using the new methods learned by their British Commando instructors. These operations were practiced almost daily, with the Scottish coastline playing the lead adversary. The men would assault beaches strewn with obstacles such as barbed wire and any other German emplacement photographed during Allied surveillance flights of the French coastline. The military intelligence planners wasted no opportunity to provide any and all manner of anti-assault beach obstacle to throw at the Rangers and other units being trained here. The Rangers worked through every conceivable simulated battlefield situation and circumstance. The men loaded on their assault boats or craft and sailed some distance away from the embarkation point. The March waters of the Scottish coastline were bitter. The men would jump in and wade ashore through this, learning to overcome the conditions. After completing their infiltration of the shore defenses, the men practiced the art of meeting at a rally point and reassembling to carry on the assault inland to meet the attack on continued objectives. In his biography, JR Copeland noted “They were shooting live ammo at us, some Rangers got killed,” JR’ said about the Commando training. “It was tough, damn tough . . . as tough as I ever had.” Victor Miller expressed some funny stories in his biography of the Rangers scaring some of the locals while on training exercises, or just horsing around, by the use of live fire. He also indicated that the Rangers fired and fired their weapons as part of their training while in Scotland.

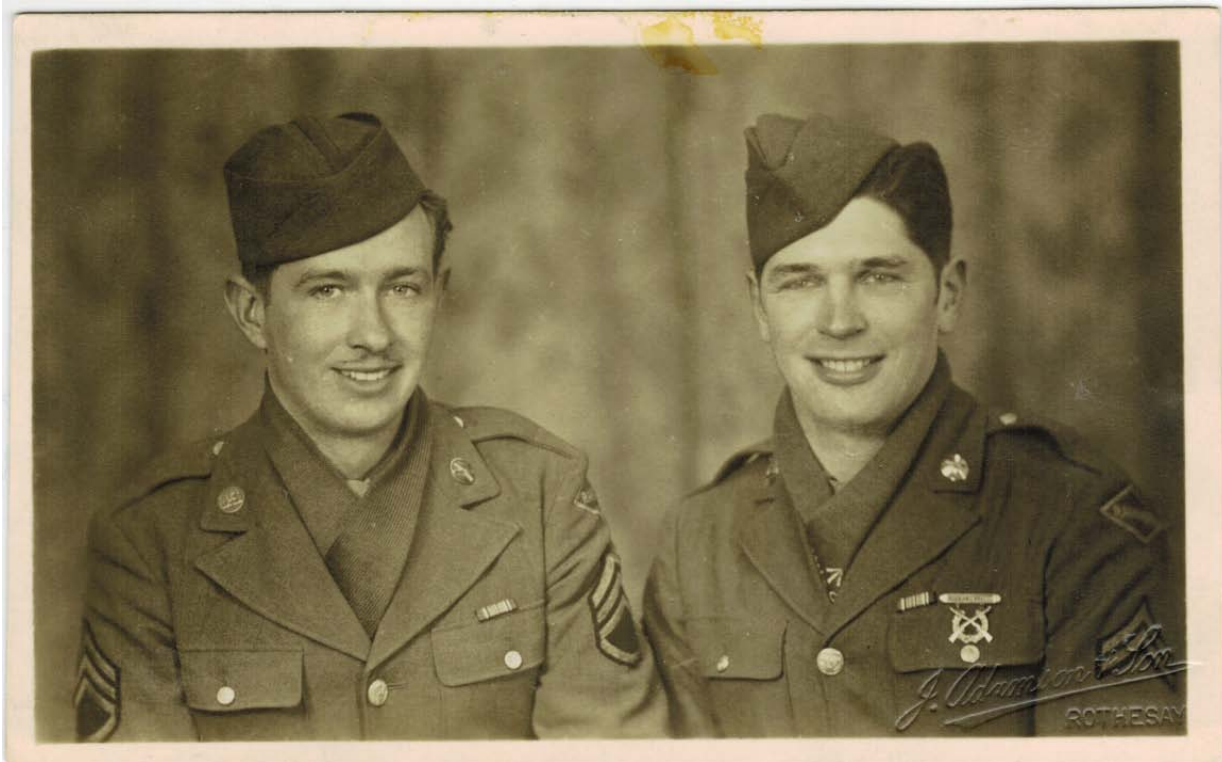


Figure 150: S/Sgt Hull and Corporal Herman Stuyvesant in Scotland

SSG Herbert Hull & Cpl Herman Stuyvesant 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company had their photo taken at Rothesay, Scotland (Figure 150). The photograph was taken by the notable Victorian photography company J. Adamsom & Son, Rothesay. The studio was located on the Isle of Bude near where the Rangers trained in Tighnabruaich, Scotland. This photo was taken between March 1 and March 27, 1944.

In March 1944, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion Commander, Lt. Colonel Owen E. Carter had lost the confidence of at least a portion of his officers. Company Commanders, Captains John T. Eichnor, George P. Whittington, Jr., and Hugo W. Hefflefinger all went outside of the chain of command to Colonel Rudder to persuade him that their commanding officer was not of Ranger caliber. These officers possibly made several trips to visit the Colonel to complain about their view of the incompetence of Lt. Colonel Carter. From their perspective, these officers took a great professional risk in their actions as they believed that they were saving lives in doing so. It is a serious breach of military protocol to do what they did in the manner they did it. General Raaen told me that somehow Major Sullivan or Captain Butler learned of the communications with Colonel Rudder by the three officers either through one of their friends in the unit, such as E Company Commander 1st Lieutenant Edward Luther or possibly through reporting through the non-commissioned officer chain of command. Sullivan, Butler and Luther had all graduated from the Massachusetts Military Academy. It is possible that if the three "mutinous" men had approached the Corps Command, that someone there may have tipped off Sullivan and Butler. Then 1st Lieutenant Raaen was awakened after midnight on March 4 and asked to report to Battalion Headquarters. When he arrived, he was asked by Major Sullivan and Captain Butler if he was one of the officers in on the activities of the others. One of the officers asked him, "Are you one of them?" Lieutenant Raaen replied, "One of whom? What are you talking about?" Lieutenant Raaen had heard that the three had "sneaked" down to Corps and report that Lieutenant Colonel Carter was incompetent and should be relieved. Lieutenant Raaen was asked what his opinion of the matter of the "mutineers" was from a military protocol standpoint as Raaen was Regular Army (RA), meaning that he held a full commission in the RA with a future career in the service with West Point under his belt, and all the formal training as an officer that entailed. Lieutenant Raaen "told them if they wanted to relieve the three, do it instantly, have them gone by reveille". The Corps was called and the three officers were all summarily relieved of their respective company commands, and they were all removed from the battalion that very day on March 4, 1944. The Company Morning Report for the day shows Captain Whittington, from duty to Duty Station (DS) 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion, APO#270, relieved from command. The next line shows 1st Lieutenant Bernard M Pepper, Assumes company command.



The Corps Command along with Colonel Rudder took a hard look at the accusations of incompetence brought against Carter. Colonel Rudder was not the deciding official, but the Corps command respected him and valued his opinion. As a result of that or other reasons, Lt. Colonel Owen was relieved of command of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, by the VIII Corps on March 4, 1944. He was temporarily replaced by Major Sullivan on the same date. The seasoned Major Max Schneider later took command on March 24, 1944. Around the year 2000, General Raaen learned of the fact that the three captains had made several secretive trips to complain to Colonel Rudder about their Commanding Officer. He indicated to me that Colonel Rudder must have been concerned with the command situation in the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion. General Raaen opined that Colonel Rudder must have been involved in getting the wheels turning on Lieutenant Colonel Carter's removal. Even through the Provisional Ranger Group that formed later as a command structure to coordinate the actions of both Battalions on D-Day did not exist, Colonel Rudder was well respected in the command circles of EUTOSA. Colonel Rudder was held in high regard by General Eisenhower and his chain of command. General Raaen to this day still does not know how Sullivan and Butler found out about what the three "mutineers" had been doing. General Raaen recalled liking Colonel Carter personally, but felt that his departure from the unit was not a bad thing. General Raaen did not believe that the strong willed personalities of Rangers were the kind of soldiers that Carter was best suited to command.

The United States Army 50th General Hospital advanced party arrived in Glasgow, Scotland on January 18, 1944. The advance party went to Cowglen Hospital at Boydstone, located in the then outskirts of Glasgow. They toured the 2nd Evacuation Hospital and acquainted themselves with the functions of the Hospital. They signed for the equipment and facility and began the work of setting up shop. The main element of the unit arrived on February 17. The former Cowglen Hospital was adjacent to two golf courses, and had ready access to rail facilities. The hospital was connected with the Glasgow water and sewer system as it had been in operation as a hospital before being requisitioned as a military hospital. The British government took to building many other facilities and Nissen hut buildings in order to accommodate the personnel assigned and patients who would travel through the hospital on their path to healing. The unit was subject to regular inspections from Brigadier Stevenson, Medical Consultant for the Scottish Command, Officers of the 26th District, Western Base Section, and by representatives of the Chief Surgeon's Office. They also had special inspections by General Lee, General Patton, General Kirk, General Grant, General Manifold, Surgeon of the Scottish Command, Brigadier Sheppard and others.

BMH Cowglen Hospital was located at Cowglen Road, Glasgow G53 6XJ. After World War Two British Military Hospital Cowglen became the Glasgow and Western Regional Hospital Board Hospital. The facility was demolished in 2000. In present day terms, from where the UK M8 crosses the river in downtown, one would head south a couple of miles to the interchange of M8 and M77. Take the M77 south to Barrhead Road (B762) and head west to a five point intersection called Peat Road. Head South on Peat Road to Cowglen Road which should be the first left turn. The hospital was located somewhere in this area.<sup>10</sup>

Dr. Robert W. Florence served with the 50th General Hospital during the war. He wrote some wartime memoirs in the American Academy of Orthopaedic Surgeons publication, *Legacy of Heroes*, 2002. In it he tells how the Cowglen, Scotland hospital had been a former tuberculosis hospital. He wrote about the use of the Nissen huts for surgical operating rooms and wards. He specifically wrote: "The 50th General Hospital became the station hospital for the American troops stationed in the area, and were soon busy. With the 5th Ranger Battalion doing their training in the rugged country to the north of us, the orthopedic service was soon busy treating all types of fractures. Our orders were to treat lower extremity fractures with traction, so it is my recollection that we had one Nissen hut filled, or nearly so, with beds equipped with Balkan frames and patients in traction."<sup>11, 12</sup>

As if there was not enough change in leadership occurring in Scotland, on March 23, 1st Lieutenant Matthew Gregory was brought into B Company as the 2nd Platoon leader. He would land with the men on D-Day.



Figure 151: World War II Nissen Huts in use as part of a Station Hospital (NARA)

On March 26, 1944, while on a training involving steep terrain, S/Sgt Hull lost his footing and broke his right ankle. He was training on terrain similar to that shown in Figure 152. He is noted in the March 27 B Company Morning Report as transferred to the 50th General Hospital, APO 506, US Army. His medical records provided through the Department of Veterans Affairs verified this event. James Robert Copeland told me during one of our calls that he remembered he (S/Sgt Hull) had fallen and gotten injured. He could not provide additional details. Thus began the vacation of S/Sgt Hull from the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion. His path intersected with that of the 50th General Hospital. On March 30, he was transferred in grade with eight other injured enlisted men to the Detachment of Patients, 50th General Hospital for additional treatment. After being treated, Hull was then assigned to Headquarters, 10th Replacement Depot, APO 874, until he was transferred back to the battalion on April 17, 1944 in Braunton Camp, England. His prowess as a Ranger likely led to his return to the unit, whereas many other men fell from the roles of the unit in Scotland, never to return.

The 10th U.S. Army Replacement Depot, known as a “repple depple” by troops was a temporary station for troops who were destined to be replacement soldiers for front line units. Wounded soldiers who had been released from medical care would be sent to the replacement depots to await return to active service. The last function of the replacement depot was that of a military prison for soldiers who were convicted of having gone AWOL (Absent Without Leave) if from a unit headed to front-line service. In August 1942, the 10th Replacement Depot moved to Whittington Barracks, a British Army base in Whittington, Staffordshire, near Lichfield, England. The address was at 10th US Army Replacement Depot, APO 7245, NY, NY, at Litchfield, England.

The British Army, British North Staffordshire Regiment turned the facility over to the U.S. Army in World War II for the replacement depot. The British had constructed part of the facility in 1877, and it consisted of red brick buildings. The remainder of the area had been part of a housing development started in 1937 known as the Pheasey Farm development. By the outbreak of World War II, 2000 homes had been completed. The location of it was at the corner of Collingwood Drive and Beacon Road on the site of the old Roxburgh Grove.



Figure 152: 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion conducting cliff climbing training in Scotland (NARA)

The 10th U.S. Army Replacement Depot had its own dubious reputation earned during the World War II. After the war in 1946, several of the command officers and guards associated with the prison attached to the Replacement Depot were tried for allegations of war crimes involving cruelty against prisoners. These crimes included beating



prisoners, making them do seven hours of vigorous physical training a day and only allowing five minutes to eat. The 10th U.S. Army Replacement Depot was under the command of Lieutenant Colonel James A Killian. He would later stand accused in the aforementioned court martial. Several accounts of soldiers passing through the unit while waiting assignment to their future line units were likewise subjected to treatment not exactly fitting that of trained soldiers. One account indicated that a particular soldier, who having been assigned to the 10th U.S. Army Replacement Battalion, 438th Battalion, Company C, was subjected to unusual treatment, not even as a prisoner. He indicated that the men were subjected to routine gas mask drills, close order drill and formal retreat ceremonies on a nightly basis. The soldier said these were performed for the personal pleasure of the Post Commander, Lieutenant Colonel Killian. I can only imagine how any Rangers would have taken to a "leader" of this caliber while "stuck" there. I am sure that the shenanigans at the Replacement Depot did not impress any of the Rangers to pass through the gates.

The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion completed their training in Scotland and on April 2, 1944, departed for their next duty station at Braunton Camp, England, APO 230. The unit left Tighnuabruaich, Scotland at 1600 hours by motor boat and arrived at Rothasay, Scotland fourteen miles away at 1745 hours. They then embarked aboard the TSS *Sussex* and arrived at Wemyss, Hemys Bay, Scotland at 1925 hours having travelled 25 miles. Next they travelled 100 miles by rail, arriving at Preston, England at 2359 hours. On April 3, they travelled 400 miles by rail to the US Assault Training Center at Braunton Camp, England. They were aboard their train from 0001 hours until 1530 hours.

## 12 U.S. ASSAULT TRAINING CENTRE, BRAUNTON, ENGLAND

Major Max F. Schneider was the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion Executive Officer. He had transferred to the unit on November 11, 1943 while the rest of the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion was transiting the Atlantic. He joined the unit on December 1, 1943 near Glasgow, Scotland when the Queen Elizabeth docked with the battalion aboard. While a member of the 2nd Rangers, he had participated along with British Commandos on nighttime reconnaissance landings of the entire Normandy coastal area later attacked on D-Day. He had previously served as a Company Commander in the 1st Ranger Infantry Battalion in Africa. He then served as the Battalion Executive Officer of the 4th Ranger Infantry Battalion in the Mediterranean, where his leadership and experiences landing in Sicily and Italy would prove a decisive factor on D-Day.

The commander of the 2nd Rangers was briefed on the landings on January 4, 1944. This D-Day mission briefing is of critical importance to the story of D-Day later on. Colonel Rudder and Major Schneider reported to General Omar Bradley's headquarters in London where the briefing took place. General Bradley's operations officer, Colonel Truman Thorson, provided the briefing to the men. The office had detailed maps of the invasion area including unit locations and objectives as part of the invasion. The Rangers were briefed on Pointe du Hoc and the importance of knocking it out. They were briefed on the six 155-mm Grande Puissance Filloux (GPF) cannons at Pointe du Hoc that had a range of 17,400 yards, and the implications of the possible siting of a modernized weapon using modernized ammunition having a range of 25,000 yards.<sup>1</sup>

They were also provided two other objectives including taking control of the coastal road running parallel to the cliffs and taking control of Pointe de la Percee which was a strongpoint on the western bluffs of Omaha Beach. They were told that command calculated that seventy percent casualties were expected of the Rangers. When presented with the plan, it is said that Major Schneider took it in and whistled through his teeth. I picture a single note emanating from him when reading that. A book about him by his son, James F. Schneider tells how this briefing had profoundly affected his father for a time, likely as a result of post traumatic stress disorder (PTSD).<sup>2</sup> I am deeply moved by the biography of Max F Schneider, and recommend it as reading to anyone interested in military leadership during World War II. PTSD was a condition that during World War II had yet to be identified. It was reported by his son that Schneider knew the job that had to be done, and prepared himself to do it.

As a result of the change of command on March 24, 1944 with Major Max Schneider assuming command of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, both Captains George P. Whittington, Jr. and Hugo W. Hefflefinger were reinstated in the battalion by Major Schneider on April 3, 1944. Whittington resumed command of B Company, and Hefflefinger became the Battalion S-3 Officer. Captain John T. Eichnor declined Major Schneider's invitation to rejoin the Battalion and moved on to the 125th Cavalry Reconnaissance Squadron, Mechanized. He would return home at the conclusion of the war a hero after having survived being a German POW, and the sinking of a vessel he was travelling on in the Atlantic. General Raaen would again meet the officer during the Vietnam War. First Lieutenant Charles H. "Ace" Parker assumed command of A Company and 1st Lieutenant George Miller assumed command of D Company.<sup>2</sup>

Colonel Rudder and his staff took on the assault planning after being presented a plan they were unhappy with in

the spring of 1944. Major Schneider was thus integral to the success of the overall planning for the Rangers on D-Day. The Germans believed their fortification at Pointe du Hoc to be unassailable from the sea. An unnamed Lt. Intelligence Officer for Rear Admiral John Leslie Hall, Commander of Amphibious Force O is widely quoted stating "It can't be done. Three old women with brooms could keep the Rangers from climbing that cliff."<sup>1</sup>

Braunton is located in the southwest of England. It is in the District of North Devon in the Shire county of Devon at 51.11°N 4.162°W. It is 5 miles west of Barnstaple, south of Woolacombe and is one of the larger villages in England. Braunton overlooks Barnstaple Bay two miles from the sea. The Caen Stream, tributary to the Taw River runs through the middle of the village. The coastal area facing the Atlantic Ocean has considerable surf, so much so, that today it is a popular surfing destination in the United Kingdom. The etymology of Braunton comes from the Old English words brōm and tūn, meaning farmstead and settlement respectively. The name was given to the village after Saint Brannock who originated in South Wales as a Christian missionary in 550 A.D. Converting the tribal Britons to Christianity, a church was developed here, and Western European development took root. The area was and remains suitable for farming with fertile, low-lying fields. The village name was officially recorded in 1086 A.D. Several modest English villages established themselves in the region of Devon over the following thousand years.<sup>3</sup>

Just north of Braunton lies the seaside resort area of Woolacombe.<sup>4</sup> This area is at the mouth of a valley in the parish of Morteheo. A combe is another term for valley. The gently sloping, long and sandy beach faces the Atlantic Ocean near the western limit of the Bristol Channel between England and Ireland. The beach itself is about three miles in length and is long and flat in shape. The conditions there and on the land beyond made it a decent surrogate for the Normandy Beaches. Bracketing the beach to the north and south are low cliffs. Of interest is that at the time of the war, the beach and much of the surrounding land was owned by a family named Chichester. This family had continuously owned this land since 1133 A.D. during the reign of King Henry I. Lady Rosalie Chichester, the last of her line willed the land holdings to the National Trust in 1949.

Regarding the U.S. Assault Training Center (USATC) at Braunton Camp, England, I had a research bonanza. Historian Richard T. Bass of England has developed a website that documents the facility very well. Mr. Bass has researched the U.S. Assault Training Centre in North Devon for many years and has published a book "*Spirits of the Sand*", amongst other research work on the facility. Mr. Bass has been uncovering details forgotten for over sixty years. His work spans the entire site and includes field archaeological work in support of his findings. I made acquaintance with Mr. Bass and he graciously allowed me access to his research for use in this work as well as his knowledge. He works as a battlefield guide for U.S. Assault Training Centre and at Normandy.

An original assumption of the European Theater of Operations Command was that as Divisions and other units arrived in the United Kingdom, they would do so fully prepared and trained for the tasks that would be assigned to them. The planning for D-Day revealed many special technical problems with this assumption. As joint Allied planning went on, it became apparent to American planners of the invasion that an American training center be established in England to test new methods, techniques and weapons as troops were given final preparations for invasion. The Americans drew from the experience of the British experiments and successes of their Combined Operations Headquarters. Work began in earnest in 1942 to establish the training center. Development in 1943 was hampered by the requirements of the Mediterranean Theater as the Allies successfully prosecuted action in Africa, Sicily and Italy. In looking for suitable training grounds, the Americans had to deal with the legalities of procuring private property. On April 2, 1943 the U.S. Assault Training Center was activated under the command of Lieutenant Colonel Paul W. Thompson, an engineer officer. The center took until September to offer training at Woolacombe in order to prepare the facility and the engineering works contained therein. The U.S. Assault Training Center covered 25 square miles along ten miles of Atlantic coastline, including terrain such as beaches, cliffs, headlands and sand dunes between Woolacombe and Appledore. I found that in the published works covering the topic, the U.S. Assault Training Center is referred to under its name, Woolacombe, Braunton Sands, Braunton or derivations of these names.<sup>5</sup>

The Training Center headquarters was established at the Woolacombe Bay Hotel. First, U.S. engineers cleared mines that the Brits had laid. The Brits had left the area without leaving minefield maps so the GIs had to clear the coastline of miles of real beach obstacles and mines that had been installed to thwart any German invasion. Roads and paths to and from the newly created training areas were established throughout the area. Pill boxes and other concrete structures were erected for training. The American Red Cross headquartered at the Bungalow Café later and



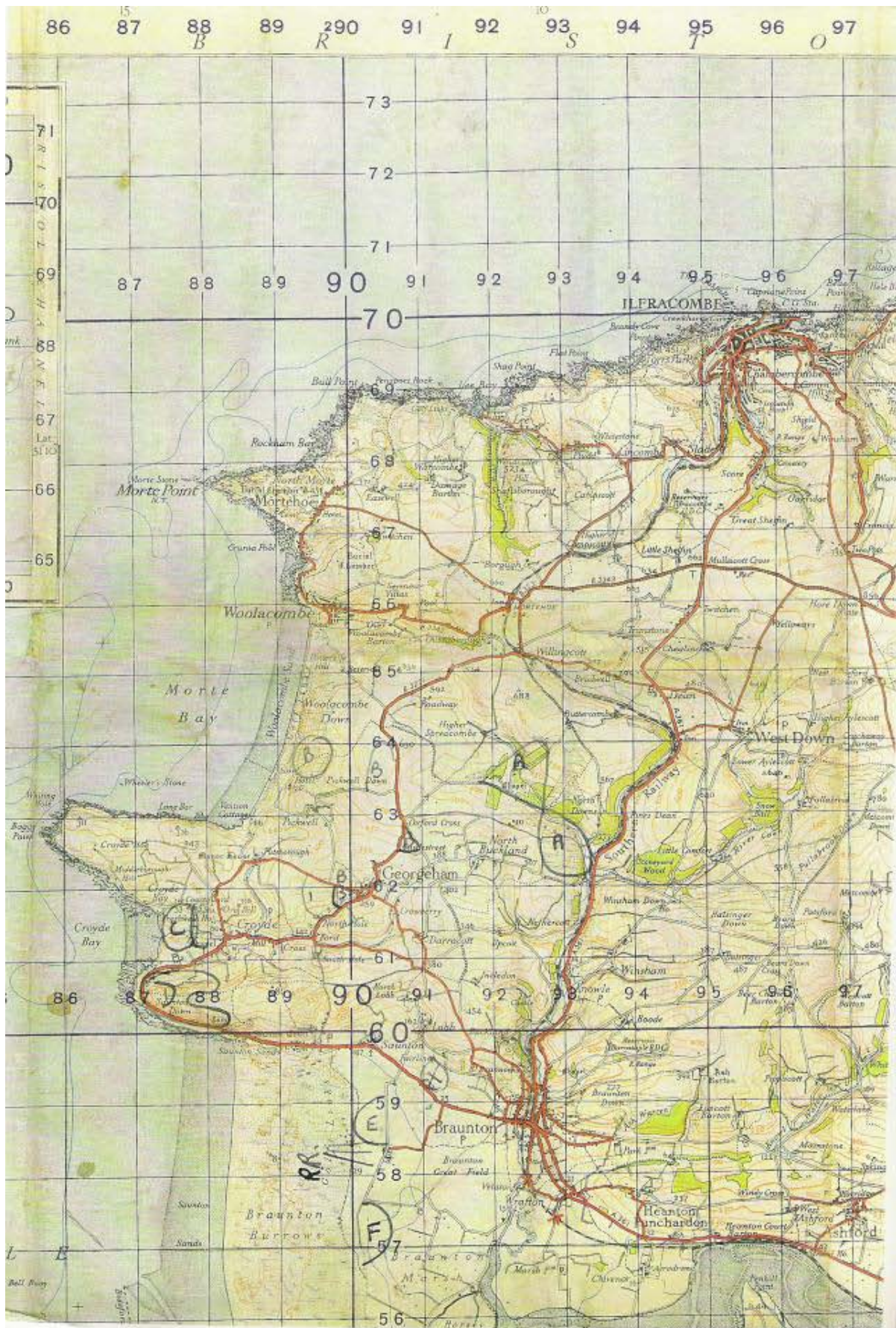


Figure 153: The U.S. Army Assault Training Center, Woolacombe, England (Courtesy Richard T. Bass)

now known as “Red Barn” café. Nissan or Quonset huts were erected throughout the region for various purposes. A camp at Lincombe near Lee, Burrow Woods Camp could house over 2000 troops. The Americans constructed a large motor pool and large ammunition dump near Sandy Burrows field. In town, the Pandora hotel became a hospital and the Boathouse Café became the PX, with the Forty Eight Club serving as an NCO club. The Belle View was converted for use as a military stockade. Small barber shops appeared for the GIs to get their hair cut. The post band billeted at the Rayharden hotel. The Americans established a trash dump at High Bullen that became popular with the locals for finding treasures in the cast offs of the soldiers such as K rations, clothes, cigarettes and lighters. The brass American booby trap detonators were reusable and a collectable to many an enterprising English schoolboy. The Americans lavished the British with chocolate bars and black silk stockings, a luxury missed by the English ladies during the war years. The map shown in Figure 153 shows the general camp layout.

Although they had established joint amphibious training with the Navy and or Marine Corps in the continental United States, the U.S. Army had no published principles for making an assault of heavily fortified coastlines in 1943. The military had its experiences in the Pacific against the Japanese; however they were a very different adversary from the Germans in terms of fighting style and doctrine. The only published advice at the time was to assault elsewhere and to take fortifications from the rear or landward side. The German Atlantic Wall presented a unique problem to be solved and defeated. With successes in the Mediterranean, the Army began to understand the German military’s capabilities, strengths and weaknesses.

Lt. Col. Thompson was given the mission to produce a doctrine of training for the units to participate in the invasion, and as an engineer, to develop the physical environment in which they would train. He knew that the assault would take place somewhere on the French coast. Lt Col Paul W Thompson selected his own staff for the USATC based on their special skills, knowledge and expertise. Thompson and his staff spent March and April 1943 making detailed surveys and analysis of the French coast. In May 1943, he convened a month long conference in London where he took what today would be considered a multi-disciplined approach to the engineering problem. Experts were brought in from every service and from amongst the Allied powers. The task at this conference was to figure out a workable way to neutralize the Atlantic Wall including beach defenses and fortifications. All kinds of intelligence data concerning the French coast was gathered including photographs, maps and other data such as soils and weather data. Experimental projects were put on the table including what became known as the British “Funnies” like the Duplex Drive Sherman tanks that could swim ashore and would support the Rangers on Omaha.

Nearly all U.S. units who would later participate in Operation Overlord trained in some form or another at Woolacombe. The amount and intensity of training received varied among units, with some, such as the 1st Infantry Division and 82nd Airborne Division receiving very little formal training as they arrived in England as seasoned combat troops fresh from action in the Mediterranean. Other units, who were newer to combat such as the 29th Infantry Division, sent nearly all of its troops through training at the center. The U.S. Assault Training Center offered special short courses in the technique of assaulting fortified positions amongst other specialties.<sup>6</sup>

With the selection of Normandy as the landing area and with the Omaha Beach area being assigned to the U.S. forces a realization came that the Americans would have to fight their way up cliffs and also take the few heavily defended valleys, or draws that made their way inland from the beaches. The idea of developing infantry units into thirty-man “Assault Sections” was formulated. The number of men in an Assault Section was driven largely by the capacity of the landing craft, specifically the LCA and Landing Craft, Vehicle, Personnel (LCVP). These Assault Sections would have to land, attack the enemy defenses by using a variety of weapons that an infantry unit could carry. Combined services operations would be brought together, including aerial and naval bombardment and supporting fire. Pillboxes would be engaged by flat trajectory, high velocity naval gunfire. The development of transports able to bring in artillery that was able to fire while onboard the vessels were finalized.

The main mission of preparing troops for amphibious assaults was augmented by furthering amphibious doctrine for the U.S. military. The USATC experimented with new equipment, combined exercises and knowledge sharing with the British. They developed methods to assemble, group and train invasion forces. They spent a great deal of time analyzing the troop strength needed for the assault through analysis of the units who trained at the center. They also studied what the best conditions would be for the invasion. “The assault was considered as a frontal attack which was unlikely even to have the advantage of tactical surprise.”<sup>6</sup>



Trials at the Assault Training Center and in various Allied exercises showed that smoke tended to confuse assault troops as much as the defenders. The final conclusions were that smoking of the hostile shore could not be sufficiently controlled, that it offered too many opportunities for fatal mistakes, and that by interfering with observed fire it would handicap Allied fire superiority. An amphibious assault without cover of darkness or smoke, and without the flexibility of a large floating reserve, depended for success on developing a weight behind the initial attack that would not only crumble enemy defenses but would carry the assaulting troops far enough inland so that follow-up troops could be put ashore behind them to consolidate and then exploit the beachhead.<sup>7</sup> The USATC staff calculated in 1943 that at no place along the coast of northwest France could the Germans use more than one platoon per 2,000-2,500 yards to protect beach fortifications. They deduced that Germans would have extremely strong field defenses with concrete pillboxes, emplacements, and shelters, and thinly spread defenders providing considerable automatic fire.<sup>6</sup>

The doctrine developed for the USATC was developed based on the conference of experts in London. Mr. Bass reported that a secret document of the time stated:

“Modern fortified areas are characterized by a series of steel pillboxes, steel turrets, open emplacements, troop shelters, slit trenches and similar installations. Such defenses are commonly called Hedgehog. The heart of the defensive system is the concrete and steel pillboxes. These are camouflaged, project only a small portion above the ground, and are so located as to provide interlocking zones of fire and mutual fire support. The entire area is surrounded by various anti-tank obstacles, ditches, tank traps, minefields, and from two to many bands of wire. The wire, minefields and normal avenues of approach for foot troops are liberally sewn with anti-personnel mines. The ground immediately before the weapon openings, or embrasures, in the pillboxes is leveled to provide long fields of fire. Where natural cover in the form of trees or underbrush is present, the trees and brush are cut down. Generally little, if any, natural cover for attacking troops exists. The pillboxes have weapons that vary from machine guns to anti-tank guns up to light field artillery. To successfully attack such a formidable area of new construction embodying the latest principles of modern tactics, infantry must be specifically trained, provided with additional weapons, and be backed up with a preponderance of artillery and direct fire weapons. In addition, air bombardment and ground support formations are extensively employed”.

The USATC therefore developed a sound approach to conducting a direct assault of German fortifications along the coastline. These methods were trainable, repeatable and involved the application of sufficient firepower and maneuvering to accomplish the mission at the lowest unit level possible. These techniques were taught up through the Division Level. They included enough standardization that in the heat of battle, as would later be demonstrated during the assault, units could mix and match forces and accomplish the mission. Whether units would land at the wrong location, or casualties mount to the point where units would have to join forces to remain combat effective, they fundamentally knew what was expected of them and had enough equipment on hand to execute their missions through this standardization.

The assault divisions were formed therefore simply by reducing the overhead of a normal infantry division both in men and vehicles and increasing the normal infantry fire power. While the basic divisional structure remained unchanged, the rifle companies were organized in assault teams with special equipment to deal with fortified positions. The platoons of the assault companies were split into two assault sections apiece, each with twenty-nine men and one officer, the size being determined by the capacity of the LCVP. The two assault platoons in each company included rifle teams, a wire-cutting team, a bazooka team, a flame-throwing team, a BAR team, a 60-mm mortar team, and a demolition team. The third platoon was similarly organized except that it had an 81-mm. instead of a 60-mm mortar and a heavy machine gun instead of a BAR. After the assault, each platoon was reorganized into a normal rifle platoon with two rifle squads and a weapons squad. The infantry assault troops were stripped to the barest combat essentials.<sup>6</sup>

Part of the technique for infantry conducting a direct assault of German defenses resulted in reorganization of infantry elements to incorporate the use of soldiers using flamethrowers and high explosives at the heart of the assault section. The Assault Teams were to advance under massed artillery and direct fire weapons preceded by an aerial bombardment, and covered by smoke. It was anticipated that the infantry troops would be the deciding factor at



destroying each fortification. The intention of the massed air and naval bombardment was not to rely on those assets to destroy targets, rather for them to provide fire support and cover fire of the assaulting troops. This doctrine has evolved and is still in use today, but on a much more lethal and surgical scale. Another use for the bombardment was to cause casualties amongst the enemy and to cause their forces to duck and cover, while at the same time disrupting enemy fields of fire.

The naval bombardment, areal bombardment and artillery supporting fire would step inland from the landing zones as the soldiers actually landed in order to disrupt the enemy from bringing up reinforcements and reorganizing successful counterattacks. At the infantry level, wire cutting teams would advance using Bangalore torpedoes to blow gaps in the barbed wire and to destroy landmines. Assault troops then moved forward to cover the advance of the flamethrowers, bazookas and demolitions teams per the training and methods described later. As the flamethrowers and demolition teams approached within 40 to 60 yards of the fortification, the flamethrower would be unleashed upon the target while the demolition team moves in to place their charges. The process would be repeated at each successive defensive structure. Engineer troops and sailors worked alongside the assault sections clearing major gaps in the minefields and beach obstacles in order to clear avenues for ever increasing forces such as additional tanks and other vehicles and soldiers as they land. Navy personnel only worked at demolishing the beach obstacles (NCDUs) and clearing the gaps ever wider for arriving troops.

The new doctrine drastically altered the conventional structure of an infantry division. The first problem to be encountered by the training staff was selling the idea to unit commanders. This was an issue that required diplomacy and rank to convince skeptical commanders that this was the way things had to be done, and the task fell to the Center's Executive Officer, Lieutenant Colonel Lucius P. Chase.<sup>5</sup>

The very backbone of the USATC doctrine was the concept of the Assault Section. Each Assault Section was comprised of thirty infantrymen, divided into eight teams. This was not much unlike the setup in an individual platoon of a Ranger Company. Each Assault Section trained in the requisite skills and practiced together to function as a self sufficient unit, again, not unlike the methodology used by the Rangers. This being said, the Rangers molded easily to this model.

The Army provided instruction regarding the lifesaving equipment of an assault landing such as life vests, gas masks and the like. This instruction and equipment was provided to afford the individual soldier the best possible chance to reach the beach from the landing craft.

Training Memorandum ASLT – 18 listed what each soldier should carry, including:

- Pack, field, less bed roll, meat can, knife, fork.
- 3 pkts "K" rations, to be carried in field pack
- 3 bars "D"
- 5 (or 6) grenades, fragmentation and smoke.
- 96 rounds, M-1 ammunition to be carried in belt and bandolier.
- First Aid Packet, to be carried on belt.
- Canteen, cup, cover, on belt.
- Rifle, M-1
- Bayonet and Scabbard.
- Gas Mask to be carried as prescribed
- Cover, protective, gas, to be carried in gas mask.
- Ointment

The Assault Section was designed to attack the enemy by means of frontal assault upon a fortified position. They were trained to provide coordinated fire and to allow the demolition team with sufficient cover to satisfy their objective. They were designed to breach the enemy defenses. Each Assault Section was headed by a Lieutenant, with a Sergeant as second in command. A Section consisted of sub teams of riflemen, wire-cutters, rocketeers, machine gunners, flamethrowers and a demolition team. Each subteam was organized and equipped with the mission to ultimately advance the demolition team to the enemy structure and blow it up with explosives. Each Assault Team was to be loaded into its landing craft LCVP (landing craft, vehicle and personnel) or LCA (landing craft assault) in a

predetermined manner to allow for a sequence of events to occur upon landing. Figure 154 shows the landing craft loading sequence. The descriptions and pictures of the USATC, assault methodology and mapping that follow are all included in direct collaboration with Mr. Richard T. Bass.

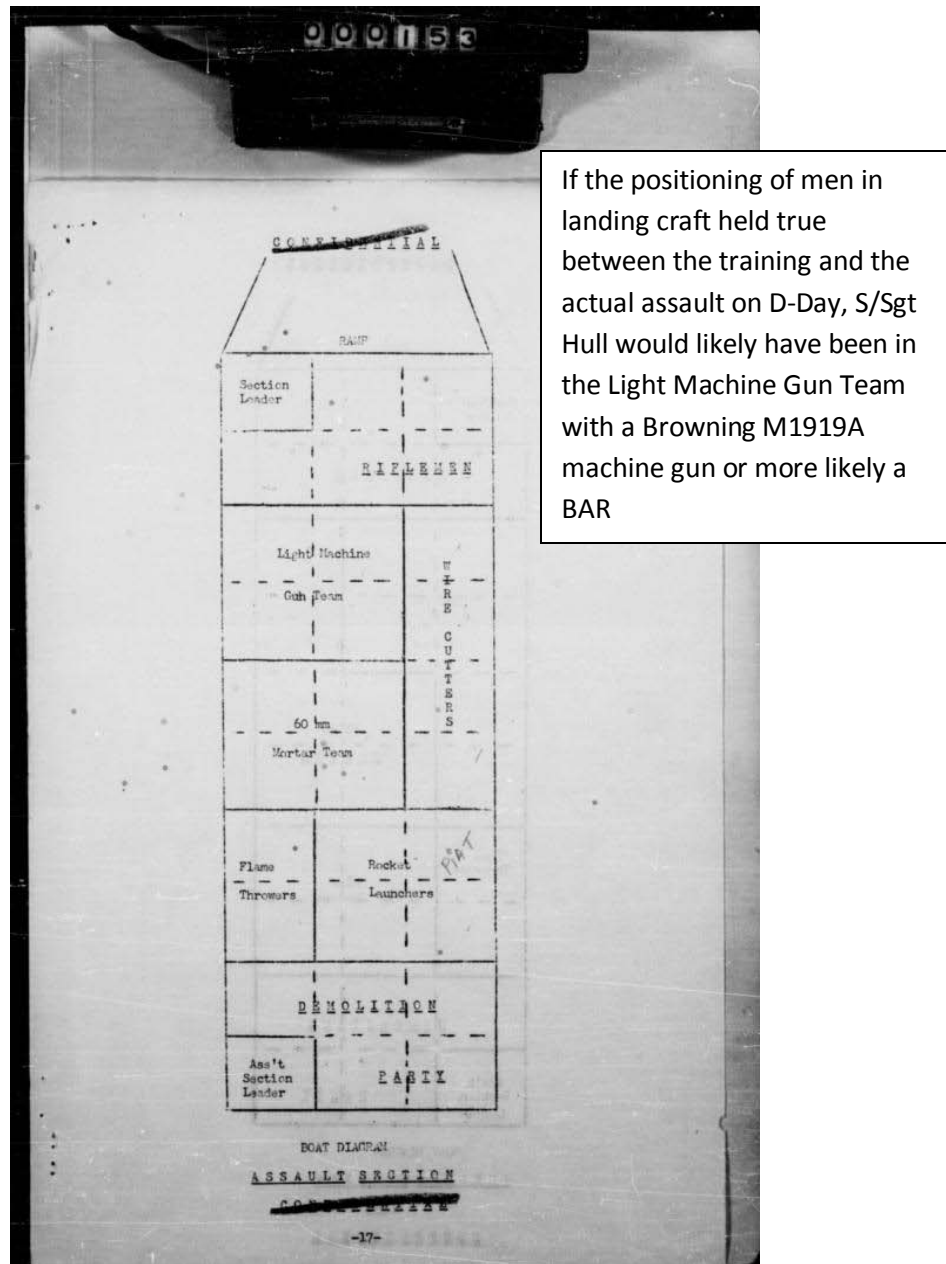


Figure 154: Assault Team in LCVP (NARA)

The USATC developed a prescribed method for assaulting the beach. The following description of it is taken from Mr. Bass's work directly. Regarding S/Sgt Hull's role in the upcoming invasion, it is important to note the actions of the light machine gun team as described in these training instructions throughout. For B Company, 2nd Platoon, Ranger S/Sgt Copeland would serve as the Assistant Section Leader for D-Day, on the same landing craft as S/Sgt Hull.

Immediately upon disembarking and covered by smoke from the chemical mortars firing from landing craft, the section leader and riflemen move straight to the front in a rough V formation with about ten yards interval and about five yard distance between riflemen. The light machine gun team and the mortar team deploy to the left in that order with similar intervals and distances, in accordance with the procedure set forth in individual assault pamphlets. The wire cutting team, the flame throwing team and demolitions team initially deploy to the right in a similar fashion while

the two launcher subteams deploy within the "V" about twenty yards apart and about twenty yards behind the section leader.

The assault was meticulously planned and practiced by the units training at the USATC. Prior to the beaching of the landing craft, naval and aerial bombardment cratered the beach and full advantage of these shell and bomb craters is taken in the initial movements of the assault section. The assault section leader looked for the principal enemy fortification in his zone of action and for supporting enemy emplacements. He then established communication with his supporting tank or gun by visual signal. After this, he located the elements of his assault section. He moved forward locating possible points for breaching enemy obstacles, blind areas in the enemy fields of fire, etc., covered by the fire of his riflemen. He marked out routes for the team and controlled his section of the landing zone. He did this by prearranged signals, time schedules, phase signals, visual signals (usually arm and hand) and oral orders. The soldiers often found the last two methods ineffectual because of noise, smoke and difficulty of movement.

The assistant leader, a non-commissioned officer, was the last man off the landing craft. He assisted the section leader, and was prepared to take the section leader's place if the latter became a casualty. Spatial separation of these two men in the landing craft maximized the chances of retaining the command structure under fire. His mission involved staying informed of the general situation at all times; and was particularly charged with the responsibility of locating covering fires from open emplacements and bringing mortar fire to bear upon such enemy installations.

The Light Machine Gun Team (squad) took position well to the flank of the assault section, enabling fire upon enemy installations taking care not to mask the fire of the supporting tank or gun. Once advancing riflemen moved past the team inhibiting effective fire, the gun was moved to a new position from which the original target could be engaged. The teams were taught the use of short bursts of two or three rounds fired at the embrasure. The chief use of the machine gun was neutralization of fire from enemy open installations.

The Mortar Team moved to a position where it could bring fire on possible targets with maximum protection. The Assistant Section Leader provided fire orders to the team. They fired on open emplacements, either at the direction of the Assistant Section Leader or on their own initiative. Fire was directed until the successful conclusion of the assault, when the mortar was prepared to fire on enemy concentrations and to break up enemy counterattacks.

The Rocket Launcher Team moved up under the protecting fires of the riflemen, the machine gun and the accompanying tank until it reaches a position from which it can fire upon the embrasure. Rocketeers were trained to take positions so that they are no nearer one another than twenty yards and where if possible communication can be established with the Section Leader. Fire was opened on the pillbox with armor piercing rockets to cover the advance of flamethrower and the demolitions party. When the flamethrower signals "I am ready", by arm and hand signal, the rocket fire is lifted. At the successful assault, the rocketeers advance to the next position or to attack a new pillbox as directed.

The Flame Thrower Team moved forward by short bounds, taking full advantage of cover, under the covering fires of the riflemen, the machine gun, the accompanying tank, and the rocket party until it reaches a point from which it can bring fire to bear upon the embrasure of the enemy pill-box. The assistant flame thrower kept close contact with the demolition party, and when that party was in position to begin its assault, he signaled to the rocketeer, "I am ready", by arm and hand or other pre-arranged signal, whereupon the rocket fire is lifted. The flame thrower party then opened with jets of one or two seconds and covered the placing of charges in the vulnerable points of the embrasure by the demolitions party.

The Demolitions party were the "ball carrier" of the assault section for whom all the other teams did the "blocking". It worked its way forward under the protective fires of the other weapons until it is ready to make the final movement to place the charges to destroy the pill-box. At that time, the leader of the party signals to the flame thrower party, "I am ready". The flame thrower then opens fire, and under the protecting jet, the demolition party places the necessary charge or charges in the vulnerable portions of the embrasure. They would then repeat the process at the next enemy position.

The USATC was designated with a letter-coded area identification strategy noting certain geographic areas on the facility. Training aids within the lettered training areas were then numbered. The training areas are important to study



to gain a better understanding of what was accomplished at the USATC. Strict discipline was enforced by the American Military Police, and they carried Thompson submachine guns and truncheons.

Areas A, B, C & D were part of the Braunton Burrows area. It is noted by being a vast expanse of sand dunes and slacks. It is here that most of the live firing ranges and dummy pillbox clusters were. It was at these structures that infantrymen were taught step by step the individual tasks of each component team within an Assault Section. The men practiced the assault tactics reputedly until perfected.

Area "A" was at the southern end of Braunton Burrows and included Crow Point, which is a spit of sand forming a natural sheltered beach at Broadsands where all embarkation for training and rehearsals took place. Figure 155 shows mapping of the area, while Figures 156 and 157 show various activities conducted in this area.

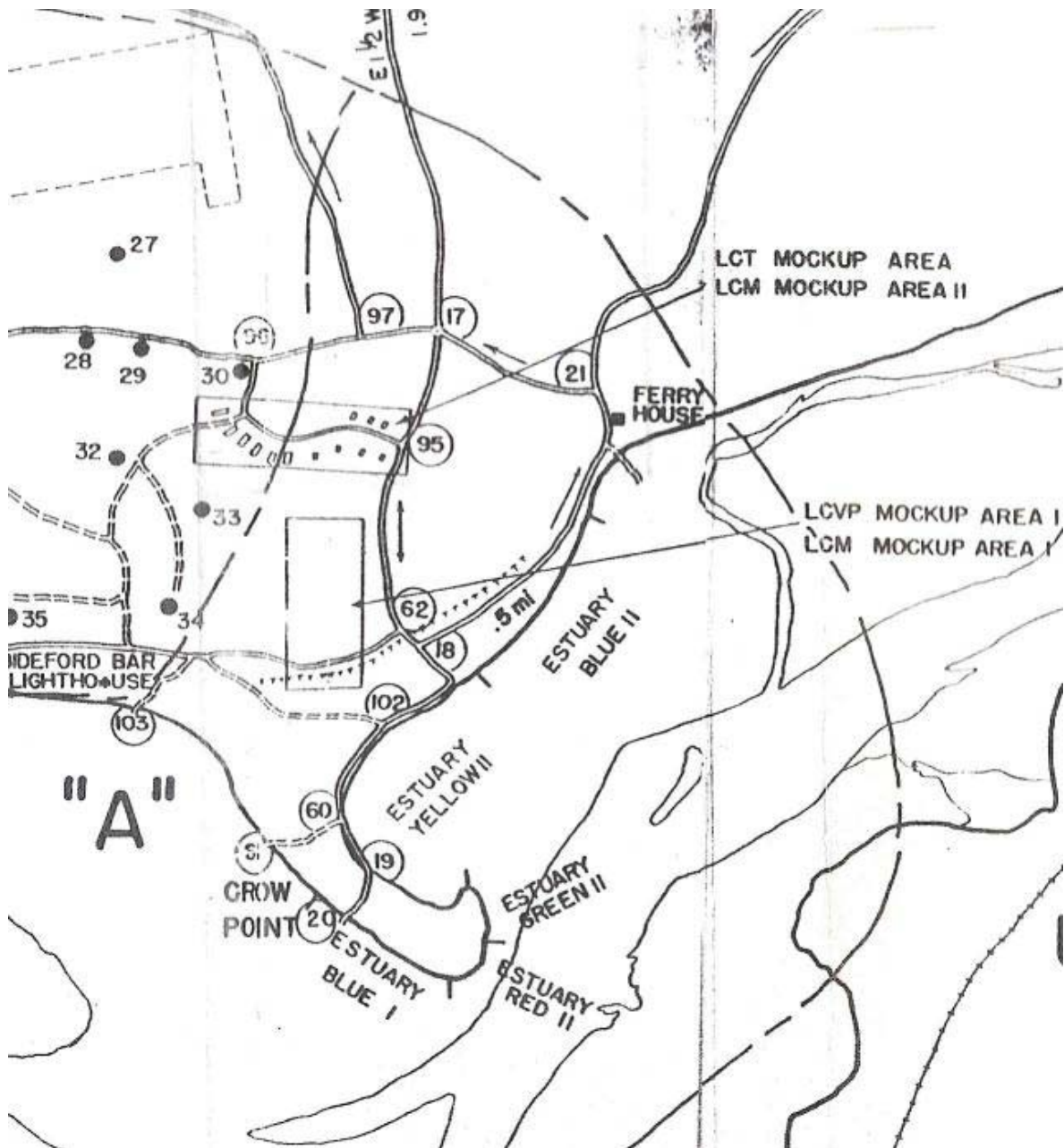


Figure 155: USATC, Area A map (Courtesy of Richard Bass)

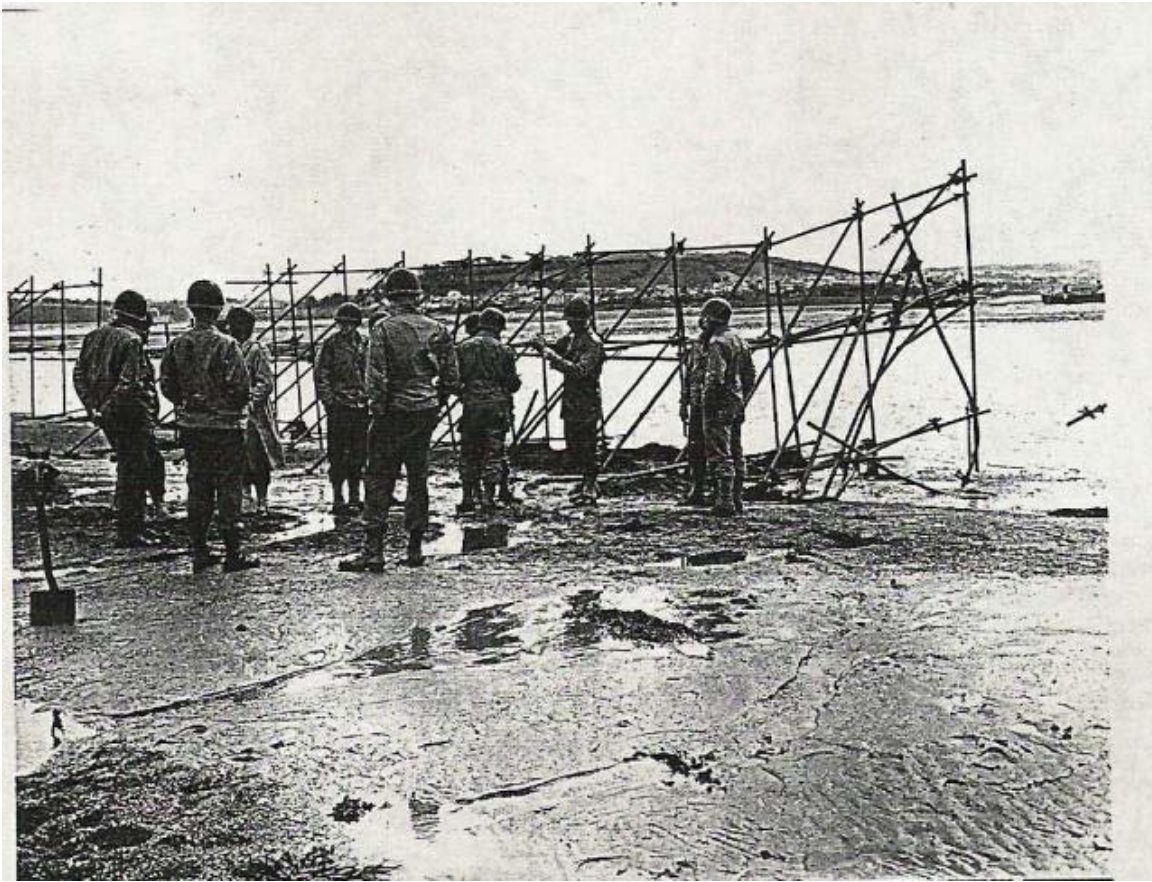


Figure 156: Soldiers analyzing mock German defenses in Area A at Braunton Burrows (NARA)



Figure 157: USATC Area A; (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)



Area "B" included most of the mock-up landing craft where troops, vehicles, tanks and artillery endlessly practiced speedy loading and debarkation. Many of the early, experimental pillboxes were situated here (Figures 158-159).



Figure 158: USATC, Area B, Practice Assault Beach, Engineer Obstacle Course (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)



Figure 159: USATC, Area B, Practice Assault Beach, dragon's teeth anti-tank obstacles (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)



A map of Area B is shown in Figure 160 . Prominent in this image are the demolition range, engineer's obstacle course, and rocket range.

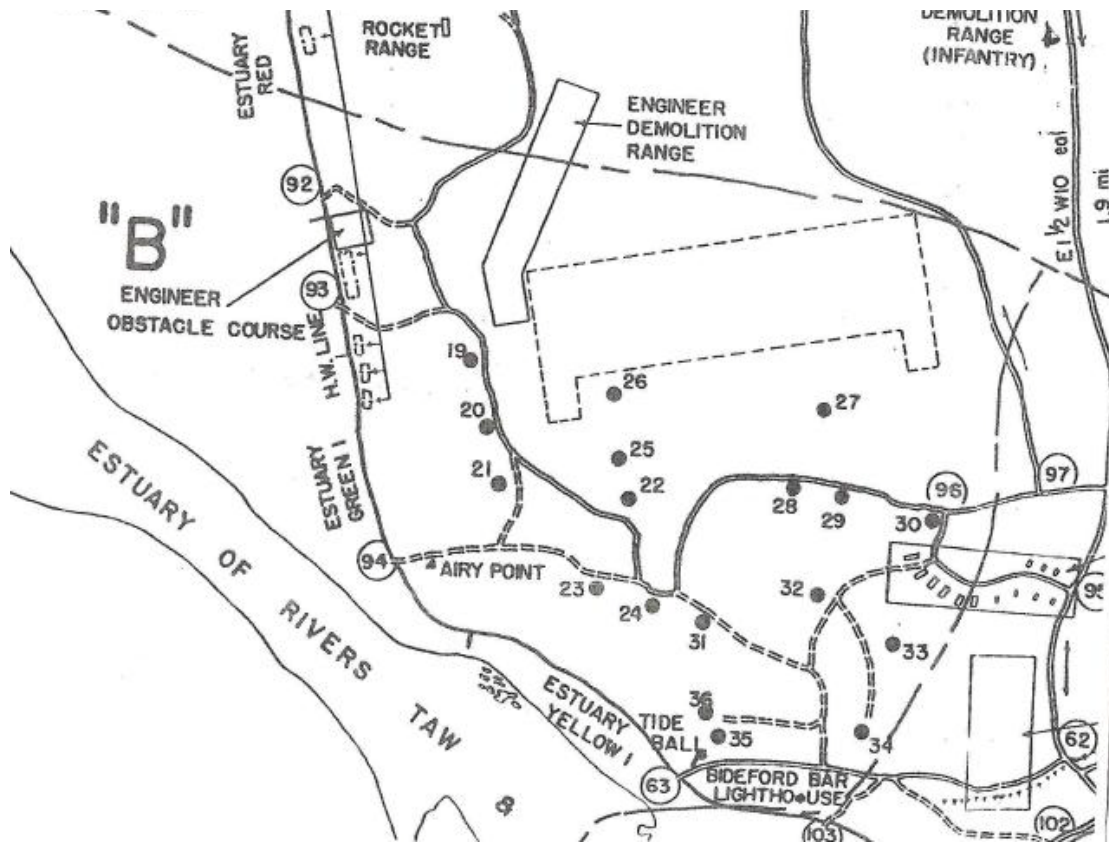


Figure 160: USATC, Area B map (Courtesy of Richard Bass)

Area "C" was in the middle of Braunton Burrows included the majority of constructions that were attacked by Assault Sections as well as the Mine and Booby-trap area and Wirecutting ranges (Figures 161-162).



Figure 161: USATC, Area C, Practice Assault Beach, Rocket wall at Assault Range (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)



Figure 162: USATC, Area C, Mortar Range (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)

Area "D" was at the very northern end of Braunton Burrows and included the Flamethrower range, Infantryman's Obstacle course and the "Hedgehog". This was a concentrated area of pillboxes, wire and trenches used for a mock assault at the end of the three week training period. A map of Area D is shown in Figure 163. Photos of the training area are shown in Figures 164 and 165.

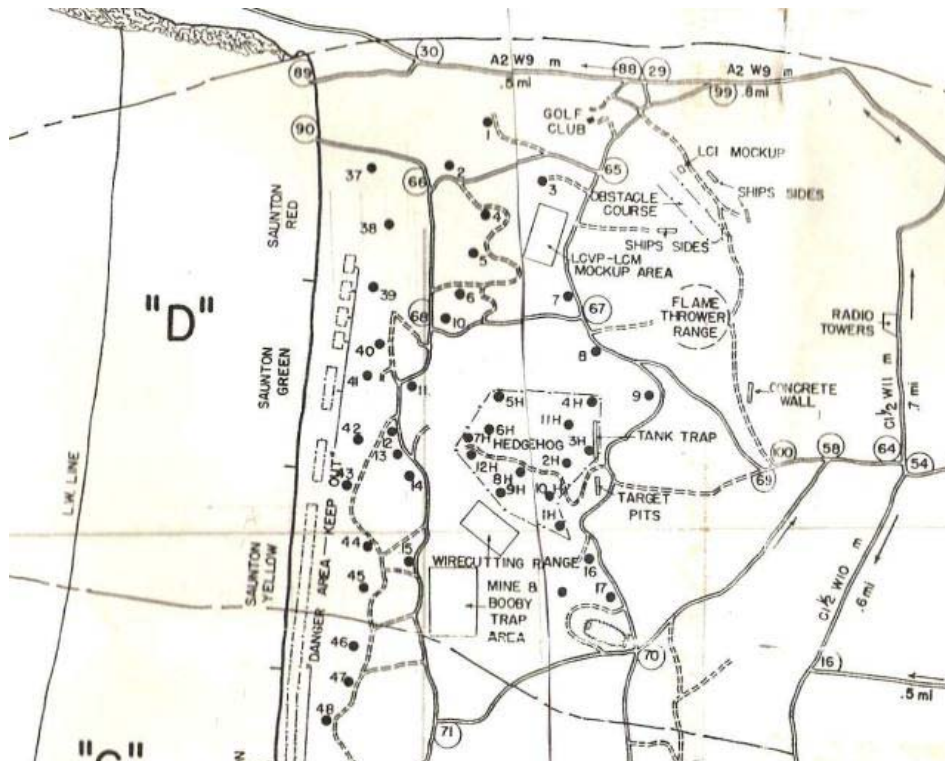


Figure 163: USATC, Area D map (Courtesy of Richard Bass)





Figure 164: USATC, Area D, Assault Range (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)

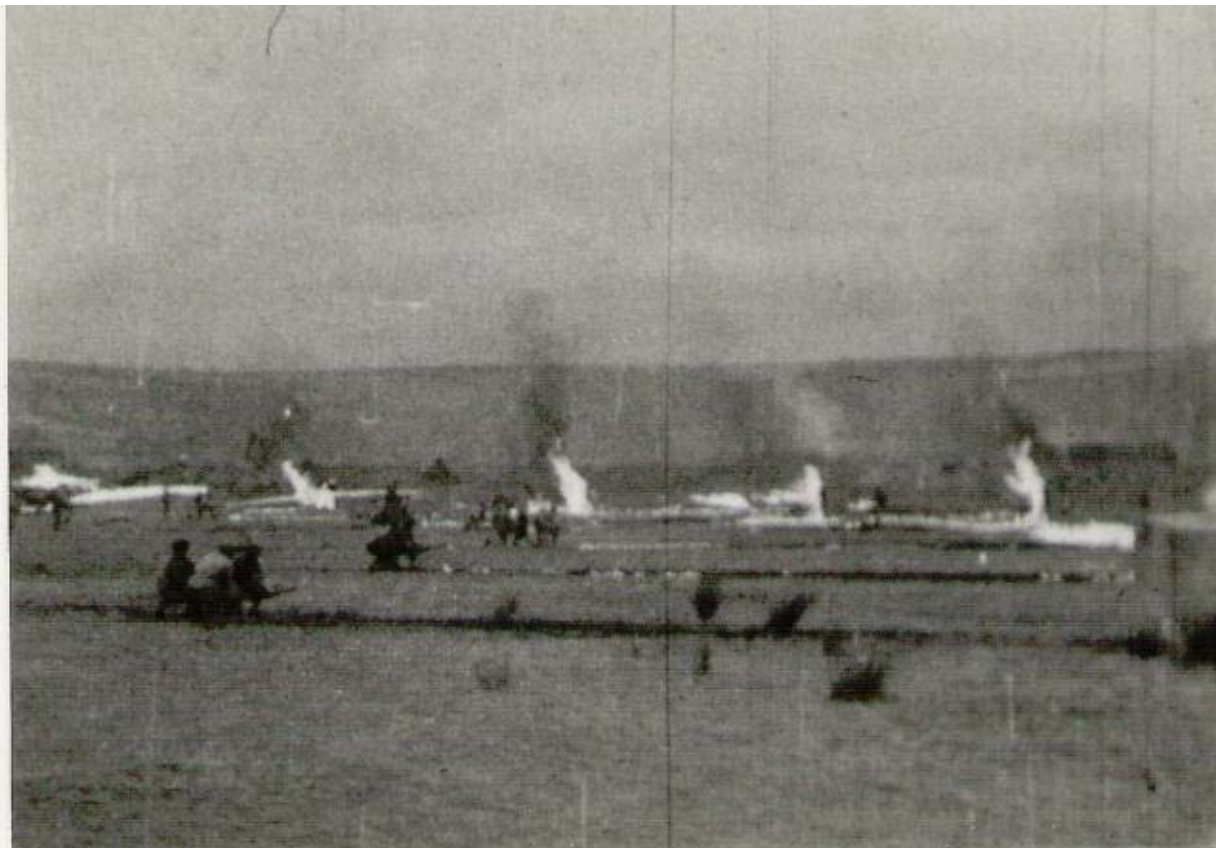


Figure 165: USATC, Area D, Flamethrower Range (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)



Area E was located at Croyde Bay and was designated "Croyde Yellow II Beach." It had two access points; one to the south alongside the holiday camp, and the other a concrete slipway below the current National Trust car park. The Croyde camp consisted of tents scattered among the dunes behind the beach to billet enlisted personnel with the officers billeted in chalets at the holiday camp. This area was initially used to unload troops from vehicles such as the DUKW and for unloading supplies and artillery ashore. The DUKW was a to-and-a-half ton General Motors (GM) cargo truck with a duplex drive and capable of navigating by sea or land. The acronym had no direct military creation. Instead, it referred to the GM company designation. D meant built in 1942. U meant amphibious 2 ½ ton truck. K meant front-wheel drive and W meant rear-wheel drive. Area E was eventually abandoned due to uncertain surf conditions. It was later used for lectures and after action critiques in the Croyde village hall. The old village hall was demolished and has since been replaced by a new building. Areas E and F are shown in Figure 166.



Figure 166: USAATC, Area E, Croyde Bay, Area F in top left of photo (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)

Area F was at a small peninsula known as Baggy Point situated on top of the headland in north Devon, England. It separates Croyde bay and Morte Bay which includes the beaches of Woolacombe and Putsborough. Ten pillbox structures formed a self-contained battlefield area for exercise "A-23 – Company in assault" and served as a surrogate for Pointe du Hoc as far as the Rangers were concerned. Also in this area, inland and behind the main assault area were concrete walls representing pillboxes for the units to perform warm-up sessions before conducting the main Assault. The seaside cliffs were used for practice at infiltration and assault to train the Rangers, British Combined Operations Assault Pilotage Parties (COPP) and Office of Strategic Services (OSS) units. The 29th Infantry Division formed their own "Ranger" unit, known as the 29th Ranger Battalion, which developed and practiced small boat operations around Baggy Point. Their work was so successful it attracted the attention of the 2nd and 5th Ranger Infantry Battalions and COPPs

Figure 167 shows training areas E, F, G and H around Croyde Bay.

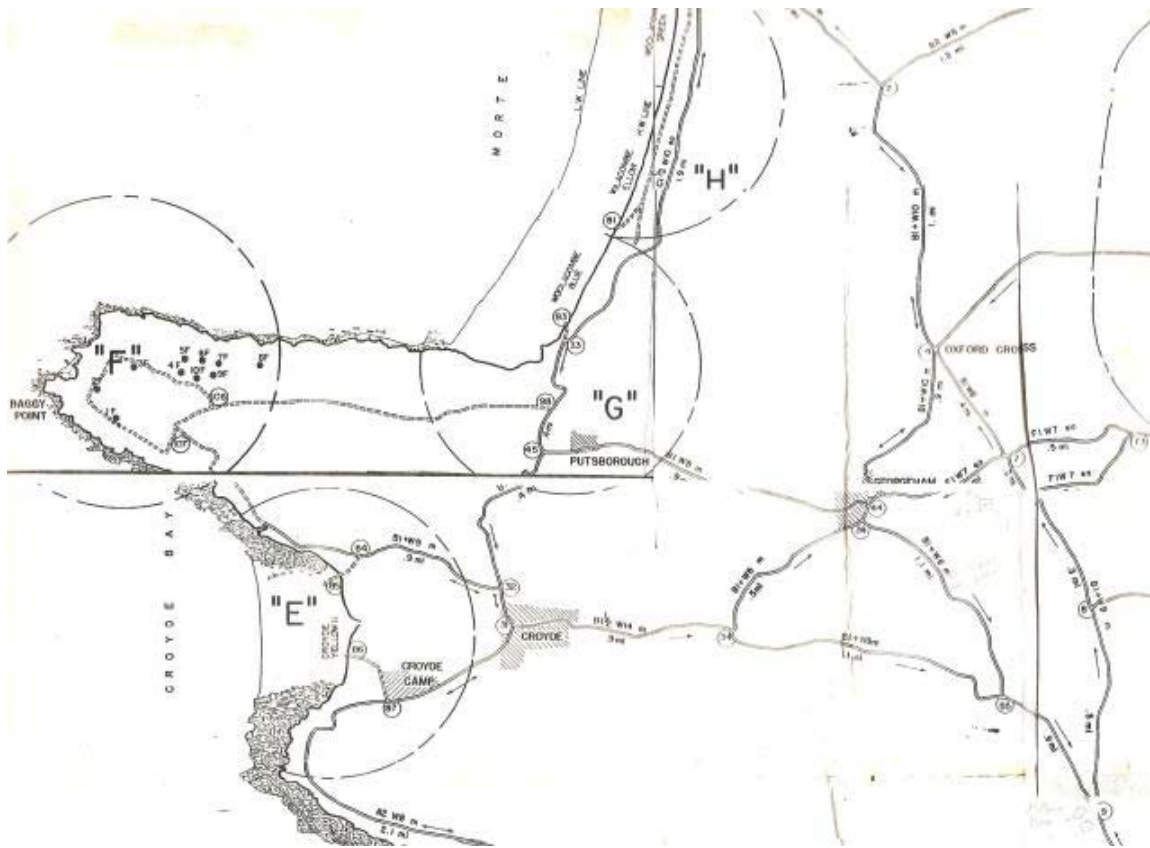


Figure 167: USATC, CROYDE BAY - AREAS "E", "F", "G", and "H" map (Courtesy of Richard Bass)

Area G was a small area codenamed "Woolacombe Blue Beach" at the southernmost of the Woolacombe coded beaches near Putsborough. It was not widely used except for small scale landings or specialized cliff climbing exercises. The top of the cliffs had a strongpoint of concrete pillboxes and machine gun posts to practice assaulting. It is likely the Rangers used this area due to its description.

Areas H and L at Woolacombe Sands were divided into four beaches. There were Blue beach at Putsborough, Red beach directly in front of Woolacombe with Green and Yellow beaches between them. Areas H and L were the primary training beach areas for full scale amphibious assault landings.

The purpose of each amphibious assault exercise was to hold the captured beachhead and hills behind the beach. The group attacking the left flank were held up by the exercise director while the two groups attacking the centre and right flank were permitted to reach the top of their hills, which were their objectives. If the centre companies gained the top of their hill and then swung off and encircled the left hill relieving the companies there under fire, the problem was judged a success. If the centre attackers reached the top of their hill, held it and maintained a strong reserve, the exercise was considered a draw. But if they swung right or advanced, it was assumed the whole attacking force would be split and the beachhead lost. The area of sand and scrub immediately behind the beach below Marine Drive was divided, checker board style into small exercise areas, each containing different types of obstacles that engineers and infantry would encounter on the enemy shore.

Area M was located at Morte Point on the most northern boundary of the Assault Training Centre and the promontory. It was used as a target for seaborne naval gunnery and artillery practice off Woolacombe Sands. To supplement direct fire onto enemy fortifications as the assault waves closed on the shore, the Assault Training Centre came up with an ingenious scheme. Artillery fired from landing craft - staff had no knowledge of this ever being done before and after experimentation, produced impressive results. Initial experiments used two types of artillery for comparison. Towed howitzers and self propelled guns of the same caliber. Four towed 105mm howitzers were loaded onto an LCT-5 with their prime movers, one ammunition truck and three jeeps. The self propelled battery was divided with three guns on each of two LCT-5's. The target on Morte Point was a two hundred yard square divided into four, one hundred yard squares. Data taken at the time shows that accuracy on the smaller target was between 34

and 45 per cent, and on the larger 200 yard target, accuracy more than doubled. When the range was in use, a red flag would fly signifying the danger. Today, small pieces of shrapnel may still be found in the area. Areas H, L, M and N are shown in Figure 168. A modern photo of Morte Point is in Figure 169.

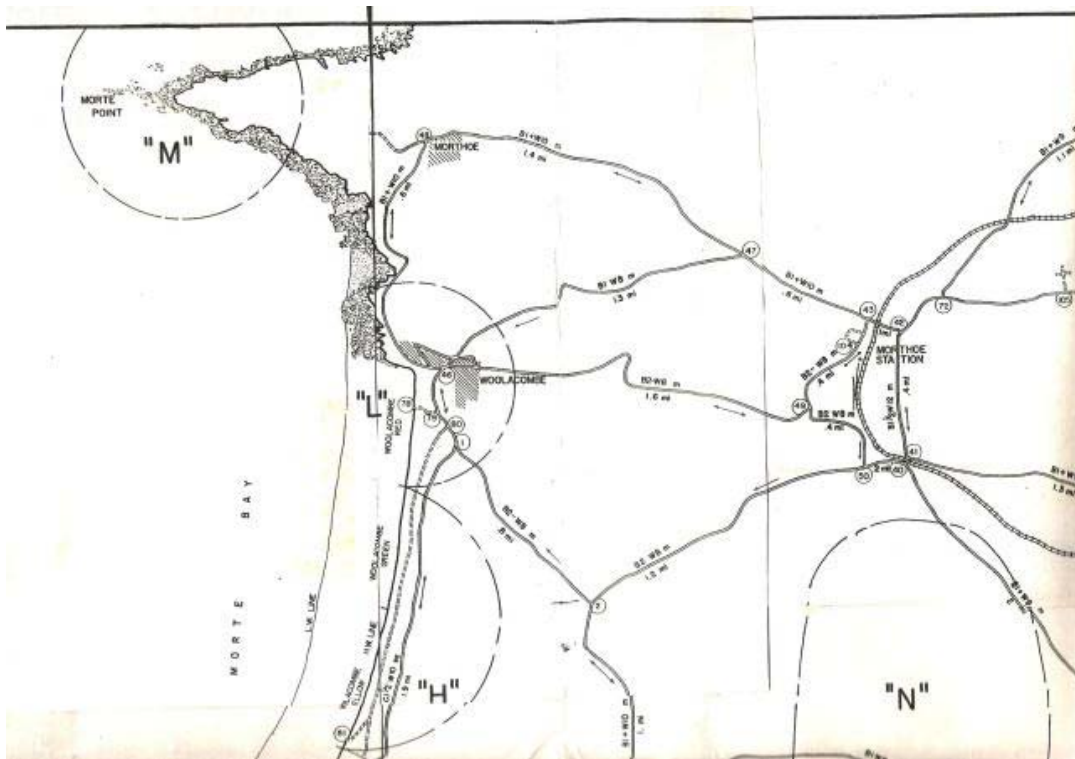


Figure 168: USATC, CROYDE BAY - AREAS "H", "L", "M", and "N" map (Courtesy of Richard Bass)



Figure 169: Modern day photo of area of USATC, Area M, Morte Point (courtesy of Richard Bass)



Mortehoe Station was expanded and used as a freight depot for all USATC supplies on the railway line from Barnstaple to Ilfracombe. It was another facility considered as part of the USATC. Braunton Station was a railway station where troop trains bearing American soldiers would offload or board arriving and departing troops. The beaches of Instow were used to beach and dry out landing craft between amphibious exercises. They also used the area for maintenance and for DUKW vehicles. The US 313th Station Hospital was set up at Fremington.<sup>5</sup>



Figure 170: Combined infantry and armor landing U.S. Assault Training School, Woolacombe, England (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)

As previously stated, the main body of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion arrived at the USATC on April 3, 1944. They were not the first men from their unit to arrive at the center though. Major Sullivan asked for volunteers for a Secret mission on Saturday, March 18, 1944 while the 5th Rangers were in Scotland. The A Company volunteers included First Lieutenant Oscar A. Suchier, Jr., and two non-commissioned officers, Richard Hathaway, and James B Rooney. From B Company, 2nd Lt. Jay H. Mehaffay, S/Sgt Avery J. Thornhill and S/Sgt Walter N McIlwain volunteered. I was unable to determine volunteers from other companies at this time. The volunteers packed and were sent south to Bude, England, by a combination of truck and train. The contingent from the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion consisted of seven officers and twelve non-commissioned officers under the command of Major Richard P. Sullivan. The first night in Bude the men dined in the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion mess hall and billeted in private homes. The next day they boarded trucks along with six officers and twelve non-commissioned officers from the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion en route to the Braunton, U.S. Assault Training Center. Major Sullivan was placed in command of this joint team.<sup>8</sup>



Figure 171: Infantry landing at U.S. Assault Training School, Woolacombe, England (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)

When the joint Ranger team arrived at the U.S. Assault Training Center (USATC), the staff of the school assigned one of their officers to the Rangers to act as an umpire by the name of Major Stanley K Bach. He was an officer in the Infantry Assault Section of the cadre. The Rangers were billeted in Quonset huts with officers in one and the non-commissioned officers in another, with a third in between the Rangers for supplies, ammunition, explosives, napalm and compressed gas for their flamethrowers.

Undoubtedly, the reason for this advance party of Rangers at the USATC was to experience the training and to develop the training plan for the two battalions before they arrived so that everything would be arranged for them upon arrival. This pattern had been repeated for the unit before, with then Lt. Raen and others travelling beforehand to set things up when the 5th Rangers were stateside. Richard Hathaway reported in his book *Training for Bloody Omaha* that the “the training was good, but the Rangers didn't like the restrictions placed on the trainees as safety measures. We were restricted as to when we could fire our weapons, in what direction, and for how long. This was done in order to avoid accidents and injury. We violated the orders and decided that we should use all of our fire power, explosives, and flame throwers as we would do in actual combat.” The Rangers followed the safety measures on their first assault as specified in the Braunton Sands Training Directive. After the first assault, the men decided that the measures were too restrictive and would not adequately allow the unit to train to the level of what was to be expected of them in the coming combat. On the next assault, the platoon leader, presumably Major Sullivan, reportedly stated “Let's do it our way, the way we would if we were in actual combat.”<sup>8</sup>

The main encampment at the USATC for troops was located where the Saunton Park Housing estate is currently located (Figure 172). The original encampment relied on tents, to later be replaced by more permanent structures due to the Devonshire weather. There were also smaller encampments at Croyde, where there is now a holiday village, and another known one at Lincombe. It is unknown which of these camps the Rangers stayed at during either the advanced party or the main body's stay. General Raen recalled the unit being billeted in or near Barnstaple with some men in Quonset huts. Mr. Bass indicated to me that if the men were billeted in Quonset Huts, they must have been at Braunton Camp based on his research. The USATC headquarters was in Woolacombe at the Woolacombe Bay Hotel.<sup>9</sup>



Figure 172: U.S. Assault Training Center, Woolacombe troop encampment at Saunton Park. (RAF photo public domain)

The USATC had lesson plans, directives, orders and other such similar direction regarding the implementation of its training regimen. The Rangers would have been provided these and been briefed on them in preparation for their exercises. Tactics and principles of assaulting a heavily defended enemy coastline had been proposed, discussed and refined at the month-long conference in London during May 1943. This concept had been translated into separate lesson plans for each element of the Infantry Assault Team. While the individual lessons may have been modified with experience, all maintained their adherence to the basic principle of "engineer-like" infantry dealing with enemy defenses.<sup>5</sup> An example of one such exercise for a company in assault of a fortified beach follows.

Using Baggly Point fortified with pillboxes and manned open emplacements as the objective, the assault forces were ordered to take the area identified as "Red Beach". The training area was indicated on a sketched map of the area, and was approximately 1200 yards long. The "German" forces were assumed to be a reinforced platoon, and the situation called for enemy reserves having been immobilized by preparatory bombardment and paratroopers.

The scenario established that the allied battalion was ordered to make a daylight landing on Red Beach, assault and overcome the beach defenses and push inland to capture the battalion objective. Two companies from the battalion made up the assault wave, reinforced by eight M4 Sherman tanks. The immediate company objective was to assault the beach defenses head-on and seize the beach exit. The unit would then cover the support company landing. Chemical mortars were to be used to provide smoke cover. The problem was set to end when the unit secured these objectives and moved off the beach. It was a live fire exercise.

The USATC had mock-ups of landing craft to use to make the assaults from. The umpire indicated to the men that the ramp was down signaling that they begin their assault. On the second run, the Rangers came out guns blazing. They used all of their weapons including their rifles, Thompson sub-machine guns, BARs, machine guns, and fired two rounds from their mortars at each pillbox. The men employed their Bangalore torpedoes to blow gaps in the barbed wire obstacles. Next, Rooney, the flamethrower man rushed the pillbox hosing it with a two second blast



across the outside face followed by a four second blast in the aperture of it. The Rangers had switched out a half-pound Nitro-Starch training charge with a two-pound pole charge and thrust it into the opening resulting in quite the explosion. To round out the assault, the Rangers attacked the surrounding trench network with concussion grenades, guns and bayonets.

Hathaway reported that their umpire Major Bach jumped up and down on a sand dune, clapping his hands and yelled at them, "You can't do that. You can't do that!" To which the platoon leader yelled back, "We're doing it, aren't we?" During their after action review, they had a spirited debate with their umpire as to the safety rules in place at the USATC, and were told that they had violated all of them. He was convinced by the Rangers that there wouldn't be safety rules in place where they were going. The next day, the USATC issued the Rangers green brassards for their left arms to indicate that they were exempted from the standard rules applied to other units training at the center.

The Rangers also made acquaintance with a battalion of the 29th Infantry Division, 116th Infantry Regiment, who would later join them at Omaha. Hathaway reported that due to the lack of typical spit and polish in the Ranger units, a certain lieutenant colonel from the 29th Infantry Division, 116th Infantry Regiment paid a visit to the Rangers billeting area. The 29th Infantry Division had a reputation for being pretty spit and polish during the war, particularly before D-Day, while the Rangers were a bit more relaxed in that regard concerning things like campsite appearance. After making some demands of the Rangers regarding the state of their cleanliness then leaving their quarters under threat of a return inspection, the men began laying plans to booby-trap their hut. The officer had been eavesdropping and heard these plans and that ended any "inspections" of the unit from outsiders. The Rangers did have an additional run-in with this same lieutenant colonel while marching due to one of the Ranger lieutenants smoking during the march. The Rangers didn't seem worse for wear over these run-ins.

As part of the final exam of the small advanced force of Rangers to train at the USATC, the men were given an exercise at Training Area F – Baggy Point. This small area is on a small peninsula at "Croyde Point" on the southern end of Morte Bay and three miles south of the village of Woolacombe. Croyde Point also referred to as Baggy Point or Craggy Point and sits atop one hundred foot cliffs not too unlike the Normandy coastline. The cliffs were considered unassailable as they consisted of unstable shale sheer faces. The Rangers were given the task of assaulting the machine gun emplacement that protected a pillbox, which was in turn part of a defensive position atop the point. The pillbox was protected by the machine gun position such that it needed to be neutralized before assaulting the pillbox. The pillbox overlooked the practice assault beaches and faced the not too distant Woolacombe. There was a schoolhouse in Woolacombe where several high ranking staff officers were conducting a briefing at the time of the exercise.

The Ranger force decided to assault the obstacle from the seaward side up the cliffs. They opted to use rifles, Thompson sub-machine guns, BARs, flamethrowers, 24 pound pole and 48 pound satchel charges. They travelled light, not carrying any unnecessary weight. The Rangers reported that the side of the cliff they decided to climb consisted of granite and shale, and was an easy climb. The unrelenting climbing and cliff training is evidenced by the confidence of this small group of men from both the 5th and 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalions. The plan was to climb laterally up and along the cliff, just under the crest in order to avoid detection. They used their bayonets and fighting knives to climb. The Rangers also expected the defending force not to expect a seaward assault as most previous units had made the assault from the landward side.

The men moved into position, with teams ready to assault both the machine gun and pillbox. The men began the attack. The machine gun was neutralized, and the flamethrower trooper let the pillbox have it followed up with the demolitions team placing the explosive charges. "Fire in the hole" was called with the Rangers retreating to a safe distance. The blast was such that part of the aperture and cliff face blew up and out into Morte bay. The men reported a "hell of a roar." The ground shook and windows as far away as Woolacombe rattled or shattered from the blast, including windows at the aforementioned schoolhouse full of officers. I can only imagine the conversations surrounding that event in that schoolhouse. The umpires didn't know of the Ranger plans, and were surprised at the ferocity of the attack.<sup>7</sup>

Richard Bass discovered that the Rangers were not the first unit to realize the importance of a seaborne assault on Baggy Point. In the USATC Journal for October 22, 1943, a small "raider" section came to the center for specialized training in raider tactics and techniques. They trained in handling rubber boats, particularly in surf, cliff scaling,

forced marches, hand-to-hand combat and night operations. It is unknown what unit this was. The entry reads:

“The practice of landing small groups by rubber boats in odd places has been sufficiently successful, to lead, to the attempt to make a much more important factor of it. It is referred to as “Infiltration Landings”. In several of the early trials he (Captain Melody) made successful landings on the rocks of Baggy Point. About the first of September 1943, a “raider” section of one officer and 29 men was set up for specialized training in raider tactics and techniques. The mission was to land on rocky shores, inaccessible to ordinary craft and establish a small bridgehead. The experiment was so successful that an infantry company is now being trained in these tactics. The ultimate aim is to make this nucleus of a larger group which will land on an unfavorable - hence weakly defended coast, and establish a strong bridgehead which will neutralize enemy coast artillery fire on the assault troops on the beaches. Note that the concept has departed from that of raiding in its usual sense. These forces, to be known as infiltration troops, are not to be hit and run - but to hold on to what they seize till the main force can take over. In this point they resemble airborne units and are in fact, intended to be used in conjunction with them. They carry enough supplies for 48 to 72 hours - counting on resupply over the beaches or by air as the situation permits”.

The remainder of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion arrived at the USATC on April 3. It was upon arrival at Braunton that Major Schneider physically took command of the unit. It was at this time during the change of station that the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion changed attachment from the VIII Corps to the V Corps. The remainder of the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion also arrived at the USATC on this date. The training commenced for both battalions. In some instances, the training was conducted jointly, while at other times, each battalion operated on its own. In researching the USATC, accounts of both battalions will be discussed as they are all pertinent to the overall importance of the training received here in relationship to June 6, 1944.

Hathaway recalled the training for the entire battalion being almost identical to that of the advance Ranger force in March. The commands of the USATC and Rangers eliminated the exercise on Croyde Baggy Point. I wonder if the broken windows had anything to do with that decision. Hathaway stated “Many of the techniques practiced here were used during the invasion of Normandy, France.” He indicated that the Rangers trained in conducting assaults of strong points, understanding of mines and street fighting.

The biography of JR Copeland states: “At the US Assault Training Center, the Rangers participated in assault training. They practiced advanced assault landing movements, land mine detection, demolitions training, and street fighting.” {Graves} Mr. Bass indicated to me that no specific area at the USATC was devoted to street fighting. The Rangers must have done this based on their previous experience in these techniques first learned stateside.

Colonel Robert Black offered the following concerning the USATC: “The two Ranger Battalions met at Bruanton, North Devonshire, England. They trained in amphibious landings, making their way over beaches and attacking fortifications using live ammunition demolitions and flamethrowers.”<sup>10</sup>

Henry Glassman wrote of their time at the USATC. “At Braunton, the Rangers took the Assault Course, under the direction of the Assault Training Center. Training included fire and movement assaults on strongpoints and hedge hogs, combined Naval Operation landings, study of mines and demolitions and street fighting.”<sup>11</sup>

The B Company Morning report notes: S/Sgt Hull, 17 April 44 returned to duty from his broken ankle, assigned and joined from Headquarters, 10th Replacement Depot. He rejoined his unit as a Squad Leader in the 2nd Platoon.

PFC Morris M Prince, 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion wrote an unpublished manuscript called “*Co A, 2nd Ranger BN, Overseas, Then Over the Top*” in 1948. It is located at The Command and General Staff College Library. Concerning the training at the USATC, he wrote: “Our training was continually stressed and emphasized along these lines. We were especially proficient to work in small bands of squads and sections. To work independently from other units, using our own initiative, hitting hard and striking fast”. He wrote that the Rangers were experts in every weapon and explosive available to an infantry division. This included small arms and automatic weapons. He wrote that “we knew how, where and when to use this equipment.”

PFC Prince spoke of the combined training with the Royal Navy. He indicated the mutual respect that grew between the two groups as they trained on the coast of England for D-Day. This sentiment creeps up in many veterans accounts of this relationship. He stated that the Americans left a positive impression on the British in how they handled their assignments, regardless of the assignment.

PFC Prince wrote: "Of all the training, maneuvers, and operations we Rangers have undergone about the most interesting and radical we have ever encountered was done at the Army's assault training school." He indicated that it was there that the Rangers learned the most up to date techniques of assaulting a static defensive position. This included both how to plan and execute such operations. They trained further in bazookas, flamethrowers, Bangalore torpedoes, beehive charges, rifle grenades and other weapons. They mastered the use of demolitions as they assaulted pillboxes and other strongpoints. He wrote that "the work was most instructive and educational, not to mention exciting and interesting. The school thoroughly felt that when a soldier had completed the course that he was more prepared for actual combat than at any other time of his Army career." The Rangers built a cockiness and confidence in having completed what he referred to as the "grind" there.

He described the Ranger Quonset or Nissen huts as "dirigible-shaped affairs." He indicated that the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion was billeted on the Army grounds, on the outskirts of Braunton. The Rangers felt strange to be among the other Army units at the USATC, as they had not been stationed with Army units in this setting for some time. He described the Quonset huts as being cold as the two potbelly stoves per structure were unable to heat the structures very well. The Rangers soon took to visiting the cities of Illfracombe and Barnstaple to visit local establishments for food and beverage, and to meet the young ladies of the area. The men would receive passes in the evenings to participate in these extra-curricular activities.

"It didn't take us long to buckle down and to get our teeth into things," described PFC Prince. The training was next described in his account. The first few days consisted of fundamentals and basic principles. Next were classroom courses that began to teach the concepts of the USATC with their squad level tactics. He described them as categories of "demolition and explosive group; mine and booby-trap class; barbed wire obstacles; and a weapons group that combined the bazooka, flame thrower, anti-tank grenades and individual arms into one class." He described that each of the classes was taught and coached by experts in each of the subjects. The Rangers thought that these qualified instructors taught more to the men than had been done in all of the previous training combined.

The Rangers that were trained in barbed wire and beach obstacle breaching were taught every known way to blow and cross the obstacle. The men who learned demolitions went further than they had before and were taught even the explosive formulations of the materials they worked with in addition to the business of using the explosives. The Rangers at the mine and booby-trap classes were taught the most up to date methods of how to lay, blow, and neutralize a minefield. The new technology of mine detection was taught and methods for probing for mines and booby traps were taught. The men in the various weapons squads were further honed to perfection in terms of the use and tactics involved with their assigned weapons systems. Per PFC Prince, "they learned how to use their weapons and when to use them. They got to know the functioning of their arms and they were made experts on the firing of all guns." The already fit Rangers were brought to the peak of physical fitness through road marches, speed marches and climbing.<sup>12</sup>

On the tactical side of things, the Rangers of both battalions were reorganized in the manner prescribed by the USATC, and after the initial classroom work, they began to run tactical field problems completely independently of each other, while working toward the common goal. This was not difficult for the strong-willed, well-trained Rangers. They used all of the training had to date to easily run squad, platoon and company level problems. PFC Prince reported the men often sang while they worked. I found this to be interesting.

The Rangers performed the dry runs and wet run problems as did many other units who trained at the USATC. These men had their training modified for their needs and the upcoming requirements of D-Day. The purpose of the dry run is to perfect the technique of the assault section in coordinating the phases of the assault subteam in the attack. The problem will vary with each assault range used; the section leader prior to his assault must assemble his section; explain the plan of action; and check the execution. The attack should be made in accordance with the technique uttered in the training notes published by USATC. For a wet run, PFC Price described a typical exercise at Baggy Point in Training Area F. He wrote that a defensive position was set on Baggy Point, including simulated



pillboxes controlling all of the approaches to the point. He described the use of dummy targets placed around the mock up to portray machine gun emplacements which were then surrounded by barbed wire. The Rangers objective was to take and hold this position while at the same time reorganize and either hold or prepare to move to a new objective. They were to prepare to hold in the event of an enemy counter attack. The 2nd and 5th Rangers reportedly shared in some of the training elements over the three weeks there.

PFC Prince went on to describe in exacting detail the tasks of the Assault Section as described earlier in this chapter. The plan of attack was well rehearsed.

1. The wire cutting team (barbed wire breaching) led off,
2. Following and covering their movements by fire were a squad of riflemen and machine gunners,
3. Next, spread out and further in the rear came the bazooka team,
4. Then came the flame thrower team,
5. Demolition team and anti-tank grenadiers, in that order.

The Rangers practiced their advance aided by an artillery and mortar barrage plus the direct fires of Ranger 75 mm cannons mounted on half-tracks. The ability of the Rangers to advance upon the heels of active artillery fire became one of their hallmark maneuvers that they performed with deadly precision up through the Battle of Irsch-Zerf on February 23, 1945 as far as the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion were concerned. This ability to attack in the precise manner they were able to do won acclaim from various surrendering German Commanders on more than one occasion between the two battalions. The Rangers would finish off an assault of an emplacement with a bayonet charge and by throwing of grenades into the remains of the enemy defensive positions to “make sure that any enemy playing dead would stop acting.” The men would then assemble for after action critiques.

The Ranger battalions also participated in larger scale problems at the USATC. This involved working with the Royal Navy and the 29th Infantry Division, where the Rangers were to provide flanking protection of a Division. This later phase of training was capped off by a two day and night exercise. The last maneuver combined amphibious and land-based fighting. It is interesting how closely this training prepared the men for the fortunes that waited for them at both Pointe du Hoc and Omaha Beach and the places in between. In his final words on this training, PFC Prince wrote:

A couple days later or on April 27 saw us on the move again. We were still sixty-four men and three officers strong, and strong in every sense of the word. We had trained and worked hard. We had had our fun, and now we were prepared to tackle anything the Army threw our way. Our cockiness and confidence had taken on new life. This school had presented us a difficult and obstinate course to go through, but in good Ranger style and fashion we had overcome this. We had gone on to a greater success than any other unit who had ever attended here had ever obtained. No wonder we were so proud and sure of ourselves.<sup>12</sup>

The story of the USATC sets the stage for the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion in its role in the D-Day invasion. The training described here paints a detailed picture of what my grandpa and men fighting along with him did later on D-Day. If you take into account the training and tactics that S/Sgt Hull first learned as a machine gunner in the 134th Infantry Regiment as described in Chapter 4, one begins to bring into focus what his role was. As part of the Assault Team and bearing a Browning Automatic Rifle, he would have taken his place as described in this chapter. He practiced to exit his landing craft upon hitting the beach and would have veered to the left as per plan. His job was to provide cover fire from the left flank of the men advancing upon the enemy position. As trained as a machine gunner, he would have used these tactics to help lay suppressive or direct fire as the mission required in order for the riflemen and others to overcome any obstacle. In this realization, Ranger Hull has been found in his place in his unit. He was now poised with his men to strike, and strike hard.

JR Copeland told me a story about the platoon, particularly my Grandpa Hull’s squad conducting a live fire exercise at the USATC. Another company was firing on a training obstacle next to his squad. When these other men completed their exercise, they were fooling around and began to fire at the target (pillbox or other obstacle) on “Herb’s” range. Their fire ended up wounding two of “Herb’s” men and it really “pissed him off.” “Herb was really perturbed.” JR told me that Herb picked up a rifle and was going to go shoot the other Rangers for wounding his

men. He told me that “Herb was a hell of a good soldier.” He recounted that he really cared about and took care of his men. JR said that he and some of the other men had to hold him back and keep him from going after the other men for their carelessness toward his men.

The USATC acknowledged that due to the use of such extensive live fire exercises, there would inevitably be casualties amongst the trainees. Their safety rules were employed to a large measure to mitigate or offset the risk imposed by such training. There were U.S. servicemen who lost their lives there who were just as heroic as those men who landed in Normandy. The Rangers decision to forgo certain of the safety rules was in my opinion not a means to denigrate the mission or safety record of the USATC, it was meant as a measure to train the men to a higher standard that would save many of the men come June 1944.

In a journal entry by the command of the USATC the training of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion was reported.

Mar 44-Arrived in UK, 34 Officers, 563 EM. To Scotland, Braunton, Swanage, for training. May 44. “A group from the 2nd and 5th Ranger Battalions underwent a training period here of three and a half weeks, apparently slightly longer than was planned. Part of this was special purpose or rehearsal work. As the Assault Training Center is not involved in the higher levels of planning, it was necessary for the Rangers to tell us what they had to do and what was needed. All received the same individual training as the Regimental Combat Team's but their team, company, and battalion exercises were modified as required. Like the Airborne troops, the Rangers were full of enthusiasm and were very proficient with their weapons. They were not as methodical and serious as some other units we have had and there was a tendency to horseplay. Their attitude resulted in improvising and opportunism, but this is fitting for the type of unit and they were alert and keen”.

Carl West provided a glimpse of an aside to all of the training that went on in a letter sent to Stephen E. Ambrose in 1989. West reported the Rangers loved to sing when training and marching. The songs sung were often deemed “too indecent for the puritanical ears of the American people.” One was a song named Lili Marlene and another that was a Ranger favorite was “Roll Me Over in the Clover.” West reported the men came up with around 47 verses for the tune, ranging from “mildly suggestive to downright pornographic.” He wrote one verse in his letter:

Roll me over in the clover  
 Roll me over, lay me down and do it again.  
 Now this is number one  
 And the fun has just begun  
 Roll me over lay me down and do it again.  
 Roll me over, Yankee soldier  
 Roll me over, lay me down and do it again.<sup>13</sup>

In a wonderful article by the BBC concerning the history of the USATC and that of Woolacombe and her residents the BBC wrote: “In May 1944 the Majority of the Americans disappeared overnight and Woolacombe knew the biggest secret of the time, that the invasion of Europe was imminent. Now all that could be done was to wait for news of the D-day landings and I am sure that many prayers went out to all those young men who had won the hearts of the women and children of Woolacombe. On June 6th 1944 the invasion was launched. Everybody I have spoken to remembers the amazing sight of the vast convoys of ships passing through the Bay on D-day and the hundreds of Aircraft with the three white line invasion markings on the wings passing overhead. Over 3000 American troops gave their lives in the Omaha landings.”<sup>14</sup> (author unknown)

From what I could tell from the Company Morning Reports, the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion was alerted for departure for the Fabius I exercise on April 6, 1944. They boarded trains on April 27th and headed for the Dorchester Marshalling Area D-5 that would be their home twice in the coming months. They arrived in Dorchester on the 27th.

## 13 DORCHESTER AND EXERCISE FABIUS I

Well before the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion trained across England, military planners were beginning to lay down the assault plans that these men would find themselves a part of. As of April 27, 1944, the unit was attached to the V Corps, who were assigned to the First Army, who were assigned to the European Theater of Operations United States Army (EUTOSA). The operational command was the Supreme Headquarters Allied Expeditionary Force (SHAEF) under the command of General Dwight D. Eisenhower. General Eisenhower liked the Rangers. He knew Colonel Rudder personally and by spring 1944, Rudder was widely regarded as the number one Ranger in Europe.<sup>1</sup> The Rangers involvement in the planning at the highest command levels dug deep into the overall level of Allied D-Day planning. The codeword for the invasion to take place known as Operation Overlord was also referred to as BIGOT. The acronym was a play on an existing acronym previously used in the Mediterranean. The term in relation to Operation Overlord stood for “British Invasion of German Occupied Territory”. The personnel cleared for information at this level were referred to as “Bigots”. This was a classification above Top Secret in terms of military classified intelligence information. The details of the invasion plan were so secret that the adherence to the list and rules governing those with knowledge of it were strictly enforced. Winston Churchill reportedly came up with the term BIGOT. It is known that Rudder, Sullivan and Schneider were Bigots. Lieutenant Colonel Rudder received a full Operation Overlord briefing on Good Friday, April 7 in London. He reported to the Saint Paul’s School for a briefing of senior commanders as given by Prime Minister Winston Churchill, General Eisenhower, General Alan Brooke, General Bradley and General Montgomery and other British top brass. The naval landing component of the invasion on Omaha Beach fell under the provision of Operation Neptune, while the ground forces’ part of the operation fell under Operation Overlord. Many books have been written about D-Day planning. For purposes of this work, it is important to know and understand the importance that the Allied Supreme Command placed on the Rangers mission of taking Pointe du Hoc out of action. The student of Omaha Beach should understand the importance of that place in the overall scheme of the D-Day invasion. The Rangers training in the winter and spring of 1944 was very methodically and purposefully designed by their commanders to equip and enable these men to accomplish a mission that many said was impossible.

The build-up in the United Kingdom leading to D-Day was a monumental task in and of itself. The detailed planning for invasion required the movements of entire armies and other forces to be at the right place and time to participate in the invasion. The Allied forces conducted the training exercises to work out unanticipated problems and to get the units ready. Supply and equipment shortages at the unit level were addressed. The Allied military had set up a very sophisticated series of ports, marshalling areas and other infrastructure in order to mount the D-Day invasion. The military prepared the coastal areas of the United Kingdom to serve as staging areas. Units had to be brought to England, and then moved within the United Kingdom to their embarkation points. This all had to be done in a secretive manner. The preparation activities to ready the units were referred to as mounting. Mounting was the first stage in the execution of the invasion.

Operation OVERLORD required meticulous planning to be properly staged as it was extremely complex. In terms of U.S. forces alone, 130,000 men would participate in the assault. A total of 1,200,000 men would cross the Channel in the first ninety days of the invasion. The planners were well aware of the complexities facing them as they readied the Allied forces for invasion. They held the first large scale exercise code-named HARLEQUIN in



September 1943. It was this exercise that allowed them to settle on process and procedures for future exercises and the invasion itself. They developed the concept of mounting as a series of three individual steps including: 1) assembly or concentration, 2) marshalling, and 3) embarkation.

The troops would first begin the process by moving from their home station to the concentration area. This step involved reassembling the troops into their battalions, regiments and divisions. Some units had been separated in the United Kingdom due to billeting restrictions or training needs. The units were checked over for equipment and supplies. If units were stationed within fifty to seventy-five miles from the embarkation area, this step was relatively simple. The alert for departure that the Rangers received while at the USATC for FABIUS was proof of this part of mounting as it related to them. Lieutenant Colonel Rudder planned for the Rangers to be formed into a Provisional Ranger Group while the men were at the USATC, and began to appoint officers to the task as a secondary duty.

Upon arriving at the concentration area, the units would waterproof their equipment for the invasion. This entailed ensuring moving parts were well greased, protecting sensitive electronics and putting kits on for exhaust to allow the vehicles to operate in a beach environment. The units gathered all the supplies they would need and packed their equipment. All non-essential equipment and personal gear was stowed away to be delivered to the units at a future point after the assault was successful.

After arriving at the concentration areas, the units were moved to pre-assigned marshalling areas. It was upon arrival at the marshalling areas the men were briefed on the D-Day operation and they were provided maps outlining their mission. The Rangers made two trips to their marshalling area. The first trip was in preparation for Exercise FABIUS. Their second trip was in preparation for OVERLORD. Once the OVERLORD briefing occurred for any unit, the men and their units were considered Bigots and restrictions were placed on their movements and communications. They were assigned their prescribed amount of rations, lifebelts and other necessities. It was at the marshalling areas the men readied their personal equipment and waterproofed it. The units were relieved of administrative responsibility at the marshalling areas, and even food was provided by the camps where they were located. The final step in mounting was for the units to move forward when called to the embarkation points and load aboard their assigned craft, or vessel.

The Allied preparation for the mounting for the invasion commenced in September 1943 after Exercise HARLEQUIN was completed. The U.S. forces were assigned areas in southern England west of Poole. The Americans and British shared facilities from Poole east to Southampton. The Southern Base Section incorporated most of the units formed in these areas of England as attached to Force "O". Force O would be the force to assault Omaha Beach. This included almost the entire staging area. The Western Base Section included the majority of the airborne elements and the forces destined for Utah Beach. The responsibility of mounting was further delegated by the base sections onto various districts. It was the districts that became the primary administrative agencies in a given location.

The Southern Base Section quartered eight U.S. Divisions by January 1944. By June there were fourteen divisions there. The total troop population maxed out at 720,000 men. It was acknowledged that the mounting of all the seaborne assault forces was a tremendous task just by itself. After training at an exercise like TIGER or FABIUS, the units would return to their marshalling area and await final embarkation for the assault. "The Southern Base Section had been divided into four districts, numbered XVI, XVII; XVIII, and XIX. The entire coastal zone from Southampton westward was divided between the latter two, however, and those two districts were responsible for the mounting of all assault elements except the airborne troops. XVIII District (Col. Paschal N. Strong), to the east, was to handle Force O, the OMAHA Beach task force, and XIX District (Col. Theodore Wyman, Jr.) to the west, was to handle Force U, the UTAH Beach force."<sup>2</sup>

Along the south coast of England, the Southern Base Section Zone extended from Portsmouth to the west. This was subdivided into nine marshalling and embarkation areas. Four of these were in the XVIII District and five of them were in the XIX District. The British operated one of these marshalling and embarkation areas in the Portsmouth region. Around Southampton, the British and Americans shared two marshalling and embarkation areas. There was also a split area in the vicinity of Weymouth. All of the areas in the XIX District were operated by the Americans. The Rangers were assigned to the XVIII District. The nine marshalling and embarkation areas in the XVIII District were lettered A to D. There were a total of ninety-five marshalling camps with a total capacity of

187,000 troops and 28,000 of their vehicles. The outloading capacity of the adjoining embarkation areas and port facilities helped to determine the size and number of camps in the vicinity of the embarkation facility. There were nineteen embarkation areas. In addition to organizing the assault forces, massive supply depots, fuel and ammunition dumps were established to ensure that after D-Day the Allies enjoyed a clear material advantage during their battle with the Germans in Normandy. The organization of these facilities was also correlative to the units stationed there and how they would be employed on D-Day.

For the purpose of efficiently moving manpower and equipment the Buildup Control Organization (BUCO), consisting of British and American ground, naval, and air representatives was established at Fort Southwick, near Portsmouth. The BUCO was not an agency of the Supreme Commander. It was under the joint direction of the Allied Army, Naval, and Air Commanders-in-Chief Maj. Gen Charles S. Napier, Director of Movements in the War Office and later Chief of Movements and Transportation. The BUCO was operated directly under the tactical commands immediately responsible for troop build-up.

There were U.S. and British zone staffs. The U.S. Zone Staff consisted of a chairman, Col. Eli Stevens, representatives of the major U.S. commands involved in the build-up, and an advisory representative of the War Shipping Administration. In practice, the U.S. Zone Staff functioned directly under the senior American tactical commander on the far shore. This was the Commanding General, First Army, until August 1, and the Commanding General, 12th Army Group thereafter. Supervision by the representatives of the joint commanders in chief was limited mainly to decisions affecting the allocation of shipping between U.S. and British forces. Two sub-commands of BUCO were the Movement Control (MOVCO) and Turn-Round Control (TURCO). "MOVCO in turn was enabled to prepare a periodic "force loading forecast," projected ten days in advance, and finally a daily "force movement table." It issued force loading forecasts for each embarkation area, indicating the allocation of craft and shipping to units, the approximate time of arrival of units in marshalling areas, and their loading times, thus giving the base sections and embarkation areas an indication of movements that could be expected. The final movement schedule took the form of a daily movement table issued by U.S. MOVCO to Headquarters, Southern Base Section, the marshalling areas, and the embarkation areas covering a twenty-four-hour period of flow".<sup>2</sup> The daily tables produced by MOVCO enabled development of road and rail movement tables for the movement of units forward into the marshalling areas. The Southern Base Section established a command known as Embarkation Control, or EMBARCO to maintain records of movements of men and material. A joke of the day was that it 'is a wonder that Britain hasn't sunk under the weight of the tanks and guns' stockpiled for the invasion.

The 1st and 29th Divisions, 5th and 6th Engineering Special Brigades, and the 2nd and 5th Ranger Infantry Battalions that made up Force "O" were assigned to the XVIII District. These aforementioned units were thus assigned to the D Camps in this District. These units encompassed a total of 29,714 men and 3,241 vehicles. During the marshalling movements some difficulties were encountered, "owing principally to the complicated movement schedule. Some units were misdirected; a few could not be located immediately; and the dissemination of information and instructions was faulty, in some cases as a result of an overemphasis on security."<sup>2</sup> This did not appear to affect the Rangers too badly based on accounts remaining silent regarding the Rangers.

A bit of information gleaned from various sources opened the door to understanding where the Provisional Ranger Group was regarding their "D" Camp. These sources concerning the Rangers indicate that they were at Dorchester including the Company Morning Reports. Authors covering the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion indicated that the Rangers were housed at Camp D5. Other details included that the Rangers were very close to an airfield. In interviewing Ranger Copeland, he positively identified that P-38 Lightning aircraft were stationed at the airbase in question. This enabled me to do a detailed search of U.S. Army Air Corps unit assignments. In doing so, I discovered that the 474th Fighter Group was stationed at a British Airbase called RAF Warmwell. The P-38 fighters located there were the only P-38s located anywhere in the vicinity of Dorchester, thus solidifying the Rangers marshalling location to Camp D5.<sup>3</sup>

The Royal Air Force operated RAF Warmwell near the town of Warmwell in Dorset England.<sup>4</sup> They first began construction in 1936 and began operating there in 1937, and operated it through 1946. The British first called it RAF Woodsford. They changed the name in 1938 to RAF Warmwell to avoid confusion with another facility in Woodsford. For certain periods of World War II, the British allowed the United States to run the facility, including in the months before D-Day. The U.S. operated it as part of the United States Army Air Force Ninth Air Force as

USAAF Station 454. The U.S. forces often referred to the airbase as Moreton Station after a nearby railway station. The airfield had three grass landing runways oriented north-east to southwest, southeast to northwest and west-northeast to east-southeast. There were two larger hangers, eight blister hangers, six double pen, twelve single pens and 18 small pan aircraft standings at the base. The runway was soft and not conducive for bomber aircraft, although bombers could make risky emergency landings there. The sandy soil at Warmwell was considered suitable to support the 80 aircraft of a fighter group without metal tracking support. During the Battle of Britain, the airfield served as a key defensive facility enabling the British to meet the German challenge. Throughout the war many fighter aircraft called the airbase home including: Supermarine Spitfires, Hawker Hurricanes, Hawker Typhoons, Westland Whirlwinds, North American P-51 Mustangs, P-47 Thunderbolts, and P-38 Lightnings (Figure 173).



Figure 173: P-38 Lightning fighter aircraft (NARA)

The Village of Crossways developed as a result of the proximity of RAF Warmwell. Crossways is located approximately 8 kilometers east of Dorchester. Much of the airfield has now been lost to sand and gravel quarrying and construction. The village of Crossways now exists on the site of the airfield facilities, and the old cinema now serves as the village hall. Little physical evidence of the war years remains. The control tower is now a private residence on the Dorchester road where two dispersal areas are gradually being taken back by nature.

The 474th was a group of Ninth Air Force's 70th Fighter Wing, IX Tactical Air Command. The 474th Fighter Group consisted of the following Operational squadrons:

- 428th Fighter Squadron (F5)
- 429th Fighter Squadron (7Y)
- 430th Fighter Squadron (K6)

In April and May 1944, the 474th Fighter Group began bombing and attacking ground targets in France in preparation for the invasion. This included attacking strategic targets like railroads and bridges. The P-38's ability to carry two 1,000 lb (450 kg) bombs with ease, and its heavy nose-mounted armament, made it an excellent ground attack aircraft. All or part of the 474th flew cover over the invasion fleet as part of the D-Day invasion.<sup>5</sup> During the 15 weeks of operations from USAAF Station 454, 27 P-38s were missing in action, with all but five known or suspected lost due to enemy ground fire. As stated before, I interviewed Ranger JR Copeland. I asked him if he recalled P-38 aircraft using the airfield located near the Ranger marshalling area. He responded that the aircraft were



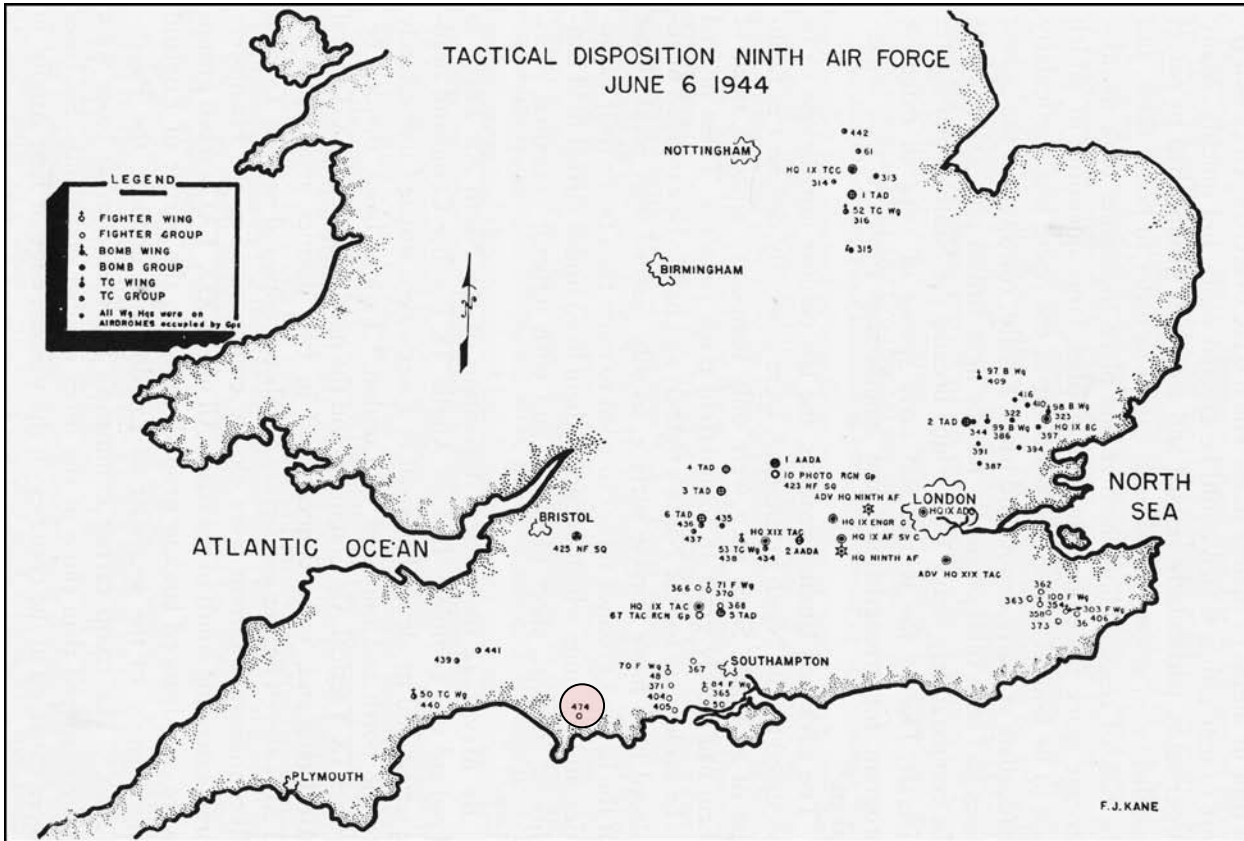


Figure 174: Tactical Disposition of Ninth Air Force (Craven, USAF)<sup>6</sup>



Figure 175: 1943 Aerial photograph of Warmwell Airfield, England (Royal Ordnance Survey, public domain)

P-38s. He also added that one of the things the Rangers in his group did was to count the number of aircraft departing on sorties, and then to recount the returning aircraft. He told me that the men knew how many aircraft were lost on a given mission that way, and it helped solidify the seriousness of what they (the airmen) were doing. Figure 174 shows the location of the 474<sup>th</sup> Fighter Group along the southern coast of England. Figure 175 is an aerial photo of the base, and Figure 176 is a rough diagram of the layout.

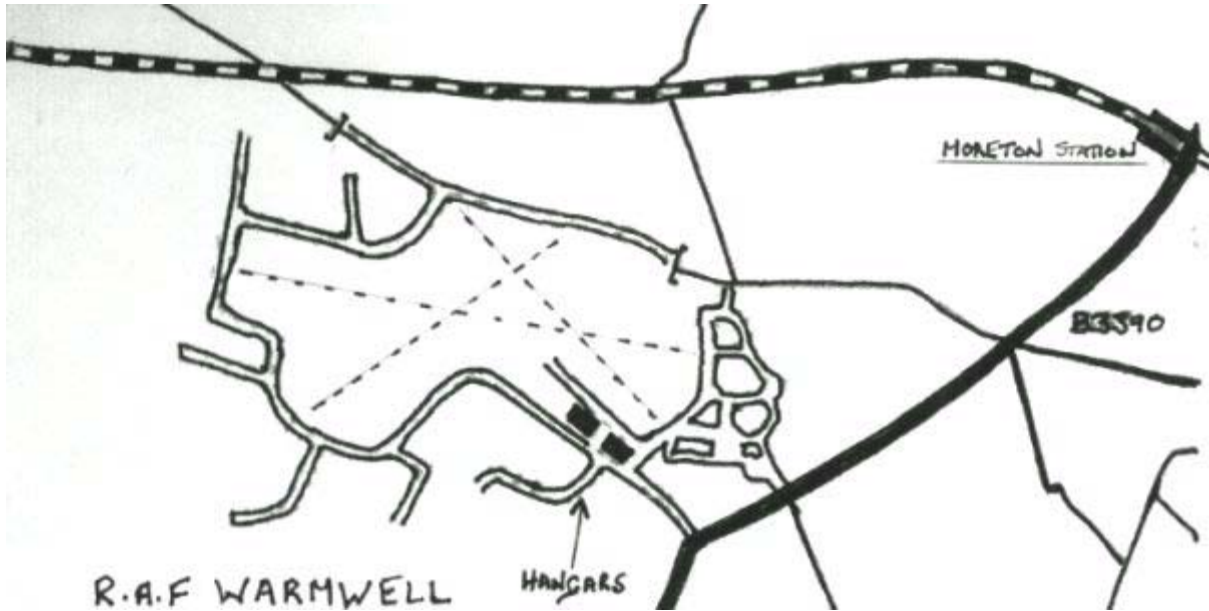


Figure 176: Map showing layout of RAF Warmwell

The Army assigned a D camp area to a particular unit based upon several factors. These included the types and numbers of vehicles assigned to the unit, the routes and distances to the embarkation area and embarkation time schedule for the unit. When a unit arrived at the D camp, they were met by a representative of the camp commander who provided instructions to the unit. The unit was told where to top off their tanks with gasoline or diesel fuel, and then the vehicles were parked in designated areas and camouflaged. The troops themselves were often marched to their quarter area. Upon arrival the units were checked against the overall movement forecast and the men were shown to their assigned tents. At a given point, the men in the unit would be given their BIGOT briefing. After this, they were sequestered to the camp and all they could do was await the final embarkation order. Security patrols were posted with orders to shoot any person trying to exit or enter the camp unlawfully.

Broadmayne Park & West Knighton (D5) was one of the WWII D-Day Marshalling Area Camps for US Army Soldiers. It reportedly had capacity for 3,000 personnel. One unconfirmed internet source indicated it was partially used for African American soldiers. Another article written by Mr. George Forty indicated that the Broadmayne area hosted some 1,200 American troops awaiting embarkation in May 1944. The work of Mr. Forty indicated that some units of the U.S. 1st Infantry Division, 2nd Battalion and Canon Company forming part of 18 Infantry Regiment were located at Camp D5. Marshalling Camp D5 was located off of Main Street, Route A352, on a drive leading to Fryer Mayne Wood in what has been described as the grounds of a large house, now burnt down. It was reported that a place known as “The Old Barn” on Main Street, now a private dwelling, was used during the war as a vehicle repair shop for jeeps and other vehicles.<sup>7</sup> Villagers made note how a week or so before D-Day, the American soldiers were no longer in and about the town as they were confined to their camps making the small surrounding villages quiet. They referred to it as “the lull before the storm.” On the eve of the embarkation it was recalled how all of the sudden, all of the soldiers and their equipment, tanks and other vehicles began a march to the sea ports to board their waiting vessels. The movement took nearly two days, and locals recalled how the Americans threw money and candy to the villagers. After this the streets were again quiet.

The English Heritage Project National Mapping Programme South Dorset Ridgeway Mapping Project has researched the Dorset area and its importance to the war effort. The result of their efforts has identified twenty two Second World War military sites. These were identified as camps, depots, buildings and unassigned ‘military sites’.

The majority of these sites are located along the southern coastal strip, with an additional six sites within 5 kilometers of Dorchester.<sup>8</sup> Analysis revealed a number of small clusters of military buildings visible on aerial photographs taken soon after the war. Details of what had been Camp D5 are in the fields surrounding the adjacent villages of West Kingston and Broadmayne. Some sites surrounding Broadmayne were fairly well hidden from the air being situated amongst pre-existing farm buildings and adjacent to hedge lines. Those of the Camp D5 at West Kingston were easily distinguishable (Figure 177). The camp was made up of square pyramidal tents and a few huts. Figures 178-180 provide additional information on the Camp.

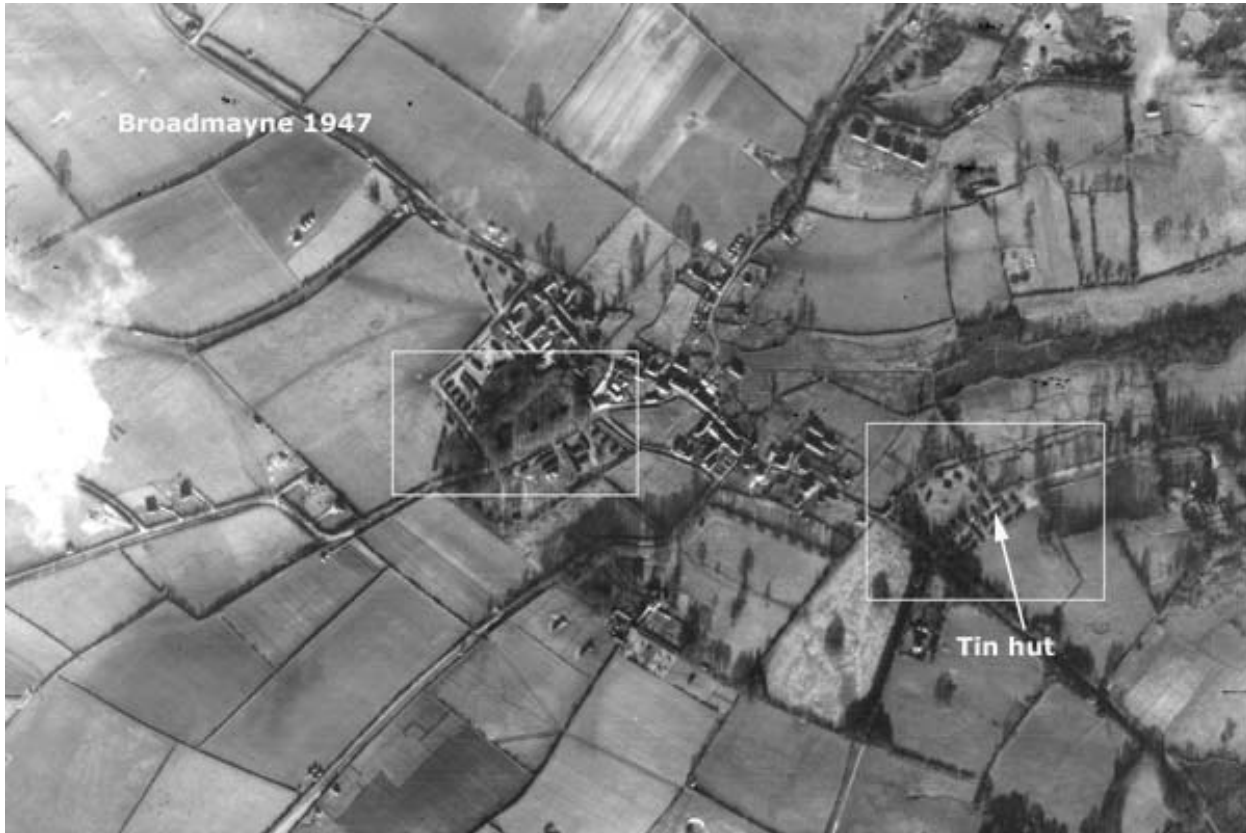


Figure 177: A 1947 air photo of Broadmayne and the marshalling camps. Camp D5 was located in the area of the right square in the fields northwest of the Tin hut. (17th January 1947. English Heritage (NMR) RAF Photography)

PFC Prince of the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion described the marshalling area as a “pleasant country site just outside the city limits of Dorchester, county of Dorset”. He described the prim-roses, shady trees, and running streams. He explained the position of the camp in an open field, with the tents being positioned among the trees. He explained that the 2nd Rangers had not been set up in tents since being stateside and that this was an enjoyable time. He stated “The first couple of days we stayed there, we didn't have much to do. So we relaxed, refreshed and soothed our nerves by absorbing the beauty of the land.”<sup>9</sup>

PFC Prince explained how they were bivouacked in the same vicinity as the 29th Infantry Division. He indicated that in the days the units were there, many friendships were struck with the men of the Blue and Grey Division. Through discussions the men surmised that they were to be a part of the training exercise together. The men guessed that they were going to do the same sort of things that they had done at the USATC where the Rangers protected a flank of the Division. He also noted the realization of the Rangers that they would no longer be protecting simulated formations on their flanks. I found this to be interesting considering what happened on D-Day in Vierville Sur Mer when the 29th Infantry Division impressed several companies of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion to provide support in defense of the tenuous Omaha beachhead.

“This gives one a fair idea on the workings and planning of the entire Army, as it starts progressing from the lone individual up to the division and then still farther till corps and armies are reached. For example, first the individual soldier is given basic training. Then he completes that, he is put into



## THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

a squad, then this squad takes its place in the section, then, the section into the platoon, etc., until the end of the line is reached where divisions become an integral part of the Corps and a complete picture of the Army is painted.” (Prince)



Figure 178: Present day photos of location of Camp D5 (Courtesy of Mr. Richard Drew, historian, United Kingdom)



Figure 179: Present day photos of Tin hut noted in above photo (Courtesy of Mr. Richard Drew, historian, United Kingdom)



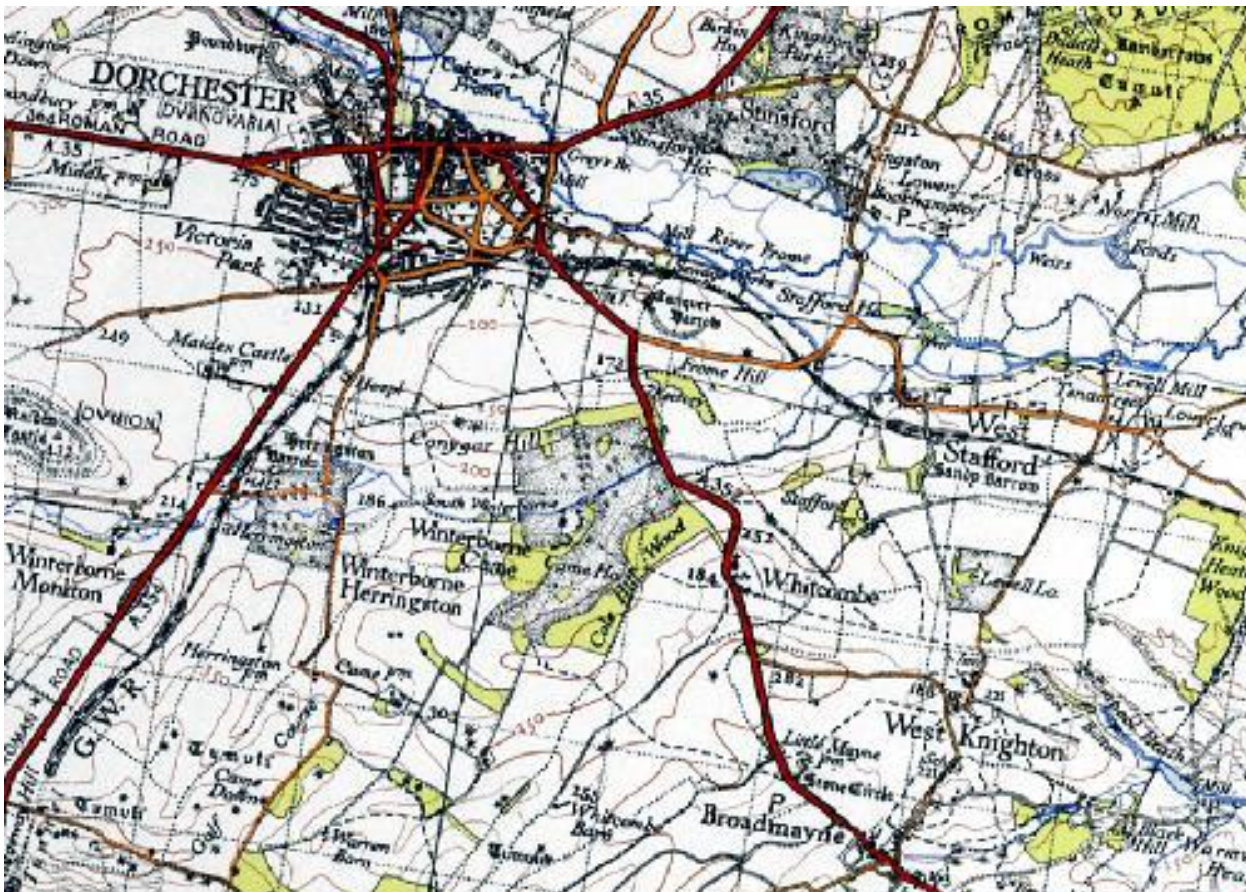


Figure 180: Mapping of Broadmayne near Dorchester, England. Ordnance Survey of England Popular Edition



Figure 181: Wartime photo of marshalling camp showing 16 foot by 16 foot pyramidal tents

Some literature refers to the Marshalling Areas as "Sausage Camps" due to their sausage shaped appearance on aerial photography.<sup>10</sup> These camps were intended to provide necessary installations, equipment and supplies to units as they moved through the mounting process. One major problem with the full-scale exercises offered by the British military authorities was the possibility of damage to infrastructure and facilities along the coast of England. In order to overcome this objection, Colonel Wyman developed the concept of marshalling camps being organized in the "sausage camp" style. With this plan, assembly areas were built around paved roads. The regions utilized for the build-up were cleared of civilians and roads were blocked off to all civilian traffic that were needed for military purpose. The tents and other camp structures were located on the edge of the roads and in wooded areas for camouflage. Good camouflage practices were not always followed however, allowing the Germans to gather data from aerial reconnaissance. The placement of camps near to the embarkation points was likewise figured into the logistics of the operations. Camps were put in areas with adequate rail and railhead facilities for efficient movement of men and supplies.

According to Ronald Lane in his book *Rudder's Rangers*, the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion departed on April 27 for Camp D5 just outside the village of Dorchester. He wrote the Rangers were located in an open field surrounded by tall trees. He wrote that the English countryside was in bloom with primroses and shade trees with ample nearby running brooks. The first time the Rangers were in the camp, the men were given little to do in terms of organized training. The men were allowed to unwind, play cards and rest. They did do physical training including some cliff climbing and shooting exercises. On April 28, two men from the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion were sent to London to the firm of Merryweathers, Ltd. This company outfitted the London fire brigades with 100 foot extension ladders for fire trucks. The company had teamed with the Rangers to experiment installing the fire ladders on the General Motors amphibious trucks known as DUKW vehicles. The Rangers then worked with British commandos to test the vehicles with the mounted ladders. The Commandos and Rangers installed twin .30 caliber machine guns on the end of the ladder. On May 3rd, according to Lane, the two Rangers reported to Colonel Rudder about the capabilities of the ladder-fitted DUKW vehicles. Colonel Rudder apparently liked the concept and moved to obtain the new hardware.<sup>11</sup>

The Allies put together at least thirty-seven amphibious exercises to ready the units and men for D-Day. These ranged in size and often were multi-part affairs. Exercise FABIUS had six parts that jointly formed the greatest amphibious exercise in history. The exercise conducted just prior to FABIUS was called TIGER. The TIGER Exercise involved Force "U" that was to assault Utah Beach. The Germans attacked the allies with naval forces during the operation, and many allied forces were killed. FABIUS was developed for the four other allied assault invasion forces and two major buildup forces that would invade Normandy. Exercise FABIUS had only two parts that largely involved the Americans where the overall exercise was broken into six parts, FABIUS I through FABIUS VI. FABIUS I was the primary rehearsal for Assault Force "O" scheduled to assault Omaha Beach. This exercise included elements of the 1st U.S. Infantry Division, 29th Infantry Division, the Provisional Engineer Special Brigade Group, the Provisional Ranger Group and all other attached units under the command of V Corps. Assault Force O marshalled in Area D, and embarked from Portland-Weymouth and landed at Slapton Sands. FABIUS II was for Assault Force "G", British forces landing on Gold Beach. FABIUS III was the rehearsal for Assault Force "J" made up of Canadians who would land at Juno Beach. FABIUS IV was for Assault Force "S" consisting of British forces destined for Sword Beach. FABIUS V was for British forces to train buildup forces for Gold, Juno and Sword Beaches. Finally, FABIUS VI was a marshalling exercise for Assault Force "B".

The Allies carried out FABIUS I, II, III and IV simultaneously at the direction of the 21st Army Group. "They began on 23 April and ended 7 May. During the period 23-26 April, residues were detached and briefing was carried out. Marshalling began 27 April and craft were loaded 29 April and 1 May. The D-Day rehearsal exercise was originally scheduled for 2 May, but was postponed one day after the marshalling began due to poor weather and surf conditions.<sup>12</sup> FABIUS V and VI were scheduled to be held 4-6 May, but due to the postponement of the other exercises, did not actually end until 7 May. Coordination between the six exercises was on a high level, and planning for them was carried on separately by the various commands concerned."<sup>13</sup> (Lt. Clifford L. Jones, March 1946)

For exercise FABIUS, the exercise was planned in two phases, the marshalling and embarkation phase and the execution of the exercise. The 11th Amphibious Force moved the troops from the point of embarkation with British naval forces providing the convoys from German naval attack. The Ninth Air Force provided air cover and tactical assistance. With a German assault against the Allied forces at sea participating in the TIGER exercises, this was



important for the FABIUS exercises.

Exercise FABIUS was described in a 1946 postwar report by the U.S. Army Historical Division called *The Administrative and Logistical History of the ETO; Part VI; NEPTUNE: Training, Mounting, The Artificial Ports*. It indicated that while VII Corps was engaged in its rehearsal exercise, the British forces and U.S. V Corps participated in the FABIUS exercises I through VI. These exercises were carried out simultaneously and were coordinated by 21 Army Group J, and involved all of the Assault Force O assault units. The schedule for FABIUS was to be from April 23 through May 7. These exercises were purposefully patterned after OVERLORD. The only exercises of the overall training that involved American forces were FABIUS I and FABIUS VI. FABIUS I included the primary elements of the 1st and 29th Infantry Divisions and attached units, including two Ranger battalions, two tank battalions, and three engineer combat battalions as assigned from the Provisional Engineer Special Brigade Group. This totaled more than 25,000 troops as part of Force O. FABIUS VI was a marshalling exercise for certain of the build-up units assigned to the Southern Base Section. Planners attempted to create the expected conditions in Normandy as closely as possible. The primary purpose of the FABIUS exercises was to give the entire invasion force a chance to function as a whole before the real invasion.

Because D-Day was only little over one month away, Exercises TIGER and FABIUS were both full dress rehearsals that left little to experimentation. At the completion of these exercises, most units would go straight to their assigned marshalling areas to await the invasion. Due to the remaining highly specialized training needs of the Rangers, they would have one last training stop at Swanage, England after participating in Exercise FABIUS I. The primary purpose of the FABIUS exercises was to give the entire invasion machinery an opportunity to function as a whole in a trial run. Every attempt was therefore made to duplicate the conditions expected in the Normandy invasion as this was a full dress rehearsal. This would allow them to participate in an exercise where they saw the units that would land alongside them. The exercise was as important to test the planning for operation NEPTUNE as it was for operation OVERLORD. FABIUS involved approximately 25,000 troops. The units processed through their marshalling areas, participated in the mock landings at Slapton Sands and then returned to their marshalling areas to wait for D-Day. This explains why the Rangers went to their marshalling area twice as has been reported by various veterans. A March 28, 1944 letter from V Corps Headquarters to the Command Group (CG) 1st U.S. Infantry Division under the subject "Amphibious Exercise FABIUS I" discussed the operation. Units under the 1st Infantry Division included the 16th and 18th regimental landing teams of the 1st Infantry Division, the 116th regimental landing team of the 29th Infantry Division, the 347th and 348th Engineer C Battalions of the 5th Engineer Special Brigade, the 149th Engineer C Battalion of the 6th Engineer Special Brigade, the 741st and 743rd Tank Battalions, the 2nd and 5th Ranger Battalions, and other units attached either to the infantry divisions or to the Provisional Engineer Special Brigade Group.

FABIUS followed the same planning and formations as developed for OVERLORD and NEPTUNE. The V Corps command conducted the overall planning but allowed for detailed planning down to the battalion level where appropriate. The exercise involved a simulated aerial bombing and real naval bombardment of the landing area. This was followed by landing the DD tanks at H Hour. After this, the troops landed per a timetable. Landing of infantry followed the first tank landings with Landing Team 16 to the left and Landing Team 116 to the right. Engineers followed these first soldiers to blow underwater and beach obstacles and to open up beach exits. At H+ 3 hours, Landing Team 18 would follow the initial waves and join up with units ashore. Three Ranger companies from the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion were to land two miles to the north of Slapton Sands at Blackpool Beach and destroy enemy artillery installations as would be done at Pointe du Hoc. Another company was scheduled to land at the right flank of the Slapton Sands assault beach, while the remainder of the Rangers were to land with the main infantry at Slapton Sands. These remaining Rangers were then to wheel right, relieving the flanking Rangers and then make their way to Blackpool Beach.

In April 1944, the British Admiralty and SHAEF forecasters had developed a fairly reliable forecasting system, such that by the time of Exercise FABIUS the forecasts were deemed accurate. The Section's wave forecasters began to sit in on SHAEF forecasting sessions resulting in a forecast method that involved surface wind, weather systems analysis as far upstream in the atmosphere as the Rocky Mountains in the continental United States. The forecasters developed nomographs and predicted sea, swell and surf heights as part of the delivered five-day forecast to Allied planners. This method of forecasting came under scrutiny in May 1944, but it seemed to hold its own based on scientific merit.

When the 1st and 29th U.S. Infantry Divisions planned to practice the dawn landing at Devon's Slapton Sands, the weather forecast came through that the date of the landing would be unfavorable for weather, General Eisenhower postponed the landing exercise by 24 hours. At this point in the overall planning for the invasion, the SHAEF command was weather sensitive. This caution was prudent as this exercise was very comparable to the actual Normandy assault at OMAHA Beach set for June.

It was reported that the exercise went smoothly generally speaking. The movement of the units from the marshalling areas and embarking into the assault was done without large difficulties. Exercise FABIUS had a 24 hour delay due to weather previously discussed. This delay actually found itself repeated on D-Day as the troops were loaded aboard their craft when a 24 hour delay again happened in the beginning of June.<sup>12</sup> The designations on the beaches at Slapton Sands were the same as at Omaha Beach for realism. The assault went according to schedule. The naval forces convoyed into the area following minesweepers, staying about 10 miles from shore. Next the bombardment occurred as the DD tanks of the 741st and 743rd Tank Battalions made their way to shore. The infantry units then landed as per plan, followed by the planned successive waves of troops. Figure 182 is a U.S. Army photo of Exercise FABIUS I.



Figure 182: Troops landing ashore during FABIUS I (NARA)

The 2nd and 5th Ranger Infantry Battalions teamed up for exercise FABIUS. The 2nd Rangers had previously been leery of their younger sibling unit. The joint training they conducted eliminated any concerns the elder Rangers had. Henry Glassman, noted that during FABIUS, the Rangers practiced “amphibious maneuvers including embarkation on LCAs, assault landings, land campaigns that followed the landings and training in every phase of operations expected to be encountered in the Invasion of France.”<sup>14</sup> The men arrived at their marshalling area to wait for the embarkation order. Research suggests that for Exercise FABIUS, the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion might have first camped at marshalling area Camp D1, while the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion stayed at Camp D5. This might warrant additional research. The accommodations in the camps were tents, a cot and a blanket. On May 1 the men in the units participating in FABIUS were shown maps and other intel on their target areas. After they studied this and discussed their missions, they boarded trucks to travel to the embarkation area at Weymouth. On May 1 the two Ranger battalions boarded their LCAs in Weymouth and proceeded to their Landing Ship Infantry (LSI)s in the harbor. The LSIs were converted Belgian and British passenger liners. These vessels had substantial davits on their sides which allowed for the LCAs to be mechanically raised and lowered down the sides of the ship resulting in the boarding of the LCAs from the decks of the ships. The LSIs assigned to the Rangers included the HMS *Prince Charles* (2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion Companies A, B, C and Headquarters elements), HMS *Ben Machree* (2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion Companies D, E and F), HMS *Amsterdam*, HMS *Prince Baudouin* (5th Ranger Infantry Battalion

Companies C, D, F and half of Headquarters) and HMS *Prince Leopold* (5th Ranger Infantry Battalion Companies A, B, E and half of Headquarters). Hathaway wrote that the exercise landings and land campaigns were “designed as a training vehicle in the types of operations that we were expected to encounter in the invasion of France”.<sup>15</sup>

The Rangers spent three days aboard ship as part of the exercise as the weather postponed the assault for 24 hours. It is said that Major Schneider had been aboard the HMS *Prince Leopold* during his landings in the Mediterranean while a 1st Ranger Infantry Battalion member and liked the ship and her crew.<sup>16</sup> Ronald Lane described the life aboard the ships as being relaxed. The men played games, sun-bathed on deck, ate well, slept, spent time reading or writing, watched movies and talked amongst themselves. The Rangers weren’t particularly impressed with the English menu, but several accounts called it sustaining and satisfying. The ships had post exchanges where the men could purchase canned fruits, cookies, chocolate and other palatable items. The Rangers also had ten-in-one rations that were mixed and matched to ensure decent meals to the creative.<sup>9,11</sup>

The Rangers took trucks from their marshalling camp to their mother ship at Weymouth. Some of the Rangers between the two battalions would find themselves aboard the same vessels they had trained on at the USATC. Each of the LSIs could hold from 200 to 250 troops and up to eight LCAs. PFC Prince reported spending three days aboard ship anchored at Weymouth before disembarking via the LCAs. He made note of the protective screen provided by vigilant cruisers and destroyers.

2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion Companies D, E and F would make the assault on the cliffs at Blackpool Beach. They would follow-up this assault by making a twelve mile march and set up defenses while waiting for the remainder of the Rangers to join them. Meanwhile the remainder of the 2nd and all of the 5th Rangers would make the beach landing at Slapton Sands.<sup>11</sup>

Photo # NH 100085-KN Scene on a southern English beach during rehearsals for the Normandy invasion



Figure 183: Troops coming ashore during FABIUS I (NARA)



Lane discussed the perspective of the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion fairly well in his book *Rudder's Rangers*. He quoted from an unknown Ranger's letter home that said:

This operation could be the real thing for all we know, evidence certainly points that way. The men have all packed their personals, shipped bedding rolls and duffel bags containing five men's belongings... We are to be briefed tomorrow. None of the men seem worried in the least, they are ready to go. We have drawn our ammo loads for the initial phase of the battle, plus two days rations. Could it be the real thing at last? The event the world is waiting for, the invasion of continental Europe. With all the airtight security this operation might be another training operation, but none of the officers will confirm our opinion. We shall see."<sup>11</sup>

The naval and air forces bombed and shelled the designated beach areas according to plan. The Rangers reportedly made their assault on the beaches at Slapton Sands and the cliffs at Blackpool at dawn. The 2nd Ranger Battalion Companies D, E and F assaulted their assigned cliffs and overran the objective there. They went on to make their way inland to a second objective at a place called Combe Point. From there they made a twelve mile forced march through rain, mud and rugged terrain to their third objective near Little Dartmouth where they set camp, established defensive positions and waited the remainder of the Ranger forces. The remainder of the Rangers comprised the force landing at Slapton Sands overran the beach defenses and set up a defensive position on the right flank of the 29th Infantry Division.

The Rangers were called to the decks to board the LCAs in the early hours of the third morning aboard ship. This was for the assault run to shore at either Slapton Sands or Blackpool. PFC Prince reported that the LCAs were lowered gently to the water, and after forming up, the craft headed for shore. In his own words;

"We launched a successful attack as we overran the beach defenses and took up positions on the flank of the 29th division. We coordinated our efforts, and continued to press forward. We had to hold up when the 29th Infantry stopped, as we had to await further orders from them. That evening found us bivouacked in a field some five miles from our point of landing. The first phase of the problem on land was now completed. The exercise was called off for the night and we became "administrative." We had done our part that day, and we had done it well."<sup>9</sup>

The 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion (less Companies D, E, and F) and the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion resumed the planned attack the next morning. The Rangers continued their line of advance and used roads along their prescribed route as much as was permissible. PFC Prince reported the terrain as hilly with some steep inclines along the route taken. He went on to describe how many of the Rangers began to shed excess weight along the route such as ammunition, grenades and other equipment due to a blazing hot sun and the weight of the loads carried per man. He wrote that when the final objective was reached the units were only carrying the basic essentials for a fight. The second night found the men exhausted and bivouacked in a field many miles from Slapton Sands. The Rangers were made administrative per the rules of the exercise, and FABIUS was effectively over for them. PFC Prince said of the exercise "The experience we had gained from this amphibious maneuver was invaluable to us." These Rangers made their way from the second objective on the right flank of the 29th Infantry Division inland to the Rangers at Little Dartmouth.<sup>11</sup>

Hathaway went on to say that a Landing Ship, Tank (LST) was sunk by the Germans during the exercise. During the operations, a heavy gale blew into the area making the seas more hazardous than expected. FABIUS I also revealed operational flaws in the following areas:

- Traffic and Personnel
- Supplies
- Signal
- Medical
- Dump Operations<sup>2</sup>

Photo # NH 100086-KN Scene on a beach near Slapton Sands, during rehearsals for the Normandy invasion



Figure 184: DD Tank and halftrack ashore during FABIUS I (NARA)

Upon completion of the FABIUS exercises, the majority of Allied forces moved back to their embarkation points and marshalling camps to wait for D-Day. On D-Day the 1st Infantry Division was designated as the command unit for the invasion. The 29th Division less its headquarters was attached to them as well as what became the Provisional Ranger Group (PRG) on May 9.<sup>17</sup> There are some sporadic references listing the PRG as the 12<sup>th</sup> Provisional Ranger Group, but none of the veterans recall this designation and I found nothing on official records to support it. The PRG was attached to the 12<sup>th</sup> Army Group for a time. Figures 183 and 184 illustrate the exercise and the movements discussed throughout.

The Rangers had spent five days participating in Exercise FABIUS I. On May 6, the two battalions, soon to become one unit under the Provisional Ranger Group, boarded trucks and headed to a local train station. They next found themselves aboard trains headed for Swanage, England for their final training before the big day. PFC Prince wrote that the train ride was spent reviewing the results of FABIUS and in thought. He noted that the men noticed a sharp increase in Allied air activity. He further indicated that the men realized that the "real McCoy" was coming soon.

## 14 SWANAGE

Swanage is a coastal town in Swanage Bay along the south coast of England in the County of Dorset. It is located at 50°36'43"N 1°57'30"W. It is on the eastern end of the Isle of Purbeck and is famous for its chalk white cliffs and the region around it is geologically important to England. It is 25 miles east of Dorchester and nine miles south of Poole. It has a current population of around 10,000 people. Nearby are Old Harry Rocks to the northeast, Studland Bay and north, Poole Harbour to the north. To the south of town are Durlston Bay, Anvil Point and the Ragged Rocks or "Boulder Ruckle." The Isle of Wight with its Alum Bay lies seventeen miles to the east of Swanage. To the northeast of the Isle of Wight lies the city of Portsmouth. A map of the region is in Figure 185.

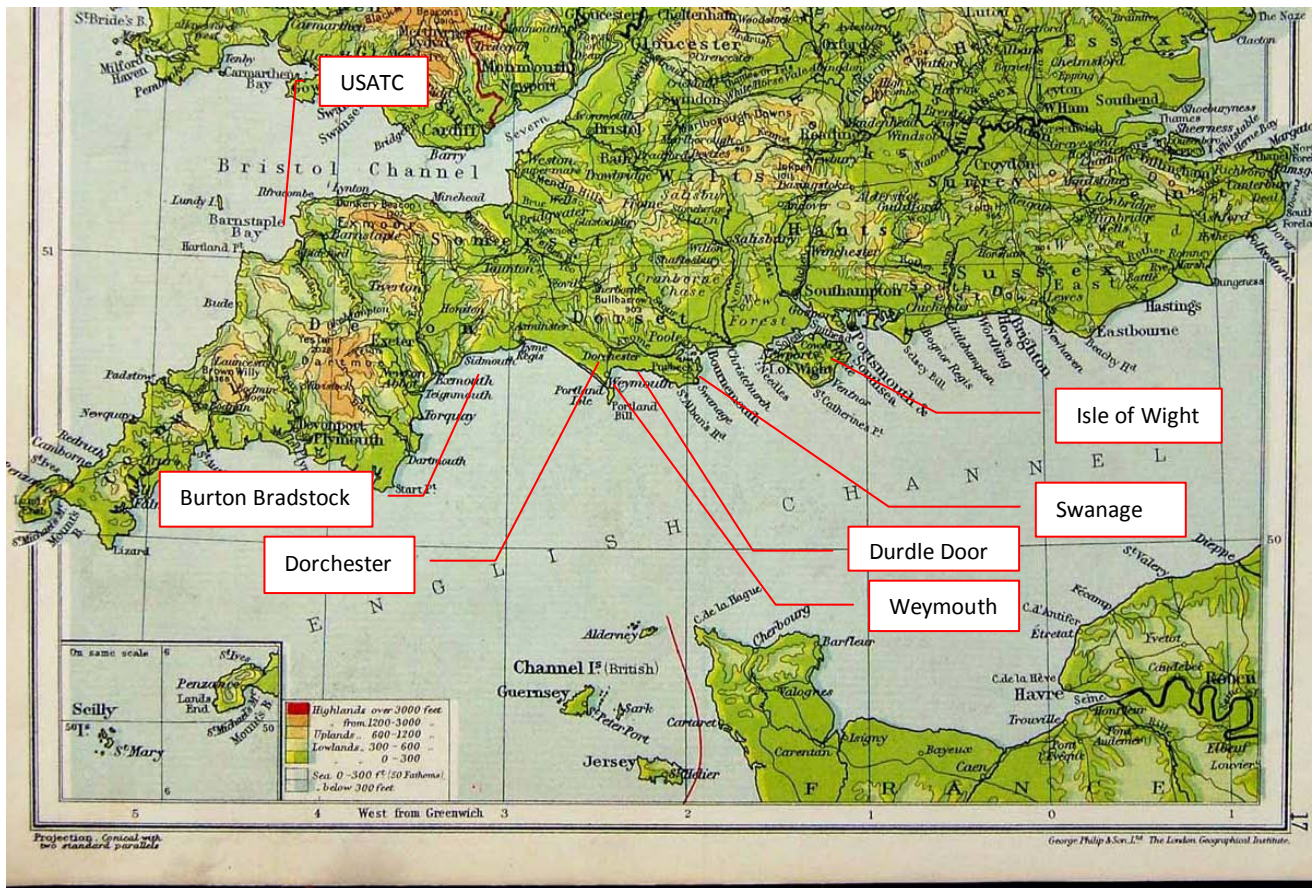


Figure 185: South England Map, 1935 (George Phillip and Son, Ltd, The London Geographical Institute)

The town originally was a small port and fishing village, and human activity as a village date back to at least Roman



times. The Romans quarried marble and other important minerals from the region. The Victorian era saw a resurgence of mining of important minerals and rocks that led to the town becoming wealthy. Today the town is a very popular tourist resort and has been an important tourist destination dating back to the early 19th century.

The town is located at the eastern end of what is known as the Jurassic Coast, an important geologic feature separating the Jurassic Period (145 – 201 million years ago) from the Cretaceous Period (66 – 145 million years ago) in the Mesozoic Era (66 – 252 million years ago). For this, the region is listed as a World Heritage Site. Quarrying was important to the local population until at least the 1st century A.D. The Romans used the Purbeck Marble for projects as far away as London. After the Romans left, quarrying largely ceased until the 12th century. During that century, the demand for Purbeck Marble grew again for internal uses such as columns and other features in large churches and cathedrals of the day. This type of marble is unsuitable for external use due to weathering poorly, however it is strong and distinctly decorative for internal uses. Another more common quarried product is Purbeck Limestone. It is commonly called Purbeck Stone. This limestone has been quarried nearly continuously dating back to the early days of quarrying in the region. Production of it was likely taken for granted until the 17th century when mining science refined quarrying techniques allowing for heavier quantities of production. The timeliness of that development led to the region becoming important due to the Great Fire of London in 1666. This fire devastated the city resulting in large scale redevelopment of the capitol city. Purbeck Stone was largely used in paving. Mining has ceased in recent times on the cliffs themselves. Ports were developed in Swanage at that time in response to the increased need for the materials produced there.

The area around the southeast coast of England became important to the survival of England during the early days of World War II. This region was very important to the development of radar. With the Battle of Britain and the Blitz, the British survived in large part due to the development of radar and the tenacity of British pilots who rose to meet the German onslaught. The proximity of this region to the French coast allowed placement of radar installations allowing for early detection of German Luftwaffe formations. The Germans bombed the radar sites, but not to the extent that they should have to disrupt the capability of the defensive system. Additionally, the British installed many gun emplacements, pillboxes and anti-invasion defenses in and around Swanage as a potential landing site of a hypothetical German amphibious landing.<sup>1</sup>

In conducting research for this book, I realized that the geology of this region was critical to the story of the training of the men who were Rangers. The geologic features here offered many opportunities to practice climbing “objectives” that were at least as challenging if not more challenging than the cliffs at Pointe du Hoc, Pointe de la Percée and the bluffs at Omaha Beach. The climbs to be done in Normandy were conducted on some of the same geologic formations from a scientific perspective. The northern headland of Swanage Bay and the areas north and east along the coast consist of chalk. The area south of the village consists largely of the Purbeck Limestone. The areas in the valley where the village sits are underlain by softer Wealden clays. Each of these rock types offers a distinctly different challenge to climbers, and as a result, the region has become an important tourist destination for those climbers who are skilled enough to meet the challenges these cliffs present. Some of the areas climbed by the Rangers are considered amongst the most challenging climbs in all of England. Natural water, wind and tidal erosion have resulted in some very impressive formations of shelves, shingles and stacks along this piece of coast, notable among these is Old Harry Rocks. Fossils from the dinosaur age of the Jurassic have been discovered here.<sup>2</sup>

Coming to understand the geology of the area, I began to invest time in understanding the scientific work of Ian West, M.Sc. Ph.D. F.G.S., Southampton University. Dr. West is an expert on the geology of this region of England. He has written numerous books concerning the subject, and through Southampton University has developed a wonderful series of websites dedicated to the documentation of his work. I took a chance and introduced myself to Dr. West to ask for permission to draw from his work to help explain the geology and its importance to the Rangers. He was happy to assist me, and even made introductions to another geologist and photographer, named Alan Holiday, he collaborates with for the use of photos in this book.

The identification of the areas used by the Rangers for climbing took some work. The Rangers trained on various cliffs in the area to practice on formations similar to those in Normandy. They also practiced on different types of cliffs to hone the various skills needed for the assault and to test new equipment. I began by looking for any cross-reference to the time at Swanage in books and websites about the Rangers. I gathered together any place references, however small and began to piece the puzzle together. Unfortunately, General Raaen, one of my best resources for

information, had been injured and was at an Army hospital while the Rangers were training there in 1944. Ranger Victor Miller had also previously been injured and sent through the medical system and 10th Replacement Depot. He had mostly missed out on the cliff training at Swanage as reflected in his biography. Ranger JR Copeland was able to help me as I took a series of printed photos from the work of Dr. West with me in late September 2013 to our face-to-face meeting. Mr. Copeland looked through the photos and remembered one of the cliffs in particular which was very helpful. This will be further described later in the chapter. A thorough investigation revealed the following locations used by the Rangers along the Dorset coast in and around Swanage from west to east:

- Burton Cliff at Burton Bradstock located west of Weymouth
- Chalk cliffs near Bats Head located northeast of Weymouth
- Durdle Door located midway between Weymouth and Swanage
- Boulder Ruckle, part of the Ragged Rocks located south of Swanage
- Cliffs around the city of Swanage
- Old Harry Rocks located northeast of Swanage
- Isle of Wight, Alum Bay located east of Swanage

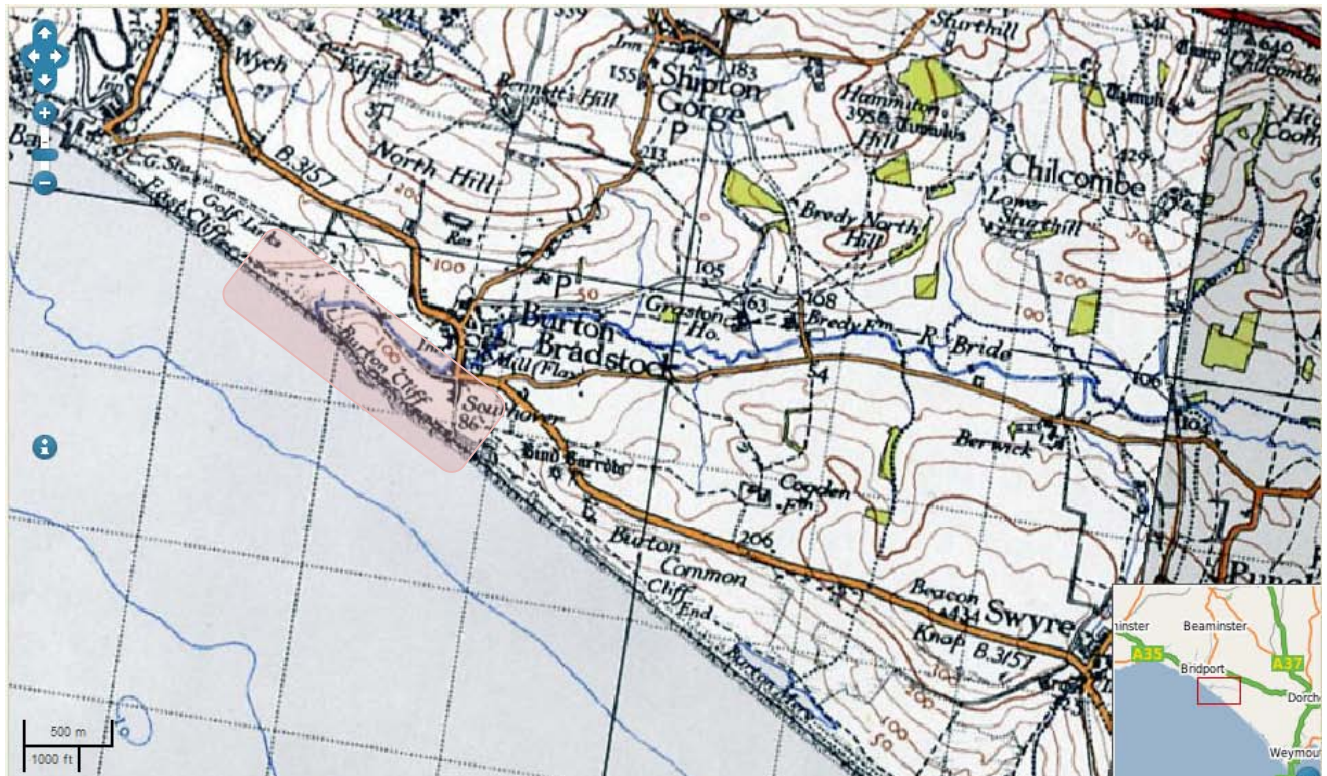


Figure 186: Map showing cliff area at Burton Bradstock. Burton Cliff is shaded in the red square. (Ordnance Survey of Scotland Popular Edition)

The Ranger climbing area known as Burton Cliff is at Burton Bradstock, England (Figure 186). Burton Bradstock is a small English village on a part of the coastline known as West Bay, northwest of Weymouth and west of Dorchester. The village dates back to at least the Saxon days. At that time the village went by the name of either Brideton or Bridetone. This meant the village of the river Bride. The name Bradstock was derived from Bradenstoke after the Bradenstoke Priory in Wiltshire that the village had once belonged to. The current name is a derivation of these past names. The village lies three miles east of Bridport. At the center of the village lies the church St. Mary the Virgin. There are thatched cottages dating back to the 16th and 17th century in and around the village. The village lies on the Jurassic Coast of England with cliffs up to 148 feet in height separating it from the English Channel.<sup>3</sup> The cliff the Rangers practiced on known as Burton Cliff is structurally similar to East Cliff at West Bay.<sup>4</sup> The cliffs have a geologically interesting layer called Oolite near the upper reaches that contain some remarkable examples of ancient fossils. From the bottom to top, the cliffs here are made up of various lias, marles, ammonite, clays, sands, Oolite and a thin marble layer. The River Bride separates the two cliffs as it exits to the sea.<sup>5</sup> These cliffs are structurally very



similar to those found at Pointe du Hoc geologically, as they are both comprised of the same stone.<sup>4</sup> This made these cliffs very suitable as a practice area for the Rangers. The area is seen in Figures 187-188.



RAF Aerial photo of Burton Bradstock & Freshwater 7th June, 1942. Source: Bridport Museum

Figure 187: R.A.F. reconnaissance photo of Burton Bradstock and Freshwater Bay taken on 7th. June, 1942<sup>5</sup>



Figure 188: Taken from work by Dr. Ian West; The western part of the Chesil Beach at Burton Cliff, Dorset, is gradually diminishing in width and losing its fine shingle. The cliff of Bridport Sands, with Inferior Oolite at the top, is being undercut as waves more frequently abrade the foot of the cliff. Within a decade or so the last 3 kilometres of the Chesil Beach. (at Burton Cliff and East Cliff, Bridport) might be mostly lost, and its new western limit might be at Burton Hive.

Photo - 3rd March 2008. Ian West & Tanya West (c) 2008.<sup>6</sup>



The next area reportedly utilized by the Rangers were two cliffs known as Bat's Head and Durdle Door. These cliffs lie approximately midway between Weymouth and Swanage near the small English town of West Lulworth (Figure 189).



Figure 189: Map showing cliff area at Bat's Head and Durdle Door shaded in the red rectangles. (Ordnance Survey of Scotland Popular Edition)

The cliff known as Bat's Head is comprised of vertical Chalk. The beach in the area ends at Bat's Head where the Chalk is oriented horizontally. This Chalk belongs to the Planus Zone as part of the Lewes Nodular Chalk Formation. It is characterized by being flinty, hard and nodular, and is part of the White Chalk Subgroup of the Chalk Group. The cliff face is almost vertical due to geologic actions resulting in vertical bedding within a fold of the rock strata. The cliffs are not protected from wind and water erosion forces from the sea to the southwest. The resulting erosion forces cause bed-over-bed slipping in a vertical direction with the surface of the cliff having well developed slickensides. While Swyre Head rises to 90 meters, cliffs to the west rise to 150-200 meters. In this area Swyre Head is the highest vertical Chalk cliff in Dorset. It somewhat resembles the White Cliffs of Dover in southeast England located opposite Callais, France. Swyre Head, Bat's Head and Durdle Door are frequently seen in films. There are two dry valleys between Bat's Head and Durdle Door. These valleys might have ended in a coastal embayment like Linworth Cove at one time. Due to erosion, there is a relatively straight open water stretch between Bat's Head and Durdle Door. Dr. West believes these cliffs to have been used by the military for D-Day practice during World War II.<sup>7</sup>

Durdle Door lies between Bat's Head to the west and Man O'War Rocks and Dungeny Head to the east. The outer wall of Durdle Door consists of "vertical, Jurassic, Portland Stone (marine oolite) and basal Purbeck Caps (thrombolitic and pelloidal limestones). The western support for the arch of Durdle Door consists both of Portland Freestone, an oolite and some basal Purbeck strata, beneath the Broken Beds, which have been eroded away just here." The natural arch of Durdle Door is one of the physical features of the area which has retained a name given to it probably more than a 1000 years ago (Arkell, 1947), showing that the coast does not change very rapidly. The name "Durdle" is derived from an Old English word "thirl", meaning to pierce (as in "nostril"). A similar arched rock in south Devon is known as the Thurlstone. At Durlston Bay, Swanage, there was probably an arched rock of which a stack at Durlston Head (of Purbeck Broken Beds with celestite) is most likely to be the relic. A geologist named Damon (1884) also mentioned another name: "The most singular feature of this is the natural arch, known as the "Barn-door", formed in the Purbeck Limestone and sufficiently high for a good-sized sailing boat to pass through it."<sup>8</sup> Dr. West reported that the Rangers trained on these cliffs. Durdle Door is shown in Figures 190-191.





Figure 190: View of coast west of Durdle Door looking toward Bat's Head (2013 photo courtesy of Alan Holiday)



**DURDLE DOOR AS SEEN WHEN LOOKING SOUTHEAST FROM THE SLOPE UP SWYRE HEAD FROM SCRATCHY BOTTOM.**  
The Jurassic-Cretaceous boundary is in the Durdle Door promontory and the strata are younging north (left). The Chalk here is Upper Cretaceous, so that, nearly vertical, Lower Cretaceous is present in only a short distance from the rock to the white cliffs. Photograph: 14th November 2012. Ian West © 2012.

Figure 191: Rock Formation known as Durdle Door. (Courtesy Dr. Ian West)



To the south of Swanage lies Anvil Point where there is a lighthouse. The coast turns to the west after passing this promontory. The portion of coast from the lighthouse to the west along the English coast is referred to as Ragged Rocks or Boulder Ruckle. According to the Climbers Club of the United Kingdom, this area known for hard climbing was practiced on by the Rangers. It is said that the Rangers were the first to attempt climbing Boulder Ruckle. The Climbers Club wrote: "They were the first to venture into the Boulder Ruckle with any serious thoughts of ascending, and, loaded down as they were with rifles and equipment, their experience must have been a memorable one. The manner of their ascent is unknown but was undoubtedly dangerous; a sobering thought for any present-day climber feeling 'gripped' at the bottom of the Ruckle yet 'armed' with a full rack of protection devices."<sup>9</sup> A map of this area is shown in Figure 192.



Figure 192: Map showing cliff area at Ragged Point (Boulder Ruckle) shaded in the red rectangles. (Ordnance Survey of Scotland Popular Edition)

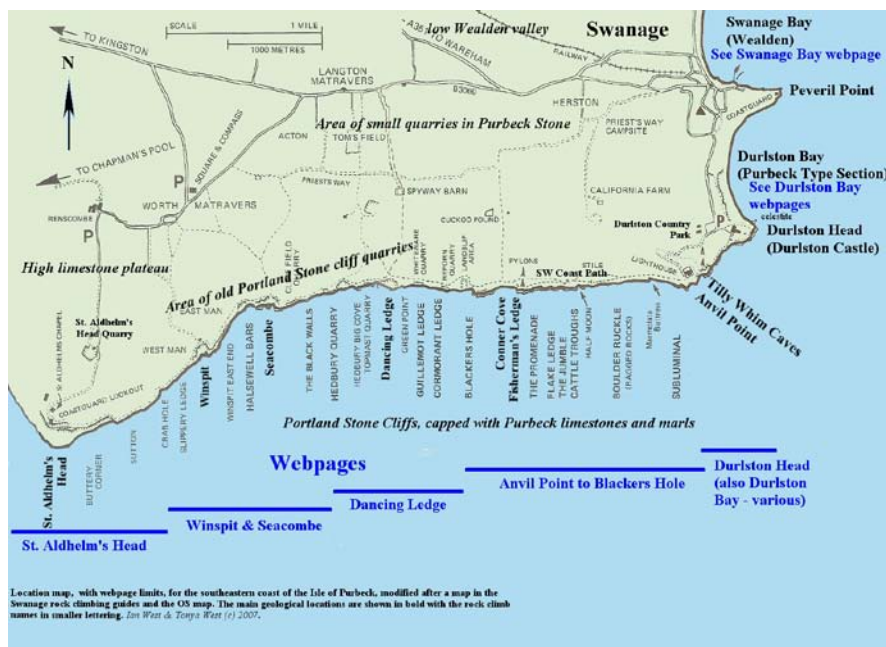


Figure 193: Boulder Ruckle ledge place names (Courtesy Dr. Ian West)



Regarding the geology of the Ragged Rocks site between Seacombe Cliff and Anvil Point, Dr. West wrote: “This is a superb rugged coast of considerable natural beauty. Particularly notable are the vertical Portland Stone cliffs with their natural caves, their quarry ledges with artificial galleries. Above is the interesting bevel or slope, based mainly but not entirely on Lower and Middle Purbeck strata”. The Ragged Rocks are described as a grouping of large angular boulders at the foot of the vertical cliffs to the west of Anvil Point. This area is comprised of joint-bounded, Portland Stone debris. The large angular rocks are particularly developed where the foot of the cliff is composed of uppermost Portland Sand. The name "Boulder Ruckle" was provided by rock climbers of these cliffs. This has since become a challenging and important climbing destination in the United Kingdom.<sup>10</sup> A photo of these cliffs follows.

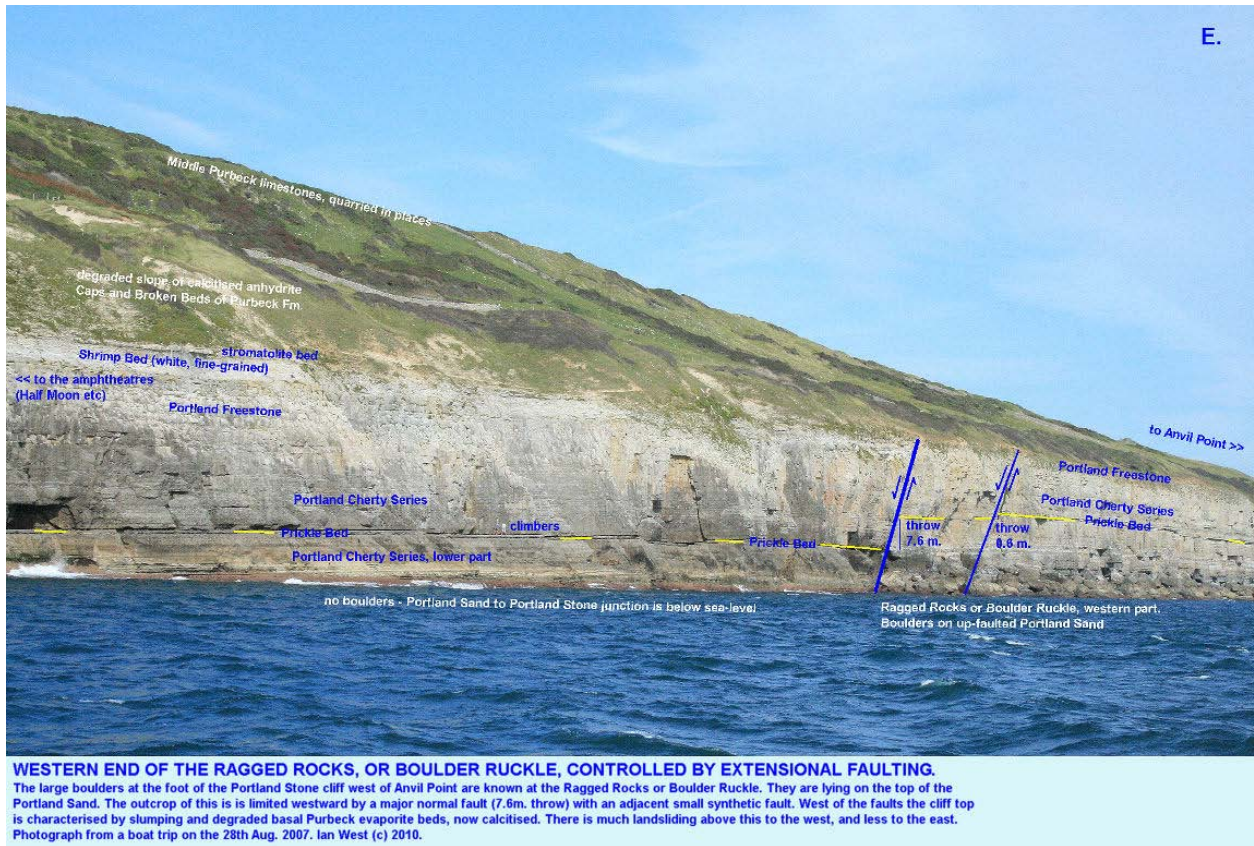


Figure 194: Geologic view of Ragged Rocks (Boulder Ruckle). (Dr. Ian West)

The next cliff area attributed to have been climbed by the Rangers was that of Old Harry’s Rocks located northeast of Swanage at the southern end of Studland Bay on Ballard Point. The beautiful area around Old Harry’s Rocks contains high Chalk cliffs, promontories, sea stacks and natural arches. The major Ballard Down Fault transects the area and is one of the most widely known faults in England. Ballard Point contains Chalk that is both vertical and horizontal. This area has been scientifically studied and described in detail since at least Victorian Times. The tops of the cliffs are hazardous and prone to sloughing. The cliffs contain flints which are a fine-grained variety of chert. They also contain some opal and silica. Harry Rocks are not comparable to the Needles on the Isle of Wight. Again Dr. West educated me about these features. Mapping of the area is in Figure 195 and a photo is shown in Figure 196. An iconic landward view of Harry’s Rocks is shown in figure 197.



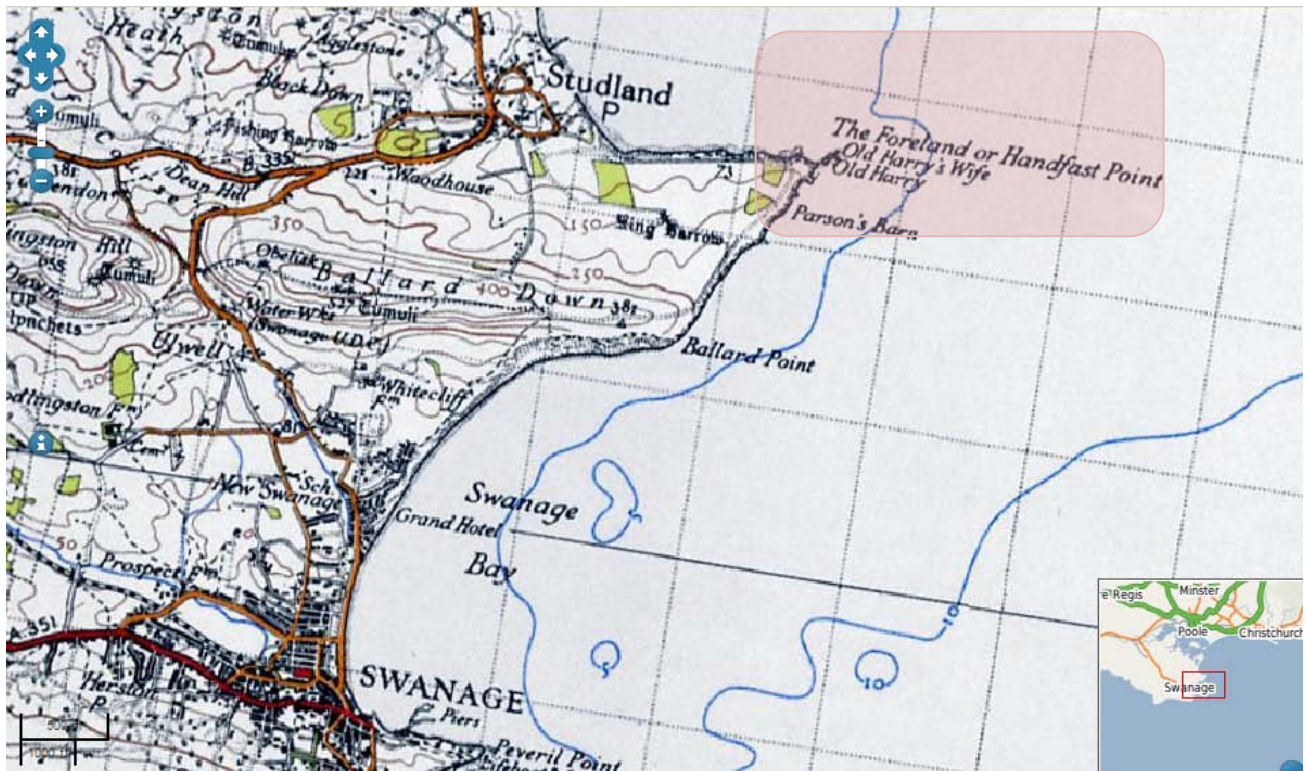


Figure 195: Map showing cliff area at Old Harry's Rocks shaded in the red rectangle. (Ordnance Survey of Scotland Popular Edition)



Figure 196: Wide Rock platform leading to Old Harry's Rocks on Ballard Point. Area recognized by Ranger Copeland (photo courtesy Ian West)





Figure 197: Photo showing Old Harry's Rocks on Ballard Point (photo courtesy Alan Holiday)

The final cliff areas that I found evidence as having been used by Rangers were the cliffs at Alum Bay on the Isle of Wight. Information regarding this area in regard to the Rangers is Spartan, but mentioned none-the-less (Figures 198-199).<sup>11</sup>

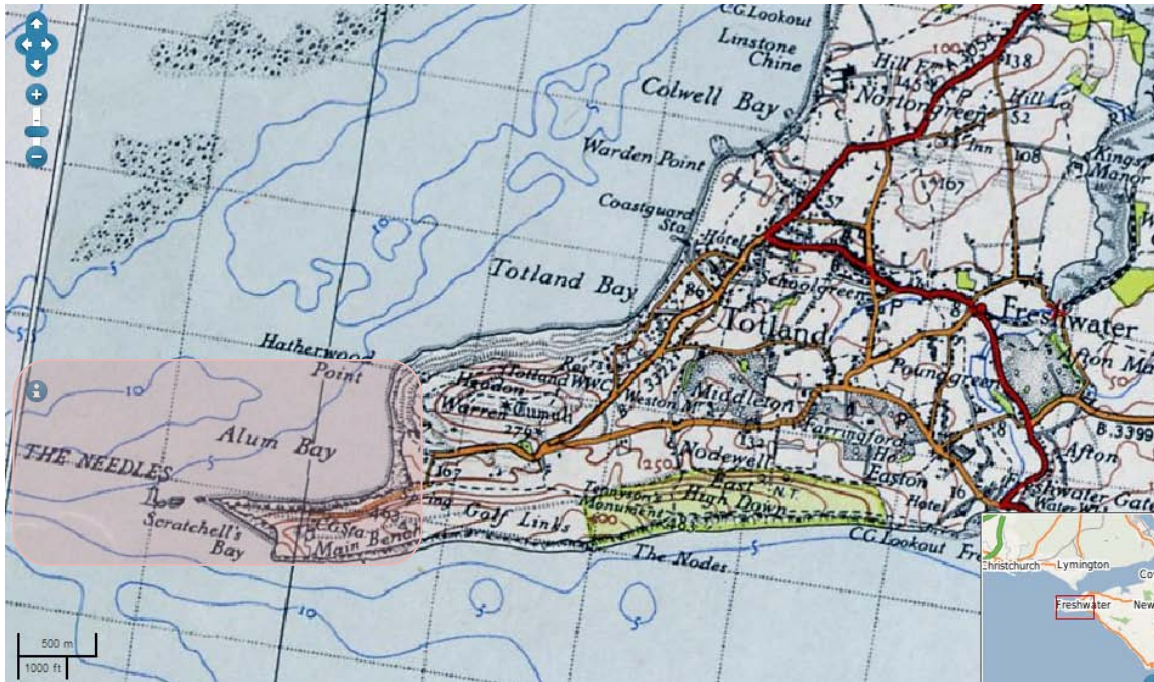


Figure 198: Area used by Rangers for cliff climbing on Isle of Wight. (Ordnance Survey of Scotland Popular Edition)



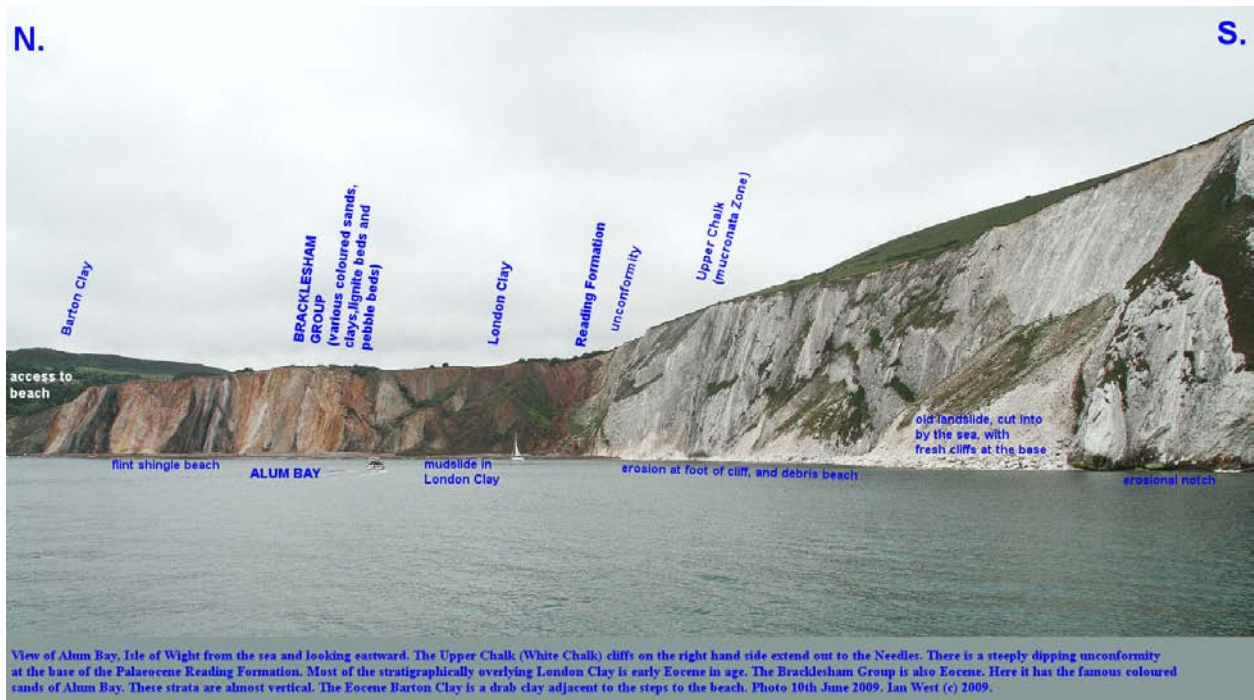


Figure 199: Alum Bay Cliff area on Isle of Wight used by Rangers (Dr. Ian West)

Robert W. Black wrote that the Rangers who would lead the primary assault on Pointe du Hoc began to undergo extra cliff training at Swanage beginning in April 1944. These men included Companies D, E and F of the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion. This extra training would enable these men to ready for the tasks of being the leading forces to assault their objective. Swanage was used to hone their cliff climbing techniques on steep cliffs. The aforementioned cliffs described above provided ample opportunity to practice in all types of ascending techniques. This included free rope climbing, the use of toggle ropes, and various types of ladders. They used steel ladders that came in four foot tubular sections that could be erected on the ascent. They used rope ladders and smooth ropes. They began to use the specially designed mortars that fired grapnels and ropes up 200 feet of cliff.<sup>12, 13</sup>

The Rangers of both the 2nd Ranger Infantry and 5th Ranger Infantry Battalions, moved to Swanage by rail and arrived on May 6, 1944. They billeted in separate locations. The 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion billeted at a school building on a hilltop with a great view (Hatfield),<sup>14</sup> while the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion was billeted at the then historic Grand Hotel Swanage overlooking Swanage Bay in the northern part of town. The 5th Rangers took the billeting location over from the 1st Engineer Combat Battalion of the 1st Infantry Division. The Grand Hotel Swanage sits atop an eighty foot cliff and is still a hotel to this day. Hathaway wrote that when the men arrived, they marveled at the beautiful wide front steps. Major Schneider told the men they would only be using those stairs one time. From then on, they would be using ropes to rappel from or climb up to their rooms, the ropes were attached to pipes in the rooms. Once they egressed the building, they would run across the yard of the hotel, and then rappel to the beach below each morning for formation. They would ascend up the ropes after formation to report for mess on the first floor of the hotel. A modern panoramic view of Swanage is seen in Figure 200 and close up in Figure 201.



Figure 200: Swanage England. Arrow denotes Grand Hotel Swanage (Courtesy of Jamie S. at en.wikipedia)



Figure 201: Grand Hotel Swanage and surrounding area (Courtesy of Jamie S. at en.wikipedia)<sup>15</sup>

Hathaway spoke of the arrival of the Rangers in town being an arrival that did not receive a warm welcome from the locals. He wrote that the previous unit from the 1st Infantry Division who had stayed in the hotel had told all the townsfolk a story about the Rangers who were to follow them. The townsfolk were told the Rangers were similar to the British Commandos, but they were all criminals. The villagers had seen the men rappelling out of the building and up and down the cliff and concluded that they were crazy and were receiving some sort of punishment.<sup>16</sup> In reading the Hathaway account, I found similarities to the movie *The Dirty Dozen* in the explanation of where the men were said to have come from. As soon as the Rangers began to explore the town after hours, they found that the English would often leave from wherever it was the men had paid a visit to. Residents would cross over to the opposite side of the street to avoid the men. It took some corrective action by Ranger Chaplain, Father Lacy to set the townsfolk straight. At the edge of town was a British post exchange, and after the misunderstanding was settled about the Rangers origins, the men found that the WAAFs, the other ladies in town and the nightlife were entertaining.<sup>17</sup>

Ranger Dick Hubbard of the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion wrote of a funny food story while at Swanage. He wrote: "Somehow the meat ration was changed to mutton instead of beef. Rudder had a rebellion on his hands that was rather serious. More than half the battalion threatened to volunteer out if we got any more sheep meat. Rudder called a meeting of all personnel to discuss alternatives for our diet. Chicken was offered as an alternative and roundly accepted. (How naïve we were.) So we got chicken three times a day for several months and to this day chicken is repulsive to men of the 2nd Battalion".<sup>18</sup>

Both Ranger battalions were assigned the task to destroy the guns on Pointe du Hoc. In alignment with the plans drawn up for the assault by command, it was decided to combine both units as a unified command. This allowed for both battalions to conduct operations in unison, while retaining operational independence. The resulting designation was the Provisional Ranger Group (PRG). The PRG officially activated on May 9, and the field order for Omaha Beach landing was issued on May 11 with the assault details per Rudder's plan. The May 11 order for landing on Omaha Beach was ended with the phrase "Good luck, God bless you, and shoot to kill."<sup>14</sup> The PRG was subsequently attached to the 29th Infantry Division, 116th Regimental Combat Team (RCT) under the command of Colonel Charles D.W. Canham. As an aside for later in the story, the chain of command established and explains why on D-Day, Lt. Gregory of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company, 2nd Platoon kept his men in place in Vierville when asked to do so by Colonel Canham in defense of flank of 29th Infantry Division. Lieutenant Colonel Rudder was in command of the PRG, with Major Sullivan as Executive Officer (XO). The PRG drew remaining staff from both battalions. Black stated that the "months of preparation, the emphasis on amphibious assault, cliff climbing, and violent action was now coming to fruition."<sup>13</sup>

Colonel Rudder, knowing the cliffs of Pointe du Hoc from his briefing with Eisenhower's command and based upon his planning, undoubtedly knew that the Rangers had to train in conditions as close as possible to Normandy. The German forces had a considerable view of the English Channel and their artillery could wreak havoc on both Omaha and Utah Beaches. General Omar Bradley would later say that this mission was the "most difficult assignment he had ever given a soldier in his military career." The intelligence gathering for the assault was intense. The Allies collected millions of photographs of the coast from any available source. By the spring of 1944, if the Germans made any changes at all along the coast, the Allies were aware of the changes through aerial reconnaissance and through the French Resistance and other sources. The plan had set up the PRG into three task forces, each with a specific primary and with secondary objectives. Each group knew what to do under various contingencies.

Task Force A; half of 2nd RN INF BN, Companies D,E,F and part of HQ (250 men) under command of new XO Major Cleveland Lytle

Task Force B; 2nd RN INF BN, C Company (69 men) under command of Capt Ralph Goranson, was ordered to land to west of D-3 draw and assault guns at Pointe de la Percée beyond west edge of Omaha beach.

Task Force C; Remainder of PRG, (665 men) under Rudder were to land at Pointe du Hoc or Omaha Beach dependant upon success of Task Force A. They were to receive a signal to provide direction one way or another. If landed on Omaha, orders were to turn west and make for Pointe du Hoc to relieve Force A.<sup>19</sup>

Some components of planning the attack on Normandy were under the purvue of the British Combined Operations Directorate. This organization oversaw the British Commandos, Royal Navy landing craft and Combined Operations as a whole. It was this organization that oversaw the development of what is known as the "funnies" such as the swimming tanks, the flail tanks, and other unique weapons systems. These types of new systems were tested at the Combined Operations Experimental Establishment by the Miscellaneous Weapons Development of the Admiralty in Devon near Bideford England at a facility referred to as "Westward Ho".

First of all, the group developed and tested a system for grapnel hooks that was mounted on the LCAs that combined technology from a two inch rocket launcher and a "J-Projector." Research suggests that a J-Projector was a type of depth charge launcher. The new system was capable of firing a grapnel with attached rope to cliff heights of around 200 feet in height. The rope was attached by a wire strap and the length of rope was stored in boxes aboard the vessels. They developed three configurations of rope ascension devices including:

- ¾ inch smooth ropes mounted in the forward launchers
- Rope with small wooden toggles attached every few feet for the middle launchers
- Rope ladder to be fired from the rear launchers

Another lightweight handheld version of launcher was developed for Rangers ashore as a backup in the event the main launchers failed. The men carried coils of rope to supplement the launchers. They were trained in free climbing and the use of daggers to climb. The tubular steel ladders came in sixteen foot sections with 110 feet of ladder to be carried per LCA.<sup>20</sup> It was here that the .30 caliber M1919A4 machine guns were replaced with Browning Automatic



Rifles (BAR) as the primary weapon in the Automatic Weapon Squads due to weight and difficulty in climbing with the heavier weapon.<sup>13</sup>

Rudder was concerned at the lack of the delivery of some of his assault equipment, such as the DUKWs as early as April 23, and he paid a visit to General Huebner. The DUKWs arrived while at Swanage. The Rangers happily accepted the DUKW vehicles equipped with the London fire brigade ladders and two synchronized machine guns. The operators of the weapons were given specially designed throat microphones. A half-inch steel plate armor was affixed to protect the gunner as was a safety belt to attach him to the ladder. Every third round was a tracer bullet that allowed the gunner to have better accuracy. The DUKWs had crews of seven men, manned primarily, but not exclusively from Companies D, E and F. They named them Swan 1 through Swan 4.<sup>20</sup> In the second week of May, ten men from the 234th Engineer Battalion joined the PRG to train with the men. These men were assigned as the drivers and operators of the DUKWs. Their names were: Doughty, Ahart, Hall, Tibbets, Tindell, Revels, Sluss, Mead, Armbuster and Shoaf. Ranger Bill Stivison trained the other Rangers on the use of the dual machine guns atop the extension ladders.<sup>17</sup>

In an exercise two of the DUKWs were brought near each other with their ladders fully extended. The men of each Ranger battalion was told and expected to climb up one ladder, make a midair transition to the second ladder and descend while carrying full pack and assault load-out. Raen indicated in communications with Black that the tops of the ladders could sway as far as 15 feet apart while performing this training exercise. It was a go, no go exercise for the men. The DUKWs carrying the ladders were also equipped with hydraulic jacks on the port and starboard sides to stabilize the vehicle once ashore.<sup>20</sup>

I interviewed JR Copeland a few times while researching this book. He discussed the Army Duck (DUKW) trucks with 100 foot extension ladders incorporated into the training. He said that they used two trucks each with the ladders extended. In one exercise, all of the Rangers had to ascend one ladder, jump across to the other ladder and come down the second ladder. He recalled one of the men in his own squad that attempted the climb, but could not make it from one ladder to the next. He remembered having to stay out until very late at night trying to get the Ranger to complete the task. After the man could not do it, he had no choice but to report it up the chain of command. He didn't know what became of the man, but that man was gone from the Rangers the following day.

They used free hand, smooth rope, knotted rope, toggle rope and steel ladder sections. The grapnel could dig into the ground on the tops of the cliffs once it landed and weight was applied to it. "The Rangers tested every available means of overcoming cliff obstacles." The Rangers also worked out the amount of combat load for the men to carry on their climb. This included weapons and ammunition. Each rifleman would carry sixteen clips of ammo, two hand grenades, and two antitank grenades. The other soldiers were likewise appropriately equipped.<sup>17</sup>

A member of the U.S. Navy, Harold F. Plank provided a testimony to the British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC) in July 2005 concerning his involvement with the Rangers as a Naval Shore Fire Control Party. In this, he described the training at Swanage with the Rangers. He would go ashore at Pointe du Hoc and assist the Rangers by directing naval fire support for the assault. He joined the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion in Swanage. He described that the first of the training involved setting up the climbing apparatus from the top and then simply climbing up and down the ropes and apparatus. It was after that the men used the landing craft and went more completely through the exercises, eventually timing the ascent. He described how the rocket launchers and grapnel hooks were added to the training. These grapnels were attached to coiled ropes in boxes located behind the rockets. When the grapnels landed on the cliff-tops, the men pulled on the ropes to get the grapnels to dig into the upper surface of the cliff. He described climbing on cliffs in various places, and on differing types of cliffs and cliffs of different heights, including the Isle of Wight. He said, "This was quite rugged work."<sup>21</sup>

Another account of Ranger activities came through research involving the HMS *Amsterdam* (Figure 202). This 350 foot vessel was first built in 1930, and saw service as a passenger ferry before the war. During the war, she was requisitioned by the Ministry of War and pressed into service as an LSI. The vessel was camouflaged and was capable of carrying six LCAs suspended by davits on her port and starboard sides. She was similar to the other LSIs used by the Rangers in many respects. In a report of this ship, it was said that she participated in mock landing drills with Rangers from February onward until D-Day. She took Rangers to Swanage and anchored offshore, while the Rangers boarded their LCAs and went ashore to practice cliff scaling.

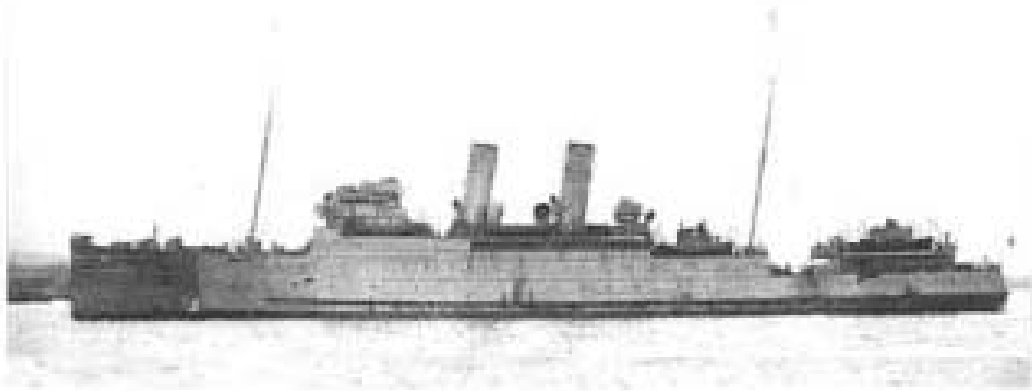


Figure 202: HMS Amsterdam (IWM)

Lt Eikner, 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion commented after the war concerning their training: “I can assure you, that when we went into battle after all of this training there was no shaking of the knees or weeping or praying; we knew what we were getting into; we knew everyone of us had volunteered for extra hazardous duty; we went into battle confident; of course we were tense when under fire, but we were intent on getting the job done. We were actually looking forward to accomplishing our mission.” Another account of a non-Ranger’s opinion of the Rangers encountered at Swanage was written by Stephen Ambrose: “Lt Walter Sidlowski, an engineer, marveled at the Rangers. “My guys had always felt we were in good shape physically, but watching the Rangers using most of their time double-timing, with and without arms and equipment, pushups and various other physical exercise whenever they were not doing something else, was cause for wonder.”” These accounts were taken from oral histories held at the Eisenhower Center in New Orleans.<sup>22</sup>

The British government documented the cliff training the Rangers did for future use for special warfare soldiers. The images and methods used below come from three sources. The first is from a video, *The Way Back*; Produced by the A.F.P.U and R.N. Film Section; Imperial War Museum (IWM).<sup>23</sup> The second source of information was a pamphlet prepared by the Chief of Combined Operations called, *Combined Operations Pamphlet No 24, Cliff Assaults*, dated August 1944 that uses the Ranger Training at Burton Cliff in particular as the basis for the text.<sup>24</sup> Lastly, a document prepared by the Chief of Combined Operations called, *The Combined Operations Staff Notebook, BR 1293* detailed the logistical side of these types of operations for training and real assaults.<sup>25</sup>

A number of Combined Operations included cliff assaults as part of the assault plan during World War II. Objectives included in these assaults included such items as the seizure of coastal defense batteries, disrupting communications and turning the enemy’s flank away from the main assault force. The element of surprise was deemed to be a critical element to the success of these assaults in terms the cost measured in lives. The Combined Operations Command determined that after careful study, only as much as ten percent might be conducive to proper beach exits for conventional forces. The remainder of coastlines are often backed by cliffs ranging from low and sloping to high and vertical. Doctrine of the era suggested when the defender has the benefit of strong geological barriers to assault, they are afforded the opportunity to economize their forces along their sectors of coastline. This means that areas with beach exits are able to be given proper attention in defensive works, under the assumption that the attacking force will not assuage them along fortifications enhanced by cliffs. If the enemy has reason to suspect a cliff assault, then they will likely spread their forces thinly to protect the entire coastline, which also presents an

opportunity for the attacker.

If the defender finds themselves in a situation where a cliff assault is likely, the manner of the defense will almost always favor the attacker. They either sufficiently fortify the beaches, or fortify the cliffs, and either scenario affords the attacker the advantage. "If the enemy attempts to guard the cliffs, he must weaken the defense on the main beaches. If he leaves the cliffs undefended a bridgehead can be established over the cliffs on his flank by special troops. The installation of cliff climbing apparatus will then enable non-specialist infantry to pass through the cliff bridgehead in sufficient numbers to capture the main beach from the flank."<sup>24</sup>

The British, and Americans working along with them set about to develop a process to analyze the needs of a given assault. The first thing to consider was the type of cliff to be overcome. The Allies determined that no cliff is unassailable through their work at intelligence analysis. All that is needed are the right men, proper equipment and good planning. Cliffs were broken into two types irrespective of their geological classification, and planners developed studies as how to best defeat them as obstacles. The two types of cliff to assault are: 1) Cliffs of soft rock which are vertical overhanging and 2) Cliffs of hard rock which slope at an angle of less than seventy-five degrees of horizontal. The techniques of assault for each is different. Two concepts of ascent were described and must be considered in the assault of these obstacles, namely scaling and climbing. Scaling uses mechanical aids to overcome vertical cliffs. Climbing on the other hand, requires very little in the way of climbing apparatus, and is used to ascend hard and sloping cliffs. The end result on D-Day was that the majority of the 2nd Ranger Infantry battalion like the three companies at Pointe du Hoc scaled the cliff, while the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion climbed the bluffs on Omaha Beach. To determine what method should be used, each cliff was carefully studied. The nature of the rock, nature of the sea action upon the exposed rock, and the sea level over time were three factors used to determine cliff confirmation. The same type of cliff might be produced by different combinations of these factors.

While the ability to overcome a cliff was derived based on the two factors mentioned above, the geologic classification is still important when planning an assault. Geologically speaking, cliffs are found in two main groups, stratified and unstratified. Stratified cliffs may be formed of limestone, sandstone, slate or volcanic ash consisting of a series of parallel layers. These layers tend to form blocks when they break up. The layers might be horizontal, steeply inclined toward or away from the sea. Cliffs with horizontal, or nearly horizontal layers, are usually vertical or nearly vertical, and apart from landslide or talus, are either easy or difficult to climb in relation to their uniformity. The development of a stratified cliff over time will help determine how easy or difficult it will be to climb. An unstratified cliff is usually of volcanic origin, or produced under volcanic influence. These cliffs typically are made of granite, basalt, gneiss and quartzite. The rocks in these cliffs are hard and form high cliffs in exposed positions. Over time, these cliffs tend to form diversified pinnacles and shafts. A stratified cliff will typically result in a more or less straight coastline, while an unstratified cliff will result in an irregular coastline including coves and points.

The Combined Operations Command determined that based on this type of information, no cliff was insurmountable given the necessary equipment. The height, composition and slope of a cliff determined the best method to overcome it. The time required to assault a cliff was found to be dependant on the method employed and the standard of training for the troops conducting the assault, with more emphasis on the training than the cliffs themselves. The tactical considerations of the mission outweighed the cliffs themselves, and care was taken not to just choose the easiest route, with the end result being a well thought out plan of assault. In developing the assault plan, the commander had two important considerations: 1) the degree of cover from cliff-top defensive fire, and 2) the suitability of the ground on the cliff-top to establish and hold a bridgehead from counterattack.

The next important phase of planning was timing the assault. The timing of the cliff assault depended on the timing of the major landing. The choice of H-hour for the cliff assault must be considered from a wider tactical perspective of the overall operation. The danger of a loss of surprise is real to the overall tactics and strategy of the invasion if the timing is poorly conceived and executed between the cliff assault and the main landings. In a cliff assault the actual ascent will be easier by day than by night, but against a heavily defended coast it will be harder to get tactical surprise and the initial resistance will be greater. Another consideration in the planning of cliff assaults is that of attacking right on the heels of naval or artillery barrage. The period between the lifting of the bombardment and the time when enough men are up to establish an initial bridgehead at the cliff-top, is the most vital period in the whole operation. The Combined Operations Command calculated that the cliff-top bridgehead assault forces must complete the ascent within five minutes per hundred feet of cliff height, and then fully engage the enemy. The second



wave of attackers should not come in until after the ascension apparatus deployed by the first wave is fully in place. This could entail that the second wave might be as much as thirty minutes after the first wave. The second wave, ideally should remain offshore until called for.

Fire support was deemed important to the success of the mission. During the initial bombardment and supporting cover fire, as much of the enemy defense in the area in the immediate vicinity of the cliff should be neutralized. Air and naval power are critical in this action and cliff-top and beach communication is thus extremely important. The unit's heavy mortars are important tools to deploy on the beach during the first phase in order to provide high trajectory fire support of the bridgehead. Due to the manpower and resources required to haul the mortars, heavy machine guns and their ammunition to the top, they should remain below until called for. It was this developing wisdom that resulted in the BARs being made replacements for the light machine guns in the Ranger companies before D-Day.

The British took notice of the use of heavy bombardment on Pointe du Hoc, and how the bombardment resulted in rendering the DUKW vehicles useless on that assault. The wisdom developed was the thought of considering cost versus gain of such bombardment on a target. Had the aerial bombardment not trashed the shingle and beach at the Pointe, then any number of other possible scenarios may have played out on D-Day. A risk of bombardment includes the possible hardening of targets to where aerial bombing becomes ineffective. The cratering and destruction of the shingle and beach were another possible issue.

The next phase of the assault included the establishment of the bridgehead. The primary element to this was speed of ascent. The secondary element then delivered the remaining fighting forces to the beachhead to continue to press the attack. The Rangers developed sufficient cliff assault apparatus as to provide for the rapid establishment of the bridgehead. The next consideration in this phase was that of creating surprise diversions. In terms of cliff assault in conjunction with a main landing, the enemy is likely to pay attention to the main landing, thus easing up some of the pressure from the area to be attacked during the cliff assault. The thought is that if both assaults are successful, then the two bridgeheads will join up in short order. Other considerations for success are weather, use of parachute troops, and alternative methods for establishing a bridgehead.

The Combined Operations Command developed several methods for cliff scaling. The methods for scaling included the use of ladders and ropes. Ladders are limited by the height of the cliff, but they are considered the best method for ascent. Proper employment of ropes included the use of rope carrying rocket apparatus, rope ladders and climbing ropes. The four-foot steel ladder is included in this category as it operates as a rigid rope ladder. The nature of the assault often helped determine what method was the best to use, and became apparent in the training phase. No method should be used alone. Each assault should employ as many methods of ascent as possible to ensure success.

Climbing should be considered and used when there is a possibility of nighttime landing, and surprise is important. If climbable, the cliff should be assaulted on as wide a front as is possible. Climbing requires a higher degree of individual and sub-unit training than does scaling with mechanical aids. The latter does mechanically much of what in climbing has to be done by the individual.

Assault wave organization should provide for the following duties and personnel: climbing leaders, climbing seconds, covering fire party, main assault party, signal personnel from beach to ship, signal personnel from bridgehead to follow-up troops, liaison men from follow-up troops.

Climbing leaders landed with a gripfast strapped around their waists. A 1½ inch alpine rope will already have been secured to the gripfast, the rest of the rope was hand-coiled in baskets on their backs. They wore climbing boots. If the cliff is not hard rock, they carried cut-down ice axes. If there is a lip, or a short patch of earth or gravel at the cliff-top, they also carried hand grapnel and hand grapnel carriers which helped them over this. They were armed with pistols.

Climbing seconds landed with a gripfast strapped around their waist and a 2 ½ inch rope coiled in baskets and secured to the gripfast ring. They wore climbing boots and carried side arms and machine carbines.<sup>5</sup> The party providing covering fire wore climbing boots for speed and carried machine carbines and hand grenades. The main

assault body carried their normal load and conducted their duties as assigned. The signalmen carried their respective equipment dependent upon their location:

Signals on the bridgehead - Signal equipment required on the bridge head were:

- a) Wireless sets SCR 536.
- b) Light telephone Mark M or sound power telephone. Twisted cable on light rollers and W130. This will provide a telephone link between the bridge head and the beach.

Signals on the beach - Signal equipment required on the beach were:

- a) Wireless sets No. 38 or No. 68.
- b) Beach marking, with lights for use at night.
- c) Morse torches.

The liaison men carried rollers, gripfasts and coiled ropes to assist follow-up troops in their ascent. Heavily laden personnel such as mortar and machine gun personnel ascended with assistance from the hauling team at the cliff-top. The hauling team went up as early as possible and erected a sheerlegs at the cliff-top. This was a small human operated form of a simple crane.

The troops were trained in day and night assault drills. Each follow-up unit contained climbers in the event the first wave had issues in the establishment of the bridgehead, or if not enough ropes were deployed during the initial assault. As the follow-up climbers reached the top with their climbing gear, they dropped it at the top of the cliff with the leaders at the top, who then in turn dropped the new ropes down for additional lanes of ascent. As troops reached the top, they were designated to organize into small parties as per their objectives, and head off to execute assignments. This confounded the Germans on D-Day. The Rangers were trained in dealing with cliff-top casualties and with the possibility of an orderly cliff-top withdrawal.

The training of cliff assault troops was determined to be of high importance. This was the explanation for the amount of differing training locations and methods undertaken by the Rangers. The object of training for cliff assault was to be able to reduce a cliff to the status of an incidental obstacle, the act of scaling constantly subordinated to the tactical requirements necessary to capture the objective. The Combined Operations Command determined that eight weeks were required to train a unit for cliff assault. The Rangers trained for an entire year for their D-Day mission. The place chosen for training must resemble the scene of the operation and should, if possible, be more severe. A goal for training location was that the exact geological composition of the cliffs to be assaulted in the operation should be matched if possible. The training should be done according to a well thought out training plan and include ample safety precautions. The idea of training joint operations forces, such as the boat crews, signal personnel, airborne troops and others came into its own as part of this doctrine. It was decided that all officers should train as hard as the men with regard to cliff assaults. The officers also had the added responsibility of planning and executing operations. The study of up to date intelligence photos and information by the officers was an important component of their training.<sup>24, 25</sup> The training of all the other positions was likewise laid out in detail by the Combined Operations Command. This training stressed speed, safety and repetition.

“Climbing leaders require considerable training, both day and night. They should be picked NCOs and men, selected mainly from those sub-units which have been chosen to be assault wave sub-units. They should be trained by qualified instructors, first on easy boulders to gain confidence in using nailed boots, later on harder boulders to acquire technique, then on easy exposed climbs to overcome dislike of heights, and finally on difficult exposed cliffs. The standard aimed at should be "very difficult" according to peace-time rock climbing standard. Climbing problems and rock should be as varied as possible.

At first these climbers should be allowed to gain confidence by being put only on hard firm rock such as granite, but later verifying rocks particularly loose poor rock should be introduced. Weapons and equipment should not be carried until the later stages, when the drills for sub-units are introduced. Leaders must be taught sound rope management and knots, as they will have to instruct the rest of their sub-units. They must be capable of climbing steep earth and grass, with the use of cut down ice-axes, and patches of vertical and overhanging gravel at the tops of cliffs, with the use of

hand grapnels.

Not less than a fortnight should be spent on this, on a scale of two or three students per instructor, and practicing on varied rock. Climbing leaders will gain further confidence in themselves by instructing their own sub-unit afterwards."<sup>24</sup> (*Combined Operations Pamphlet No 24, Cliff Assaults*).

The British War Ministry captured film that is held at the Imperial War Museum containing footage of the Rangers as they practiced at Burton Bradstock. The film is reportedly from April 1944. The images on the following pages are from this film.<sup>23</sup> Two Rangers lost their lives after falling during these exercises and are buried in the Burton Bradstock churchyard. The cliffs at Pointe du Hoc are a mirror image as those at Burton Bradstock. They are the same geologic formation on opposite sides of the English Channel and are 90 feet (30 meters high). The first assault wave approached the beach at the base of the cliff. The operation commenced with a heavy air and sea bombardment to neutralize the enemy defenses and force enemy personnel to cover while the LSIs moved to the assembly area and the LCAs left them and began their run to shore. The bombardment was lifted as the LCAs neared the shore. The LCAs were fitted with six Modified PAC type J length 4'3" rocket projectors firing Standard 2 inch Type J rockets fitted with a five pronged, 15 inch diameter grapnel head capable of launching a 2 ½ inch rope up a 300 foot cliff at 80°. The launchers and rope/ladder storage boxes were mounted along the top sides of the LCAs, three per side. The grapnels/rockets were attached to an assortment of rope ladders, toggle ropes and plain ropes selected to provide alternative methods of overcoming the various types of cliff face. The rope ladders were 2 inch manila ropes with wooden rungs that were 1 inch in diameter by 9 inches in length, spaced every 18 inches for 200 feet of the ladder and weighed 48 pounds. The toggle ropes had 5 inch wooden toggles spaced every three feet for 220 feet and weighed 45 pounds. The landing craft fired their rockets in pairs as they touched down. The rockets reached a height of 200 feet and easily cleared this 90 foot cliff with the grapnels falling at least 100 feet beyond the cliff's edge (Figures 203-205).



Figure 203: Rangers training at Burton Bradstock. Note grapnels and rocket fire at cliff face (IWM)





Figure 204: Ranger LCAs firing rocket propelled grapnels at cliff faces in Burton Bradstock. These same LCAs landed on D-Day (IWM)



Figure 205: Landing craft firing ladders and toggle ropes at cliffs at Burton Bradstock (IWM)



Figure 206: Critical point in landing operations at base of cliff as assault had yet to commence, and men were bunched at base of cliff. (IWM)

The next three minutes were the most critical time in the operation as shown in Figure 206. The bombardment had ceased and the beachhead on top of the cliff had not yet been established. The slack of the ladder and ropes must be taken up to make the grapnels grip. The leading men selected for their climbing ability raced to the top. Others held down the ends of the ladders to make the climb easier. Only two men could climb each ladder at the same time, which due to physics, made it easier to do. The first men went up and commenced the assault, and were followed by men more heavily equipped and established a small beachhead. Once the area in the immediate vicinity of the ascent was secure, the most critical time was over. There were now sufficient men on top to enable assistance to be given where required. The ropes and ladders flattened barbed wire obstacles and even tore them away. The process of the ascent is illustrated in Figures 207-210.

A light “sheerlegs” and block tackle was rigged at the cliff edge. They consisted of a pair of 10-foot tubes shackled together at one end and fitted with spikes and plates at the other end weighing a total of 60 pounds. Sheer legs are supported by a wire backstay on to a screw picket. They were, and are used for hoisting stores and heavy equipment such as mortars, mortar ammunition and heavy machine guns. They provided a rapid and effective way at evacuating wounded.

Once the bridgehead was established, a portable steel ladder could be erected. This light tubular steel ladder was manufactured in four foot sections which interlock. It was built up at the bottom, and then men hoisted it to the top. Each section had warp hooks for attachment to the cliff face. The ladder sections were connected together via S hooks, and the ladder was kept a few inches from the cliff face by steel supports. This type of ladder is easier to climb than rope ladders since it is held away from the face of the cliff by the short legs. A large number of these ladders were tactically sited and when in position, some were certain to provide a safe route between cliff-top and beach, whatever fire the enemy might bring to bear.



Figure 207: Rangers scaling cliffs at Burton Bradstock (IWM)



Figure 208: Rangers lining up for cliff scaling (IWM)





Figure 209: Rangers making a mock assault of cliffs at Burton Bradstock in spring 1944 (IWM)



Figure 210: Ranger nearing top of cliff (IWM)

The next special piece of equipment to arrive was called a Swan (Figures 211 and 212). It consisted of a 100 foot power operated ladder fitted to a DUKW. Its purpose was to provide an easy way up for the second wave of troops which was timed to arrive immediately when the Swans were in position. Stability was given by side jacks extended out while the ladder was being extended. The top of the ladder was armed with twin Vickers 303, GO No. 1 Mk. I, 'K' machine guns (Figures 213-214). The gunner was in position while still afloat and was protected in later models by armor plate. The rate of fire of each gun was 900 rounds per minute, and an adequate supply of ammunition was carried behind the armor plate.<sup>23</sup>



Figure 211: London fire-brigade ladders extended up cliff at Burton Bradstock (IWM)



Figure 212: U.S. Army Ranger DUKW outfitted with London fire-brigade ladder training in England (IWM)



Figure 213: 2<sup>nd</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion training with twin Vickers machine guns (IWM)



Figure 214: Ranger posing, ready to fire Vickers machine guns. (IWM)



The second wave arrived (Figure 215), and the troops got ashore as quickly as possible, assembling under cover at the foot of the cliff ready to advance up the Swans to join the troops already in the bridgehead. The second wave carried no special equipment and was a normally equipped field unit. The first men waited on the lower rungs of the ladder, until the order to climb is given by telephone by the gunner at the top. This telephone was fitted to all Swans and enabled the top gunner to control the tactical extension and elevation of the ladder. The gunner supported the bridgehead by fire, and extended the ladder still further than any intervening crests. As the tactical situation allowed, he called up the men of the second wave. At an average rate of climb a Swan working to full capacity could clear the beach at a rate of 500 men per hour.<sup>24</sup>



Figure 215: Line of 2<sup>nd</sup> wave assault craft approaches beaches at Burton Bradstock (IWM)

After completion of cliff assault training at Swanage, the men of the Provisional Ranger Group were finished with what the planners and leadership had prepared for them prior to D-Day. They were amongst the finest, most highly trained soldiers in the United States Arsenal. They were ready. I imagine these guys wouldn't take any crap, from anyone. The Rangers boarded trains on May 17 and travelled 28 miles back to Marshalling Camp D-5 near Dorchester.

I asked JR Copeland a series of questions prepared by my children regarding D-Day. In response to a question to him from my son, "Did you want to do it, (land on D-Day) and why?" JR Copeland responded, "We wanted to knock off Hitler!" He went on to tell me to tell my son that "I wanted Christian to be able to go to school in a free country". JR looked me square in the eye as a man does when rendering a fundamental truth to someone, and I knew that even in his nineties, he would do it again. There was a look of fierce determination in JR's eyes when he looked me in the eye to respond to this question. He was deadly serious and I could see it written into his face. I was profoundly moved by it. My September 28, 2013 meeting with this remarkable veteran brought home my grandpa in a way I never imagined when I began to study the Rangers and what he stood for to me became clear and transparent in that very moment.

## 15 DORCHESTER CAMP D5 AND WEYMOUTH

The men of the Provisional Ranger Group arrived by rail at 1700 hours from Swanage, and were again taken to Camp D-5 where they had been before Exercise Fabius I. Invasion was in the air as they settled into their short stay at the camp. A mixture of U.S. MPs, British and Canadian guards worked in pairs and patrolled the area outside the double stranded barbed wire. The Rangers and other men were sequestered and the camp was sealed as all passes were stopped. The soldiers were not allowed to speak to anyone beyond the wire including the sentries. The guards were under orders to shoot to kill anyone attempting to exit or enter the camp unlawfully.<sup>1</sup>

The Rangers now fully found they had joined the myriad of other soldiers in the marshalling phase and were brought to final readiness. Each soldier was issued anti-seasickness pills, emergency rations, vomit bags, lifebelt, impregnated clothing against chemical warfare, 200 francs in French currency, water purification pills, heating units, dusting powder, and extra first aid supplies.<sup>2</sup> At some point near this time, all the Rangers had their respective battalion number (2 or 5) painted in black on an orange diamond on the backs of their helmets (Figure 216). Officers had a vertical white bar painted superimposed on the diamond, and NCOs had a horizontal white bar painted on their helmet to allow fellow Rangers easily identify their own men from behind. Ordnance patrols circulated through the areas, checking waterproofing, making minor repairs, and occasionally replacing vehicles or other equipment.



Figure 216: Ranger re-enactor displaying orange diamond on rear of helmet (Photo courtesy of SSG Chase Adkins, 75<sup>th</sup> Ranger Regiment)



Figure 217: Photo example of U.S. soldiers relaxing in marshalling camp prior to D-Day (NARA)

It has been said that this time in Dorchester was the most relaxing time the Rangers had had since joining the outfit. Figure 217 shows a typical image of the relaxation enjoyed by many of the soldiers who were preparing to land on D-Day. The Rangers ate and were treated very well. The officers and men were more relaxed. They only had to do light PT and a few short road marches to stay active. They had daily movies available to watch with near first run Hollywood pictures. They could sunbathe or sit around and listen to music. If they chose to write letters home, they had to wait to have them sent home until after the invasion, and after they passed the censors.<sup>3</sup> The men played touch football, softball, or boxed. Buffet style meals with offerings like steak and pork chops were the norm. Deserts featured lemon meringue pie and the like.<sup>4</sup> Extraordinary efforts were also made to indulge the men's taste and appetite in these last few days in the United Kingdom. Fresh meat and white bread were regular items on the menu in this period, and special precautions were taken to guard the diet against foods conducive to seasickness in the case of seaborne assault forces, and against gas-forming foods which might induce stomach cramps in the case of paratroops.<sup>5</sup>

During the last week of May the Operation OVERLORD briefings were conducted and completed. PFC Prince wrote: "We were strong in every sense of the word. We had trained and worked hard."<sup>6</sup> The Rangers were briefed using models and aerial photographs. Each man and squad studied and memorized their assignment. "Each and every terrain feature was sharply imbued in our minds. Every man could have maneuvered over this land blindfolded. Each man got to know not only his part, but that of his buddies. We knew our company's mission, our battalion's mission and those operating alongside."<sup>7</sup>

Hathaway was assigned to the HQ detachment War Room because he was good with maps, aerial photo interpolation, and ability to plot info and intelligence information on maps. He was assigned the duty with Herbert Einstein, T-4.<sup>8</sup> One of these men had to be present in the War Room at all times as the center was manned 24 hours a day. They alternated eating and other things. The room was bolted closed from the inside for security. On the War Room floor was a large soft rubber model map of the Normandy Coast for the invasion sector and Pointe du Hoc. There was a large paper map on the wall. Neither the maps nor model had any names on it. The men updated intelligence information onto the maps from aerial photos as they arrived. The two Rangers briefed officers and enlisted men as they visited from the various companies and staff in order to prepare down to the squad and



individual level for the invasion.<sup>7</sup> General Raaen told me in an email, “We were severely confined to the camp since we had seen the invasion maps. There were no names on the maps, but who could miss a coastline running West by North. Had to be Normandy. Again, we weren’t there long”.

Ranger Victor Miller wrote that the Rangers were given their TOP SECRET briefing, and explained how the information about it was to be kept away from the Nazis at all costs. He explained how in the briefing building, there were scaled models of the entire French coast involved in the assault landing. He described how the details surrounding the assault of Pointe du Hoc were laid out. The training and equipment the men had used in training all had a role to play. The German defenses, and in particular the six 155 mm cannons were located where they had been expected to be in their casemates. The facts surrounding the importance of these weapons were imparted to the men in terms of the damage these cannon could inflict upon Allied Forces. He described in detail the timing and organization of the three Ranger Task Forces. He wrote:

“The plan was that the three companies of the 2nd Bn. would assault at H-hour and take this Pointe in the following one hour. If they did our Bn. Commander, Lt. Col. Max Schneider, would receive this radio message and we would follow them in. We would climb the cliffs and then do whatever was necessary to insure the success of the invasion. Yet, if they didn't take the Pointe in that first hour, our orders were to go on five miles up the coast to the area of the village Vierville sur Mer. We would land at H plus One, or one hour after the specified time for the beginning of the invasion. The infantry would have landed there at H-hour and would have a beachhead when we arrived. We would simply leave their beachhead and proceed by the inland route to the Pointe and assault it from the rear. This was the operation we had practiced for a month in Scotland. Now we understood! The scale model of the coast showed the houses in the villages, the roads, the hedges around the individual fields, and all details like that. We were thoroughly trained, we were thoroughly informed as to our objectives, and now it was time to put them into action!” (Miller)<sup>9</sup>

Operational and intelligence briefings intensified for the men as they all became BIGOTs. After any soldier was given their BIGOT briefing, they were sequestered to the camp and all they could do was await the final embarkation order. They now knew where they were going, and what the Germans had to throw at them based on the latest intelligence. They studied maps, aerial photographs, and sand table and rubber mockups of the terrain (Figures 218-220). They knew their code words, sign and countersigns. They knew what artillery the enemy had, where to find it and how to destroy it. They understood the German soldier, his weapons and how to take control of and use his weapons against him. They were familiar with the tides, beaches, cliffs, and locations of the minefields. Every man knew the job of all the other men in the PRG. They were made aware of the mission of the 116th RCT. Oberstleutnant Fritz Ziegelmann, of the German Army, 352<sup>nd</sup> would later write that the American attackers had “good maps, sketches, and views of the field of view of the attacker.” Each soldier was given \$20 in French francs in the event of emergency (bribes, French assistance). Many of the Rangers began to gamble with this money.<sup>1</sup>

Maintaining adequate security was another vital aspect of the mounting, entailing protection against air attack as well as against the leakage of information. Once the briefing began at the end of May a complete security seal was imposed on all marshaling camps, wire was strung around the perimeter of each camp, all contact with the outside was controlled through gates, and more than 2,000 counterintelligence corps personnel ceaselessly covered their beats to prevent strays from entering or leaving the camps without authorization.<sup>2</sup>

The Rangers were afforded great latitude regarding personal gear. Many of the men tailored their uniform and gear from amongst what they had on hand to make their own job easier. Some wore the blue Ranger diamond, while others left it off. Some wore rank and others did not. Some men wore a mixture of their khakis and field uniforms, while others wore the chemical impregnated uniforms allotted to the invasion forces. The Rangers wore their Corcoran jump boots much to the consternation of airborne troopers. A few fights settled that matter and the Rangers kept the boots. The Rangers did not waterproof their weapons, as they would not have time to remove the waterproofing as they hit the beaches. Some of the men did things like painting their faces black or camouflage, some shaved their heads or cut in Mohawks or high and tights.<sup>1</sup> Unlimited ammo was provided in the event the men wanted to practice fire their weapons by the Ordinance Department. Anything not going in on the backs of the Rangers was stored away, as it had for the FABIUS exercise to be returned to them upon the establishment of the beachhead in France.





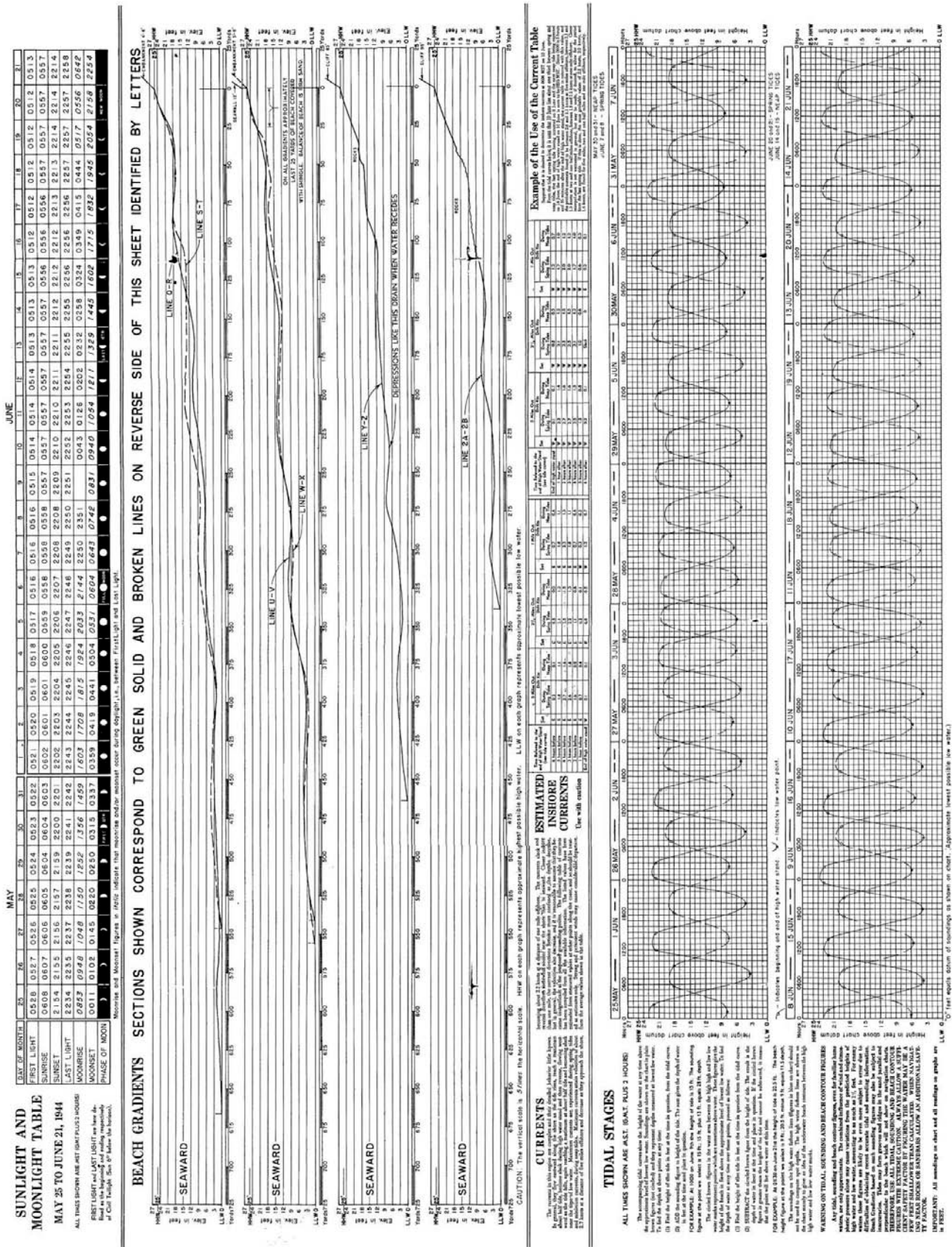


Figure 219: Operation OVERLORD BIGOT Map reverse side, of Omaha Beach, West (NARA)



# LAYOUT OF TYPICAL BATTERY

<http://www.dday-overlord.com>

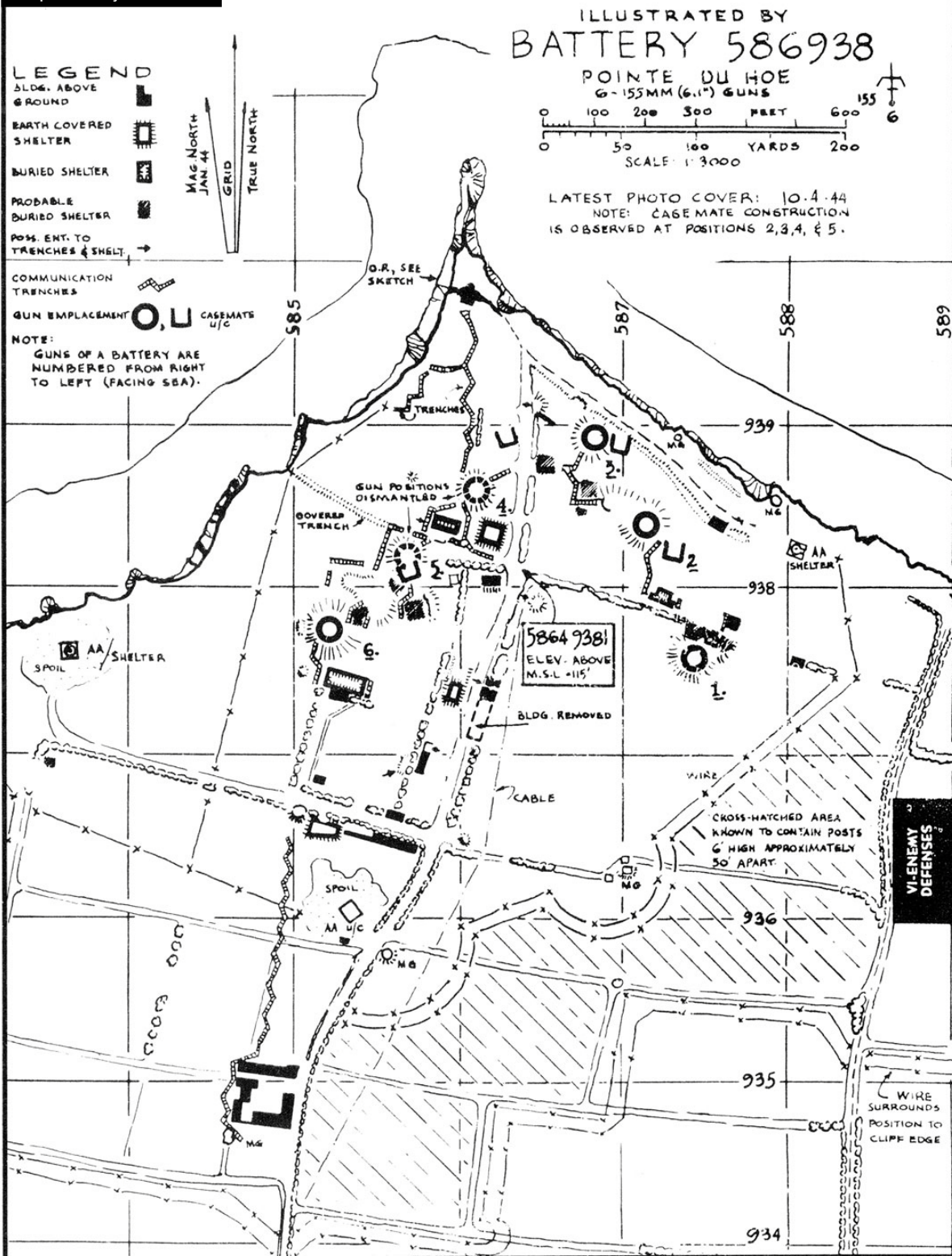


Figure 220: Operation OVERLORD BIGOT Map of Pointe du Hoc (NARA)

The Germans followed the Allied planes home nightly to gather intel, however D-5 was only bombed that one time. In our meeting, JR told me the Germans eventually figured out to follow the trailing plane, and then would come bomb the airfield. The Rangers area got bombed as a result. He told me that most of the Rangers took to digging foxholes. He did not want to dig a foxhole. Captain Whittington came to him and said “you had better dig a foxhole.” JR responded to him “Well sir, we have simulated just about everything else, I’ve simulated my foxhole over there.” He told me the captain told him that “when the bombs started falling, that if he did not have a fox hole, that would be it”. Pretty soon the bombs started falling and JR changed his mind and got blisters on his hands digging a foxhole. On May 31, German bombers flew over D5. The Rangers heard the planes, but paid them no mind as they figured they were Allied planes. It wasn’t until the defensive network lit up the night sky with anti-aircraft fire and flares, searchlights and the sirens went off that the men scrambled for foxholes. Bombs began to fall in the D5 area, shaking the ground with the heavy explosions, and the concussive blasts deafened some of the men. The bombing lasted ½ hour. None of the Rangers had been seriously injured. The bombs had fallen in the motor pool area directly across the road from the men. Two MPs patrolling the motor pool had been killed. Some of the Rangers’ vehicles and equipment had been damaged or destroyed. One of the two known bombs that fell in the motor pool was a dud, and the closest one to fall to the men in the unit was 100 yards away.

The next morning, the Rangers moved to another section of the staging area to not present an easy target to the Germans should they return. One member of the 2nd Rangers was wounded while conducting a police call when something he threw away in a burn barrel resulted in an explosion. This Ranger had become a BIGOT, and he had to await full and proper medical care beyond the care provided by the medics and BN surgeon until after the invasion.<sup>3</sup> The units were broken down into boatloads to await the final move down to the ships.<sup>10</sup> Only the weather was in doubt at this point, as the English Channel was stormy. Loading of Force U, Force O, and Force B began on 30 May, 31 May, and 1 June, respectively, and all troops were aboard by 3 June. Force U craft were loaded mostly at Plymouth, Dartmouth, Tor Bay, Torquay, Poole, Salcombe, Brixham, and Yarmouth. They were divided into twelve convoys for the cross-Channel movement depending on their missions, assembly points, and speed. Force O was split into five convoys and the craft loaded in a relatively concentrated area including the ports of Portland, Weymouth, and Poole (Figure 221). Operation OVERLORD was ready.<sup>10</sup>

On June 1, the PRG moved by truck to the Weymouth embarkation area to the half-mile esplanade crescent shaped on the bay that ended at the docks. They walked the last bit through town to the waiting LCAs. They marched by columns of two with the 2nd Rangers in the lead. They were greeted by cheering locals who sang the National Anthem and waved, recognizing that the Ranger patch meant these were special troops on a special mission of some sort.<sup>7</sup> On their way to their final boarding area, the men passed through a Red Cross comfort tent (Figure 223), where they enjoyed a doughnut and cup of coffee. The men then boarded their assigned LCAs, left the dock and embarked aboard their assigned LSIs. Figures 224-229 show this final movement of the Rangers for D-Day.

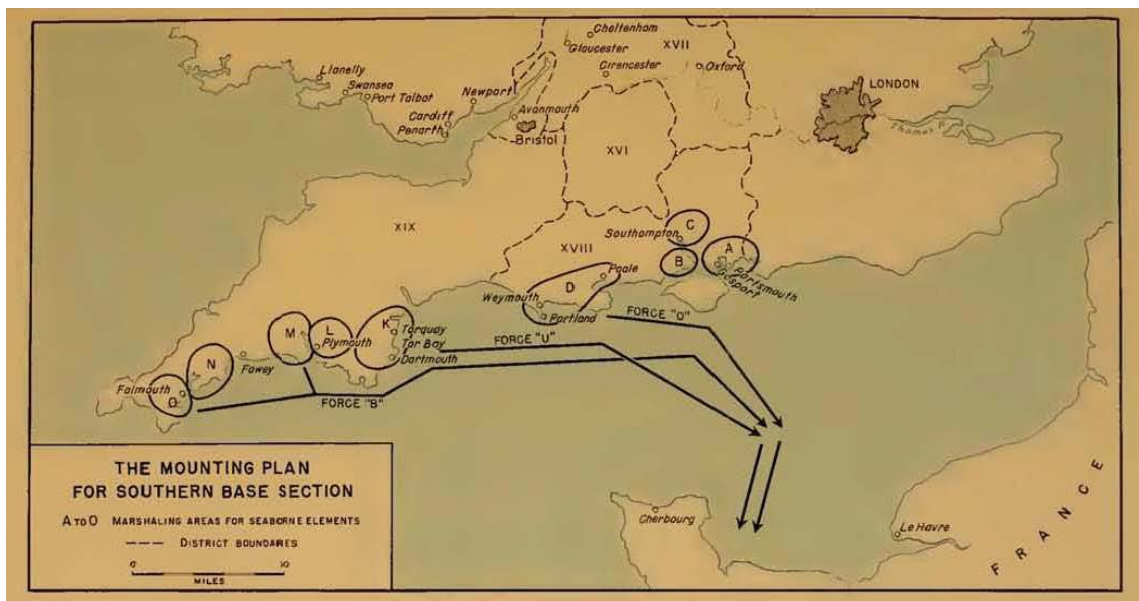


Figure 221: The Mounting Plan for Operation NEPTUNE (USACMH)<sup>11</sup>





Figure 222: Wartime photo of Rangers partaking of Red Cross hospitality tent in Weymouth Harbor (NARA)



Figure 223: Rangers marching through Weymouth to embarkation point (NARA)





Figure 224: Rangers marching through Weymouth to embarkation point (NARA)



Figure 225: 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion mounting their assigned LCAs at Weymouth (NARA)





Figure 226: Wartime photos of 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion on June 1, 1944 aboard LCAs (NARA)



Figure 227: 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion on June 1, 1944 aboard LCAs leaving Weymouth (NARA)





Figure 228: 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion on June 1, 1944 aboard LCAs leaving Weymouth en route to LSIs on June 1, 1944. LCA 1377 transported half of the 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion including Captain Raaen. (NARA)



Figure 229: HMS *Prince Baudouin* (LSI) receiving LCAs in Weymouth Harbor, June 1, 1944(USCG)



## 16 RED SKY IN THE MORNING: D-DAY



Figure 230: Sunrise, D-Day, June 6, 1944 off Omaha Beach from US Coast Guard film (NARA)

A vivid account of the morning of June 6, 1944 was sent to Mr. Cornelius Ryan in June 1958.

In your interviews with various participants of the “D” Day Operations, try to get a picture of the sky in the early dawn. I have witnessed many sunrises in my thirty-four years, but this one stayed in my mind. Apparently it was unusual only to me, for I have asked many others about it. I am not capable of an accurate description. There was a storm of high winds, as you well know; but it was a storm with few clouds. The first rays of the sun turned the few clouds to crimson. It would have captured the imagination of any artist or poet. You may want to know about the two LSIs (reference to LCIs 91 & 92) which had run a ground because of the storm. The sounds of the men in pain and terror as shell after shell fell on the decks could be heard above the din of other combat. Men would jump screaming into the sea only to rise as floating corpses. One man with a flame thrower on his back disintegrated into a flaming inferno.

PFC Max D Coleman, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, C Company  
June 16, 1958 letter to Cornelius Ryan<sup>1</sup>

How does one write about a subject that has been written and written about for nearly seventy years? How does one present a story of a soldier, amongst a cast of thousands who all cumulatively did an amazing thing? Recalling from Chapter 1, the single note that contained the original information known by my immediate family, all that was presented indicated that S/Sgt Hull had climbed the cliffs of Normandy an hour before D-Day. Now it is abundantly clear that this previously shared family information is not entirely accurate. He was in fact there, but his route to Pointe du Hoc was entirely different than expected. Telling this part of the story is immensely important, but the question pondered for some time was how to do it. The stories that have been told about the Rangers on Omaha Beach and Pointe du Hoc (Hoe) by Glassman, Raean, Cornelius Ryan, Black, Graves, Balkoski, Ambrose and a myriad of others lay out the action of the Ranger battalions and the units operating around the Rangers in exquisite detail. In researching this aspect of my grandfather's service, I have discovered a wealth of source material. It is fitting to present this material and to focus largely on the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, Company B, 2nd Platoon for this chapter to find S/Sgt Hull in the operation. While not able to find him named in official records for the day or in other written accounts of the day, everything leading to this point presents the opportunity to establish his role and that of his platoon and company on this vital day in World War II.

Vierville Sur Mer is a French commune in the Intercommunality of Trévières in the Canton of Trévières, in the Arrondissement of Bayeux, Department of Calvados, in the Lower Normandy (Basse-Normandie) Region of France. It is located at 49°22'30"N 0°54'14"W. The average elevation for the region is 151 feet above mean sea level, with elevations ranging from 0 feet above mean sea level to 203 feet above mean sea level. During the D-Day invasion it had around 330 residents.<sup>2</sup>

This area of France has a rich history to ancient times. Normandy was a province populated by Celtic tribes and was conquered in 98 AD by the Romans. The Romans incorporated the area into the province of Gallia Lugdunensis. In the 4th century, the province was divided into civitates which constitute the historical borders. After the fall of Rome, the Franks became the dominant ethnic group and brought Christianity to the region, resulting in a period of the construction of many of the local churches and cathedrals. Towards the end of the 8th century, the area fell to repeated Viking raids that devastated the region. The name Normandy originates from the Medieval Latin word Nortmanni "Men of the North," and references the Viking invaders from Scandinavia. The Vikings originally saw the Christian population as weak and easy prey. Many of the place names in Normandy, particularly the rocks and cliffs owe their naming to the influence of the Norwegian language.

In 867 AD, the Carolingian King Charles the Bald signed the Treaty of Compiègne, whereby ceding the Cotentin Peninsula region to the Breton King Salomon under the provision that the Bretons defend the region from the Vikings. The result of this was additional warfare resulting in the Treaty of Saint-Clair-sur-Epte and the establishment of the Duchy of Normandy in 911 AD. During the next 150 years the borders roughly stabilized to their present boundaries and included the Channel Islands. These islands are located just west of the Cotentin Peninsula some 50 miles from Vierville Sur Mer. This period was marked by the rise of the Normans and the Anglo-Saxons. William the Conqueror developed a base of operations west of the area of Vierville sur Mer. The Normans became strong in a naval sense, and were able to conquer England and later participate in the Crusades due to their military strength. The region became wealthy. Mainland Normandy, minus the Channel Islands was incorporated into the Kingdom of France in 1204. Normandy spent the next hundred years trading hands between the French and English as part of land conquests associated with the Hundred Years War. An end result of this period of war was the heavy English influence on northwest France, particularly in areas like Brittany near Brest. The Channel Islands remain in British hands until this day. This area of the Normandy coast thus was no stranger to invasion from the sea.<sup>3</sup>

Calvados formed as one of the 83 departments as a result of the French Revolution on March 4, 1790. Some say that this name relates to the defeat of the Spanish Navy Armada near Arromanches-les-bains in 1588. The area again saw war and after the allied victory at Waterloo in 1815, the Prussians occupied the region for three years. Bessin is a name resulting from a tribe of Gaul, relating to the city of Bayeux, and the central town of the territory. It corresponds to the former diocese of Bayeux, which was incorporated into Calvados after the French Revolution. In reading works about World War II, each of the place names discussed above are used almost interchangeably. Understanding a little about the history of the battlefield surroundings gave a better understanding about the importance of the place itself.<sup>4</sup>

As discussed in the War Department Report, Omaha Beachhead, CMH Pub 100-11-1, “the coast of Normandy offers only a few areas favorable for large-scale landing operations in the zone assigned to V Corps. Cliffs, reefs, and wide tidal ranges combine to present natural difficulties.” V Corps identified Omaha Beach for the assault landings in this region along a five-mile, relatively cliffless interval compared with the rest of the adjacent Normandy coastline. The beaches in the Utah, Gold and Sword sectors gave way to gradual rises in elevation in contrast. The cliffs typical of the coast in the Omaha Beach sector presented themselves as steep bluffs nearly one hundred to one hundred-fifty feet in height. The Omaha Beach shoreline formed a crescent and was bordered by the bluffs opposite the beaches and had cliffs at either end. The Germans had constructed underwater obstacles along the tidal flat. The tidal range was 18 feet on Omaha Beach, revealing approximately 300 yards of gently sloping firm sand at low tide. The high tide came in as far as the sea wall. The velocity of flows resulted in drainage features called runnels running parallel to the beach that had depths of up to four feet. Travelling ashore, the beach terminated at an obstacle up to eight feet in height called a shingle. The shingle was formed by stones and pebbles stacked and worn smooth by the relentless surf. This shingle might be absent in the presence of a constructed seawall. In the western portion of Omaha Beach between Vierville Sur Mer at exit D-1 and St Laurent at exit D-3, the seawall was topped with a paved coastal roadway. The Germans had placed the barbed wire obstacles on the landward side of this roadway resulting in any attacker having to expose themselves on top of the roadway to enemy crossfire as they attempted to breach the obstacle. Between the roadway and bluffs, the Germans had demolished most of the houses or other structures that impeded defensive firing along the zone or that offered any cover to the attacking forces. The bluffs overlooking the beach between D-1 and D-3 were the most abrupt on the beachhead not containing vertical cliffs.<sup>5</sup>

The Allied planners identified nearly every detail of the objective area with coded designations to enable swift and sure communication for the Allies and to make it harder for the Germans to understand communications without some effort. Omaha Beach has five draws amongst its cliffs and bluffs, each with a road leading to the beach. During the war, these geographic features were heavily defended strong-points that served as natural exits off Omaha Beach. The designations for these obstacles which needed to be cleared in order for the invasion to proceed inland were from west to east:

- Dog One, (D-1) at Vierville Sur Mer
- Dog Three, (D-3) at Les Moulins
- Easy One, (E-1) at St. Laurent
- Easy Three, (E-3) at Colleville, and
- Fox One (F-1) at Number 5 draw

When the Supreme Allied Commander, General Dwight D. Eisenhower made the final decision to go for D-Day on June 6; he did so with the hope of the free world on his shoulders. The weather forecasting in the English Channel had played a critical part in his decision. What he did not know, was that the lousy weather had lulled the Germans into a false sense of security. They knew the importance of the tides and other factors involved in planning an amphibious operation. The delay to wait out a gale force storm in the channel gave the Allies an unexpected advantage due to German complacency.

With the go order, every person involved in the invasion was given a paper with the Order of the Day from General Eisenhower (Figure 231). A folded up copy of this order found in his uniform still resides in our family. I do find it disconcerting to hear revisionist historians omit General Eisenhower’s last sentence whenever hearing a reading of this order on a television program or in print. These men all knew and acknowledged that they needed God to help them this day. This expression of faith offered by their Supreme Commander on a day when so many would be lost is freedom of speech in its purest form, not some modern politically correct tripe, and all these veterans know it.



SUPREME HEADQUARTERS  
ALLIED EXPEDITIONARY FORCE



Soldiers, Sailors and Airmen of the Allied Expeditionary Force!

You are about to embark upon the Great Crusade, toward which we have striven these many months. The eyes of the world are upon you. The hopes and prayers of liberty-loving people everywhere march with you. In company with our brave Allies and brothers-in-arms on other Fronts, you will bring about the destruction of the German war machine, the elimination of Nazi tyranny over the oppressed peoples of Europe, and security for ourselves in a free world.

Your task will not be an easy one. Your enemy is well trained, well equipped and battle-hardened. He will fight savagely.

But this is the year 1944! Much has happened since the Nazi triumphs of 1940-41. The United Nations have inflicted upon the Germans great defeats, in open battle, man-to-man. Our air offensive has seriously reduced their strength in the air and their capacity to wage war on the ground. Our Home Fronts have given us an overwhelming superiority in weapons and munitions of war, and placed at our disposal great reserves of trained fighting men. The tide has turned! The free men of the world are marching together to Victory!

I have full confidence in your courage, devotion to duty and skill in battle. We will accept nothing less than full Victory!

Good Luck! And let us all beseech the blessing of Almighty God upon this great and noble undertaking.

*Dwight D. Eisenhower*

Figure 231: General Eisenhower message given to Allied Forces before D-Day (USACMH)

To truly understand what really happens in a battle, it is important not just to study it from one point of view. The German defenders who opposed the Rangers, 29th Infantry Division and 1st Infantry Division are every bit as important to place on the battlefield to understand what happened that day. The initial ferocity of fighting that they brought to bear along Omaha Beach bears testament to this. The Germans had readied themselves for nearly five years for the inevitable attack they knew would come from the British and Americans. It is my strong opinion that Hitler essentially lost the war when he attacked the Soviet Union on June 22, 1941 when he launched Operation Barbarossa. There was no numerical way he could defeat the Russians with conventional means. To fight the Soviets, British and later the Americans was not realistic. Hitler and his Nazis were big believing in theatricality and false hopes. As the war progressed they were equally big on overestimating their own abilities. The Atlantikwall, although a great concept for defense, was never constructed to the measure of strength Hitler had ascribed to it. Had he not attacked the Soviets, perhaps he could have applied the proper manpower and resources to set sufficient defenses with which to defend the coast. The loss of German air supremacy during the early years of the war was a major strategic and tactical blunder that later cost the Germans the control of France. The war of intelligence and deception was won by the Allies well before the invasion. A prime example of this was that the Pas de Calais was never the real target of the Allies, and yet the Allied ruse of leading the Germans to that conclusion as a deception worked brilliantly. Another example of the intelligence win for the Allies was the Ranger assault on Pointe du Hoc. Albert Speer, Reich Minister for armaments and munitions wrote a very telling truth often overlooked both then and now. It was captured by Joseph Balkoski in his great work *Omaha Beach, D-Day, June 6, 1944*. Speer wrote:

Given the great length of the French, Belgian, and Dutch coasts, a complete line of pillboxes spaced close enough to offer mutual protection would have far exceeded the capacity of the German construction industry. Moreover, there were not enough soldiers available to man such a large number of pillboxes... For (The Atlantik Wall) we consumed, in nearly two years of intensive building, 17,300,000 cubic yards of concrete worth 3.7 billion DM (Deutsch Marks). In addition the armaments factories were deprived of 1.2 million metric tons of iron. All this expenditure and effort was sheer waste.<sup>6</sup>

The German chain of command in Normandy fell under the Supreme Commander of the Armed Forces, Adolf Hitler. Reporting to him was the Oberkommando de Wehrmacht (OKW) or Armed Forces High Command, under Generalfeldmarscall Wilhelm Keitel. The Oberbefehlshaber West (OB) or Commander-in-Chief West was Generalfeldmarscall Karl Rudolf Gerd von Rundstedt with the mission to “prevent any hostile landing in its area. The MLR (Main Line of Resistance) is the high tide line in the coast. Should the enemy land at any place, they are to be immediately thrown back into the sea”. Rundstedt oversaw Army Group G and Army Group B. Army Group B was under the command of Generalfeldmarscall Erwin Johannes Eugen Rommel, who due to his popularity with Hitler, maintained personal access to the Fürher. Rommel in turn oversaw the LXXXVIII Corps, Fifteenth Army, Seventh Army and had conditional tactical control over the II Parachute Corps. The Seventh Army was in command of the units on western Omaha Beach including the 716th Static Infantry Division, and the 352nd Infantry Division (Wehrmacht). The 716th Infantry Division was under the command of Generalleutnant Wilhelm Richter. The 726th Infantry Regiment with their command post at Gruchy Castle just west of Vierville was part of the 716th. The 352nd Infantry Division was commanded by Generalleutnant Dietrich Kraiss. The Allied Intelligence efforts failed to firmly place the more experienced 352nd Infantry Division in the vicinity of the Omaha Beach landing area in time to affect D-Day planning. They had become aware of its presence in May, but did not change plans in response to the realization of their placement. This division was near full strength and was well equipped. They had nearly completed their training by D-Day. Although many of the soldiers in the Division were conscripts, many of their officers had experience on the Russian front. There are two really good books for understanding the German point of view called *The German Army at D-Day* by David C. Isby,<sup>7</sup> and *NORMANDIEFRONT: D-Day to Saint-Lo Though German Eyes* by Vince Milano and Bruce Conner.<sup>8</sup> They draw from German source material and set the table from the German Army leaders and soldiers who were there. Everything that happened to the Rangers at Pointe du Hoc, Pointe et Raz de la Percée, Exit D-1 at Vierville on Omaha Beach and the Omaha Dog White/Dog Red landing locations was as a direct result of the defenses put in place by the defenders and their means and mode of counterattack throughout the battle.

By 1944, the Germans had had a taste for the style of battle the Americans combined with the British could and would bring as a result of the action in the Mediterranean. They knew of the supremacy of the skies and sea that the Americans created through their technological development and industrial machine. Field Marshall Erwin Rommel had evaluated the Normandy defenses in January, 1944 and reported his findings directly to Hitler. His report



indicated that the defenses of area along the Normandy coastline were inadequate. There was also disagreement between Rommel and von Rundstedt regarding the placement and use of reserve forces including armor. As a result of this report, the Germans began to fortify the Omaha Beach landing area in earnest. The improvements to the beach would prove devastating to the men initially landing on June 6; however, the poor decisions regarding the latter would result in allowing the Allies to gain a foothold as there was not sufficient defense in depth behind the beach. The Germans hence set about improving the defenses installing Belgian Gates, Czech Hedgehogs and obstruction beams (Figures 232-233).

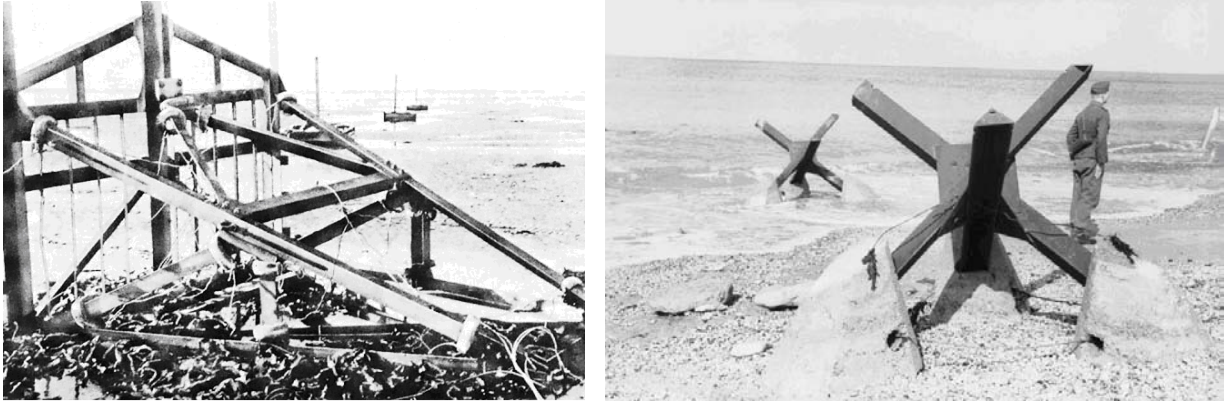


Figure 232: German beach defenses at Omaha Beach, Belgian Gate (left) and Czech Hedgehog (right). (German Federal Archives)



Figure 233: Field Marshall Erwin Rommel inspects Omaha Beach defenses (*Hemmbalken*, or "obstruction beams") in spring of 1944. (German Federal Archives)

One weakness along the Calvados coast was that between what the Allies referred to as Draws, where the cliffs and bluffs overlooked the beach, the German 716th Infantry Division physically did very little to defend the crest. They put in place minefields, open trenches and other light defensive positions, but not the heavy defensive infrastructure that was abundant at the *Widerstandsnest* (WN) or strongpoints. The Germans underestimated the Allied ability to infiltrate large numbers of infantry forces up the bluffs. They assumed that the interlocking fire on the beach would inhibit any ability to make it up the bluffs, or the cliffs of Pointe du Hoc, for that matter (Figure 234). This was found to be nowhere more critical to the assault on Omaha Beach than at Dog Red/Dog White.<sup>6</sup>





Bundesarchiv, Bild 101-567-2293-15  
Foto: Schwiders, Toni | 10/44 Sommer

Figure 234: German 80 mm mortar (left) and MG-42 machine gun crew in Normandy (German Federal Archives)

Major General Deitrich Kraiss, Commander of the 352nd Infantry Division was charged with the defense of the section of Normandy Coast that included both Omaha and part of Gold Beach. He had led a German Division in fighting the Russians in 1941. The 352nd formed on the Eastern Front. This Division therefore contained a cadre of a core group of men who had fought on the Russian front. The rest of the men in the unit were either young or inexperienced conscripts. They trained the best that they could, considering the shortages of fuel and other supplies that hindered their training mission in the months leading to D-Day. The Division was well equipped and was nearly at full strength of some 12,000 men by D-Day. It had new German 105 mm and 150 mm guns (Figure 235). They were assigned antitank units equipped with armored vehicles. General Kraiss's headquarters was at Molay-Littrey. This placed his command post some nine miles west of Bayeux and thirteen miles south of Omaha Beach.



Bundesarchiv, Bild 101-031-2415-16  
Foto: Maier | 1942/1943

Figure 235: German 105 mm gun, pictured in Russia, 1942 (German Federal Archives)

The 352nd Grenadier-Division included soldiers from three different combat experienced units that had become

combat ineffective. These were the Grenadier-Division 546, decimated at Stalingrad, and the 268th and 321st Infantry Divisions, decimated in the Kursk Offensive of 1943. Other men who had recovered from wounds received in Africa and Italy also joined the cadre of the unit. Ten percent of the overall soldiers in the division were combat veterans. In total, approximately 75 percent of all non-commissioned officers and officers were battle tested veterans. All the line officers had frontline experience. To this seasoned group were added several thousand German conscripts from the training camp at Schlann, Germany. The new division was to be fully activated by January 1944, and would train in order to fight on the Eastern Front. There were several battalions of eastern Europeans conscripted "volunteered" for service in the German Army. These men were commanded by Germans and constituted a small fraction of the Division strength at thirty percent of the total strength. The German Army was better integrated than the U.S. Army with all of its endemic bigotry. By March 1944, the division was declared at the disposal of OKW and ready for deployment. The Rangers of B Company would later take some of these volunteers as prisoners, and would not be impressed with them as soldiers.

On the other hand, the static 716th Infantry Division was ill trained, equipped and prepared in the estimation of Rommel to cover such a vast defensive sector of the Normandy Coast. As a result, he assigned the 352nd the task of defending the area known to the Allies as Omaha Beach. Rommel allowed the deployment of the 352nd Artillery behind the beaches to bolster the defense of the coastal zones. Additionally, the I and III Battalions of the Grenadier-Regiment 726th were transferred to the 352nd.

Rommel issued three orders to the 352nd Grenadier-Division:

- Improve the beach defenses along their part of the coast
- Be responsible for building and maintain defensive positions from the coast all the way to St. Lô, and provide security in this area
- Maintain the current Divisional training schedule

Kraiss established two main battle lines. The first was the beach defenses along the coast. The second was a line established some 10 to 15 km south of the coast. This turned out to be a mistake due to Allied air power and poor north south routes to move forces. It lengthened German supply lines such that they could not resupply ammunition. The 352nd was also on standing alert for movement within Europe and as such, they faced supply challenges from higher echelons. By June, the beach defenses were evaluated and a report provided to Kraiss. The report stated that only 45 percent of the bunkers were built to sustain artillery fire. Only fifteen percent of these numbers of fortifications were constructed to withstand aerial bombardment. The remaining fortifications were deemed unfit to do either. Kraiss determined that he would have to rely on the readiness and quality of his troops for the invasion he knew was inevitable. Throughout the spring, he trained his men using two overall themes. His experience had shown the importance of individual training of the soldier. He knew that small groups of well trained soldiers could inflict damage upon and hold up larger and more powerful enemy units. Secondly, he knew the value of training for the counterattack. Again, his combat experience had shown him the importance of the counterattack to retake ground or to plug gaps in battle lines. In final preparations, a failure was made by the Germans in that they did not provide enough ammunition to their coastal defenses. Many of the units simply fired their weapons until they ran out of ammo. Some German positions fired as many as 10,000 rounds on Omaha Beach on D-Day.

According to study of the German forces, the conventional thinking that the 352nd was just training in the Omaha Beach sector should be called into question. Also, while not a crack SS type unit, these men were a properly trained, equipped and an experienced unit. The division had been on station for all of 1944. They had trained well, even incorporating it into mundane activities such as securing supplies to construct the coastal barriers on the beaches. A testimony to this is the lack of Maquis action against the 352nd in Normandy. German Obergefreiter Josef Brass wrote about it. "Our units were never attacked by the Maquis because we were a combat unit with machine guns and support weapons. These men may have hated us but not enough to ensure death by attacking a well armed and trained unit."

Another impressive aspect of the 352nd was their intelligence gathering ability, and the abilities of their commander to properly weigh the intelligence data. Kraiss believed the Normandy coastline would be a major invasion objective. He trained his men for it. On June 1st, the 352nd had received reports of low flying recon aircraft. Kraiss also had reports of an increase in carrier pigeon traffic from the Normandy coast. In response, he put

a bounty on pigeons. The captured messages evaluated as a result of this action revealed the Maquis had made detailed reports to the Allies as to German positions and troop strengths. The capture of a Maquis in Brittany resulted in a wealth of intelligence from the interrogation. The Allies were reported to commence the invasion in the first week of June in Normandy. Kraiss reported this up to Berlin, requesting an alert be issued. He was denied this request as being alarmist. This is from a U.S. Army Intelligence Document *MS-B 432, 352nd Infantry Division*, dated 1947. The German high command of the 7th Army was scheduled to have war games for the entire first week of June, as is reported in books like *The Longest Day*. Kraiss acted skillfully on his intelligence gathering and remained at his post, using the war games as an excuse to put his men on alert on June 4. He told his subordinates of the impending invasion, and that for them, the alert was real.<sup>8</sup>

Oberstleutnant Fritz Ziegelmann, Assistant Chief of Staff, 352nd Infantry Division later wrote that he had asked about the strength of reserves in May and was rebuffed. “My query, that the width of the division sector (53 kilometers) and the weaknesses of our rearward defenses made possible an infiltration through the less heavily occupied sections, and that to counter this, assault reserves were necessary behind the lines, remained unanswered...”<sup>8</sup> This weakness would be exploited by the 116th RCT and the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion as they assaulted the bluffs.

What the Omaha Beach sector lacked in depth to their defenses, they made up for during the initial hours of the assault with artillery fire and the defenses of the WN stongpoints. A good detailed description of these WN positions is found in a book called *Omaha Beach* by Georges Bernage. A captured German map shows that the Germans had zeroed in the beach for artillery strikes (Figure 238). The important fact is that the Germans were as ready as they could be, and they were waiting for the Allies, particularly at Omaha Beach due to the command decisions of General Kraiss. For that reason, the Allies would have to pay by the inch in blood for their assault here.

On D-Day, the Germans had fortified the seven km stretch of Omaha Beach from Sainte-Honorine-des-Pertes to Pointe et Raz de la Percee with 14 WN positions numbered 60 through 73. Only WNs 63, 67 and 69 were not able to provide direct fire upon the beaches. The WNs had a massive amount of available firepower. This included:

Two 88 mm Pak	15 mortars of various sizes
One 76.2 mm FK	Two 80 mm mortars
Six 75 mm FK(f)	Six 37 mm guns
Two 75 mm turreted guns	Four artillery batteries consisting of:
Ten 105 mm Pak	Twelve 105 mm leFH
One 47 mm Pak	Four 150 mm sFH
At least 85 machine guns	



Figure 236: German Marder III Tank Destroyer  
(German Federal Archives)

The slit trenches, bunkers, pillboxes, mortar pits and Nebelwerfer (rocket launchers) and machine gun nests were manned by men from the 916th and 726th regiments. The GR 726 occupied the majority of the WNs. 10/GR 726 occupied WN 64, 65, 66 and 68. The 11/GR 726 based at Vierville occupied WN 70, 71, 72 and 73. Stab II/GR 916 was at Formigny. The 9/GR 726 was at Gruchy near Englesqueville, 6/GR 916 was located at Formigny, and 7/GR 916 was at Surrain. The third battalion of the 726th Infantry Regiment, including the above units was attached to the 352nd Infantry Division. The total units along the beach included five infantry companies, with five additional infantry companies and four artillery batteries in support, not including the guns of Pointe du Hoc. The 352nd Infantry Division also had reserve units consisting of II/IR 915 and 2/Panzerjaeger Abtl 352 (Marders) available to reinforce IR 916 at Omaha Beach (Figure 236). Other defensive weapons are shown in Figure 237.





Figure 237: German PAK 38 gun (left, German Federal Archives) and Nebelwerfer (right, NARA)

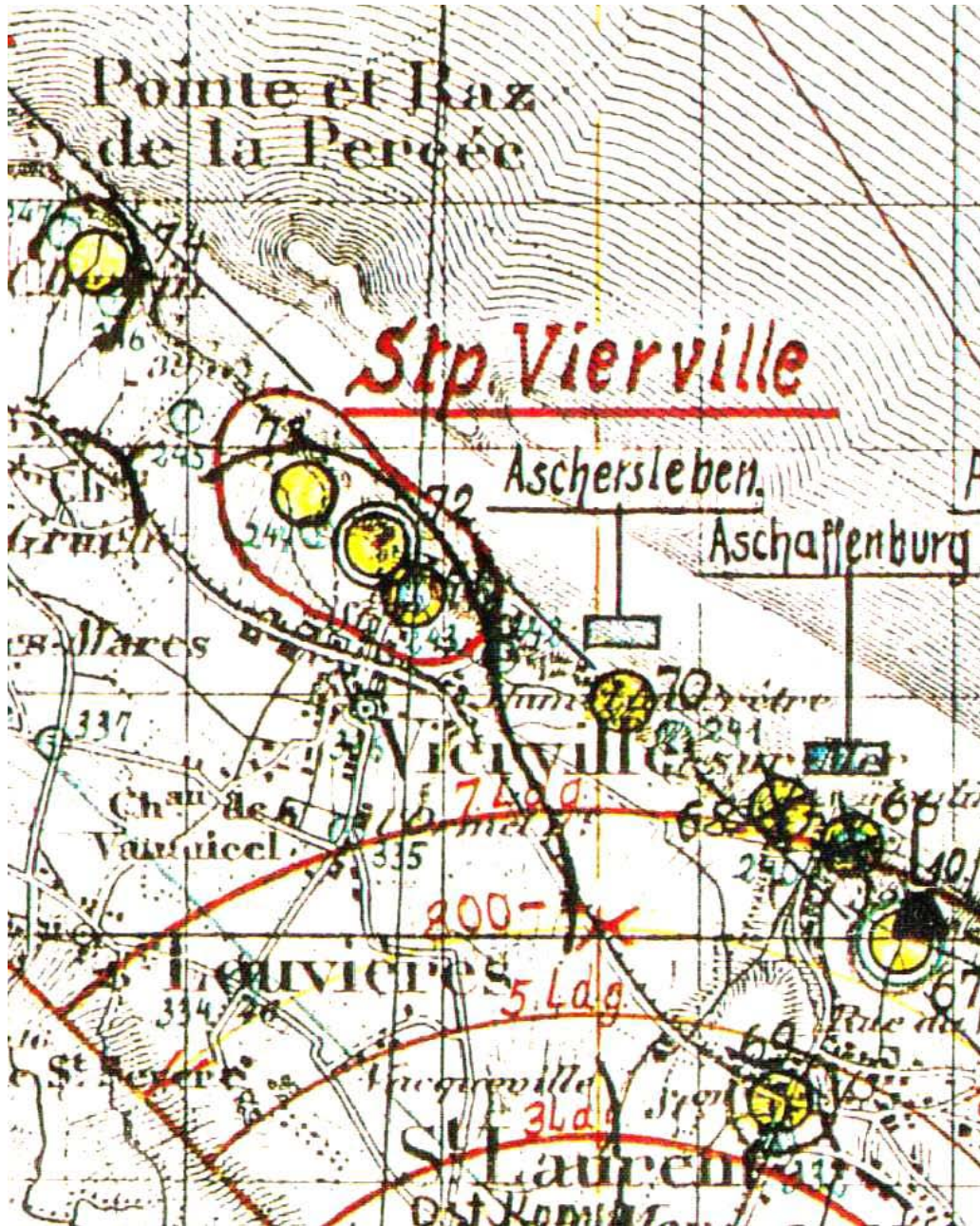


Figure 238: Portion of captured German Map showing artillery firing solutions onto Omaha Beach between Vierville Sur Mer and St Laurent (NARA)



The Germans developed methods to sight in every portion of the beach with direct and indirect fire for all locations. There is photographic evidence of firing solutions painted on walls inside the WN positions and mortar pits. The map in Figure 238, captured by the Allies demonstrates the German artillery planning. The Germans used interlocking tunnels and other means of communications to direct the attack. Unfortunately for them, their wire-based systems became easy prey for the French Resistance and Allied forces as the battle developed.

Gruchy is one kilometer to the west of Vierville. It sits at a small crossroads along the coastal highway on the way to Pointe du Hoc and is named for a manor house that sits to the south of the road (Figure 239). The Castle Gruchy, as it is known is unseen from the roadway as it is surrounded by forests and hedgerows. In 1944, this manor was owned by a family by the name of Loÿs, overseen by Madame de Loÿs and her 16 year old son Guy Loÿs. She played host to one hundred soldiers quartered at the manor. She was said to have been polite and accommodating, yet not allowing for familiarity with the men. She took in some neighbors as a result of the pre-invasion bombing from as far west as Pointe du Hoc. The Castle became a hive of activity beginning at around 4 and 5 o'clock in the morning of June 6 as reports began to come in of the Allied activities in the region. The Madame and her son went out on the terrace where they were joined by the German Company Commander.



Figure 239: Castle Gruchy family residence Loÿs and in 1944, the company PC 9/726, which defended the Breakthrough and Englesqueville (open source)

The German Army established the Command Post of the 726th Infantry Regiment, 9th Company (9/726) at the manor under the command of Captain Grünschloss (Figure 240). This particular German Captain was not considered a fanatical Nazi. He was a professor of Law in civilian life. He was a Bavarian and spoke fluent French. I have found that I respect this man in studying him. He showed himself a gentleman to Madame de Loÿs on May 25, when after an old aunt in the family died; he asked the Madame what he could do for her. After a discussion with the lady of the house, he cleared his soldiers in order for the family to have time for a dignified treatment of the deceased. He even made an appointment in his dress uniform to pay his respects to the family. On this morning, Captain Grünschloss saw to it that the French family was evacuated to an underground basement that was part of the estate. At 6:00 a.m. Madame de Loÿs overheard discussions near the German Command Center that a major enemy fleet was sighted located 8 miles out to sea. Shortly after overhearing this, the German soldiers were placed on alert at their active defensive positions. Only the German operator and nurses remained in the shelter.



Figure 240: Captain Grundschoß, killed in action on June 6, his 9th company (9/726) stopped the attacking Americans (5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion) trying to reach the Pointe du Hoc from Vierville. (German Federal Archives)

On the northern end of Vierville, the Hotel du Casino overlooked Exit D-1 and Omaha Beach. It was owned by the Piprel family and was lost to the occupation at the time. The German Wehrmacht soldiers had used the home for rest and relaxation beginning in February 1944. On June 5, 1944, an Allied bomber overflew Vierville, dropping a load of bombs along the crest of the bluff. Pierre and Fernando Piprel ventured outside at around 5:00 a.m. to see the damage and to visit a local friend, aeronautical engineer, Mr. Mary. The boys navigated through a secret path through minefields along the bluffs to get there. Mr. Mary told the boys that this bombing was nothing out of the ordinary, and they returned home just as the sun rose. Upon reaching their home, they went to their attic bedroom. Their view of the sea was unobstructed from this perch. They recorded seeing “the multitude of black dots covering the sea beyond. My word”, said Pierre, “they look like boats...” The boys then went back to the home of Mr. Mary as he owned a pair of contraband binoculars. The Germans did not allow ownership of binoculars. “Come Mr. Mary! Take your binoculars, we believe we see boats!” Mr. Mary had been skeptical, but looking out to sea from an attic window, he exclaimed “Yes! Yes! It is full of boats! It’s everywhere!” The young men noted that the armada moved closer to shore by the minute. They were perplexed as they noted the silence. They wrote: “All these vessels advancing forward, tearing the haze seems unreal. They look like ghosts.” At 6:00 a.m. the silence ended as the naval and air bombardment commenced. They reported that Vierville was hit in the first volley resulting in substantial damage. They referred to it as the shield launched by the Allies before the attack. The bombardment enveloped the coast. There were columns of smoke, punctuated by bursts of flames. They called it an “atmosphere of doom”. Homes in Vierville had walls collapse, the electricity flickered, and tiles shattered, power polls were sliced through and fell. They reported “there was no question of going outside.”

Some members of the Piprel family tried to head east from Vierville along the coastal highway to friends in Colleville. The boys took shortcuts and found themselves fired upon from fields by MG-42 positions. These were possibly the same gun positions that later fired upon the 5th Rangers the morning of June 6 upon their approach to the town from the east between 0900 and 1100. The Piprel boys retreated to Vierville ending up at the farm of Louis Le Terrier known as the Ormel Farm. The Ormel Farm is located on the road to Damigni. This route was a main north south route used by the Germans to move men and materials in order to reinforce or resupply the coastal defenses. The boys were at the farm when they later encountered their first Americans about a half hour after they had arrived. The soldier offered a pack of Lucky Strike cigarettes to the French civilians. The group of civilians remained at the farm taking cover in a stable on the grounds.<sup>9</sup> It is likely these boys were at the farm while B Company, 2nd Platoon protected the southern flank of Vierville for Colonel Canham.

For the D-Day landings, the combat experienced 1st Infantry Division had the designation as the command unit for the forces landing on Omaha Beach, particularly the western sectors. Under the 1st Infantry Division were subordinated the 29th Infantry Division (less their headquarters), the Provisional Ranger Group and other various units. The Eighth Air Force provided cover in three zones, a top cover, medium cover and low cover, consisting of heavy and medium bombers and attack aircraft, with fighter support. Soldiers in transit reported the airborne cover as something they had never imagined, with aircraft three deep, and from horizon to horizon. There are reports that the



uppermost and lowermost planes were inbound, while the middle aircraft were outbound craft that had accomplished their missions.

Regarding the cross channel voyage, the men of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion aboard the HMS *Prince Leopold* (Figure 241) had supreme confidence in their British hosts. S/SGT Gail Hamilton Belmont, of the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion, A Company wrote:

“My Company, “Able Company” was on board the HMS *Leopold*, a Belgium Cross Chanel/Ship which had been pressed into service by the British Navy. This ship had taken part in several previous invasions to include N. Africa, Sicily, Salamo and Anzio; therefore, her British crew were veterans. We always felt that being assigned to this ship and crew that the higher command wanted to leave no doubt in anyone’s mind that we would be landed exactly where we were suppose to be on D-Day. We had worked with this ship and crew several times in the past and we were one big happy family. ESPRIT DE CORP... was high and we had confidence that if anyone could do the job, this outfit could.”<sup>10</sup>

In a biography about his father, James F. Schneider, the son of Lt. Colonel Schneider wrote that the *Prince Leopold* “had a special place in Schneider’s heart”. This ship and her crew had delivered Schneider to the assault beaches of Gela, Sicily and then on Maiori, Salerno, Italy. The Colonel “had gone out of his way to be assigned to travel with them once again when bound for Normandy.” (Schneider, *My Father’s War*) PFC Ching echoed that sentiment even today concerning the skill of the Royal Navy. “Because the *Prince Leopold* was a British, there’s three of them, on our landing craft. It was run by the British, His Majesty’s Service, HMS. These landing craft got experience. They were in the Mediterranean, Sicily landings, Sicily, for the Ranger, also Italy mainland, Anzio beachhead, they use the same landing craft, so they are fairly familiar with the US Ranger.”<sup>11</sup>

PFC Carl F. Weast served in B Company, 2nd Platoon as the company messenger with his friends S/Sgt Hull, PFC Ching and S/Sgt Copeland. He spoke of the cross channel trip being like a ferry boat ride. He wrote of the boarding and waiting while aboard their LSI.

“We went aboard our transport ship on June 1st. For 5 days we had nothing to do except gab and speculate on our immediate future. Two 1 hour periods each day were spent exercising and of course we had ample literature and maps available to review the whole invasion plan. This long period of idleness and confinement resulted in many rumors. The one I recall especially was this, all troops in the initial landings were green troops, the landing schedule showed “H” hour. On the basis of this fact it was said that the big brass expected 80% or more casualties during the first part of the landings. Naturally it figured they wanted to save the good outfits and were sending the green boys in to take the beating. Most rumors were of that type, bad.”<sup>12</sup>

In his 1958 questionnaire, Cornelius Ryan had asked the veterans “What were the rumors on board the boat, ship or plane in which you made the crossing?” The Rangers either remained silent on this, or offered rumors that were not seen as credible by the men at the time. To me this was a hallmark of well-trained, well disciplined soldiers. T/5 Dan D. Schopp, F Company responded that he didn’t “remember on the boat but after we landed the main type of conversation was snipers.”<sup>13</sup> 1st Lt Jack A. Snyder, C Company wrote: “There were no rumors aboard ship. Every one of our men knew exactly what was expected of him and had been given every bit of enemy information that was available. Everyone was briefed daily on the latest intelligence.”<sup>14</sup> Sgt John Joseph Perry, A Company, Section Leader, offered: “We heard nothing in reference to the Germans pouring gasoline on the water, the only thing we heard was that there were two divisions of Germans on the beach instead of one battalion, which was predicted. We all talked about who would get hit first, every time we had an attack to go on.”<sup>15</sup> S/Sgt Hamilton summed up the Ranger attitude: “Our outfit didn’t go into much for rumors. It was the policy of the Battalion to keep everybody informed and abreast of the situation at all times. We did feel there was the possibility of the Germans employing gas or other chemical agents. The fact that we were issued a new type of assault-gas masks plus we had to wear impregnated clothing when we hit the beach only added to our belief.”<sup>16</sup> S/SGT Emil Nelson, Jr, F Company wrote: “We heard the Germans had over 200 subs in the channel and many E boats. So we were told to sleep dressed and ready to check out fast.”<sup>17</sup> These were professionals not apparently given to unsubstantiated fear. Copeland told me Captain Whittington asked him to go a few rounds of boxing while on the HMS *Leopold* on the channel run to

Normandy on June 5-6. JR declined Whittington's request, smiled at me as he said it, and said that he wanted to be able to "see" the Germans on the beach.

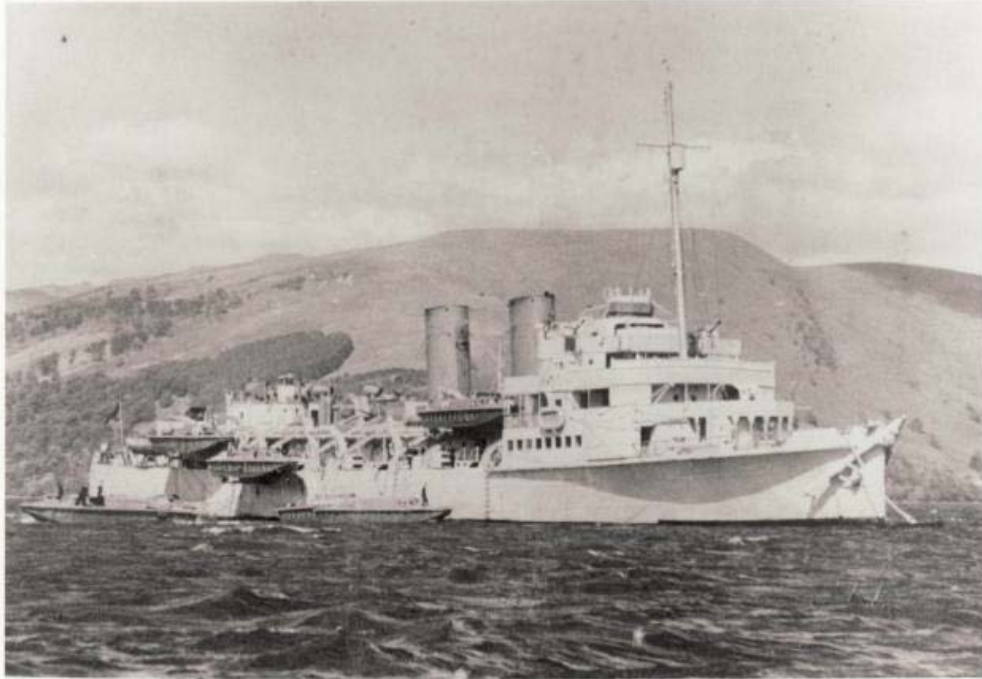


Figure 241: HMS *Prince Leopold* in the Mediterranean (IWM)

A briefing held by the leadership of the 29th Infantry Division on the afternoon of June 5 was recorded by Lt Jack Shea, aide to General Norman Cota. It is included as a report of combat interviews from the Cornelius Ryan Collection. It shows the measure of the leadership and foresight of General Cota, who would shine through as a brilliant example of a highly effective combat leader on the following day. It is uncanny how accurate the predictions of the General were.

The last meeting of this staff was held in the officer's aft wardroom of the *Carroll* on the fifth of June, 1944, at 1400 hours. Every member of the staff realized that this was the final review of the plans. The hushed problems of several months were covered for the last time. Questions were asked. Finally General Cota addressed the little group with some remarks that he had been saving for just this moment. He had withheld them until that time in order to emphasize their critical nature. True they had been pointed out singly in other discussions of their plans and in the Slapton exercises. But these were the factors in essence, factors that had to be remembered, they were quite vital. "This is different from any of the other exercises that you have had so far," said Cota as he began a final address to the staff. "The little discrepancies that we tried to correct on Slapton Sands are going to be magnified and are going to give way to instances that you might at first view as chaotic. The air and naval bombardment and the artillery support are reassuring but you're going to find confusion. The landing craft aren't going in on schedule and people aren't going ... are going to be landed in the wrong places. Some won't be landed at all. The enemy will try and will have some success in preventing our gaining a lodgment. But we must improvise, carry on, and not lose our heads, nor must we add to the confusion".<sup>18</sup>

LTC Max Schneider, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion Commander and many of the other Rangers under his command aboard the HMS *Prince Leopold* and HMS *Prince Baudouin* reported the channel crossing on the night of June 5 into the morning of June 6 as "very rough" with many soldiers becoming seasick. Many of the officers aboard passed the time playing card games like poker and checking on their troops and equipment. Some officers, like 1st Lieutenant Jack A. Snyder of C Company recalled playing darts, ping-pong and cards with British officers. He said "the next four days were spent keeping in top physical condition and making last minute checks on equipment and reviewing plans of attack." Lt. Colonel Schneider allowed his men to go topside and not be confined below decks to

improve morale as a result of his earlier experience.<sup>18</sup>

The enlisted men prepared equipment and performed other duties as assigned, relaxed, and were given final briefings and training during the voyage. T/5 Schopp wrote: “Had a flyover of friendly fighters for identification class. Also a flyover of a captured ME 109 and FW 190. An amphibious jeep for use of a British staff officer was accidentally sunk while trying to load. Shot the bull with British sailors and members of a Joint Army/Navy “FOO” (Forward Observation) Party who had done this stuff before.”<sup>19</sup> PFC Weast recalled a conversation with a fellow Ranger: “Prior to loading into the LCA’s from the transport I was talking to Elmo Banning. Before we left from Ft. Dix for England, Elmo had gone AWOL to see his girlfriend back in Missouri; the MP’s got him before he had a chance to get there and returned him to us at Fort Dix. He told me that he wished he would have made it home before the MP’s got him, because he felt he wouldn’t see her again.”<sup>12</sup> S/SGT Nelson wrote: “In our case we were preparing explosives on the fantail of an English manned ship, it seemed we were in a terrific state of suspense, and we all signed each other’s French occupation notes, and slept as such.”<sup>15</sup> Sgt Perry also discussed preparing explosives for use in barbed wire and pillbox demolitions.<sup>20</sup> S/SGT Burton Eugene Ranney, Company F, wrote: “We were kept pretty well informed of information available about D-Day and the enemy. We were told it was no picnic and that no one would be able to go back for at least 3 days. Everything would be going in and keep going in to make room for more to come. We were briefed very completely up to the last, from air photos, on obstacles, pillboxes and enemy troops. Our morale was very high!” Earlier in his interview he indicated that there had been a church service he attended.<sup>21</sup> SSG Chance recorded that “those of us who were Catholic attended mass offered by Father Lacy, our Chaplain. In his sermon he told of Saint Theresa, who was born in France – We were about to do battle in her land, and her symbol was the rose... Approximately D plus 3 or 4... It was strange to be greeted by Frenchmen in small villages, however very heart warming for one of the first girls to greet me, about ten years old presented me with Roses. I knew then that Saint Theresa was on our side.”<sup>22</sup> Father Lacy repeated these services aboard each of the Ranger LSIs.

After the war, PFC Weast recorded an oral interview as part of the Peter Kalikow World War II Collection of the National D-Day Museum Foundation, Inc. He noted that the Rangers boarded the HMS Leopold five days before the invasion and waited out the poor weather aboard ship. He noted that the passing of time was rather boring, “double timing around the decks, and whatnot, trying to keep in shape.” He wrote that there were not showers aboard ship, so the men really got to stinking. This was compounded by the waxy chemical water repellent impregnated into the uniforms and equipment of the men. The men wore standard issue fatigues. The Army went “knife-happy” he said. The Rangers had their standard trench knife, the Ranger daggers presented by the British Commandos, bayonets, and switchblade pocket knives made available. They had their “May West” life preservers, gas masks, load carrying equipment, all the ammunition that they desired beyond the basic load. Weast reported carrying one belt and two bandoliers of rifle ammunition amounting to 20 clips of 8 rounds each. He opted for more, so he carried a total of 4 bandoliers of ammo, plus what he stuffed in his belt. He was armed with an M-1 Rifle. He carried 4 rifle grenades, with two being high explosive types and two white phosphorous types. He packed one block of the nitrostarch explosives he trained with at USATC, along with two fuse assemblies with igniters attached. They used condoms to protect small items from the surf. Lastly, Weast was assigned to carry a spare 81mm High Explosive (HE) mortar round. He attended religious services with Father Lacy. He then recalled the last meal aboard ship consisting of fried eggs and fresh steak.<sup>23</sup>

PFC Randall Ching recalled and summed up his view of their mission in our interview. “Well, actually, the mission, the Rangers primary mission was to eliminate the Pointe, the guns on Pointe du Hoc. That’s the Ranger battalions, the 2nd and the 5th. That’s our main primary objective on D-Day. What happened is, well, what happened during D-Day, and we left our transport in our little assault boat and head toward the Pointe. The 2nd Ranger Battalion landed three companies at the Pointe and try to scale the cliff. The 100 foot cliff. That’s where the guns are situated there. The six, coastal battery, the guns up there... Yeah, that’s 155 mm guns. Their range is 10 miles, so they could play havoc with the invasion fleet out to sea. Left side is American beach, Utah. Right side is Omaha Beach. They also play hell. The two Ranger battalions expendable. Their mission is to get those guns regardless of loss.”

On November 11, 1944, Lt. Colonel Charles H. Taylor, U.S. Army Historical Section Headquarters, European Theater of Operations sent a report to Colonel James Rudder detailing the events surrounding D-Day pertaining to the Rangers compiled from reports and first hand accounts commonly referred to as *War Department Notes*, Volumes 1



and 2. Taylor recorded “To neutralize this battery (Pointe du Hoc) was one of the main concerns of the Neptune planners. It was bombed on 25 April, when construction of further casemates was under way. Severe damage to 2 emplacements and to supporting installations was reported from aerial photographs.”<sup>24</sup> Elsewhere, Taylor went on to state that the PRGs mission was to guarantee the Pointe du Hoc guns were neutralized. Plan Neptune included a component for a direct assault on the position from seaward. This mission was identified as one of the most difficult in the operation. The PRG operated under the command of the 116<sup>th</sup> Infantry known for the assault as the 116<sup>th</sup> Regimental Combat Team (116<sup>th</sup> RCT) as part of the 29<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division. The 116<sup>th</sup> RCT was then assigned to the 1<sup>st</sup> Infantry for the purposes of the assault only, reverting back to control of the 29<sup>th</sup> after the landings. The 116<sup>th</sup> RCT was tasked with landing on western Omaha Beach and then to drive west along the coast toward Grandcamp and Isigny where the Maisy Battery was located. All German defenses along the way were to be eliminated in development of the beachhead.

The PRG was to spearhead the drive and to provide cover for the larger invasion elements of the 116<sup>th</sup> RCT. Force A, consisting of the 2<sup>nd</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, Companies D, E, F, and half of HQ were set to assault Pointe du Hoc at H-hour under the direct command of Colonel Rudder. This after one of his subordinates was relieved of command of this element on the cross channel voyage. Force B consisted of the 2<sup>nd</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, Company C. They were assigned to make their assault west of Vierville and destroy the German positions and radar station at Pointe et Raz de la Percée regardless of the missions of Force A and Force C. Lt. Colonel Schneider, with his 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, and Companies A and B of the 2<sup>nd</sup> Rangers made up Force C. They were to wait until H+30 for word of the success or failure of Force A. If Rudder was successful, Force C was to follow them up the cliffs at Pointe du Hoc and engage the Germans in support of the 116<sup>th</sup> RCT in taking their objectives to the Grandcamp-Maisy-Isigny area. If Rudder was unsuccessful, Force C was to land on the western portion of Omaha Beach at H+60 alongside the 116<sup>th</sup> RCT in front of Vierville, and assault westward overland to relieve Force A. According to Taylor, these orders were spelled out in:

- Field Order (FO) #1, Headquarters Ranger Group,
- Appendix 1, to S-2 Estimate, 18 May 1944, and
- Annex 12 Army Neptune, and
- Operational Report, No. 38, Hq 9<sup>th</sup> Air Force
- the FO of the two Ranger battalions<sup>24</sup>



Figure 242: Photo of type of 155 mm guns similar to those identified at Pointe du Hoc

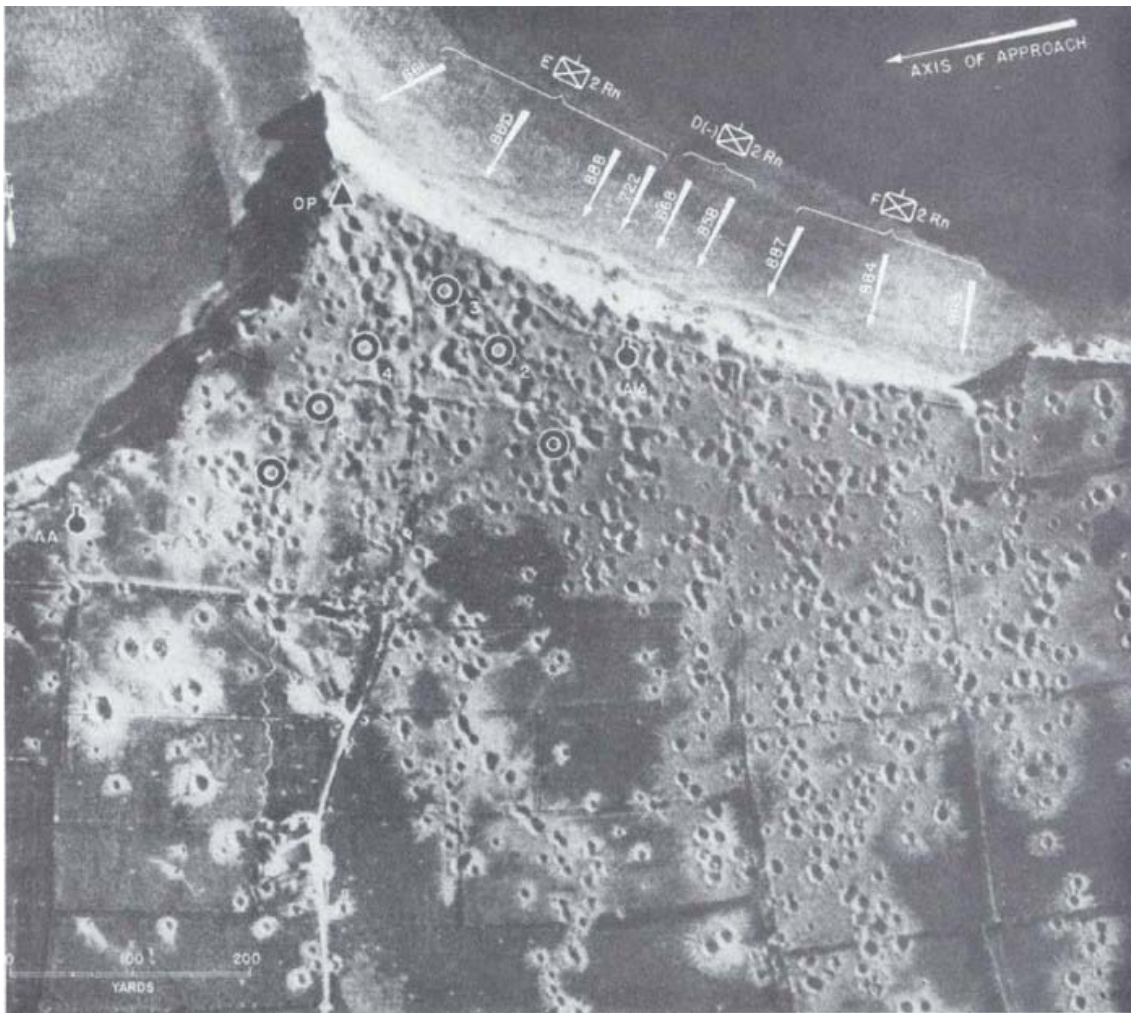


Figure 243: Aerial photo of Pointe du Hoc revealing extent of bombing and bombardment leading up to and including D-Day. (NARA)

According to a portion of the BIGOT plan for Operation NEPTUNE for D-Day, the Ranger Mission officially consisted of six parts:

1. Reconnoiter enemy positions at POINTE ET RAZ DE LA PERCEE and at the Radar Station, and report strength and location enemy encountered, condition of defenses and enemy movements vicinity of ST PIERRE DU MONT.
2. Reconnoiter new battery position on POINTE DU HOE. Report condition of battery, strength and location enemy encountered, and prepared enemy defenses.
3. Reconnoiter new battery position east of POINTE DU HOE at MGRS 598934 and report type and condition of artillery, if present, and strength and location enemy encountered.
4. Observe ST PIERRE DU MONT and road to GRANDCAMP and report strength and location enemy encountered and prepared enemy defenses.
5. Reconnoiter ST PIERRE-GRANDCAMP road and report condition of road through flooded area, prepared enemy defenses covering road and prepared enemy defenses and enemy movements in GRANDCAMP.
6. Reconnoiter GRANDCAMP-MAISY areas and report strength location of enemy encountered, condition of defenses in GRANDCAMP and of the battery positions southwest of MAISY, and enemy movements along the road ISIGNY-MAISY.

A reader of this should not be lulled into a sense of any conspiracy, or that the Rangers' mission was a wasted effort because the guns at Pointe du Hoc were not in their emplacements on the cliff. They were there. They had been moved slightly to the south unknown to the Rangers at the time. These 155 mm guns were capable of firing to

devastating effect at Allied forces. Figures 242 and 243 illustrate the Pointe du Hoc objective and the type of gun there. The battery at Grandcamp-Maisy was equally dangerous, and the Rangers were likewise charged with taking it on. Both German batteries were spaced to inflict carnage in their respective zones of interlocking fire with the weapons on hand. The Rangers were charged with killing the enemy and destroying vital weapons at both locations.

The officers of the Rangers were briefed at the last minute that an additional German Divisional Unit (German 352nd Infantry Division) was expected at Omaha Beach. Regarding the last day aboard the LSI, S/Sgt Chance wrote: "Rather uneventful, most everyone was rechecking equipment, guns, ammo, gas masks, etc. At this point there was some anticipation of what may lay ahead, for we had trained hard for a definite mission, yet the enemy was still distant and the war not yet a personal affair." He went on to say: "We were briefed thoroughly on our mission and what intelligence had found. I recall a division (German) was conducting exercises in our area. This would increase the size and reduce the time of counterattack. This worried most of us."<sup>22</sup> Ranger John Carlin Hodgson, Company F wrote: "We practiced getting on our equipment and into the LCAs for three days. We had to be letter-perfect because none of us knew just when THAT time would come. Every man in the outfit knew what our mission was and we were told it over and over."<sup>24</sup> Another Ranger spoke of this time as being full of suspense and anticipation. S/Sgt Belmont indicated: "Most of the time aboard ship was spent cleaning our weapons, studying air photos of the beach we were going to land on, rehearsing in our minds how we were going to accomplish our assigned mission. There was conversation such as which Company of the Battalion would get across the beach first, who's platoon would reach their objective first, how far inland would we be at the end of D-Day, etc. We were highly trained and probably didn't realize what combat would be like."<sup>10</sup>

General Raaen wrote in his book *Intact* that after 0200 hours on the morning of June 6, you could begin to see the "dull red glow" and hear the "rumbling of bombs" on the Normandy coast.<sup>26</sup> Captain Runge indicated: "On the deck of a small Channel Liner the "*Prince Baudouin*" with 200 Rangers watching a sight which looked like the sun on the horizon in the night. It was the Air Forces dropping 1200 tons of bombs on Pointe du Hoc."<sup>27</sup> S/Sgt Donald L. Chance remembered watching and listening to the bombing of the French coast from ten miles out to sea aboard the deck of his LSI, the HMS *Prince Baudouin*. 1st Sgt Avery J Thornhill, B Company indicated he missed out on some of the overnight activities and wrote: "I took an overdose of sea sick pills and slept until about 0300 hours 6 June, on awaking the firing had begun and no one was allowed on deck of the ship due to fragments from the anti air craft ##### fire falling on deck."<sup>28</sup> PFC Weast wrote: "On board the transport previous to boarding the craft, things were quiet, the last visit by the chaplain, preoccupied soldiers, little talk – lots of thinking. We had fried fresh eggs for breakfast at 0330, few ate."<sup>12</sup> Other Rangers reported being served pancakes. Many of the vessels had barrage balloons tethered to them to ward off would be attackers.

At about 0400 hours, the loudspeakers aboard the HMS *Prince Leopold* called out "U.S. Rangers to your station." The men geared up, headed for the deck to their station where they were to board their assault section LCA, got into their assigned boats and were lowered to the English Channel. S/Sgt Ranney wrote of this moment: "That was my most memorable moment because we were ready to go, and I don't think anyone would have backed out if he'd had a chance to."<sup>21</sup> Ranger Hodgson wrote: "The morning of June 6, was just as bad as the morning of June 5 had been but the order came through to get equipment and into assigned boats. We were given food and ammunition for 24 hours only. We were also issued a Mae West (life jacket) and a puke bag. Men were very seasick but so many things happening you didn't seem to notice or think much about it. As far as the eye could see, anything that could float was heading for the French coast; planes overhead and destroyers firing on the beach. Nothing much in the way of conversation unless we saw a plane get hit."<sup>25</sup> 1st Sgt Thornhill wrote: "The water was very rough and we had a hard time launching our little LCA, as we were placed in the LCA's prior to the boats being launched and when we would be halfway to the water a wave would pick up the LCA and almost put it back on the mother ship, then the wave would recede leaving us hanging in the air. When the LCA returned to the length of the cables we got quite a jar. My company didn't lose a man in the launching or in the trip to the beach. Those British coxswains really knew their job."<sup>28</sup>

Just before he was to climb aboard his LCA, Captain Whittington paid S/Sgt Copeland a visit, where he instructed him "make damn sure every soldier gets off the boat or leave them there," and he grimaced with a solemn stare. Captain Whittington instructed JR to be the last one off of his LCA to accomplish this mission, and the Captain went to shore aboard the other B Company LCA carrying 1st Platoon. JR recounted this story to his biographer, and later on to me personally during our visit. He said he knew exactly what Whittington meant. JR and the 2nd Platoon of B



Company embarked from the port side of the HMS *Prince Leopold* onto their assigned LCA. Based on review of the records of the 504th Flotilla assigned to the HMS *Prince Leopold*, I strongly believe that B Company was assigned to LCAs 550 and 568. The US military landing tables indicated that B Company was assigned Landing Table Index n° 1162 and 1163. I have not been able to find a correlative list between the British Flotilla records provided to General Raaen after the war and the landing table data. The possible identification of the two British LCAs is a collaborative effort that warrants additional study. The HMS *Prince Leopold* transported Assault Flotilla 504 consisting of LCAs 550, 568, 570, 572, 622, 623, 1045 carrying the 5th Ranger companies B, A, E and half of HQ. The HMS *Prince Baudouin* transported Assault Flotilla 507, consisting of LCAs 521, 554, 577, 578, 670 863 and 1377, carrying Companies D, F, C, and half of HQ. General Raaen sent me an email in October, 2012 that stated: "Taylor's Notes say, "the first wave, 7 boats had B, A & E in two craft each, with a headquarters craft in the middle of A; the second wave . . .". Ergo, B's boats were either the first two or last two Index Numbers of the wave. My guess since everything else was left to right, that B's boats were the first two Index Numbers." It is possible that today no surviving LCAs exist in a historical preservation context, which is a shame. It is also possible that no official records exist listing what units were assigned to specific landing craft for the whole of the invasion.

Carl West looked at his watch and recalled it was 0430 when he and his fellow B Company members boarded their LCAs. The Rangers merely stepped from deck to LCA. The *Leopold* swung it's davits and lowered the men into the Channel (Figure 244). The water was very rough. As the LCAs were lowered, the smaller craft would make contact with a wave and float. Then the water would fall away and the craft would react wildly as the ropes suspending them tightened against the effect of gravity in what appeared to be a harrowing experience for the riders. After the LCA was sufficiently lowered, the experienced British coxswains cut loose the craft allowing it to fall into the sea below. As the craft left the LSI, they travelled out and away from the vessels and took up pre-determined circular patterns in marshalling areas awaiting word for the run-in to shore (Figure 245).



Figure 244: An LCA leaving the LSI HMS *Rocksand* for the island of Nancowry, on the Nicobar Islands, October 1945. Other LCAs are suspended on davits waiting to be loaded before being lowered.

As the LCA flotilla pulled away from the HMS *Prince Leopold*, 2nd Lt. Francis Dawson, D Company, recalled hearing "Good Hunting, Rangers!" announced over the PA system of the ship.<sup>29</sup> S/Sgt Copeland noted that the puking began almost immediately after being set to sea aboard the LCA as the little craft heaved back and forth in the choppy seas. Each LCA had a small pump to extricate water entering the craft. Copeland told his biographer Gary M. Graves "they were useless. The pump hose was no bigger than my thumb... too little to move any quantity of

water let alone puke. You couldn't pump it fast enough to do any good." Finally, out of necessity the soldiers used their helmets to scoop the liquid out of the boat; it was a never ending task."<sup>30</sup> PFC Weast wrote: "As we were getting into the LCA's they gave us waterproof Kraft paper bags to vomit into in case we got sea sick. I used mine to help bail the water out of the boat. The small British LCA's were heavily loaded, the channel rough and plenty of water was coming in over the sides. We took turns working the hand operated bilge pump, bailed with the bags and helmets barely managing to keep afloat. I recall one of the boys suggesting an interesting place where the king might stick the royal navy. However he and the others changed their attitude later when these British sailors got us through the beach obstacles to a dry touch down."<sup>12</sup>

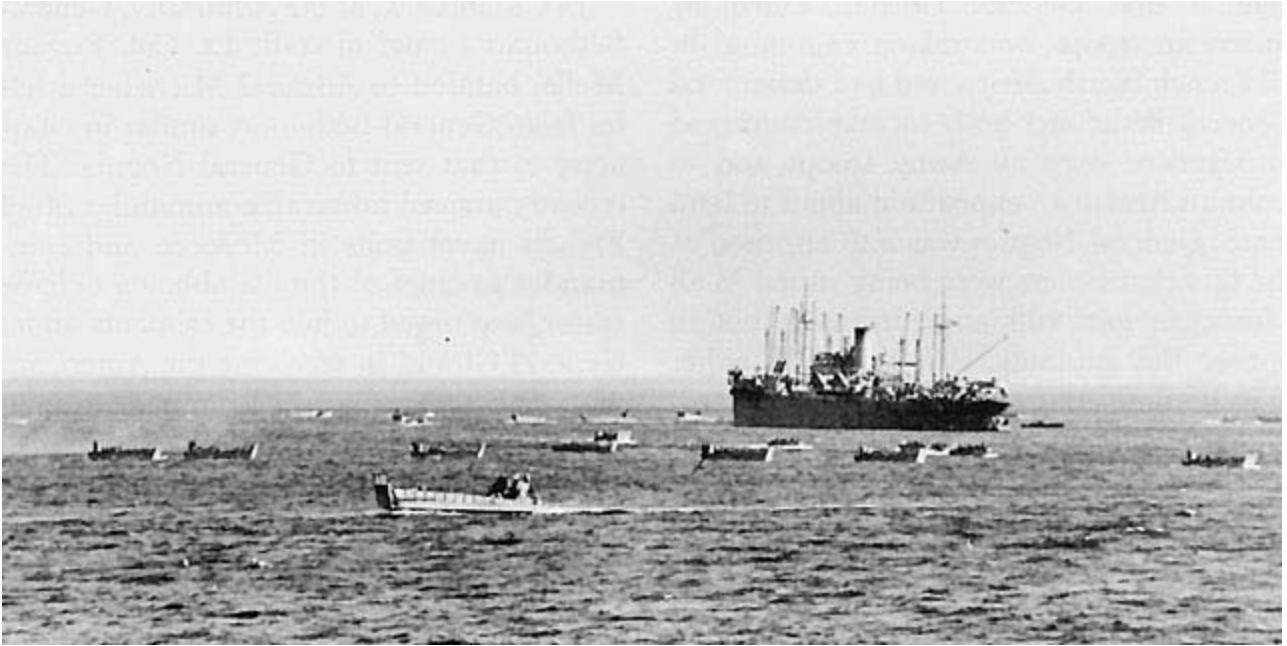


Figure 245: Landing craft marshalling near transport vessel awaiting orders to go ashore. In Mediterranean on November 8, 1942 (NARA)

1st Lieutenant Pepper, normally the 1st Platoon Leader reportedly accompanied 2nd Platoon to shore. It is possible this was done to offset the lack of experience of 2nd Lieutenant Mathew Gregory, the new 2nd Platoon Leader with less than two months experience in his role. It is also possible and more likely to me that since Whittington went ashore with 1st Platoon, Pepper travelled with 2nd Platoon as he was the Company Executive Officer (XO). Splitting Whittington and Pepper apart would be a measure used to ensure survivability of the chain of command for the company. The twilight of the break of dawn occurred at 0440 hours nautical time. General Raaen recorded the initiation of the massive shore bombardment let loose. "Suddenly there was a tremendous crash, roar, blast. Sully and I jumped up, but the Petty Officer calmly said, "Sirs, that is the Battleship *Texas* opening the bombardment of the coast." The time was 0550, forty minutes before H-Hour...<sup>31</sup> Omaha Beachhead reported the US Naval Forces in the bombardment were 2 Battleships, 3 Cruisers, 8 Destroyers, as well as numerous other landing craft with one type or another artillery aboard in all directions opened fire with hellacious noise and concussion."<sup>31</sup> The mighty U.S.S. *Texas* is shown in Figures 246 and 247.

All the men of the invasion could see the blasts from the muzzles of the guns of the naval fleet. They could feel the blast waves speed across the water beneath them and through the air around them as shells of every size ripped across the sky to their waiting targets. The men could time the shells from the muzzle flash until the flash of the blasts ashore just over the horizon as they were still some eight miles from shore and just beyond horizon due to the curve of the earth.

Photo # NH 2792 USS Texas firing her main battery in practice, 1928

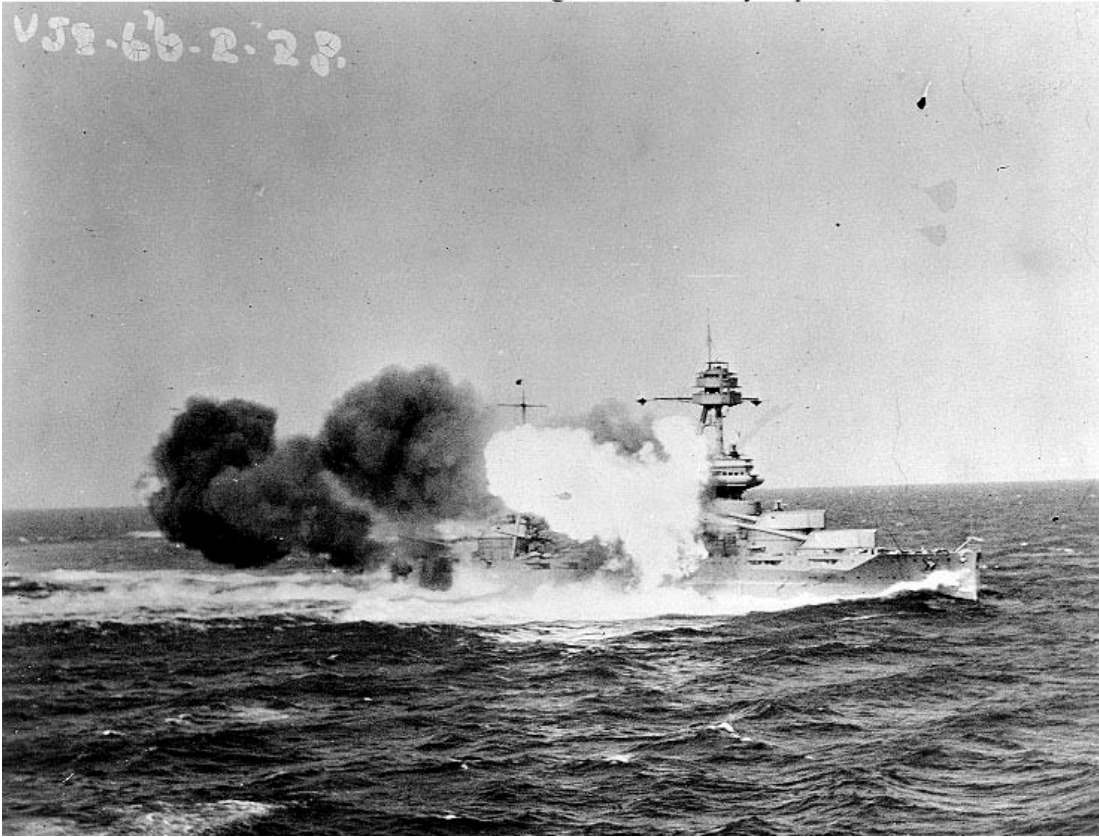


Figure 246: Photo of U.S.S. *Texas*, BB-35 firing batteries (NARA)

Photo # 80-G-K-387 USS Texas seen against the setting sun, during Atlantic convoy operations, 1941



Figure 247: U.S.S. *Texas*, BB-35 (NARA)

The crimson sunrise discussed at the beginning of the chapter occurred while the Rangers were in transit heading to shore at 0558 hours. Their primary mission at this time was to be the follow-up assault force to land at Pointe du Hoc and to destroy the six known 155 mm guns that threatened both Omaha and Utah Beaches.

PFC Ching shared with me in an interview that S/Sgt Hull was a really nice NCO, but his countenance changed



every time the men entered a combat situation. This was the case on D-Day. Ching told me, "Yeah, until he get serious, all S/Sgt Hull would say is "ALL RIGHT GUYS, GET THE LEAD OUT!" Then he would say "EARN YOUR PAY!" PFC Ching and S/Sgt Copeland echoed the same sentiment that S/Sgt Hull was a dedicated and good soldier who took care of his men.

Ranger Task Force B, consisting of 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion, C Company approached and landed on the far right (west) end of Omaha Beach in Charlie Sector to the west of WN 72 located at Beach Exit D-1. They landed at 0645, nine minutes after the 116th Infantry Regimental Combat Team, Company A, where these Rangers suffered 19 KIA, 13 Severely Wounded in Action (SWA) and five Lightly Wounded in Action (LWA) of their original 68 men. This was the scene depicted in *Saving Private Ryan*. Colonel Rudder and Companies D, E and F and the other associated warriors in Task Force A landed at the base of Pointe du Hoc at between 0705 and 0708 when their scheduled landing time had been at 0630. This happened due to a navigational error of their flotilla.<sup>33</sup> According to Hatfield, the Army Air Corps had been late in a flight of bombers to strike Pointe du Hoc, actually bombing it at 0645. The delay saved Task Force A from being bombed by friendly fire. Task Force C, consisting of the entire 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion and the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion, Companies A and B, waited one-half hour behind Task Force A offshore between Omaha Beach and Pointe du Hoc waiting for one of two radio messages from Task A at 0700. If Task Force B heard "Praise the Lord," they were to follow in and assault the Pointe. If they heard the message "Tilt," then they were to assume the assault a failure, or not secure enough to follow behind Task Force A. This would trigger landing at the secondary objective first practiced at Slapton Sands, of landing on Omaha Beach and protecting the flank of the 29th Infantry Division. They then were to turn right (west) to relieve the Rangers at Pointe du Hoc. The designated Landing location was to be Dog Green at Exit D-1. Task Force B waited off the shore until 0710 until Lt Colonel Schneider ordered his flotilla to Omaha Beach after receiving no clear radio message.<sup>34</sup> Important at this point was that the tide was fast coming in and currents were now running strong to the east.

Another very important element of success to the overall assault on Omaha Beach was the arrival and leadership on one highly competent and skillful leader. His name was Brigadier General Norman Daniel "Dutch" Cota, Sr, Assistant Division Commander of the 29th Infantry Division (Figure 248).



Figure 248: Brigadier General Norman Daniel "Dutch" Cota, Sr (US Army photo)

He was integral to the planning of the operation, and has been mentioned previously in the book. He landed on the beach at 0730, arriving at Dog White amongst the 116th Regimental Combat Team (RCT), C Company. This was approximately 900 yards east of Exit D-1 and just to the left of where the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion would land ten to fifteen minutes later. He arrived aboard LCVP 71 with the main command group of the 116th RCT including Colonel Charles D.W. Canham, Commander of the 116th RCT. Their LCVP struck an obstacle and dislodged the teller mine attached to it. The mine did not explode. Omaha Beachhead reported "From the standpoint of influencing further operations, they could not have hit a better point in the 116th zone. To their right and left, Company C and some 2d Battalion elements were crowded against the embankment on a front of a few hundred yards, the main Ranger force was about to come into the same area, and enemy fire from the bluffs just ahead was masked by smoke and ineffective. The command group was well located to play a major role in the next phase of action." General Cota and Colonel Canham set about the task of getting men moving off of the beach and up the

bluffs. The first unit they motivated included elements of the 116th RCT, C Company. Cota set out moving up and down the beach waving his Colt 45 urging men on. By all accounts, he was instrumental in leading the assault. He did so by example.

An account of another Ranger caught my attention to help describe the emotions of the moments on Omaha Beach. Robert Edlin, 2nd Rangers, who landed on Dog Green in front of the D-1 exit wrote:

“We had been trained for years not to go off the front of the ramp, because the boat might get rocked by a wave and run over you. So we went off the sides... It was cold, miserably cold, even though it was June. The water temperature was probably forty-five or fifty degrees. It was up to my shoulders when I went in, and I saw men sinking all about me. I tried to grab a couple, but my job was to get on in and get to the guns. There were bodies from the 116th floating everywhere. They were facedown in the water with packs still on their backs. They had inflated their life jackets. Fortunately, most of the Rangers did not inflate theirs or they also might have turned over and drowned... I continued across the beach. There were mines and obstacles all up and down the beach. The air corps had missed it entirely. There were no shell holes in which to take cover. The mines had not been detonated. Absolutely nothing that had been planned for that part of the beach had worked. I knew that Vierville-sur-Mer was going to be a hellhole, and it was... When I was about twenty yards from the seaway I was hit by what I assume was a sniper bullet. It shattered and broke my right leg... As I moved forward, I hobbled. After you've been hit by gunfire, your legs stiffen up, not all at once but slowly. The pain was indescribable. I fell to my hands and knees and tried to crawl forwards. I managed a few yards, then blacked out for several minutes.”<sup>35</sup>

As Task Force C made their approach to Dog Green, Schneider witnessed the absolute carnage being inflicted upon the men of Task Force B and others making landings in the face of Exit D-1. His experience as a battle tested officer and leader kicked in and he ordered a turn to port of the flotilla. Lt. Colonel Schneider was reported to have said “I’m not going to waste my battalion on that beach!”<sup>34</sup> as he made his decision to shift to the east. Many of the accounts of the 5th Rangers and those who have written about them talk about the chaos of the plan, how it fell apart. Copeland told his biographer “Most things that day went wrong for us.”<sup>30</sup> Task Force C was running to shore at Dog Green a mere 1000 yards behind Task Force B.

All of the senses of the soldiers were put to the ultimate extreme of human endurance as the men landed on the beaches. The sights of the dead, dismembered and the dying were enough by themselves to put the most ardent warrior into a state of shock. The visuals of the fires, explosions and other results of warfare filled the eyes of the men as far as they could see in every direction.

Next to assault the senses was the tremendous and deafening sound of battle. The descriptions of the sounds were nothing short of amazing. From the rear of the advancing troops came the crescendo of naval gunfire of all sorts. The concussive blasts of the battleships and cruisers in particular created tremendous shockwaves the men could feel in their bones. There was an unmistakable sound of the naval shells as they whined overhead. Closer in the destroyers with their higher velocity and rate of fire armaments could be heard whizzing overhead. The sound of rockets both allied and German produced a high-pitched whistling sound. Next, add to this sound mix of high velocity bullets whizzing past or hitting objects or people. Then add the report and explosions from artillery hitting all around the beach. Add the mechanical sounds of the vessels themselves, and the sounds of all sorts associated with that. The sound of the aircraft overhead layered three deep and for as far as the eye could see produced a unique sound. The men experienced the sound of the sea itself, usually soothing to a human being, but in this instance, filled with dread, anticipation or whatever other emotion associated with it by the individual soldier as they came ever nearer to the shore. Then there were the sounds of men screaming orders, dying or any other manner of human sound.

The sense of touch was assaulted by the chill of the cold 50 degree water of the English Channel. The anticipation lead to the sense of touch being thrown completely off to the men landing as the sensation of legs being numb was a common report amongst landing soldiers. There were other assaults to this sense that varied from person to person dependent upon their own specific micro-scale experiences.

The smell of the battlefield is described as something that resides nowhere else on earth. This is yet but another assault on the senses of the men who landed on the beach during the assault. The odors were a result of gun powder, knowable to anyone who has fired a weapon. It permeates your nose and deep nasal passages and the back of your throat with a sort of sweet yet acrid smell. Then add to that odor the heavy unmistakable smell of diesel fuel from the engines of the craft, and the acrid smell of burning fuels. Then there was the smell of the sea air which has its own odor when the water is cold. Next, add the smell of dead fish, as the concussive force of the blasts that morning caused tens of thousands of fish to die and drift ashore littering the beaches with dead fish and fish guts. Lastly, combine with these odors the smells of dismembered and burnt human beings. These smells are very overwhelming. It is said that hunters of big game know the scent of this odor, but that in combat it is magnified as the human remains are sprayed everywhere in the vicinity of their demise by explosive forces causing the stench to permeate everything and everyone around.

This led to the final sense of taste being impacted as the sense of smell became overwhelmed. The sense of taste likewise took in the odors such that the men actually tasted the smells. Many of the men had the taste of vomit in their mouths. As the men were thrown into the water, they tasted the sea water mixed with the blood and death all around them.

All of this happened in the moments the doors dropped and the men went ashore. It remained so in one form or another until the man was out of active combat for his part in the invasion action. The memories of these assaults to the men's senses lasted their lifetime.

S/Sgt Copeland told his biographer about the final approach to shore. He said that as they were within 200 yards of shore, the men all the sudden forgot about the vomit and stench in the bottom of their LCA. The men stared up at the beach and cliffs beyond. They witnessed the heavy German artillery and U.S. naval gun fires each generate "incredible explosions". These were on the cliffs, beach and out into the water in and around the approaching craft. JR said that a soldier in 2nd Platoon hollered "they're throwing everything at us but the kitchen sinks." S/Sgt Copeland responded "Here comes the kitchen sink now." S/Sgt Copeland remembered that particular projectile was massive, "It was a helluva projectile—I'd never seen anything like it before." It toppled, turning sideways and looked to be the size of a bathtub. This projectile flew over the LCA of 2nd Platoon hitting the water near the side of another landing craft capsizing the boat. "We couldn't stop, someone else would pick them up . . . we moved forward." Copeland recalled.<sup>30</sup> This large caliber artillery was likely the 105mm and 150 mm shells fired by the IV/352 Artillery (155 mm) situated in fields south of Asnieres approximately one mile southwest of Vierville or from the 2/352 or 3/352 Artillery Regiments (105 mm) located south of Louviers. JR told me that he was pretty sure some of these rounds were 150 mm shells. The IV/352 fielded the German heavy field howitzer, model 18 or 15 cm schwere Feldhaubitze (sFH 18). These artillery weapons were every bit as formidable as the guns of Pointe du Hoc as they were the same caliber as them. They were German arms and not captured French weapons, which meant increased reliability. They are reported to have had a range of 14,490 yards at a rate of fire of four rounds per minute.

Although written by a Ranger that climbed Pointe du Hoc, Corporal Ralph E. Davis 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion, the statement he made when interviewed by Cornelius Ryan stands as stark testament to one of the physical tolls the landings had on the human body as the men arrived. "My legs were a dead weight, my body was numb and cold, and my hands were chilled blue so that I could hardly grab the rope to climb the cliff."<sup>37</sup> I can't help but imagine that many if not most of the men, particularly those who got wet physically felt the same way, regardless of whether they climbed a rope on the cliffs or were landed on the beaches.

General Raaen provided me with a hand-drawing of the landing area used by the Rangers Force C on Omaha Beach as shown in Figure 249. This drawing illustrates the conditions of the landing area and shows the breakwater jetties, wooden wall and roadway covered by barbed wire and the smoke covered cliff.



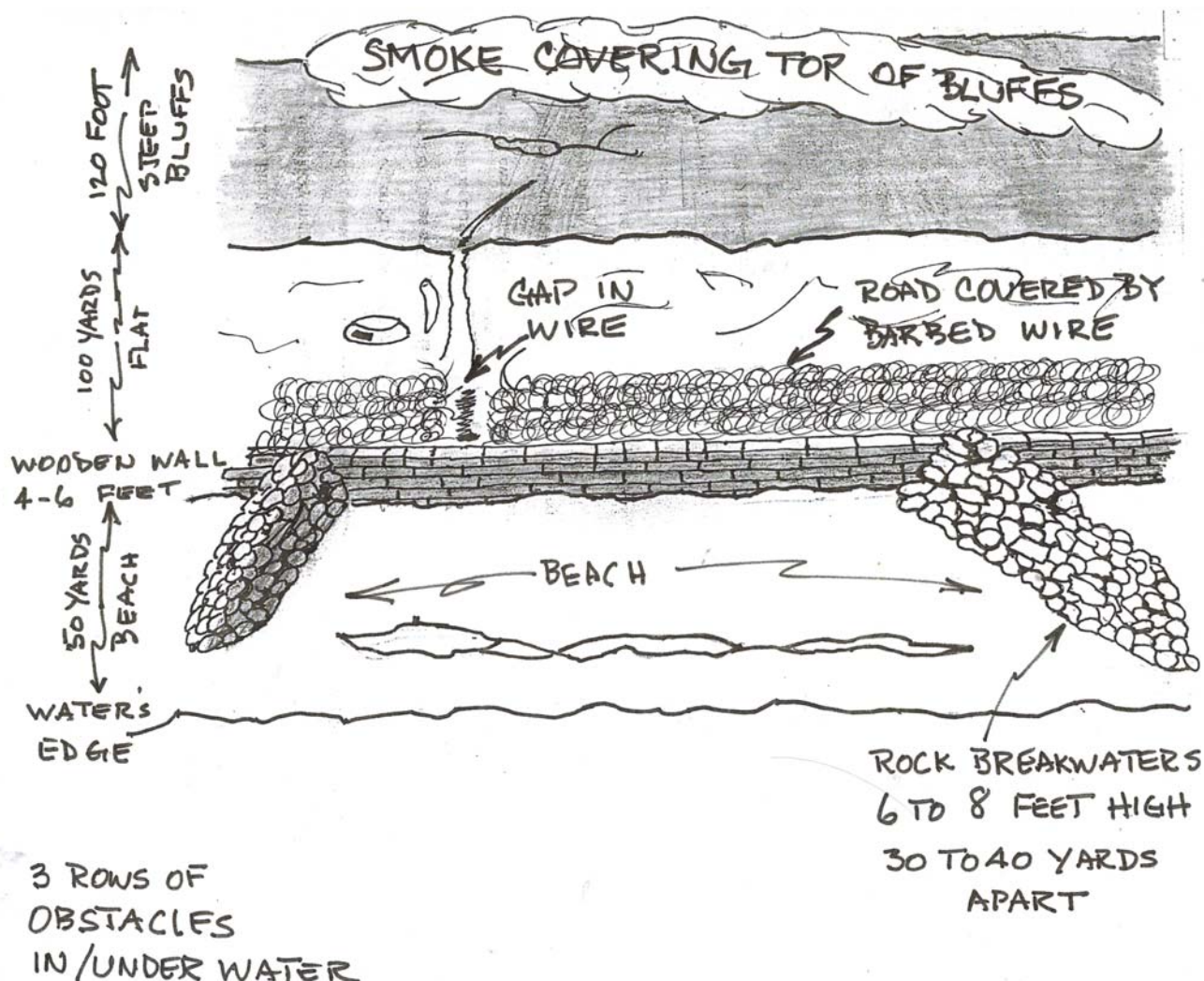


Figure 249: Dog White/Dog Red Beach Sectors on D-Day sketch (Courtesy MG John Raaen, Jr., Army ret)

Fires were burning all along the face of the bluffs facing the Dog Red and Dog White sectors as seen in the following pictures. This was created by the naval shelling of the shoreline before 0730. This smoke provided an effective screen from direct fire of the sector and hindered the observation required to bring indirect artillery fire from observers in positions in the immediate area. It did not hinder the ability of the artillery observers located in the bunkers and shelters who maintained communications from calling in fire from nearby artillery units located well behind the beach. The smoke likewise complicated the ability of the defenders to deliver machine gun fire effectively on the beach in certain parts of Dog White and Dog Red. Machine gun fire could be employed effectively enough though by gunners located at nearby WN70 atop the bluff to the right front of these landing zones of the beach. These MG-42s fire reportedly struck the fronts of the LCAs as they approached and struck the sand and water all around the Rangers as they disembarked. The most menacing large caliber weapon in a position to provide direct fire on Dog White and beyond was that of the 88 mm artillery piece located within WN 72.

An Allied aerial reconnaissance photo taken at 0730 hours shows the 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion first wave as it made final approach to the landing on Omaha Beach at the boundary between Dog White and Dog Red Sectors (Figure 250). Figure 251 shows the beach in 1943. The zigzag path traversing the bluffs is the route taken by the Rangers on D-Day. Figure 252 shows the beach from off shore as it appeared in the moments surrounding the landing. The smoke mentioned by many of the Rangers and reports can clearly be seen in the photo.



Figure 250: 0730 aerial photo showing 1<sup>st</sup> wave of 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry BN moments before landing on Dog White (NARA)



Figure 251: March 1943 Army Reconnaissance Photo of Dog Red/Dog White boundary (NARA). Note the lack of obstacles on the beach.



Figure 252: Dog White Beach showing smoke on bluffs from US Landing Craft. (NARA)



A portion of the 743rd Tank Battalion landed in front of and to the right of the Rangers on Omaha Beach with their Duplex Drive (DD) tanks (Figure 253). Of the sixteen tanks that attempted to land, only eight even made it to shore. However, by the time that General Cota landed, there were some 18 total tanks between his position and Exit D-1 spaced some 70 – 100 yards apart. It was noted that each tank fired at positions to their front and not the more dangerous WNs to the west as they should have. Along with these tanks landed the 116th Infantry Regimental Combat Team, Company C. These men suffered tremendous casualties. It was these men though that first reached the top of the bluffs just to the right of the Rangers. A few companies of the 2nd Rangers to the right of the D-1 Exit either beat the 116th to the top, or arrived at the top at nearly the same time according to reports and accounts of the action. These assaults on the bluffs are important to the 5th Rangers landing intact because they undoubtedly drew the attention of the Germans in their immediate vicinity. The men of the 116th RCT and 2nd Rangers assaulting to the right of the battalion caused a disruption in the manning of WN 70, just as the battalion were organizing and beginning their assault of the bluffs en masse.



Figure 253: Duplex Drive (DD) Tank, Variant of M4 Sherman medium tank used by 743<sup>rd</sup> Tank Battalion (United Kingdom)

PFC Ching recalled of his experience with 2nd Platoon as they landed:

“A, B & E Company land on the first wave. What I mean by the first wave is the, there are already troops on the beach. We’re the first wave from the Ranger Battalion. Not the landing, so there are already 116th Infantry Regiment landed there, and also, 16th Regiment from the 1st Division landed there. The 116th is from the 29th Infantry Division. We landed H+60, in other words, H – Hour was 0630. H+60 would be 60 minutes later, because we were supposed to land on Pointe du Hoc. We waited for the signal to land, but the signal never came through. So we, the battalion commander headed to Omaha Beach. That’s where we landed sixty minutes later. I read through the Carl West and Thornhill describe the landing on D-Day. Well, my personal feeling when I was on the beach to the seawall, and I watched artillery shells coming up to the seawall, from the left, to the right, when I was at the seawall. We walked, we came up, because the Germans got the seawall, all zeroed in. And they come up, three shells, boom, boom, boom, all over the seawall, and we thought, Oh hell, this is gonna come up pretty close to me pretty soon. It just so happened that two LSI {LCI} landed. I guess from the 116th Infantry Regiment. And both ramps dropped, the LSI {LCI} both of them got both ramps of them down. Soon the artillery turned their attention to those LSI {LCI}. LSI {LCI}

means Landing Craft Infantry. Each craft came in with I think one company. There's two coming in at the same time. It hit both of them. The first one hit, nearest to me so I saw that. They hit with three shells, so people, started to {can't make out} more or less. The worst part I remember in my mind is one of the persons on the LSI was carrying a flamethrower, and the flamethrower exploded. That stuck in my mind".

His daughter asked him during the interview "So the whole landing craft died, the people died in it because the flamethrower exploded?" Ching responded "As far as I know, I don't know what happened, both landing craft. So finally, Omar Bradley got order from the beach, stop all reinforcements to the beach. So, that's what I heard on the radio, until the troops on the beach now get over the top, before he land any more troops. And another thing that the Captain (Captain Whittington) said, "Alright you bunch of Rangers, you're going to die, you don't want to die on the beach, so you're going to die inland."

As the 2nd Platoon landing craft approached shore from about one hundred yards out, the Rangers noted there was plenty of beach to cover just to make their way to the seawall for some semblance of shelter. S/Sgt Copeland remembered thinking "There was a helluva lot of beach to cross..." Lt. Pepper reportedly told the British Coxswain to beach the craft as close as possible because all the men on the LCA were needed for the job at hand. The LCA made its final approach then hit a tripod obstacle hidden under the rising water. The LCA came to rest at 0745, the main ramp dropped and the two inner doors were swung open by the assigned Rangers. The order of landing craft by Company from right to left were 1/2 of HQ Company with Lt. Colonel Schneider, B Company's two boats, E Company's two LCAs, and A Company's two boats to the extreme left, covering a 150 yard front.<sup>38</sup> The LCAs came in spaced with approximately 75 yards between them as they made landfall.

The men's training instinctively kicked in. Among the first ashore was Lt. Pepper, and the leading riflemen. Each took an opposite direction from the craft as they touched the ground. The men alternated left, right and center as they were taught to minimize their chances of allowing the Germans to get a bead on them as a group. Next to exit were the members of the light machine gun team, now carrying the venerable BAR. This is where S/Sgt Hull exited the craft. Intermixed with the BAR teams were the wire-cutter men stacked to the right middle of the LCAs. The Mortar Team followed the BAR teams. The Flamethrower and Bazooka teams went next. Last to exit were the Demolition Party with S/Sgt Copeland and Assistant Section Leader, Lt. Gregory. The smoke ahead kept the Rangers from seeing targets, however it did not hinder the Germans from firing upon the beach at random or by pre-assigned target areas. There was plenty of artillery and machine gun fire to keep the attention of the men as they made their way to the seawall. The first men ashore recounted stepping out on dry ground. By the time S/Sgt Copeland exited the craft, he reported stepping into waist-deep water due to the fast moving incoming tide. The Rangers had been told to get off the LCA and make their own way to safety to maximize survivability. A man named Ryan fell face first off of the craft, and JR thought he was shot. It turned out the man was too heavily burdened with equipment and fell over in the surf.<sup>30</sup> The smoke was thick enough that it hindered the defenders from firing directly on the flotilla as it landed the Rangers ashore as had happened to many other units along Omaha Beach.

The LCAs of B Company were expertly piloted through the German obstacles showing through the surf of a rising tide. The craft carrying PFC Weast slid through German obstacles tipped with tellermines with only six inches to spare on each side. He recalled being put down on sand in a completely dry landing. He could see bullets kicking up the sand, and recounted a feeling of amazement, not fear. I attribute this to a state of sensory overload, not unlike how people react when seeing a horrible accident in front of them in the moment. Weast then advanced to the seawall and took cover among the three deep mass of people. He got rid of the 81 mm mortar shell, uncovered his rifle and scanned his surroundings. "Everything was confusion. I looked down the beach to my left, and I could see enemy artillery shells coming right in behind the seawall and blowing bodies up in the air. They had ranged on that seawall and they were simply blowing the hell out of people. And this fire, I suppose, might have been a hundred yards off to my left where these shells were hitting."<sup>23</sup>

S/Sgt Copeland reported that less than two minutes after leaving the LCA, he found that he felt a burning sensation in his left heel, followed thirty seconds later by a burning sensation in his right calf. He showed me his scar on his shin and calf. The bullet had passed clean through killing a man behind him as the bullet hit the soldier square in the head after exiting Copeland's leg. It was an MG-42 round. His biography reports that he had "never felt anything like this feeling before..." He went on to say that "It was hell out there but we all knew what we had to

do... we had our orders and we damn well were going to carry them out.”<sup>30</sup> Copeland told me when I interviewed him that after exiting the craft, he doesn't remember ever seeing S/Sgt Hull again. He went on to tell me he was too busy focusing on his own men and mission to notice his friend. Copeland offered this vivid memory in his biography: “JR” remembers vividly wading through ‘blood-red’ water scurrying from one hedge-post beach obstacle to another, hurrying to reach the beach seawall that would provide better cover. He passed many dead and dying soldiers strewn along the rising waters edge. “It was a sight to behold, he said, the soldiers hollering; crying, shell-shocked from the explosions . . . most dead with a last blank stare.”<sup>30</sup>

It was now full daylight as the Rangers worked their way through from beach obstacle to obstacle and into the breakwaters, the shingle, seawall and coastal road above it. The Rangers view of the defenders was reminiscent of the carnival game “Whack-a-Mole” where a German would be seen popping up, fire a weapon and drop back down again, only to have the same soldier or another man pop up somewhere else. The smoke began to become intermittent now and again, and the wind made some direction changes during this time. The hand of God also played a hand in protecting the Rangers as they came ashore. This was amidst horrendous carnage both to the left and to the right of the battalion. A Landing Craft Tank (LCT) was struck by artillery to the right front of the Rangers as they landed a little down the beach which began to draw German attention. This was LCT No. 29 commanded by Lt. (jg) Wright, transporting 743rd Tank Battalion, HQ Section. This vessel dropped its ramp at 0745 approximately 200 yards from shore. During this, the cables operating the ramp snapped and the ramp door folded underneath the craft, thereby not allowing debarkation. The Germans then began shelling the LCT. The craft withdrew from the beach at 0800 and took position 1000 yards from shore.

Between the first and second wave of Rangers to land, The United States Coast Guard (USCG) Landing Craft Infantry Large 91 (LCI(L)-91 or LCI 91) made their second attempt at landing at 0750 hours to the right of the Rangers just moments before LCA 1377 carrying Captain Raaen touched down on the right flank of the Rangers. LCI 91 was carrying Headquarters 116th Infantry, 147th Engineers Battalion, 121st Engineers Battalion, and 7th Beach Battalion. On their first grounding, the skipper, LTJG Arend Vyn, Jr., USCGR, reported striking a mine in the port bow. The LCI had first landed further out from the seawall about 0730 and started to disembark troops, but had to move closer to shore to account for the incoming tide after about 140 troops had disembarked. LCI 91 and her sister ships were formidable landing craft, presenting targets that the Germans had to deal with. Each 158 foot vessel was capable of landing some 201 troops and was armed with at least four 20mm Oerlikon cannons and two .50 heavy machine guns. LCI 91 was reportedly initially struck in the starboard side by an 88 mm round from WN 72. The vessel was then also rocked by additional 88 mm and other artillery shell blasts, machine gun fire and by teller mines attached to adjacent beach obstacles. The 88 mm shell struck amidships and caused a flamethrower soldier to erupt into a conflagration of flame engulfing everything around him. General Raaen would later write that LCI 91 had touched down some 50 to 100 yards to the right of his location, placing him just on the other side of the blast pictured in Figure 255. Consequently, B Company, 2nd Platoon was another 50 yards or so further to the east from Raaen's position. The arrival of LCI 91 became a German focus for fire as it came ashore. The official history by the War Department reported of the destruction to LCI 91: “Clothes burning, men jumped or fell off into the sea and tried to swim in under continued artillery fire. It is estimated that no personnel escaped from No. 1 compartment of the craft out of the 25 carried there”.<sup>32, 39, 40</sup> Figure 254 shows LCIs 91 and 92 as they travelled across the Channel to Normandy.

Taylor's notes discuss the miraculous landing of the 5<sup>th</sup> Rangers intact. He noted the LCIs were drawing the artillery fire. He discussed the grass fires and the movements of other units in the sector. “Possible factors may be, that C Company, 116<sup>th</sup> Infantry had gone up the bluff just to the right front, as the Rangers were coming in, and this would have disorganized the nearest enemy positions; that A and B Companies of the 2<sup>nd</sup> Rangers were drawing heavy fire of all types 300 yards to the right; that smoke from grass fires on the bluff, to the right, may have obscured some part of this beach. At any rate, the 5<sup>th</sup> Rangers came in at a “blind spot” (or a “blind moment”) in the enemy fire defenses and their luck was almost unique in these first hours on Omaha Beach. It was wholly a question of absence of fire...”<sup>24</sup>





Figure 254: LCI 91 and LCI 92 en route to Normandy for D-Day invasion. (NARA)

Victor Miller, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, F Company wrote: “When we got closer we could see tracers coming down the beach which wasn't a very promising sight. We saw obstacles sticking up, which were triangular pieces of steel with mines dangling from them”.<sup>41</sup>



Figure 255: LCI 91 explosion at 0750 hours on D-Day. Omaha Beach, Dog White Sector (NARA)

The second wave of Rangers came in behind but centered slightly to the right of the first wave covering a two hundred yard front. Their craft landing at this time included from right to left: LCI 91 (116th Infantry Regiment) located 50 to 100 yards from the Rangers, LCA 1377 to the extreme right of the Ranger position with the other half of HQ Company, C Company's two LCAs, D Company's two craft landing on top of Schneider's position, and the F Company, 2nd Platoon landing on top of B Company.<sup>38</sup>

LCI(L) 92 landed to the left of the Ranger formation in the minutes after the second wave of Rangers reached the seawall. LCI(L) 92 was commanded by LT Robert M. Salmon, USCGR, and was part of Task Force 124. She was struck on the port side by an 88 mm shell, presumably fired from WN 73. This vessel was struck by multiple 88 mm shells and teller mines. The Germans then focused their efforts on destroying the vessels and men from both LCIs. The after action report states that the two LCIs would burn for most of the day. It was also reported that much artillery fire was brought to bear upon the beach west of Exit D-3 from enemy artillery positions at Pointe de la Percée. The German defenders would fire a shot, then make any needed adjustments to their firing azimuths, then fire three or so shells of artillery upon their prey.<sup>40</sup>



Figure 256: This view from within the H677 casemate at Wn 72 shows to advantage how the 88m Pak 43 installed within dominated the beach to the east. The wrecked LCI 91 is visible on beach in center of photo. US Army Signal Corps Photo, NARA

“The approach to the beach was heavily obstructed. The LCI(L)-91, which had beached half an hour earlier, was in flames, and it was decided to beach to the left of the 91 and in lee of her smoke, which could be used as a screen. At 0810 she passed through the first row of obstacles and cleared the outer three rows successfully. When apparently clear, however, a terrific explosion on the port (left) side rocked the ship, setting the No. 1 troop compartment in flames and spraying the entire forward deck with burning fuel. At about the same time a shell exploded close aboard to starboard. The engines were ordered ahead but she was unable to move over the runnel”.<sup>40</sup> Figure 255 illustrates the explosion that destroyed LCI(L)-91 as the Rangers were some 50 yards to her left side. The view from WN72 is in Figure 256. The wreck of LCI(L)-91 can be seen down the beach in the center of the photo.

The loss of life was catastrophic on these vessels, but their destruction allowed the Rangers a chance to survive. The noise remained deafening and bullets could be heard screaming by as the men prepared to make their next moves. The air remained filled with smoke from the grass fire, and now the thicker black smoke of the burning vehicles on the beach surrounding the Rangers. The artillery shells added additional big black puffs of smoke and all of the weapons fire caused debris, shrapnel and dust to fly everywhere.<sup>42</sup> The 88 mm artillery fire included direct fire from WNs 61 and 72 flanking both ends of Omaha Beach. Some of the fire to hit the LCIs is known to have originated from these positions.

As part of our journey to discover the truth about S/Sgt Hull my immediate family visited the U.S. Army Heritage and Education Center, Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania. While there, we discovered the following restored German 88 mm artillery piece along the Heritage Trail. The sheer size of the weapon is testament to the devastation it caused, and for that reason I have added this side note to help the reader appreciate its significance. Many GIs lost their lives to this weapon platform on D-Day. Figure 257 illustrates the size of the German 88.



Figure 257: German PAK 43/41 Antitank Gun. According to the USHEC, this is one of five known remaining examples of this variant which is on display at USHEC, Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania. Pictured is my wife holding my youngest daughter, with my middle daughter in the background. (author's collection)

Raen reported that to avoid the heavy MG-42 fire on the beach you had to run following the splashes of the bullets as they hit the sand or water. The Germans used their machine guns similarly to U.S. forces in that they fired 3-5 round bursts of their weapons to keep the barrels cool and to keep a handle on the weapon for accuracy. As the Rangers funneled into the series of fifteen fifty-five foot long breakwaters spaced every 55 feet, they found themselves stacked two to three men deep in behind the shingle and wooden seawall above. These breakwaters were constructed of huge boulders and wooden posts and rails. The breakwaters offered bays where the men were able to huddle in numbers of approximately 80 men per bay. The Rangers were on top of various men from the 116th RCT. The



breakwaters offered protection from the flanking machine gun fire. It hindered communications as men had to go around or over the breakwaters to communicate with the men in the next bay. According to Raaen, B Company huddled in two bays, with one platoon in each bay. This caused Captain Whittington to have to convey orders between both bays as they planned for what came next. General Raaen was in 4th or 5th bay formed by the breakwaters from their western extent. The Ranger front was about 200 yards wide.

Omaha Beach, Dog White during and shortly after the landings can be seen in Figures 258 and 259. Figure 258 reveals the burning wreckage of LCIs 91 and 92, as well as the aforementioned LCT. The breakwaters used by the Rangers to take cover with the 116<sup>th</sup> RCT after landing. The scorching caused by the grass fire on the bluffs is clearly visible in Figure 259.

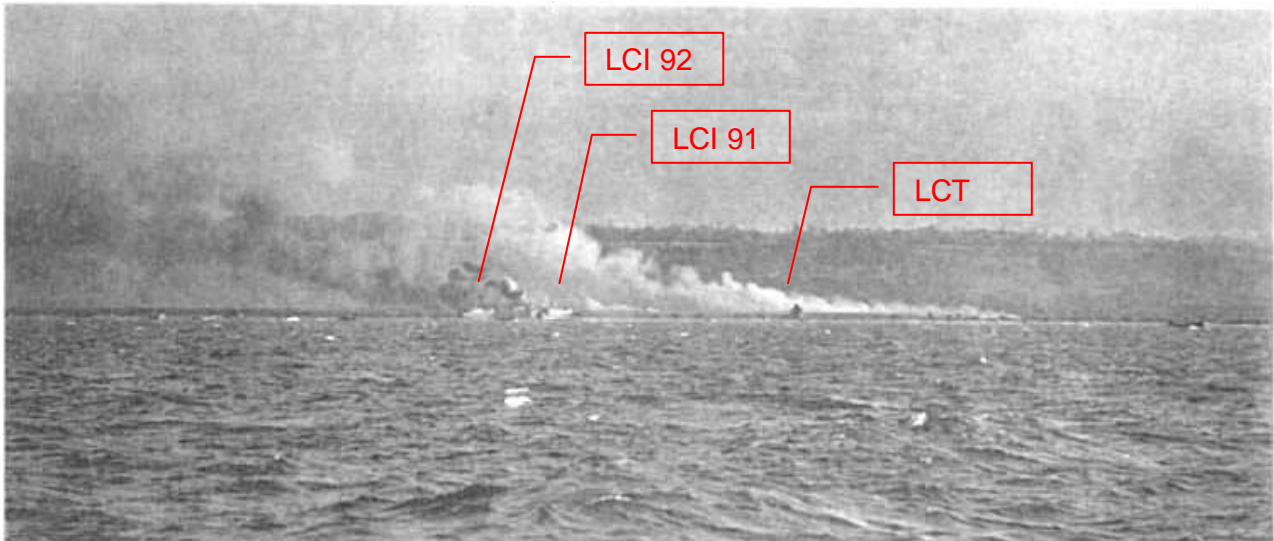


Figure 258: View that 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Battalion had of beach at Dog White upon approach of the shore showing fires. (NARA)



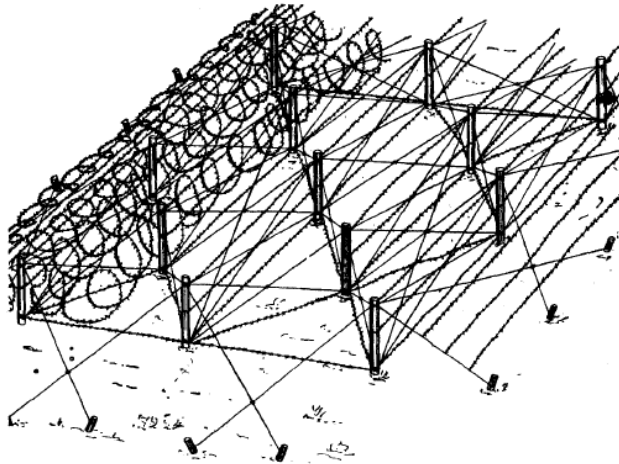
Figure 259: Aerial View of Dog White/Dog Red sector that 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Battalion landed at taken at 1230 hours showing breakwalls and blackened areas as a result of fires on the bluffs. The crest of the bluff is noted by the farm fields to the top of the photo. Also note the hedgerow on the top right of the photo. This was used by the Rangers to mask their movements. (NARA)

The devastation of the LCIs was etched into many of the men who were there to witness the event.

“I hit the dirt (sand) halfway across the beach to catch my breath and duck a burst of MG fire. Behind my shelter (a steel tetrahedron obstacle) was a GI, I first thought dead. He pushed a scared face next to mine and blurted “I’m supposed to be blowin’ these obstacles, but those sons-a-bitches won’t let me” Another burst of fire and I jumped up and headed inland for the comparative safety of the sea wall... An LCI with a flame-thrower man was hit by artillery. Much fire and smoke. I saw a man being half carried across the beach. I thought he had on long white evening gloves, nearly removed and hanging inside out. It was his skin shedding off from the burns.”<sup>19</sup>

5F, T/5 Dan D. Schopp (half of F on Dog White)

At 0750, C Company, 116th RCT blew gaps in the barbed wire (Figure 260) at the behest of their leadership and began to assault the bluffs to the right of the 5th Rangers. Members of the 2nd Rangers landed in that section of beach merged into the 116th for ascending the bluffs. This was west toward WN 70. General Cota was in the midst of this action spurring the soldiers to action. Fran Coughlin, one of the 5th Rangers from HQ Company felt the road on top of the seawall and realized it was blacktop. The barbed wire was on the far side of the road about 25 yards distant. This would require anyone trying to blow gaps in the wire to expose themselves to German fire. Raen recorded the barbed wire across the road in his book.



**Figure 7.—Standard German barbed-wire obstacle in depth.**

Figure 260: German Coastal Defenses, War Department, Special Series Number 15, Page 23

Between 0750 and 0810, the Ranger officers converged on the position of Lt. Colonel Schneider to report their status to him and to receive orders. The officers assessed their situation and determined the best way forward was to follow a predetermined plan to advance inland by method of platoon infiltration practiced by the men since Camp Forrest. The codeword for these orders was “Tallyho”. The movement off of the beach required certain preparatory measures by the companies and platoons to allow them to breach the wire and assault the bluffs. The men had to prepare their Bangalore torpedoes. The mortar teams had to set up behind the seawall to provide supporting fire to the men headed up the bluffs. The Company Commanders had to issue orders to their platoons and assault sections to provide the men proper instruction as to what came next. This is not to say the men were unaware as to their missions. They had practiced this until they could do it in their sleep. Copeland recalled that “every Ranger knew what we had to do—they were to reach the beach and advance inland, up the hill, meet at the top and kill as many Germans as possible along the way.”<sup>30</sup> The officers returned to their companies and then prepared and began to blow the wire. The battalion would blow four holes in the wire to advance through for the assault.

After conferring orders, Captain Whittington, Lt. Pepper and a small handful of B Company enlisted men climbed atop the seawall and crossed the road to the Barbed wire. Men from three other companies also did this. They then laid down ten yards in front of the obstacle to evaluate it. Copeland said of Whittington “He was a ‘crusty son-of-a-gun’ and ‘tough as nails and twice as ornery.’”<sup>30</sup> Whittington could be heard ordering a Bangalore torpedo to make the

breach. “Copeland, get that f\$\*#@#! Banger up here now!”<sup>30</sup> Copeland had been shot twice, but he reacted and grabbed the weapon from the bazooka man. He then tried to run and make his way to the wire. His wounds began to get the better of him as his legs first burned and then went numb causing Copeland to fall, unable to run. Another Ranger yelled back to the Captain that Copeland’s legs were shot. Cpl Gale Beccue then moved forward and prepared to detonate the torpedo and then blew one of the four openings in the barbed wire on top of the seawall made by the battalion. The double apron barbed wire is located on the inland side of the paved road for the length of the beach from the Rangers perspective. According to General Raaen, B Company blew its hole some 50 yards to the east of the hole made by D Company that he went through with Headquarters Company. A German soldier was firing an MG-42 from the right in their direction along the coastal road. Weast recalled later that a Ranger named Bucky Rogers blew a hole in the wire. For B Company, he stated that 1<sup>st</sup> Platoon led the charge, followed by 2<sup>nd</sup> Platoon through the gap.<sup>23</sup> It is possible that Rogers took over when Copeland was shot.

Almost simultaneously with these events, General Cota had made his way back east to the 5th Ranger landing area. He found Captain Raaen, and asked him who they were and where their commander was. After hearing these were the 5th Rangers, General Cota was said to have been relieved but exhorted them to get moving off the beach much as he had been doing with all units on the beach since he landed at 0730. Many of the Rangers witnessed Cota’s fearlessness while prowling along the beach waving his pistol and issuing orders. Some of the men thought he was crazy. All of the men were inspired by his courage. Both Ching and Copeland were within earshot of the moment that established the Ranger Motto for all time. Copeland reported what he heard Cota say as “G#%-d@^#\*? then, Rangers lead the way.”<sup>30</sup> In reading various reports and accounts of these moments, Cota may have said this or a variant of this amongst the Rangers a few different times. This would account for the ability of all the men to have universally heard some variant of it, and for the distance spanned by the men separated by the breakwaters and noise levels on the beach. The important thing at this point is that B Company, 2nd Platoon heard it, loud and clear. Copeland and Ching remember it to this day. General Cota’s leadership was absolutely vital for the success of the assault. Cota would write later that he knew it was only a matter of time before the Germans would realize the magnitude of the target presented of these intact infantry forces massed among the breakwaters. He realized the danger posed by directed heavy artillery fire in the sector. He reasoned that all of the men had to get off the beach as quickly as possible. The only reason he was not awarded the Congressional Medal of Honor for his heroic actions well beyond the call of duty appears to be that he was a General. PFC Ching recalled “And we got ordered to clear out the beach, or expand the beachhead, and kill any German you find. So that’s what we did.” In B Company, 1st Platoon was first over the seawall, followed by 2nd Platoon. A few members from the 116th joined in the advance. The beach flat was a 200 yard wide obstacle to traverse at double time to the safety of the foot of the bluffs.

The 2nd Rangers on Omaha were in need of relief. Lt. Robert Edlin recorded his thoughts. “Now, I thought, where are the 5th Rangers? I turned and I couldn't walk or even hobble anymore. I crawled back to the beach. I saw 5th Rangers coming through the smoke of a burning LST that had been hit by artillery fire. Col. Schneider had seen the slaughter on the beaches and used his experience with the Rangers in Africa, Sicily, and Anzio. He used the smoke as a screen and moved in behind it, saving the 5th Ranger Battalion many casualties.”<sup>35</sup>

The battalion identified the possibility of there being extensive minefields in the area. As a result, after they passed through the breaches, the companies fanned out in a column formation to conduct their climb. Much of the battalion was reported to have passed through the gap in the wire that had been blown by D Company. As the wire was blown, Captain Whittington motioned to advance. The men ran as they poured through the gap. The Captain then fanned B Company out as did the remainder of the battalion in order to navigate the remaining fields below the bluffs as the Company headed for the cliffs. The men knew and had been warned of the likelihood of mines. Squad Leaders such as S/Sgt Copeland sought out worn down paths through the field looking for sign of safe passages. Copeland told his biographer; “I thought the pathway was a good indicator of where the Germans knew to walk—we just followed the path which turned out to be the right decision.” He led his men by ten to fifteen feet so that if he struck a mine, his men would be protected. After the Company navigated the minefield they found a crevice along the bottom of the cliff. Copeland was too injured to climb, so he turned his command over to his subordinate NCO and headed for the seawall. At some point along the paths through the minefields, the Rangers ended up becoming somewhat protected from direct artillery and machine gun fire due to the topography surrounding them. D Company led off up the cliff, with B Company following them along their pathway up the slopes. Headquarters Company ascended some 50 yards to their right. Upon reaching the smoke, the Rangers found themselves in combat not only against the enemy but against the smoke on the bluffs.



## 17 D-DAY: OVER THE TOP

The hedgerow country the soldiers found themselves in atop the bluffs benefitted the defenders. Small groups of Germans amply outfitted with the MG-42 machine gun, mortars and ammunition were able to utilize the hedges as part of their defensive strategy. They were likewise able to call in decisive artillery fire for much of the day until the artillery units were overrun by US forces, or simply ran out of ammunition. The German defenses along the bluffs above Dog White consisted largely of lightly manned rifle pits connected by deep trenches at the crest. They also employed mortar positions that relied on pre-sighted panoramic sketches painted on the walls of the mortar pits enabling the mortar crews to quickly and accurately deliver fire. This information included ground features, ranges and deflections required for hitting targets. American attempts to outmaneuver a German position often resulted in becoming separated and lost from its larger parent unit. The Germans also made excellent use of snipers in this terrain. At 0745 hours the 916th Grenadier Regiment reported to the 352nd Infantry Division that three tanks were within the perimeter on the beach at WN 70 northeast of Vierville as the three tanks of the 743rd Tank Battalion came ashore.<sup>1</sup>

PFC Weast spoke of the fire and smoke on the bluffs. This is very similar to all of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion accounts I have seen. "Somebody hollered "Gas!" So we all put our gas masks on, but when I got up into the smoke and cracked the edge of my face piece, I could smell it was nothing but grass smoke, so I took my damn gas mask off and threw it away. That's the last time during the entire war that I ever carried a damn gas mask. It might have been stupid,-but the things were clumsy, they impeded your ability to move and breathe, so I simply got rid of the damn thing. What we were smelling was nothing but grass smoke."<sup>2</sup>

As the Rangers ascended the bluffs in columns by Company formation, B Company went up right behind D Company, and some 50 yards to the left of Headquarters Company. Near the crest, D Company was fired upon by MG-42s in the trench systems located well to the left of WN 70 in the cliffs just above them. D Company took up defensive positions and engaged these positions killing the defenders. This temporary pause resulted in B Company topping the crest and enabled the company to remain together as a unit upon reaching the top. The majority of the Ranger battalion was up the bluff by 0830. Remaining intact, B Company quickly reorganized into regular platoon formation while briefly waiting for the remainder of the battalion once on top. Lt. Pepper commanded 1st Platoon and Lt Gregory commanded 2nd Platoon with only four or five wounded casualties between them and none killed in action.

It was while nearing the top that an event made famous by Cornelius Ryan through his interview with PFC Weast occurred. In his 1958 interview, Ryan asked; "Do you remember seeing or hearing anything that seems funny now, even though it may not have seemed funny at the time?" Weast responded to this "'B" Company commander, Capt. George P. Whittington was one of the lead men in our advance off the beach and up the bluffs. Near the top of the bluff a grass fire was burning giving us smoke cover, a very happy accident: "Whit" came upon a German machine gun position from their rear, unnoticed. When one of the three Germans turned and saw "Whit", a fierce looking fellow, he repeated the words "bitte, bitte, bitte." "Whit" shot the three of them, turned and asked, "I wonder what bitte means."<sup>3</sup> Weast later downplayed this event. Raaben wrote in his book, and shared with me that he believed the event to have occurred differently, indicating that Whittington killed these Germans when they could have provided

valuable intelligence upon proper interrogation. Whittington's daughter Janet told me that Captain Whittington didn't speak German at the time, but the event later prompted him to learn the language.



Figure 261: PROFILE VIEW OF BLUFFS, DOG WHITE, in the area where Company C, 116th, and the 5th Ranger Battalion assaulted the bluff. The picture was taken in June 1945 when vegetation had grown up heavily. View is toward east; beach flat shows in left rear. (CMH – Omaha Beachhead)<sup>4</sup>

Colonel Schneider assessed the tactical situation and determined that it was critically important to make contact with the 116th Infantry Regiment under Colonel Canham. The original plan had been to meet at a rally point southwest of Vierville. During the chaos of landing and the ascent of the cliffs, Colonel Schneider changed the plan to react to a fluid battlefield and passed the word. General Cota's orders on the beach included assisting the 116th in establishing the beachhead. This effectively changed the orders for the battalion from meeting at the rally point and moving on to Pointe du Hoc. Schneider wanted to reestablish contact with Cota to discuss the next steps. During the move up the bluffs, not all the 5th Ranger Company Commanders received this change in orders. As a result, Lt. Parker's A Company Platoon immediately moved to the rally point southwest of Vierville and ultimately on to Pointe du Hoc. They would be the only relief force from Omaha to reach Rudder on D-Day.

After reorganizing B Company, Captain Whittington ordered 2nd Platoon, 2nd Section Leader Staff Sergeant Walter N. "Mac" McIlwain to take a patrol to the west along the bluffs to locate and make contact with the Commanding Officer of the 116th Infantry to gather important information for Schneider as to the change in orders from the primary objective to their secondary objective. 1st Platoon eliminated several German positions in the trenches along the crest in the vicinity. Figure 262 shows a War Department produced map revealing the overall assault by the 5<sup>th</sup> Rangers.

Assuming the structure of B Company, 2nd Platoon was similar to that of the 1943 roster list from Camp Forrest, S/Sgt McIlwain served as the 1st Section Leader on D-Day. His soldiers included: Howard M. Goldberg, Rene R. Brunelle, Robert Jarke, Jr, Robert S. Goodwin, Theodore Weberman, Herbert S. Hull, Leroy A. Anderson, Bernard C. Akers and Johnnie E Bixler. Members of the 2nd Section included: Section leader Sgt Edward J. McEleney, Peter L. Cardineli, Thomas G. Devlin, Louis Banks, Francis J. Healey, Randall Ching, Albert F. Sweeney, Paul L. Winslow, Albert P. Gipson, Jr, Elmo E. Banning and Harvey M. Montgomery. Some of these Rangers might have fallen out of the Company between September 1943 and June 1944 to injury or failure to meet training standards. Locking down

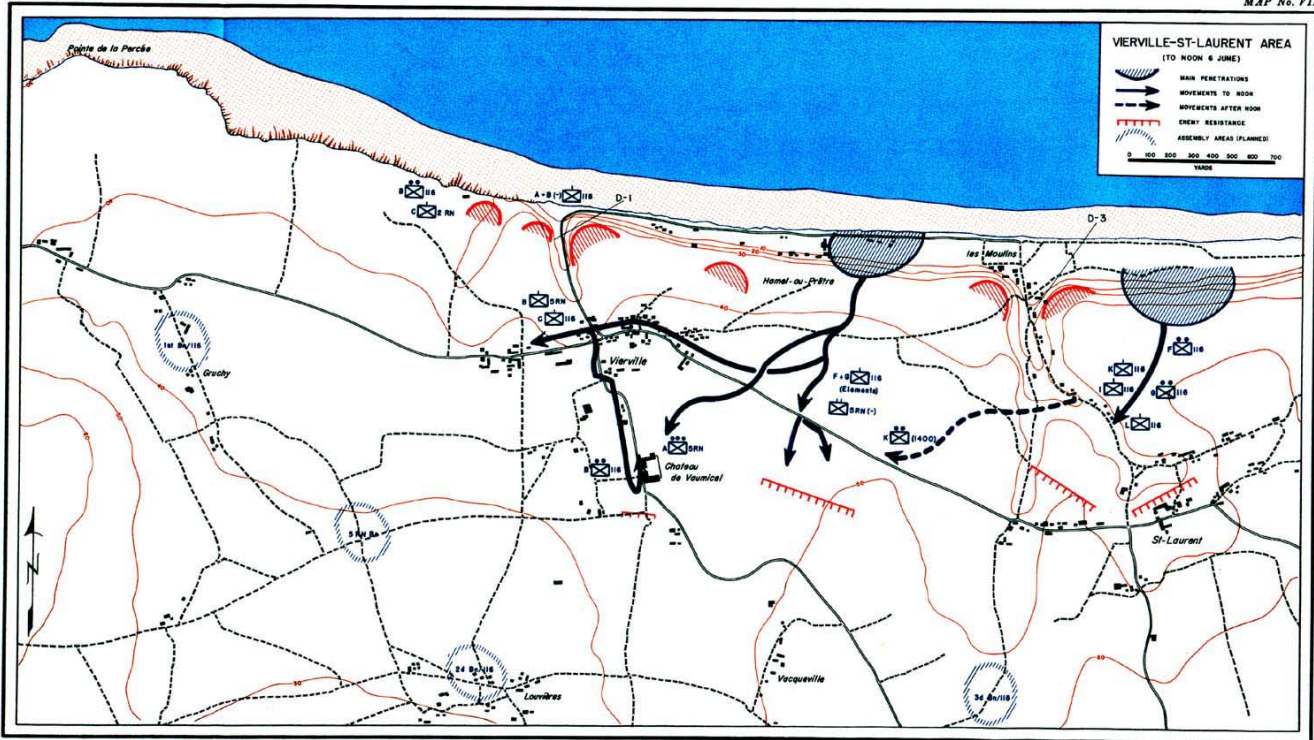


Figure 262: Official War Department mapping of assault of Omaha Beach near Vierville.<sup>4</sup>



Figure 263: WN 70 southeast of Vierville (NARA)



the final roster of men who made the D-Day assault warrants additional research. Ching had shifted directly under Hull by D-Day for instance. PFC Carl Weast, Company Messenger and PFC Jesse W. Johnson, Medic made the patrol according to accounts. Copeland remained on the beach reloading and cleaning weapons until he was evacuated to England. What I have not found out is if the entire 2nd Platoon made this patrol, or a combined force made up of members of both sections performed it. What is certain is that members from both the 1st and 2nd Section made the patrol. It is uncertain if Lt. Gregory made this patrol as he is not referenced in regard to this patrol in various accounts of it except for those made by Carl Weast.

The patrol took considerable time and care and worked the fields and hedgerows to the right of where they crested. The patrol eliminated German opposition as they went. They reached their objective approximately 600 to 700 hundred yards to the west of their landing position, near and above Hamel au Prêtre and in the vicinity of WN 70. There S/Sgt McIlwain's patrol made contact with the 116th Infantry Regiment's Colonel Canham, a few officers and enlisted men. Colonel Canham's units were widely dispersed at this point and he did not have effective command and control over his forces. Canham was out of touch of his division, had no contacts with any of his battalion headquarters, did not know what was happening at the exits in the 116th zone, and could only assume that the rest of the assault battalions were on their way to assembly areas.<sup>4</sup> Canham's command group had just come up the bluffs. They abandoned their first command post after taking mortar fire at the foot of the cliff. Colonel Canham later recorded that at that time "he had no contact with his units and did not know where they were located." He asked the Rangers to stay with him to provide security to his command group. S/Sgt McIlwain told the Colonel that his previous orders were to report Canham's position directly back to Captain Whittington as soon as possible and declined to remain with the Colonel. Various texts indicate that this is not the last time a small group from Company B would be requested to do this for Canham. In fact, B Company, 2nd Platoon would again be requested as security for Colonel Canham later in the morning. The patrol then headed off to the south, and east to rejoin their Company and report. At 0915 hours the 726th Grenadier Regiment reported to the 352nd Infantry Division that WN's 65, 66, 67, 68 and 70 were in enemy hands. WN 70 is shown in Figure 263. By 0925 hours the 916th Grenadier Regiment requested an artillery and armored counterattack to the WN's east of St. Laurent. Around this time a call was placed by a German observer for an artillery strike in the fields southeast of WN 70.

Importantly while this was going on in and around Vierville sur Mer shortly after 0900, the 2<sup>nd</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion finally located the 155 mm guns south of Pointe du Hoc and destroyed them. Figure 264 documents the kill of the artillery weapon. The War Department publication Small Unit Actions documents this event:

Active patrolling was started at once on all sides of the thinly-held positions. About 0900, a two-man patrol from D went down the double-hedgerowed lane that ran south from the highway near Company D's outpost. About 250 yards along the lane, Sergeant Lomell and S/Sgt. Jack E. Kuhn walked into a camouflaged gun position; there, set up in battery, were five of the enemy 155's missing from the Point. They were in position to fire toward Utah Beach, but could easily have been switched for use against Omaha. Piles of ammunition were at hand, points on the shells and charges ready, but there was no indication of recent firing. Not a German was in sight, and occasional sniper fire from a distance could hardly be intended as a defense of the battery. So effective was the camouflage that Lomell and Kuhn, though they could later spot the guns from the highway, had seen nothing until they were right in the position. With Kuhn covering him against possible defenders, Sergeant Lomell went into the battery and set off thermite grenades in the recoil mechanism of two guns, effectively disabling them.<sup>5</sup>



Figure 264: Sergeant Len Lomell sits astride his trophy, one of the guns of Pointe du Hoc in June 1944. (NARA)

Back on Omaha Beach, as the 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Battalion, B Company patrol made their way back to B Company's position at 0930, the patrol was hit by heavy artillery fire. The Rangers reported this to be 88 mm artillery fire. At the same time on the southern edges of the same open fields, Captain Raaen and members of his Headquarters Company recorded taking cover due to the incoming fire. "Suddenly, I heard a low whine, not at all like the noise the artillery had been making as it passed over our heads toward the beach. No, this noise was coming straight at us. We all hit the dirt as four or five shells detonated in our field about thirty yards away."<sup>6</sup> McIlwain's patrol recovered from the shelling and they assessed their wounded. S/Sgt McIlwain was wounded in the arm with shrapnel, and PFC Bernard Akers, one of S/Sgt Hull's BAR men was wounded. At this point, PFC Johnson sprang into action tending to the wounded, bandaging up S/Sgt McIlwain, who at first refused to be evacuated and PFC Akers with an unknown injury.

T-5 Elmo E. Banning was killed having been hit directly by the artillery fire. T/5 Elmo Banning would never again see his girl again that he had gone AWOL to see in Sedan, Kansas just prior to shipping to England. Elmo had spent as much time with his girl as he could for nearly his entire visit home. He even took his younger brother to the drive-in-theater on a date. When the local County Sherriff called on the Banning residence, it was a complete surprise to his mother and father, Mr. and Mrs. E. H. Banning, that Elmo Banning had been AWOL. The Sheriff did not arrest the Ranger, but told him to get back to the post ASAP. Even after that, Banning spent one or two more days at home before returning to his post. The Banning family remembered his mother crying over him as he told her that he would be going on a dangerous assignment and he might never return. That was the last time they ever saw their son. His family would be devastated by the news concerning the loss of their son, particularly his parents. The family would receive more devastating news when they were informed that his brother Lyle had been severely wounded by a hand grenade shortly after Elmo died. Lyle had part of his leg blown off and injured his leg, and was sent home after being treated for these injuries. Figure 265 attempts to trace the path taken by 2<sup>nd</sup> Platoon during D-Day.

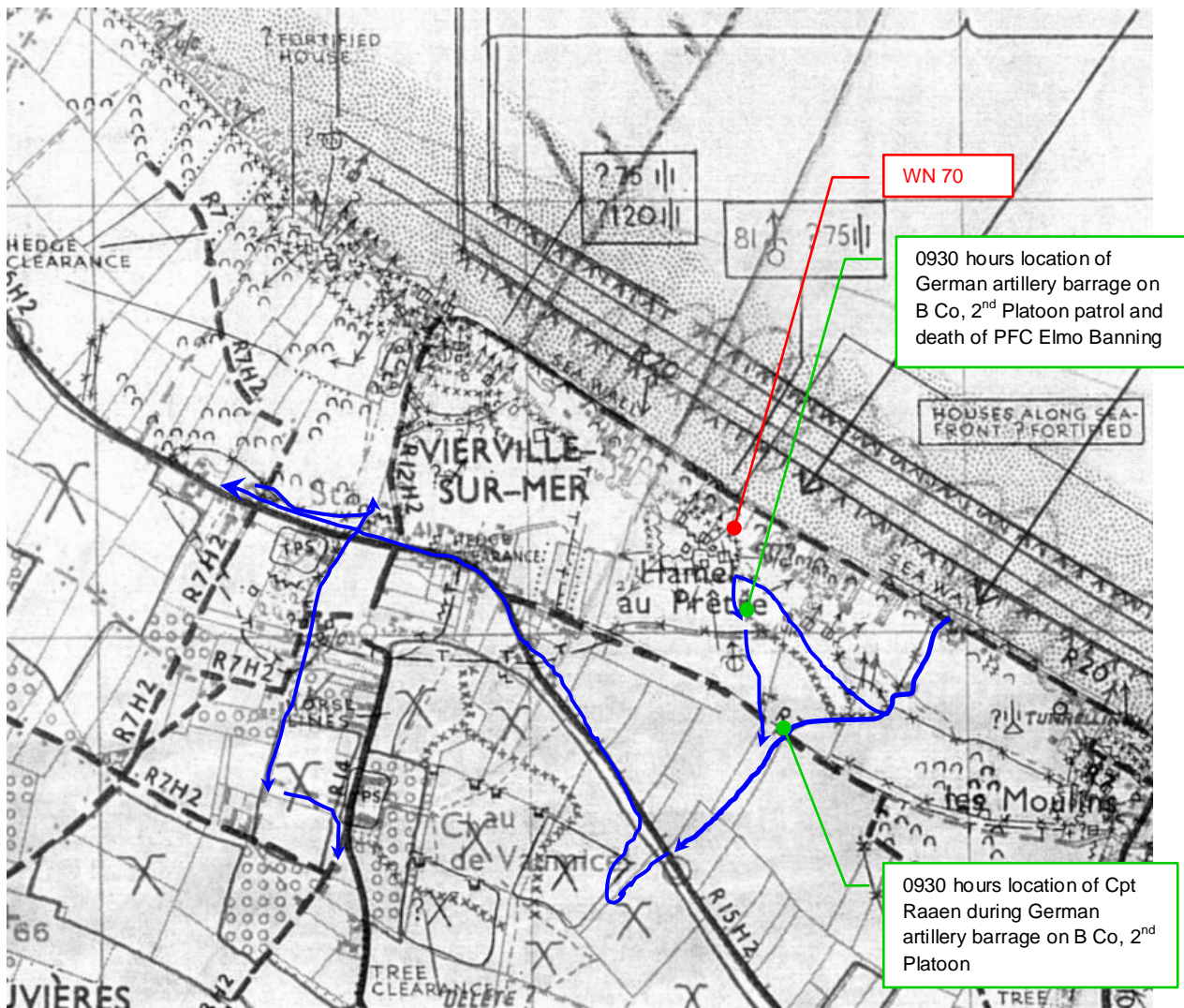


Figure 265: Path of 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company 2<sup>nd</sup> Platoon on D-Day overlain on German defenses mapping

After attending to their injuries and taking initial care of their fallen comrade, the patrol made their way back to their company. At this point, B Company had advanced to the coastal road between St Laurent and Vierville. The company was preparing to conduct their assault as the lead battalion element toward Vierville. When the patrol found Captain Whittington, he was at the head of the column with Lt. Colonel Schneider, so they reported what they found regarding Colonel Canham to both officers.

It is very important to note that various accounts recorded by Carl West after the war relay a very different chain of events that led to Banning's death. The story presented above is a compilation of accounts from General Raaen, which is inclusive of discussions between he and McIlwain in the years following the war and also includes other sources. West recorded his accounts of the day both to Ryan and in an interview to the National D-Day Museum in New Orleans after the war. His accounts placed the platoon through Vierville near noon. He told of heading west with the Company and being held up by German fire. As a result of this machine gun fire, Captain Whittington ordered 2nd platoon south of Vierville to outflank the position. He went on to say that after some indecision by 2nd Platoon's Lieutenant, the men were static in an orchard. Here is his story:

“We went through Vierville sur Mer, and proceeded on the coastal highway towards Point du Hoc. Now we had just gotten out of town towards the point, I suppose maybe four, five hundred yards, and the characteristic hedgerow configuration to our left along the road, suddenly stopped, and you had open fields to our left, and as our point men started to go down the road past this bare spot, they came under machine gun fire. Fortunately, these machine gunners weren't very good. They didn't hit anybody. These guys merely hit the ground and crawled back to the cover of the hedgerow. So we



were at that point pretty much held up. Now this was, I suppose, I have no idea what time of day it was, none at all. But in any event, I'm going to guess that it might have been, oh, possibly noon or so.

Now, at this time, apparently A-Company of the 5th Rangers had actually made it past this open space without any problem, and of course, we were stopped cold by that machine gun. So I was present when a messenger came back from our company commander and he instructed our platoon officer to go down the hedgerow perpendicular to the road, get behind that machine gun, and get rid of it. OK, now this lieutenant that we had, I'm not going to mention his name, he had come in as a replacement for an officer who was injured in training, and he was a real goof-off. This guy was from somewhere else. But anyway, he was a platoon leader. So we started going down the hedgerow, supposedly, now I heard the orders. We were supposed to go down the hedgerow, get in behind the gunner to the flank other to the rear of it and get rid of it. So at that point, when the platoon had started down this hedgerow to accomplish this, I went to the rear of the platoon to inform the platoon sergeant what in the heck we were doing. When I got to the rear of the {illegible}, I find out our platoon sergeant wasn't there. Nobody knew what happened to him. So I told Leroy Anderson, who was a section leader, what we were up to, and then I went back towards the head of the platoon. Now, instead of flanking, or getting that gunner from the rear, this lieutenant apparently went off his rocker, because we just kept going inland. I wouldn't want to guess how far, but I know this-much: When we had come to the 1st and then the 2nd perpendicular hedgerow, which would have given us cover to get in behind this machine gun, he didn't take off to the right at all. He kept going inland. We finally came to a country road. It was unimproved gravel road, and our point man had come to the road, and halted the {illegible} and came back and told the officer that we had run into this road. Well at the time, we were more or less static in an orchard.

Now, shortly after we had halted there, a hell of a barrage of artillery hit that orchard, and we received one dead man, my good friend Elmo Banning was killed, and the first section leader, Sergeant McIlwain was hit in the right arm pretty bad, and when the smoke cleared and we got ourselves together again, we checked Elmo, determined he was dead. The medic we had, Johnson (Private First Class Jessie W. Johnson) -- hell of a good man -- Johnson fixed up Mac's arm as well as he could. By the way, that's another thing we carried. We carried 4 in our first aid kit, we carried 4 morphine syringes, we carried a large package of sulfa powder, sulphanilimide. That was a real wonder drug of World War II rather than penicillin, which came along later. The sulfanilimide was a sulfaguanadine drug line was what really saved lives in the early part of the war. And of course, we had 2 large bandages in there besides. But Johnson gave Mac a shot of morphine, and fixed his arm up as well as he-' could, and about this time on this gravel road approximately 20 yards to our left where another hedgerow took off on the other side of this gravel road, here comes out some U.S. officers. I think it was a captain and a couple of lieutenants, and they asked us who we were and what our unit was. And we told them we were a platoon from the 5th Rangers. Well, he says, "Who's your leader?" We sent our lieutenant, the nameless one, and here is Colonel Cannon (Canham), CP. Colonel Canham was the commander of the 116th Regimental Combat team. Him and his headquarters staff apparently had managed quite nicely to get up to their CP, their planned CP which was a chateau, except just on the other side of that orchard, along that gravel road. And the only trouble was, the CP was 4 Germans, so Colonel Canham and his staff sort of took protection back in this apex of this hedgerow, and of course, Colonel Canham, since what he had there I was himself and maybe 3 or 4 commissioned officers and a couple of enlisted men, and he was isolated out there, he was just sitting there with his handful of men and nobody around but Germans, so he, as the official history says, we were impressed as his CP guard. Now that's a big damn laugh. But anyway, we were impressed, I'll guarantee you that. So what we did, we more or less stayed in that area. It had fairly good cover, although within spitting distance, practically, was a chateau full of Germans, and he was trying to make up his mind what he wanted to do..."<sup>22</sup>

After careful study and consideration of unit records, various texts and in conjunction with consulting with my sources, I believe the former account to be more accurate as to the death of T/5 Banning. I was compelled to present both accounts here.

While the men were busy on top of the crest, Copeland found himself tagged by medics for evacuation on three separate occasions. He had taken a good look at his legs once he returned to the seawall and found the bullet entered through his shin and exited through the calf. He saw the damage done to his left heel. He did not know until sometime later when x-rayed that this wound left the bullet lodged in the toes of the foot. He was extremely upset that he was unable to carry on the fight. As a result, he resolved to make himself useful on the beach in any way he could until he was good and ready to evacuate. He cleaned rifles, weapons and other equipment for soldiers who needed that sort of help. He was evacuated on the evening of June 7. Once evacuated to England, the doctors wanted to amputate based on the tissue damage, but JR held his ground on keeping his left foot. His story would continue and is fully and beautifully told in his biography.<sup>7</sup>

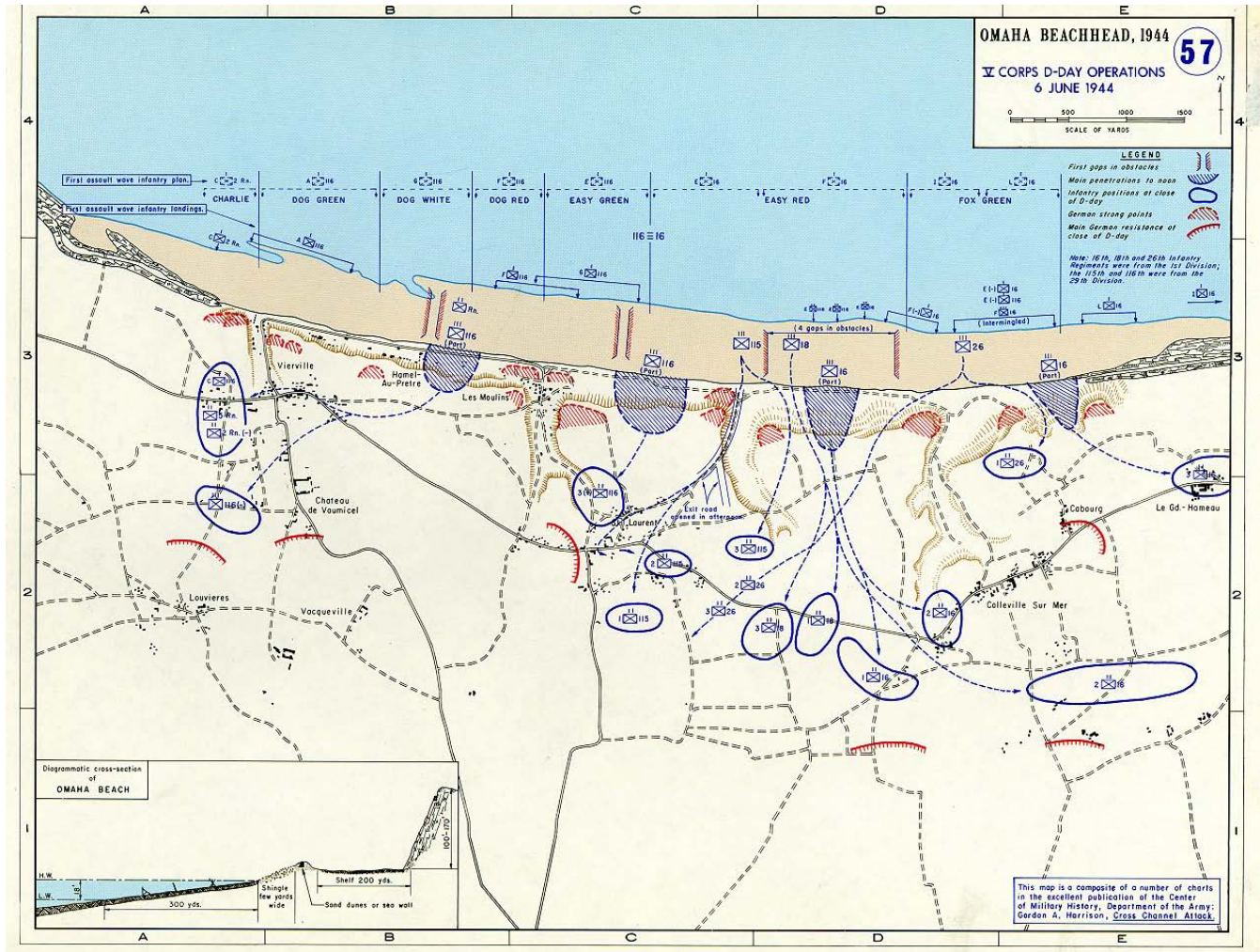


Figure 266: U.S. map showing Allied advances and German defenses by midday on D-Day.

The 352nd Infantry Division was engaged in the fight for its life, a fight they would lose. The 726th Grenadier Regiment all of a sudden had its hands full as members of the 29th Infantry Division and the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion began to move through the fields overlooking the beaches in and around Vierville. The first to feel the pressure was the Command Post of the 11/726th GR. They were located at a chateau named Le Manoir de Than, located in the heart of Vierville near the church visible from the coast and often referred to in D-Day accounts of Vierville. Figure 267 shows this structure. The mansion was burned on June 7, 1944. The Americans razed the mansion to draw materials for their roads in September 1944 in the absence of the owners who were in Paris.<sup>8</sup> The mansion was never rebuilt. Several of these men were captured or retreated in the face of the 116th Infantry Regiment, B Company under the command of Lt. Taylor as he made his way through town to his rally point southwest of Vierville, followed shortly thereafter and joined briefly by the 5th Rangers Lt. Parker and his platoon from A Company at 1200 hours.



Figure 267: Postcard showing the Manoir of Than. This structure was used by the Kommandatur Vierville PC and the 11th Grenadier Co. Germans defending the coast Vierville. (public domain)<sup>8</sup>

To the west were the men of the 9/726th GR at Castle Gruchy. These men, including elements of 11/726th GR and elements of the 30th Mobile Brigade moved east toward Vierville and took up defensive positions on the western edge of Vierville on a north to south front, and integrating the minefields already in place as part of their positions. At least three trucks carrying elements of the 6/916th GR and possibly 7/916th GR reinforced the German positions against the expanding American beachhead from the south in a line east to west roughly from WN 69 south of St Laurent to the fields just south of what is labeled on most period maps as Chateaux de Vaumicel (correctly known as the Ormel Farm). These German units effectively set up fields of fire utilizing the hedgerows as part of their strategy. They were in place by 1100 hours and engaged Lt. Taylor's men at that time south of the Ormel farm.<sup>9</sup>

Also while S/Sgt McIlwain's patrol was attempting to make contact with Colonel Canham, the remainder of B Company set out as the lead element of the battalion from the cliff area in their advance. Their new objective was to avoid Vierville if possible assaulting to the south and then to the west bypassing the village. This movement occurred between 0900 and 0930 hours. They followed the north-south hedgerows just east of the WN 70 area and where the Rangers made their ascent. The Platoon moved in column formation with flank protection and by using scouts. Upon reaching an unimproved roadway the Platoon began to move generally west to Vierville until naval fire hindered their movements. Lt. Pepper and his 1st Platoon had intersected a point along the coastal highway and moved south from a point approximately one mile east of Vierville at 0930. This was the same time T/5 Banning perished just north of them. Lt. Pepper and his men found themselves under machine gun fire from the 916th GR located in wheat fields to their south. Patrols were sent south in an attempt to locate the firing position. Captain Whittington ordered 1st Platoon to eliminate this threat. Whittington joined with Pepper and his men in a move south to engage this target. They witnessed 20 Germans on the move and incorrectly assumed the men were moving or repositioning the MG-42. The gun opened fire resulting in a tactical withdrawal from the field until a squad of two Rangers was able to outflank and kill the seven Germans in the position. The other 5th Ranger Companies met the same German machine gun resistance in fields and hedgerows to the east of B Company. Moments after this engagement, B Company was struck by mortar fire, and they retreated north to the coastal highway. The War Department Notes records that the Rangers made it to the highway just steps ahead of the incoming mortar rounds. Soon after the Company reached the highway, another MG-42 opened up on them killing the BAR team of 1st Platoon.<sup>10</sup>



It would have been about this time that McIlwain's patrol met up again with the Company and made their report. Captain Whittington abandoned the efforts to envelope Vierville and instead took B Company straight down the coastal highway into and through Vierville. The rest of the battalion had not followed B Company through Vierville. They surprisingly faced no enemy fire and saw neither friendly unit nor foe as they moved through town. The lead elements of the Company reached Vierville at 1100 hours. PFC Weast recounted his memory of this movement along the coastal highway into Vierville. "One of them had been hit by -- it looked to me like he must have taken a direct hit by a mortar shell or an artillery shell, because it blew this guy all to hell. All he was was a pile of ventrals and shredded GI clothing. I mean, this guy was a mess. I mean, you couldn't even recognize where in the hell his head was. And we had a few others that were hit by rifle fire along that road, although we took out the positions from which the fire originated, and we continued on this coastal road into Vierville sur Mer."<sup>2</sup> The Company was able to move through the village. They noted the church steeple in town as being an ideal location for artillery observers or snipers. They noted the position for the Navy to target.

B Company left their engagement with the prepared defense of the 916th GR, and had moved west right into the prepared defenses of the 726th GR about 500 yards west of town. The 726th held their fire on Pepper's lead elements until they had passed, then opened up on the main body of 1st Platoon in a hail of MG fire. 1st Platoon deployed in a field to the south of the coastal highway and to the west of the route to Exit D-1 and mounted a hasty defense. Weast wrote "Now we had just gotten out of town towards the point, I suppose maybe four, five hundred yards, and the characteristic hedgerow configuration to our left along the road, suddenly stopped, and you had open fields to our left, and as our point men started to go down the road past this bare spot, they came under machine gun fire. Fortunately, these machine gunners weren't very good. They didn't hit anybody."<sup>2</sup> The War Department Publication Omaha Beachhead reported "Enemy machine-gun positions were well camouflaged and hard to locate; every time a move was started across open fields, it was checked by fire from German rifles and automatic weapons at ranges of two to three hundred yards."<sup>4</sup>

At that time, General Cota walked into the area from the road out of Vierville. Here, a moment captured in Ryan's work occurred when he asked Pepper and Whittington what was holding them up. Pepper, Whittington and 1st Sgt Thornhill were sheltering in a ditchline. Pepper replied "Snipers!" Cota retorted "There aren't any snipers here". Then a sniper shot rang close to the General, to which he looked at the men and replied, "Well maybe there is one" and walked away.<sup>10</sup> This occurred around noon.

At this point, B Company was taking fire from three sides, so Whittington retreated to the east to some houses, where 1st Platoon was able to create a proper defense. Whittington then ordered Lt. Gregory to take 2nd Platoon south along the roads and hedgerows to outflank the positions and kill the Germans. PFC Weast had heard the orders from the Captain and worked along the column to the rear to inform the Platoon Sergeant, Tech Sgt Warich. Weast was unable to find the Sergeant, so he informed Leroy Anderson, one of the Section Leaders of their orders, then Weast returned to the front of the column. At this point, Lt. Gregory was reported to have made a mistake as he proceeded well inland in the direction of Louviers. When the platoon came to the first, and then the second perpendicular hedgerows that would have provided cover and concealment and a route west, the Lt kept heading south. The NCOs recalled questioning this decision. Then the platoon reached a gravel country road adjacent to an orchard. Aerial photos show orchards and other features fitting this description just south of the Ormel Farm. The platoon passed a heavy weapons unit of the 116th Infantry, and then the War Department Notes record that naval gunfire resulted in two casualties and a short halt. It is possible that this is the conflicting shelling relayed in the Weast accounts of the death of T/5 Banning discussed earlier. The War Department Notes go on to say that 2nd Platoon continued south to the first dirt east-west road south of the Ormel Farm.

Back in the underground shelter at Castle Gruchy, the first German wounded arrived. Madame de Loÿs recalled seeing her first wounded soldier. The German soldier had a horrible head wound, having lost a portion of his skull. She recounted that she was unable to take her eyes off the young man as she watched the membrane covering his brain that was throbbing. She was both amazed and horrified. The young man was urged by the nurses not to touch the wound as that would kill him. Madame de Loÿs took action and bound the young man's arms to the stretcher to help him. Through all of this, the hours wore on. The noise was reported as being Hell; the earth trembling, vibrating and shaking under the force of the explosions caused by the Allied naval bombardment from the USS *Texas* and her sister warships. The battle on the beach became apparent as it offered a new series of sounds and percussion once it began. At times the occupants of the shelter would feel the force of terrifying shockwaves as some of the

salvos found their mark close to the location.

At around 11:00 a.m., Guy Loÿs went up and out to the manor outbuildings stores in order to fetch some food provisions for the civilians and others in the shelter. He was stopped by Captain Grünschlöss who asked what he was doing. Satisfied, the Captain told the young man to secure whatever was needed. Captain Grünschlöss had formed his men in a defensive point and screen on the coastal road where they held the advance of the Rangers and the 116th Regimental Combat Team, C Company for the remainder of the day. The Captain was killed shortly thereafter a mere 800 meters east of the castle, likely from fire from the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion that was now advancing just west of Vierville along the coastal road. Madame de Loÿs remained at the shelter helping the German nurses attend to the at least twenty wounded she recalled seeing. Some of these men likely had fallen wounded to Ranger fire based on location and the reported time. Hitler had installed more fanatical officers at the Chateau des Isles, just south of Vierville and west of the Ormel Farm.<sup>11</sup>

General Cota and the command group of the 116th passed through Vierville about noon on its way to the prearranged CP location at the Chateau de Vaumicel.<sup>10</sup> Back at the hedgerows around the Ormel Farm (Figure 268) off of the previously described gravel road, some U.S. officers approached the Rangers as they began to move. The Ranger accounts refer to a captain and a couple of lieutenants. The officers inquired as to the identity of the Rangers. The Rangers responded, then the officers asked the men who was the leader of the group. Lt. Gregory then met



Figure 268: Ormel Farm (Open Source)

with Colonel Canham who not knowing the situation of his Regimental Combat Team, ordered the platoon to remain with him and to serve as guard to his Command Post. The Germans had not been so kind as to vacate the Chateau that was to serve as the Command Post at that time. The Rangers deployed in a defensive formation. They were within weapons range of the German held chateau, and their position had good cover. PFC West recounted the event to Ryan accordingly:

We turned off the road and started inland. After crossing the third line of hedgerows most of the boys felt that Gregory had gone off his rocker, one guy suggested that Gregory must have thought that the Germans were firing that gun from Paris. After going about another quarter mile inland some of the boys decided to talk to Gregory to find out what he was doing, so we paused in an

orchard. It was while we were halted in the orchard that an artillery barrage hit us, mostly tree bursts, Elmo Banning was killed and Sgt. Mc Ilwain got a splintered forearm. Next to the orchard was an unimproved road which we started to explore, when we saw a GI looking out from a hedgerow extending east from the road. He asked who we were and who was in charge...<sup>3</sup>



Figure 269: German bicycle soldiers in Normandy (German Federal Archives)

The Rangers next reported a German heading their way from the chateau along the aforementioned gravel road on a bicycle (Figure 269). This German was a dispatch rider or messenger with a case slung over his shoulder and was only armed with a pistol. As the rider closed on the Ranger position, he realized that every weapon was trained on him and reacted with surprise. He stopped the bike and fumbled to get rid of the dispatch case. Some of the platoon members were reported to have thought the German was reaching for his pistol and shot him with between nine and ten rounds. The German fell to the ground face first, wounded, not dead. He was lying in a pool of his own blood and was struggling to breath as he lay in it gurgling. Weast wrote in his D-Day Museum interview:

“He laid face down near the edge of the road, and he was bleeding profusely. The blood gathered under his face, and he was breathing into it, and you got this (demonstrates sound) sort of thing, you know, and it was nerve-wracking as hell. One of the fellows, I don't know who in the hell it was, committed an act of mercy. He went over to this guy and he put a bullet right through the back of his head, and that was the end of this fellow. I'm sure that guy couldn't have been saved -- my God, he had, like I say, he must have been hit with about 9 bullets, and this was our first realization of how tenuous human life is, because as the war went on, I realized the damage and the massive injuries that could be inflicted on a human being without killing him, and this was my first taste of that.”<sup>22</sup>

Around mid-day Pfc. Harry Parley, US 29th Division, 116th Infantry Regiment located south of Vierville reported in an interview hearing the sound of tracked vehicles approaching his position. He ran the other way until he could



find shelter in a ditch line. The U.S.S. *Texas* reported that from 1117 to 1128 hours they engaged targets south of town headed north on the road between Formigny to Vierville. The movement of these armor units had been reported to the *Texas* by a Spitfire spotter aircraft. The 14" naval gunfire was reported effective at the conclusion of the salvos. The battleship salvos would have been fired roughly over the heads of the Rangers. The German unit headed north to Vierville was at least a portion of the Panzerjäger Abteilung of the 352nd Infantry Division. This unit had one company of 14 Marder II 38's, 1 company of 10 Stummggeschütz III's, and one company of 9 motorized 3.7 cm Flak armored half tracks. The result of the big guns firing at this armored unit reportedly resulted in their turning east to Bayeux to counter the British breakthrough there. This foiled counterattack is often overlooked. Had these armored units reached the Colonel Canham's position protected in part by 2nd Platoon of B Company, 5th Rangers, the results could have been disastrous for the Americans protecting the south flank of Vierville as they had no heavy weapons available except the naval and air assets.

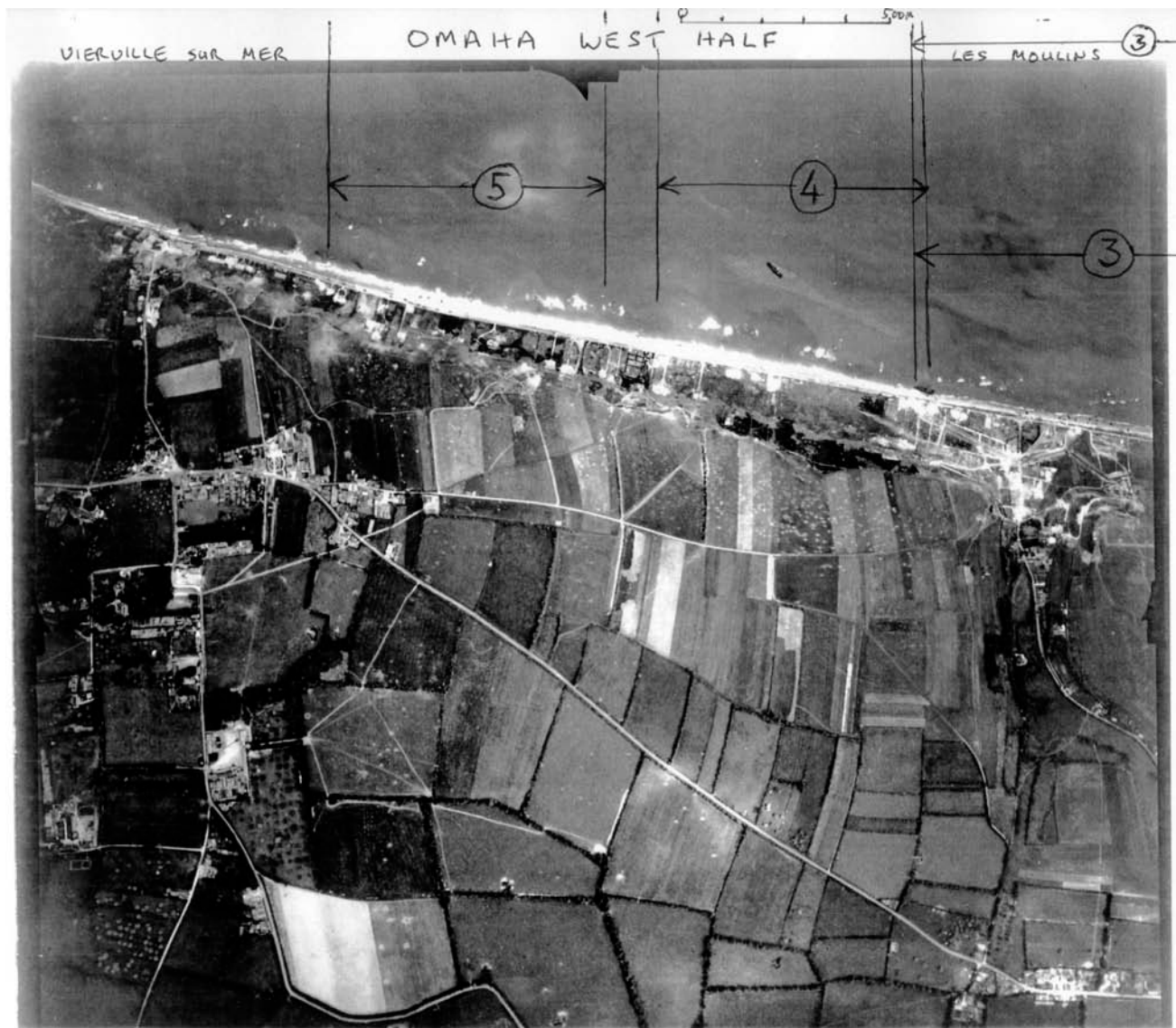


Figure 270: Aerial reconnaissance photo taken at 1215 hrs June 6 from 3000 feet. S/Sgt Hull and his unit are somewhere to the far left edge of this picture. (NARA)

Lt. Jack Shea, Aide-de-camp to General Cota wrote of the near point blank naval bombardment by the U.S.S. *Texas*' main battery and other vessels of US Navy of the D-1 Draw.

“The concussion from the bursts of these guns seemed to make the pavement of the street in Vierville actually rise beneath our feet in a “bucking sensation.” This bombardment occurred just north of B Company 2nd Platoon. The *Texas* had moved to within 3000 yards from shore for this

bombardment of six rounds at 1223 hours. She was supported by several destroyers that moved close enough to shore to bottom out as they fired. This barrage ended the German resistance and fire from WN 71 and WN 72. By the middle of the morning prisoners had been taken not only from the 126th Regiment but from all three regiments of the 352d Division.”<sup>4</sup>

Of the area in and around Vierville in the morning and afternoon of D-Day, Corporal Gale Beccue wrote "We have been observed throughout the afternoon. A man traveling alone drew sniper fire, but any concentration brought the mortars and artillery".<sup>12</sup>

With the addition of 2nd Platoon, Colonel Canham found himself in a situation where he had a 1,500 yard front to cover, with a total of 35 to 40 men to cover the front and themselves from counterattack to the south. The Rangers informed him that his men were stuck on the beach and strewn out across the landing zones from Dog Green, White and Red. The men expected a German armored counterattack. They found themselves falling into poor spirits.

The Piprel boys retreated to Vierville ending up at the farm of Louis Le Terrier known as the Ormel Farm on the road to Damigni. This route was a main north south route used by the Germans to move men and materials in order to reinforce or resupply the coastal defenses. The boys had only been at the farm a half hour when they encountered their first Americans. The soldiers offered a pack of Lucky Strike cigarettes to the French civilians. The group of civilians remained at the farm taking cover in a stable on the grounds. It is likely these boys were at the farm while B Company, 2nd Platoon protected the southern flank of Vierville for Colonel Canham.<sup>11</sup>

One of the outpost positions for the platoon was at an intersection of the gravel road and the paved main route leading south from Vierville. The chateau faced the gravel road. Blacky Morgan with his BAR and Weast with his M1 Garand rifle manned the position. The Germans at the Chateau made the next move. They exited the structure and loaded wounded onto an old two wheeled horse-buggy, then formed in a column of 2's to move out. There were two men pushing and two men pulling. They proceeded toward the crossroads with weapons slung over their shoulders. They were repositioning and clearly were not aware of the Rangers presence. 2nd Platoon waited until the 35-40 men were well within range at a distance of ten yards. Then the Rangers stepped out of their concealed positions, challenging the Germans. All of the Germans immediately surrendered. Weast wrote "Now, with this kind of a situation, what in the hell do you do with prisoners?"<sup>2</sup>

The captured soldiers were gathered together in an orchard and a man was put on them to guard them. Attempts were made to interrogate the prisoners, leading the Rangers to realize their guests were mostly not German. They recorded that one or two of the NCOs were German, but the remainder of the men were Hungarians, Romanians, Russians and other nationalities. The German NCO was described as middle-aged and happy to be a prisoner. He relayed to his captors that he was concerned of a German counterattack. The Rangers sent out numerous patrols in groups of two to three men to look for additional friendly forces and to detect German activity in their immediate vicinity. These patrols went out on the flanks, south to Louviers and back to Vierville. The Rangers received word the beaches had been closed to additional landings, adding to their sense of dread. Weast described the men as having "very bad spirits."<sup>2</sup> They fully expected a German armored attack. It appears as if the members of the platoon had no idea that the expected armored counterattack had been broken by U.S.S. *Texas* earlier. 2nd Platoon found themselves engaged in multiple skirmishes around the CP the remainder of the day near the Ormel Farm.

As night fell, the Rangers of the platoon contemplated what to do with the prisoners who clearly outnumbered them. There was serious discussion about just shooting the prisoners. Ching remembers this and relayed his memory of it to me. The cooler heads of the more senior NCOs quelled this discussion. The men were bedded down for sleep in the orchard laying side-by-side. The Rangers communicated to a few of the prisoners who spoke English that they couldn't see the men, but they could hear them. If any of them made noise or motions, the Rangers would machine gun the whole group of them with the BARs. The Rangers posted a BAR man at the head of the sleeping formation. Weast recorded "They got the message loud and clear, and they lay there and believe me, those were some damn quiet enemy. Didn't hear a tick all night long from these people." Ching the told me the prisoners were marched to the beach the following morning. None of the B Company, 2nd Platoon Rangers slept the night of June 6.<sup>2</sup>

At 1700 the main Ranger force came up and plans for an attack were started, then called off later in the evening.

Colonel Canham decided not to press the effort along the coastal highway toward Pointe du Hoc, since the 5th Rangers constituted the larger part of his forces for defense of Vierville. {*Omaha Beachhead*, pg 94} Colonel was still trying to collect intelligence on the disposition of his forces. The Ranger patrols reported back to him as they came across friendly forces, and gathered up straggling soldiers as individuals or in a couple instances groups of up to five men. These men were consolidated, taken to the Command Post and added to the defensive perimeter protecting this portion of the beachhead. “At 1830, Lt. Colonel Metcalf, CO of the 1st Battalion, 116th reached the CP. For the first time Colonel Canham, CO of the 116th Infantry, learned of the high casualties to the 1st Battalion, 116th on Omaha Dog Green. He also learned his 2nd and 3rd Battalions were located near St. Laurent, some two and one half miles to the east.” (Raaen – 1981) The majority of men to be brought in were soldiers who had shown leadership and initiative to advance inland on their own. Like S/Sgt McIlwain, Colonel Canham had suffered a wound to an arm earlier in the day. McIlwain remained with the platoon for several hours, until finally the men had to almost fight him to get him to go back to the medics. Canham was not bandaged very well. He looked rough, but in a move demonstrating great leadership, he remained at his post to maintain command and control over the tenuous situation south of Vierville. These Rangers came to respect him deeply per all accounts.

“But Colonel Cannon was one hell of a man. He had a hell of a situation there. As I say, here he was according to the projections, we were supposed to expect German armored counter attacks, and here he was with probably, I know less than 50 men, and 1500 yards of front, and of course, the word had gotten around apparently that nothing more was coming in on the beaches, and what had come in was either sunk or stalled on the beach, so you can damn well imagine the mental anguish this poor bastard was enduring” wrote Weast.<sup>2</sup>

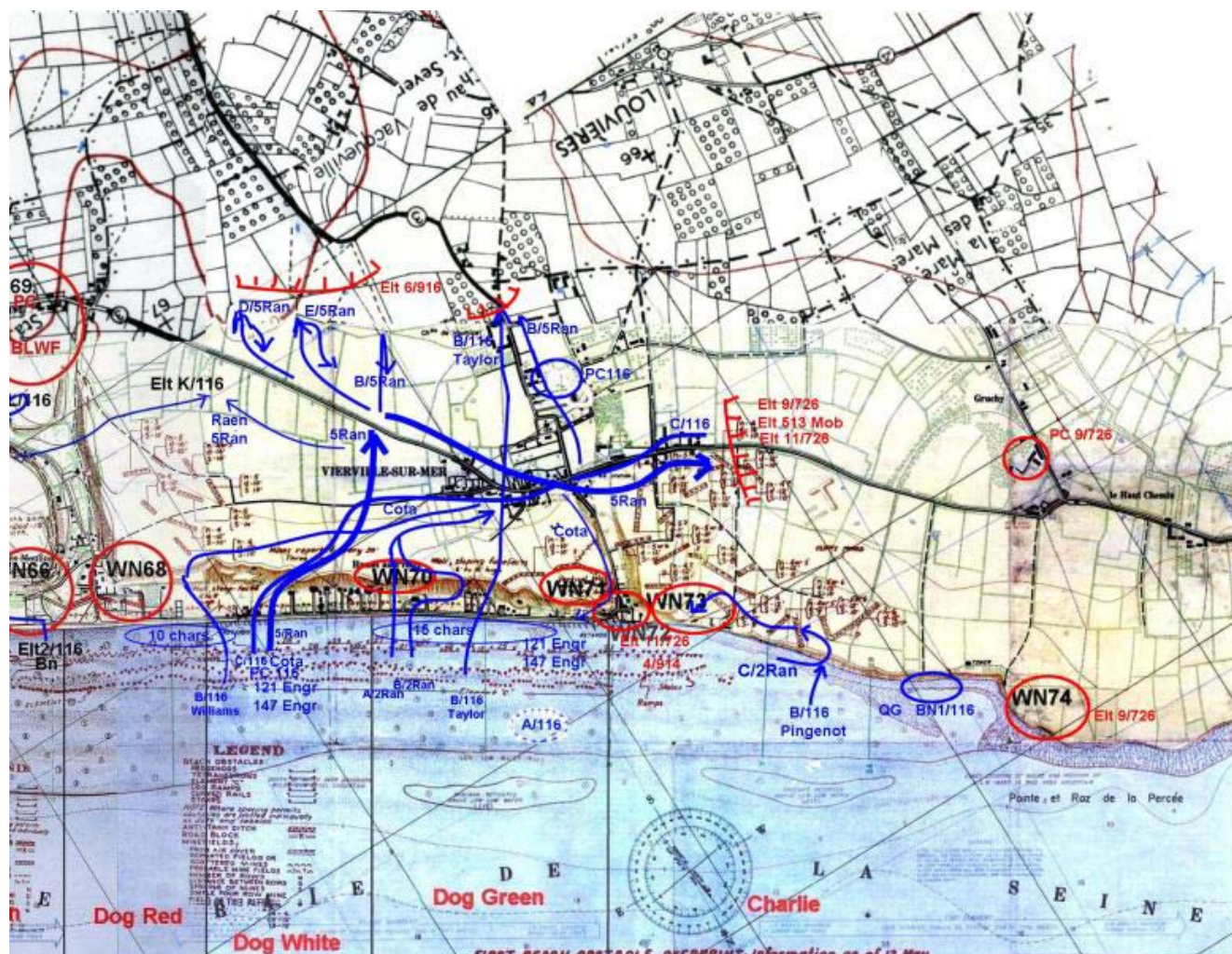


Figure 271: Map from Free Vierville website showing American advances and German defenses on D-Day on western Omaha Beach overlain on BIGOT map. (Free Vierville website)



Of the firefights that the men found themselves in with German forces, the Rangers realized an advantage the Germans enjoyed over them. The German ammunition used smokeless powder. After a four round burst of fire from a BAR, the U.S. forces found their weapon left a cloud of smoke announcing their position. The Germans remained hidden unless the muzzle flash was observed. "At nightfall the Vierville area was the weakest part of the beachhead. The 5th Ranger Battalion, remnants of the 1st Battalion, 116th, and a few small elements of engineer units and of the 2d and 3d Battalions (a group from Company K arrived in the evening and was used for headquarters security) were holding defensive positions west and southwest of the village."<sup>4</sup> The first vehicles, tanks of the 743rd Tank Battalion, reached Vierville from the beach just before sunset, around 2200 hours.<sup>6</sup>

Evidence of the German assessment opposing the U.S. Rangers on June 6 was stated in a recollection by Karl Wegner, Grenadier Regiment 914 who faced off against the Rangers at Pointe du Hoc. He had earlier that day faced members of the 29th Infantry Division and Rangers in the Vierville area before being reassigned to the Pointe. He wrote:

"Our group was kept together as a heavy MG team under the direct command of the ZugFührer. I was still Nr 1, Willi Nr 2 and Helmuth was now our Nr 3, the ammunition carrier and rear security. We were told that a new gun commander would be given us. Helmuth's wound gave him much pain but he steadfastly refused to go to the Verbandplatz {aid station}. We cleaned it and changed the bandage when we could. Since this morning, we were opposing the Americans' famous Rangers. They were far better soldiers than us. We couldn't make any headway against them and they were too few in number to make a big attack against us. If they did it would have been bad for us."<sup>9</sup>

S/Sgt Hull and his B Company, 2nd Platoon members had largely survived their ordeal on D-Day. The German POWs held by 2<sup>nd</sup> Platoon were marched to the beach under guard the next morning. I finally had uncovered the true story about my grandfather and what he contributed to D-Day through understanding the actions of this platoon. S/Sgt Hull was not a replacement. He was a respected member amongst a very special group of men who did something amazing. The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion was at the right place at the right time and helped their beleaguered brothers of the 29th Infantry Division survive at a moment when they were needed the most.

The day was not without cost. Overall the Company Morning Report listed the following casualties on D-Day: S-Sgt William F. Reilly, Tec 5 Elmo E. Banning, Tec 5 Clinton O. Read, Pfc Nickolas Wassil, and Pvt Raymond F. Wilhelm as killed in action. S/Sgt James R. Copeland, S/Sgt Walter N. McIlwain, Sgt Dalton L. Boudreaux, and Tec 5 Ashley R. Kimball as severely wounded in action. Clayton E. Gardner was listed as Severely Injured in Action (SIA). The members of B Company, 2nd Platoon had fared better than most units engaged in their sector in terms of casualties. S/Sgt Copeland, PFC Bernard Akers and S/Sgt McIlwain had been wounded. 2nd Platoon had lost PFC Elmo Banning.

A letter was caringly prepared and sent to the parents of Elmo Banning by the members of his 2nd Section of 2nd Platoon (Figure 272). This moving letter was sent to me during my research by PFC Banning's nephew, Mr. Elmo Banning. It contains many of the signatures of the men who served with PFC Banning from their time at Camp Forrest as noted in Chapter 5. The signatories were: PFC Francis Healey, Sgt Peter L. Cardinali, S/Sgt Joseph Surrowitz, Cpl Paul L. Winslow, PFC Thomas Devlin, PFC Randall Ching, PFC Dalton L. Boudreaux, S/Sgt Edward J. McEleney, PFC Harvey M. Montgomery, PFC (illegible), Tech/Sgt Chester B Warich (Platoon Sergeant). I believe the discrepancy in time recorded in the letter to be a typo not taking into account a transition from English time to local French time as explained to me by General Raaen. The time of death of Elmo Banning appears to have been at 0930 hours in relation to the times used throughout this chapter. The facts of the letter otherwise support the events attributed to his death in the fields near WN 70. In studying the letter, I estimated that based on the handwriting, it was likely written by Sgt. Boudreaux. This was later confirmed to me by Sgt. Boudreaux's daughter, Cheryl.

July 25<sup>th</sup>, 1944

Dear Mr &amp; Mrs Banning,

We, the undersigned, witnessed the death of your beloved departed son, Tec 5 Elmo E. Banning - 31576256.

We desire to inform you of the circumstances of which this noble & brave American met his untimely death.

Elmo was killed while actively engaging the enemy on June 6<sup>th</sup>. To the best of my knowledge, he was dead at 0830.

A German 88 mm projectile killed him instantly. We assure you Elmo did not suffer a single moment.

He had received Holy Communion prior to embarking on the ship which brought us to wrestle the Nazis off the beaches.

His body now lies in an American cemetery around the vicinity of Vierville - Sur - Mere, which is a small village about 15 miles from Soigny. The cemetery is nearly kept, & he received burial services accordingly.

We don't know how the Bolten kid was killed.

Elmo is sadly missed by his organization. He was a nice lad, & served honorably.

With deepest sympathy & regrets, we remain at your service.

Witnesses:

P.F.C. Francis J. Healy  
 Sgt. Peter Cardinali  
 S/ Sgt. Joseph Surovitz  
 Cpl. Paul Winslow  
 P.C. Thomas B. Benin  
 P.F.C. Randall King

Sgt. D.L. Biedrauf  
 Sgt. Ed. McCleary  
 P.F.C. Harvey Montgomery  
 P.C. Ralph Sankov's  
 Sgt. Christ B. Harsh

Figure 272: Letter sent by members of B Company to family of Elmo Banning upon his death (Courtesy of nephew Elmo Banning)

From a strategic perspective, and not a tactical one, the previously thought out plan for Operation Overlord on Omaha Beach had worked. This is in consideration of the tremendous human loss, the communications failures and the other challenges of combat on that day. The American forces had done better than the projected casualties reported to Eisenhower by the Allied planners prior to invasion. This stands in contradiction to the feelings and remembrances of many of the men who had to fight their way off the beaches that day. I recognize this is little comfort to the men who lived it and to the families who suffered the consequences of it. The Rangers on Pointe du Hoc destroyed their objective at great cost. The 5th Rangers enacted their Secondary objective of landing on Omaha Beach and protected the flank of the 29th Infantry Division at Vierville Sur Mer as planned after higher command saw the danger unfolding for the beachhead. "The decisive factor was leadership. Wherever an advance was made, it depended on the presence of some few individuals, officers and noncommissioned officers, who inspired, encouraged, or bullied their men forward, often by making the first forward moves."<sup>4</sup> The smaller tactical changes that evolved on D-Day such as the change in orders for the Rangers to protect the southern flank of the beachhead at Vierville also played a part of the overall strategic plan, and ultimate victory of the Allies in the Normandy campaign. Colonel Schneider used his combat experience to ensure that the secondary objective could be met to land on Omaha Beach and attack overland through Vierville. Derived from Taylor's Notes, Figure 273 illustrates the actual movements of the 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company through D-Day.

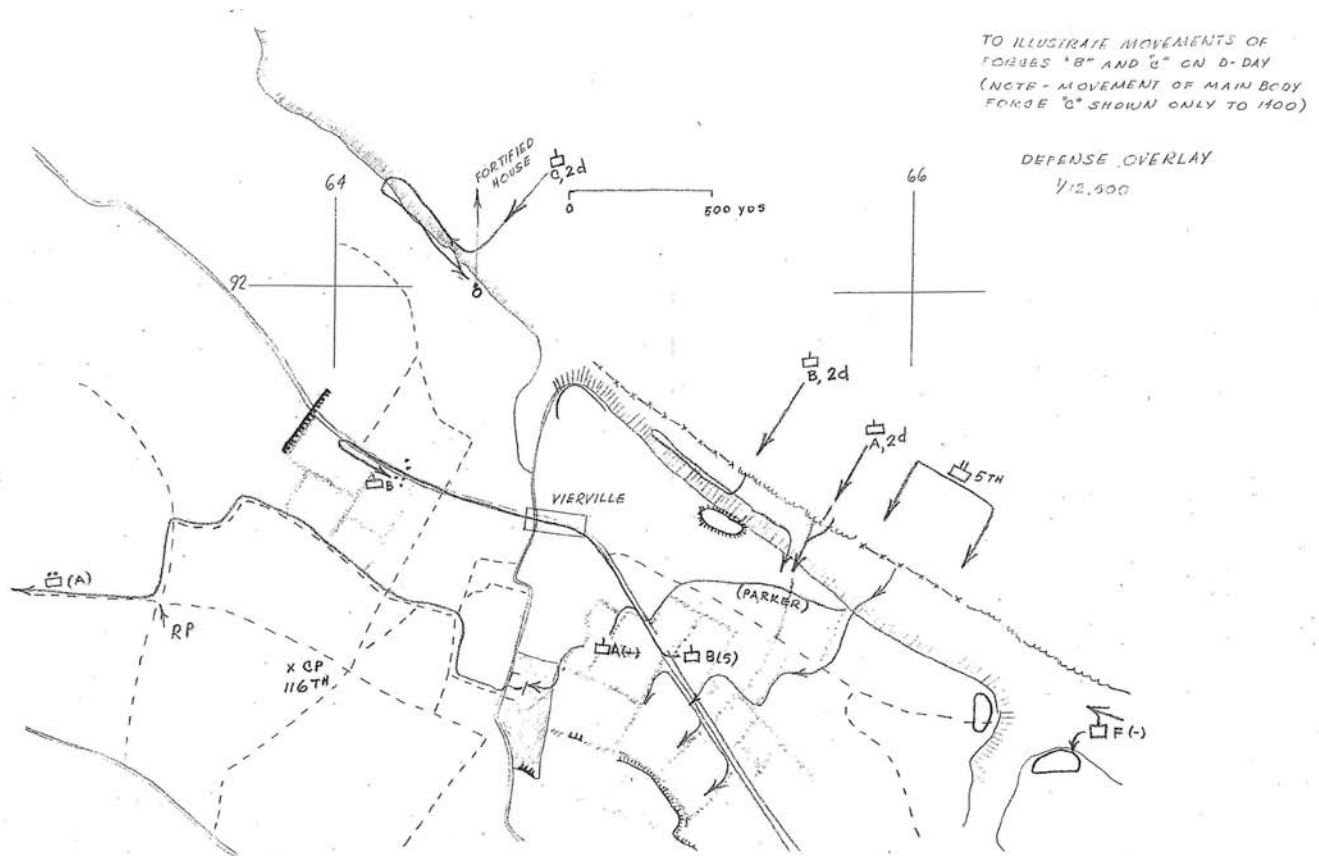


Figure 273: Map by Lt. Colonel Taylor illustrating Force B and Force C movements on D-Day (Courtesy of General Raean)

Hitler exemplified his arrogance and lack of military understanding "When Hitler, on 6 June, received word of the invasion he was about to appear at a reception near Salzburg of the new Hungarian prime minister. Hitler came in to the meeting with a radiant face and announced "It's begun at last." He was confident that all measures were being taken to meet the crisis, and that by 13 June counterattacks would wipe out any beachheads.<sup>4</sup> He obviously never met an American Ranger. Enemy power had been frittered away in stubborn defensive action by small groups, which were nowhere able to do more than delay our advances. There is enough evidence to suggest that the 352d units were committed piecemeal, in battalion strength or less, and that companies and battalions of different regiments were intermingled. Elements of the 915th Regiment, for example, were identified east of Bayeux, in the Omaha sector, and



near Isigny. Such disposition would not lend itself to coordinated attack in sizable force. In any event, there were few indications of the aggressive defense called for by German tactical doctrine.”<sup>4</sup>

The day was summarized for the Rangers to me in this single account received in response to Cornelius Ryan’s work on *The Longest Day*.<sup>13</sup>

Everyone was very tired, very dirty, and some were still hungry and sleepy. Everyone was happy, though, because we did what Hitler said was impossible for us to do... I was very glad when I heard our whole nation had turned out for prayer. God will always honor people who are willing to acknowledge Him. Every prayer was an acknowledgement that humanity realizes the need of something greater than themselves to control the great catastrophe of warfare and bloodshed. The only way to have universal peace is for the individual to have peace in his heart. Jesus Christ is so full of peacefulness and compassion that He will give it to us a hundred times over if we will only accept and obey His will.

Regards  
(Signed) Ralph E. Davis  
Co. F, 2nd. Ranger Inf. Bn.

## 18 BATTLE, RECOVERY, REPLACEMENTS AND REFIT

The beach and exits had opened up in the late afternoon of D-Day, evening and overnight hours. The Rangers and 116th Infantry had been joined by tanks of the 743rd Tank Battalion overnight. The morning of June 7 began with the Americans maintaining an uneasy foothold on the area near Vierville as compared to the advances made by the Allies in other areas. The southernmost extent of this toehold was held in part by the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company, 2nd Platoon. Lt. Colonel Schneider had designs on moving west along the coastal road to Pointe du Hoc to relieve Colonel Rudder's force on June 6, now delayed.

A plan was formulated by General Norm Cota, 29th Infantry Assistant Division Commander, Colonel Canham and Schneider. Members of the Rangers and tankers moved out to the Pointe at 0730 hours. As the column moved west, the Germans counterattacked from the south. Canham and Schneider were concerned with the security of the area around Vierville, so Companies B, E, A (1st Platoon) and F (1st Platoon) remained behind to help protect the village from German counterattack as the Americans strengthened their position throughout the day. While the other remaining companies cleaned out snipers in Vierville, B Company remained in position to the south and west of town. They engaged enemy forces throughout the day. The Germans shelled Vierville between 1800 and 1900 hours. About 1900 hours, the Germans counterattacked from the south through the chateau grounds south of town before being checked by the Rangers and 116th Infantry. A half hour later, 3rd Battalion of the 116th Infantry moved into position, and the German activity ended. In *Intact*, General Raaen wrote "the last threat to Vierville was over".<sup>1</sup> B Company ran patrols in the area, only having to mop up snipers. The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion forces in Vierville defended the south and western flanks of the town overnight.

On June 8 at 0600, these Rangers formed up in advance of the 116th Infantry's march west to St. Pierre du Mont. By this time additional U.S. forces had landed and took over in Vierville, while additional U.S. units began to fight south from town.<sup>2</sup> The June 8, 1944 B Company Morning report indicated that B Company arrived at Pointe du Hoc at 0800. This clarified the bit of first-known information to me concerning my grandfather from the beginning of the book. He did in fact see Pointe du Hoc, but his fight to get there was an entirely different path than our family previously believed. The company remained at the Pointe until 1200 when the men moved west to the sluice gates just east of Grandcamp-les-Bains, arriving at 1330 where they assisted in the assault on the entrenched Germans in the town. By many veterans' accounts, the action at Grandcamp was more intense than that of D-Day.

The City of St. Lô was the major objective of the 29th Infantry Division during the Normandy Campaign. St. Lô is the capital of the French department of Manche. It is approximately 20 miles south of the coast lying almost due south of the Vire River delta and the town of Isigny. One of the principle tributaries of the north-south running Vire River is the Aure River that runs east-west and joins the Vire just west of the town of Isigny.<sup>3</sup> Tactical and strategic maps of the day show the Aure River as a flooded area. The 352nd Division had constructed dams and other features to flood a two hundred foot wide swath in the river valley. The only river crossing with a bridge was in Isigny. The capture of the town and bridge therefore became a major objective for the operation. In the short distance from Pointe du Hoc to Grandcamp, the Normandy coast transforms from the rugged cliffs at the point to gentle coastline consistent with the mouths of rivers as they enter the sea. The overarching topographic features here are the gently sloping valleys that border the streams and rivers of the area.

General Kraiss of the 352nd Division was beginning to realize the futility of his position by June 8 in the face of the successful Allied landings. Well half of his Division was east engaged in bitter struggle against the British forces near Bayeux, France. Many of his remaining forces were nearly decimated by the Americans as they fought their way off of Omaha Beach. His command informed him that substantial reinforcements would not become available for 48 hours. As a result, and with knowledge gained from captured Allied plans discovered on D-Day, he knew that his time was running out. The Americans had more divisions on the field than the Germans and were landing more troops daily. Kraiss wanted to avoid a total rout by the Americans. He ordered his remaining uncommitted troops south of the Aure River to mount a defense, using the flooded Aure valley in his defensive strategy.<sup>4</sup>

The village of Grandcamp was an exception to his tactical retreat. The Germans positioned there did not head south. Grandcamp was a small fishing village with modest port facilities located about two miles west of Pointe du Hoc. The coastal area was incorporated into the Atlantik Wall. From east to west were WN78 at the eastern edge of town, WN79 on the western edge, WN80 just to the south of WN79, and WN82 at the point the coast turns southwest toward the Vire River mouth. More importantly, the Maisy Battery, consisting of WN83, WN 84, WN85 and WN89 (in support) was located southwest of Grandcamp and around the town of Maisy. This battery had many artillery pieces capable of adequately defending this region of the Normandy coast. Some of the 155mm guns had a range to at least the area around Saint-Pierre-du-Mont.<sup>1</sup> The German strategy of interlocking fields of fire dictated the positioning of this battery, and that of other positions and mobile units in the region. Each position had a definitive purpose. The Germans were ready for a fight at Grandcamp and the surrounding area.

As an aside, the Maisy Battery was at least as an important artillery position as Pointe du Hoc in terms of German defensive strategy of the coastline. There is much buzz about the former as it has recently been unearthed and is being carefully restored by Mr. Gary Sterne. It is not the intent of my book to debate the importance of Pointe du Hoc versus Maisy Battery. The Rangers were involved in knocking out the guns at both locations. The historical facts of this statement, including unit records and photographic evidence are clear that there were heavy artillery at both positions. It is also clear that the Provisional Ranger Group destroyed them both.

The defenses at Grandcamp included a stream valley known as Le Véret. This small ten foot wide creek under normal conditions has a sluice gate at its mouth with the Normandy coast that keeps the seawater out. The Germans flooded the valley by manipulating the sluice gate. This gate is often referred to when describing the Ranger actions on June 8. It is located at Pont du Hable, Cricqueville-en-Bessin, Lower Normandy, France using today's mapping. The result was a well flooded obstacle with but a single stream crossing at a bridge on the Coastal Highway (D 514) leading from Pointe du Hoc to Grandcamp. The bridge was and is about 600 yards east of Grandcamp. The Germans had located WN 78 along the high ground west of the stream with defenses in depth. These defenses included extensive minefields, machine gun positions, mortar positions and light artillery positions. Balkoski described that the Germans had "sited every weapon at their disposal on the eastern edge of town to cover it."<sup>4</sup> The Germans also had positions on the eastern valley, but as the Americans approached from their rear (east) they abandoned the defensive works in favor of the more advantageous western valley slopes and ridge.

Companies B & E were given the mission of moving west to take and hold the high ground overlooking the Sluice Gate Bridge at Grandcamp. The companies moved in column formation with B Company in the lead. They advanced down the slope along the road leading to the bridge. The After Action Report (AAR) has them arriving at the vicinity of the bridge near 1000 hours, which coincidentally conflicts with the Company Morning Report. The leading elements of the companies approached within 25 yards of the bridge itself when the Germans unleashed machine gun and heavy concentrated mortar fire on the Rangers, pinning them down. Both companies withdrew to the high ground overlooking the valley east of the Sluice Gate Bridge. After taking up defensive positions, they were joined by D Company, arrived from Pointe du Hoc. They radioed for fire support (AAR). The Ranger companies lacked heavy weapons to deal with the fire pouring on them. In their 1000 hour radio traffic to the 29<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division Commanding General noted as Verbal Orders Commanding General (VOCG 29), B Company reported heavy resistance 1 kilometer south of Grandcamp. The VOCG 29th responded to hold their present position until relieved by the 116th Infantry Regiment. They were formally relieved at 1730 hours, although the 116th reached their position and fought past them by 1600 hours. Figure 274 illustrates the area discussed above.



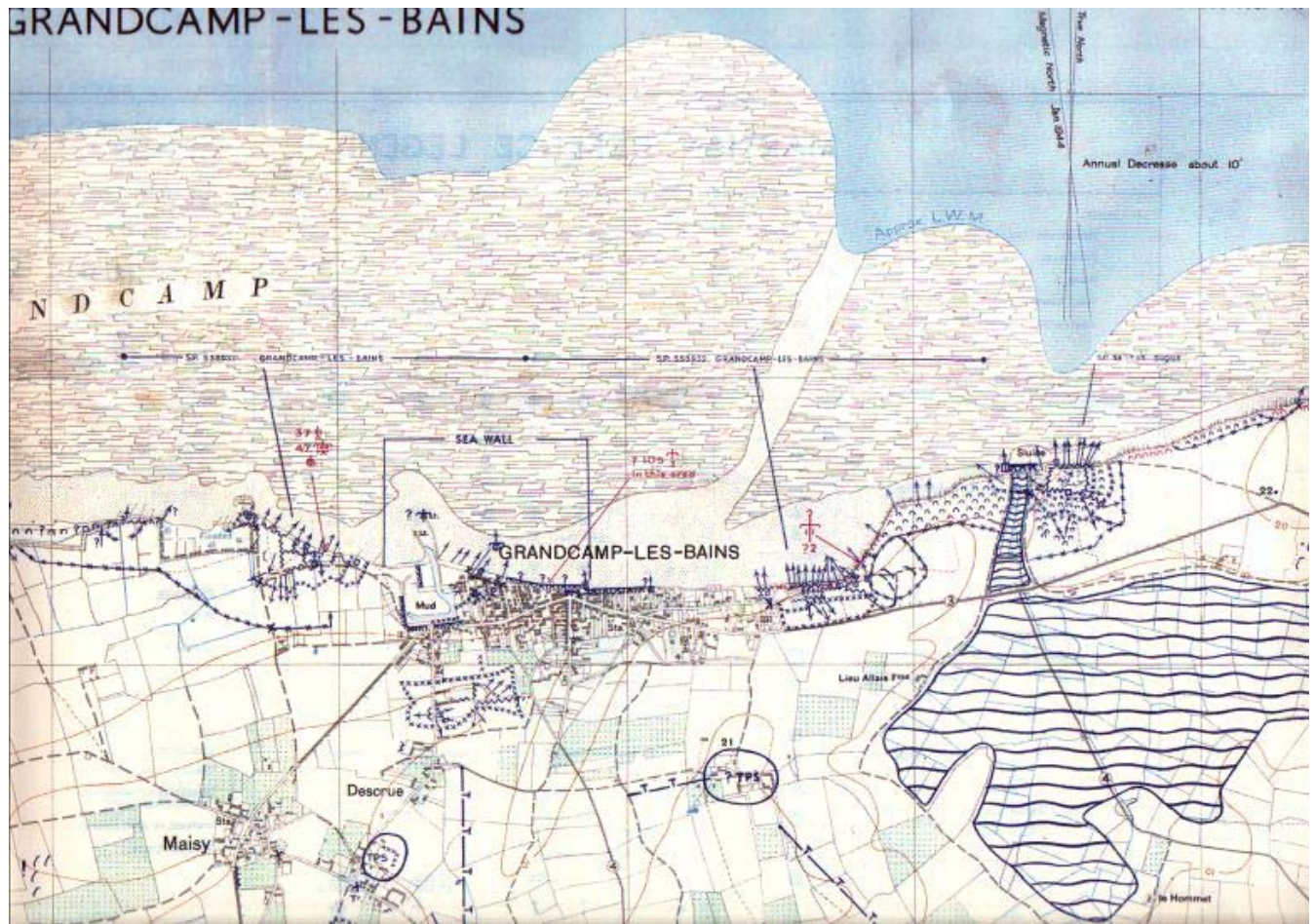


Figure 274: Allied map showing German defenses at Grandcamp. Note flooded area to east (right) of map. Where this area joins the coast is the “Sluiceway” where B Company took positions and fought. (NARA)

Their call for assistance was answered by the British cruiser HMS *Glasgow* and the 3rd Battalion of the 116th Infantry Regiment with support from several C Company tanks of the 743rd Tank Battalion. The *Glasgow* rained fire on the Germans for the better part of an hour beginning her barrage at 1455 hours. She fired 113 rounds on the German positions.<sup>5</sup> The HMS *Glasgow* was the seventh vessel to carry the name. She was built on the Clyde River. She was a Southampton-class light cruiser, and displaced 11,930 tons with a top speed of 32 knots (59 km/h). During Operation Neptune, she was assigned to Gunfire Bombardment Support Force C for Omaha Beach with the U.S. battleships USS *Texas* and USS *Arkansas*, the French cruisers *Montcalm* and *Georges Leygues*, nine US destroyers and three Hunt-class destroyers. The *Glasgow* had twelve BL 6-inch Mk XXIII guns in triple turrets. She also had eight QF 4-inch Mk XVI guns and plenty of 40-mm antiaircraft guns and other light armament.<sup>6</sup> She is shown in Figure 275.

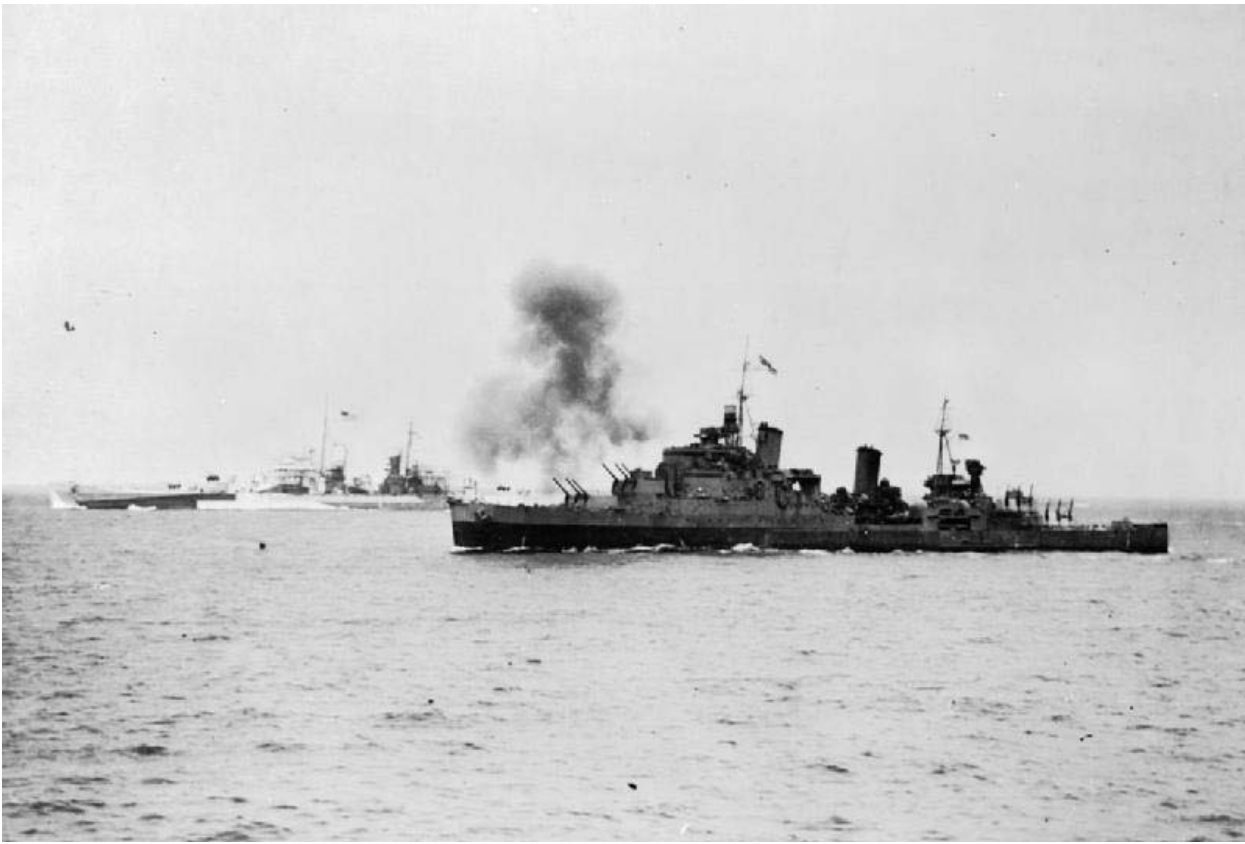


Figure 275: HMS *Glasgow* (Imperial War Museum, public domain)

After *Glasgow* worked them over, the Sherman tanks rumbled across the bridge shortly after 1600 hours. The Germans had to be kicking themselves for not blowing up this bridge. It was a small bridge, but represented the only viable crossing leading into Grandcamp. After crossing the bridge, one of the Sherman tanks was knocked out by a mine. Immediately following the tanks, Companies K and L of the 116th rushed across the bridge and began their assault on the Germans.<sup>4</sup> Company K worked the north side of the road, while Company L formed abreast of them and worked the west bank areas south of the road. The U.S. Infantry assault incorporated marching fire from their numerous BARs and silenced the German machine guns as they advanced.

The northern defenses were stubborn, and required close-in fighting. This fighting led to one of the acts that resulted in one of the eleven Congressional Medals of Honor awarded to U.S. forces during the invasion according to the U.S. Army Center of Military History. T/Sgt Frank D. Peregory of Virginia was a member of the 29th Infantry Division, 116th Infantry Regiment, K Company. When his unit approached the western slopes, the German machine gun fire inflicted many casualties and damage. The 29ers called in artillery strikes and tank fire with no effective results. T/Sgt Peregory advanced up the hill under fire. After he worked to the crest, he discovered a German trench system. Without hesitation he entered the trench and traversed the 200 yards to the main enemy fortifications. He encountered a squad of enemy riflemen and attacked them with hand grenades and his bayonet. He killed 8 and captured 3. After this, he continued to move along the trench forcing the surrender of an additional 32 Germans including their machine gun crew. His daring action opened the way for the remainder of the battalion to advance and secure their objective.<sup>7</sup> He was a World War II Sergeant York. His Medal of Honor citation reads:

On 8 June 1944, the 3d Battalion of the 116th Infantry was advancing on the strongly held German defenses at Grandcamp-Maisy, France, when the leading elements were suddenly halted by decimating machine gun fire from a firmly entrenched enemy force on the high ground overlooking the town. After numerous attempts to neutralize the enemy position by supporting artillery and tank fire had proved ineffective, T/Sgt. Peregory, on his own initiative, advanced up the hill under withering fire, and worked his way to the crest where he discovered an entrenchment leading to the main enemy fortifications 200 yards away. Without hesitating, he leaped into the trench and moved toward the emplacement. Encountering a squad of enemy riflemen, he fearlessly attacked them with

hand grenades and bayonet, killed 8 and forced 3 to surrender. Continuing along the trench, he single-handedly forced the surrender of 32 more riflemen, captured the machine gunners, and opened the way for the leading elements of the battalion to advance and secure its objective. The extraordinary gallantry and aggressiveness displayed by T/Sgt. Peregory are exemplary of the highest tradition of the armed forces.

The assault by Companies K and L resulted in fierce close-quarters combat that was reported to be tougher than that encountered on D-Day. The German MG-42 bursts were answered in kind by American BAR bursts. There was a reported symphony of M-1, mortar, and other small arms fire. The 75mm guns of the Sherman tanks seemed to drown out the other sounds when they fired. When the men closed on each other, the blasts from hand grenades and screams and shouts of men completed the sounds of battle. Mapping of this action is in Figure 276.

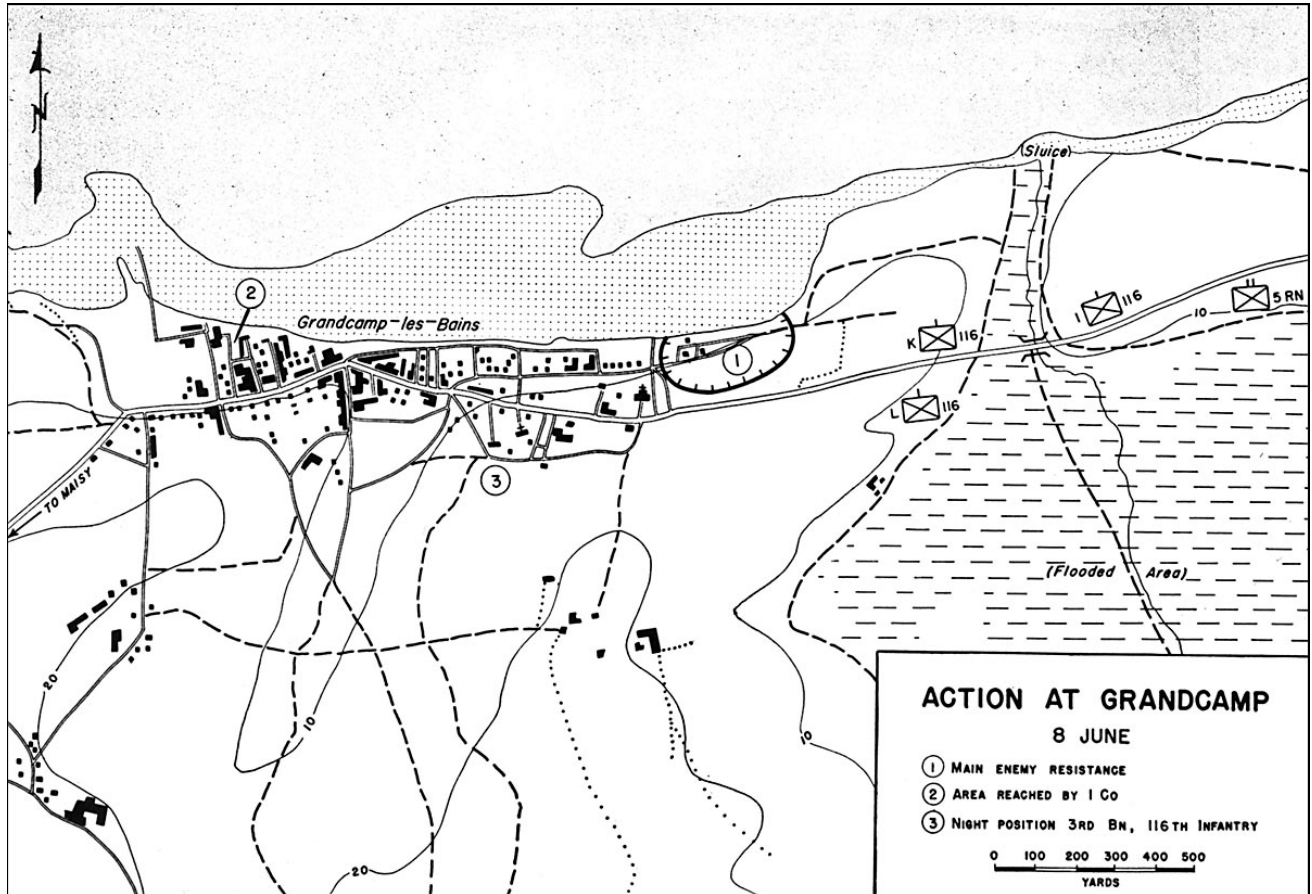


Figure 276: U.S. Army mapping showing June 8 action at Grandcamp, west of Omaha Beach (USACMH)<sup>5</sup>

While this occurred, D and E Company from the 5th Rangers took defensive positions around the Sluice Gate Bridge to protect the position from any counterattack at 1930 hours. They sent out patrols back east to Pointe du Hoc to clear out any missed Germans along the coast.

Meanwhile, Company I of the 116th passed through the other two companies and into Grandcamp under the command of 2nd Lieutenant Norvin Nathan. He led his men to the western edge of town, clearing out stubborn snipers and other emplacements. “Organized resistance was over by dark. In the action, which some soldiers of the 5th Rangers and 3rd Battalion, 116th, described as more severe than their D-Day fighting, the Germans had lost one of their strongest coastal positions in the V Corps alone.”<sup>5</sup> The 2nd Battalion of the 116th followed 3rd Battalion into Grandcamp and cleared much of the area by sunset of June 8.<sup>4</sup>





Figure 277: German prisoners are led past the Rangers' command post on Pointe du Hoc on D-Day plus 2, June 8, 1944. U.S. Signal Corps (NARA)

As they came together for the first time since the invasion, the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion was reorganized at Pointe du Hoc in the late morning and early afternoon of June 8. A June 8 photo of the men is shown in Figure 277. They had suffered tremendous loss. Black wrote that of the 512 enlisted and 33 officers of the battalion that made the assault, preliminary casualty numbers were 247 enlisted and sixteen officers. Of these, 65 men and five officers paid the ultimate price. The Rangers and other GIs began to scour the field for the fallen and wounded. The battlefield was still fresh as described by Hatfield. He went on to describe the litter on the battlefield. There was all manner of equipment, spent ammunition cartridges, backpacks, gas masks, used and unused first aid equipment and supplies, photos of loved ones, girlie pictures, weapons, pieces of broken weapons and parts of men strewn about. Command thought through their plans and decided to place the 2nd Rangers in reserve to rest. They finally assembled on the exit lane to Pointe du Hoc at 1600 hours and left the Pointe turning right on the coastal road (Insigny Road or D 514) toward Grandcamp, following the route taken by elements of the 5th Rangers and 116th Regiment, 3rd Battalion earlier in the morning.<sup>8</sup> They marched quietly as the dead bodies of Germans and Americans had been gathered and lined up along the roadsides for the grave details to begin their grim work. Hatfield wrote that the 2nd Rangers were “too exhausted for further action.”<sup>9</sup>

By 1930 hours, Grandcamp had been cleared of all enemy resistance. The 5th Rangers, B Company occupied a portion of the all-around defense on the eastern high ground overlooking the valley. The 5th Rangers set up their command post in an abandoned German tunnel. About a mile from the Pointe, the 2nd Rangers took a trail to the right behind defensive lines formed by B Company of the 5th Rangers. Rudder led his men to the gentle slopes overlooking the sluice gate, sea and the hard fought ground across the valley. They set up their bivouac in the trenches and other defensive positions constructed by the Germans. PFC Prince of 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion, A Company wrote that the area was swampy and damp. He also said, “It was cold that night, colder than we had expected it to be. We weren't equipped against this frost, so besides having to sweat out the Jerries, we had to endure a night of coldness.” The 2nd Rangers did not know until the next morning that the lumps all over the ground were

unarmed mines left by the Germans. In their hasty retreat across the valley, there was insufficient time to set the mines. The 2nd Rangers supply trucks carrying their baggage and supply arrived from the beachhead. They were provided with their bedrolls and pup tents, packs, ammunition, water and most importantly, hot food. Prince wrote, "Instead of our usual "K" rations, we were issued 10-1 rations. That day we were able to partake in our first decent and balanced meal since we had disembarked from our boat. It was appetizing to eat a hot meal, and the hot coffee we drank put new life into us. We almost felt human again, instead of the savage animals we had turned into during our battling."<sup>10</sup> The 2<sup>nd</sup> Rangers were also afforded field showers and a change of uniform for the first time in days.

They received new weapons and uniforms to replace unserviceable issue. Machine guns were added back to their ranks. The unrelenting paperwork was filled out.<sup>8</sup> PFC Robert Prince wrote, "Due to our strenuous fighting and heavy losses, a last minute's change decision to put us into a reserve position and to let our brethren Ranger Bn., the 5th, do this job for us. And do it they did, in a grand Ranger fashion, overcoming and routing the Heinies in a decisive victory. The Fifth had sustained a few casualties but they made up for it in ground gained, Krauts killed and wounded, plus innumerable stores of weapons, equipment and prisoners taken." He went on to state that the men could finally get a moment to truly relax after almost three days.<sup>10</sup> They lit up cigarettes and cleaned their bodies. Most of the men did not shave as a rite of passage so to speak. The battalion slept peacefully the night of June 8 allowing the men to feel refreshed the next morning. During the night, the Luftwaffe used a night bomber and dropped light bombs ¼ mile south of the Ranger position, but not on it at 2400 hours.<sup>9</sup> One exception to these reports comes from Lt. Kerchner of the 2nd Rangers who recorded in a wartime diary that the 5th Rangers "shot 4 jerrys" overnight. He said everyone in his battalion was "jumpy."

The next morning, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion Companies A, C and F were given the mission of cleaning out the strongpoint of batteries at Maisy along with 1st Battalion of the 116th Infantry Regiment. They were supported by two halftracks of the Second Rangers and a company of the 81st Chemical Weapons Battalion. The mission was a successful one capturing three 105 Howitzers, numerous small arms and large stocks of ammunition and food, and 90 prisoners.<sup>11</sup> The details of these actions of A, C and F Companies are further described in *Intact* by Raen. The 116th Infantry Regiment, 1st Battalion went south of the flooded Le Vêret Stream valley and attacked toward Isigny.

The 2nd Rangers moved out about 1600 hours on June 9 en route to their next bivouac west of Osmanville. They passed through Grandcamp to get there based on a pocket journal kept by Lt Kerchner dated June 9, 1944. The end of the two day engagement for Grandcamp-les-Bains and the Maisy Battery cost the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion 28 casualties. The Germans suffered 40 men killed and 165 prisoners. The end of June 8 yielded more casualties for B Company. These included S/Sgt Vern L Detlefsen, Tec 5 Joseph W. Levesque, and PFC Carl W. Morgan, Jr all listed as SWA. Morgan's status would be revised to reflect he later died of his wounds. He is not listed in Glassman, but Black included him in his book, *Rangers of World War II*. Morgan is another Ranger who was partially lost to history.

On June 9, B Company left Grandcamp les Baines at 1300 hours and travelled eight miles to Osmanville, France arriving at 1500 hours during a light rain. Company F of the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion managed to capture a German Headquarters unit with their payroll. On June 10, an enemy plane bombed the bivouac site at 0400 hours. On June 11, B Company left Osmanville at 0100 hours, and arrived at Bois Du Molay at 0230 hours. The Provisional Ranger Group was placed in V Corps Reserve. June 11 was the first mail call the Rangers had in France.

The remainder of this chapter is a detailed look at what the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion did in the summer 1944. The existing books and stories covering the summer basically just glaze over this period, discussing the guarding of prisoners, training replacements, guarding the west coast of France and going on patrol. The importance of the finer details surrounding these events to this story is that they inform about how S/Sgt Hull later became lost to history. In order to tease out the facts, I had to draw on more source material from the National Archives and other books than perhaps anywhere else in this work. Records of other units working with or around the battalion were researched and compared. The sheer amount of turnover of manpower and of movement of the unit and organizational attachment became all too important as this area of research was investigated. The summer of 1944 bears the most in terms of potential for research of the battalion by future historians.

One question to be asked is why did the unit get so much down time as compared to other infantry units in northern France at the time? The 29th Infantry Division essentially never stopped fighting after it landed on D-Day through the summer and with horrific losses. It is my opinion that the training required to make men effective as

Rangers in the face of between 30 and 60 percent casualties suffered amongst the various Ranger companies of the 2nd and 5th Ranger Infantry Battalions required their rest and refit to maintain their abilities as special operations units. They would have been combat-ineffective at the battalion level if pressed into action in the summer of 1944. The duties they did perform enabled them to rebuild their ranks. At the same time, they used their expertise in patrolling, night fighting and street fighting on the flanks of the larger units to which they were attached to protect the actions of the larger units in the theater.

Each company member who is listed in the morning reports has been added to this text to help sort out just who were replacements to the unit, and who was wounded and left or got killed. This is the type of work needed to help a family understand context and placement of a unit and its members.

Table 1 that follows shows their attachments to other higher echelons in the summer of 1944. The list that follows Table 1 shows the places B Company went that appear on their Company Morning Reports. These dates are all based either on orders in my possession, or by the US Army Order of Battle, ETO.

Table 1: Attachments of 5 <sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion May 17, 1944 to September 18, 1944							
5 <sup>th</sup> RN INF BN	DATES	ATTACHED TO	DIVISION	CORPS	ARMY ASSIGNED	ARMY ATTACHED	ARMY GROUP
Provisional Ranger Group	17 May 44 – 7 Jun 44	116 <sup>th</sup> Regimental Combat Team (29 <sup>th</sup> ID)	1 <sup>st</sup> ID	V	First	-	ETOUSA
5 <sup>th</sup> RN INF BN	7 Jun 44 -10 Jun 44	Provisional Ranger Group	29 <sup>th</sup> ID	V	First	-	ETOUSA
5 <sup>th</sup> RN INF BN	10 Jun 44 – 15 Jun 44	Provisional Ranger Group	-	V	First		ETOUSA
5 <sup>th</sup> RN INF BN	15 Jun 44 – 1 Jul 44	Provisional Ranger Group		Direct control of V Corps	First		ETOUSA
5 <sup>th</sup> RN INF BN	1 Jul 44 – 11 Aug 44	Provisional Ranger Group	-	-	Direct control of First Army		ETOUSA
5 <sup>th</sup> RN INF BN	11 Aug 44 – 13 Aug 44	Provisional Ranger Group	4 <sup>th</sup> ID	VII	First		ETOUSA
5 <sup>th</sup> RN INF BN	13 Aug 44 – 14 Aug 44	Provisional Ranger Group	9 <sup>th</sup> ID	Attached to VII for admin, supply & communication	First		12th
5 <sup>th</sup> RN INF BN	14 Aug 44	Provisional Ranger Group	-	VII	First Army		12th
5 <sup>th</sup> RN INF BN	31 AUG 44 – 18 SEP 44		29 <sup>th</sup> ID	VIII	First/Ninth	Third	12th

June 8, 1944	Pointe du Hoc, Grandcamp Les Bains
June 9, 1944	Osmansville
June 11, 1944	Bois du Molay
June 16, 1944	Colombières
June 20, 1944	Foucarville (POW Camp)
July 3, 1944	Greville



THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

July 8, 1944	Dielette
July 19, 1944	Flammanville
August 6, 1944	Les Moitiers
August 7, 1944	St. Martin de Bonfosse
August 10, 1944	Villedieu des Poeles
August 11, 1944	Buais
August 13, 1944	St. Germain d'Anxure
August 14, 1944	Martigne
August 16, 1944	Mayenne
August 18, 1944	Dinan
August 19, 1944	Trégarantec
September 1, 1944	Kervos

The places and events surrounding the summer of 1944 are displayed using maps from the French Government. They have been modified to show the likely route taken by the Rangers as they moved and fought across northern France.

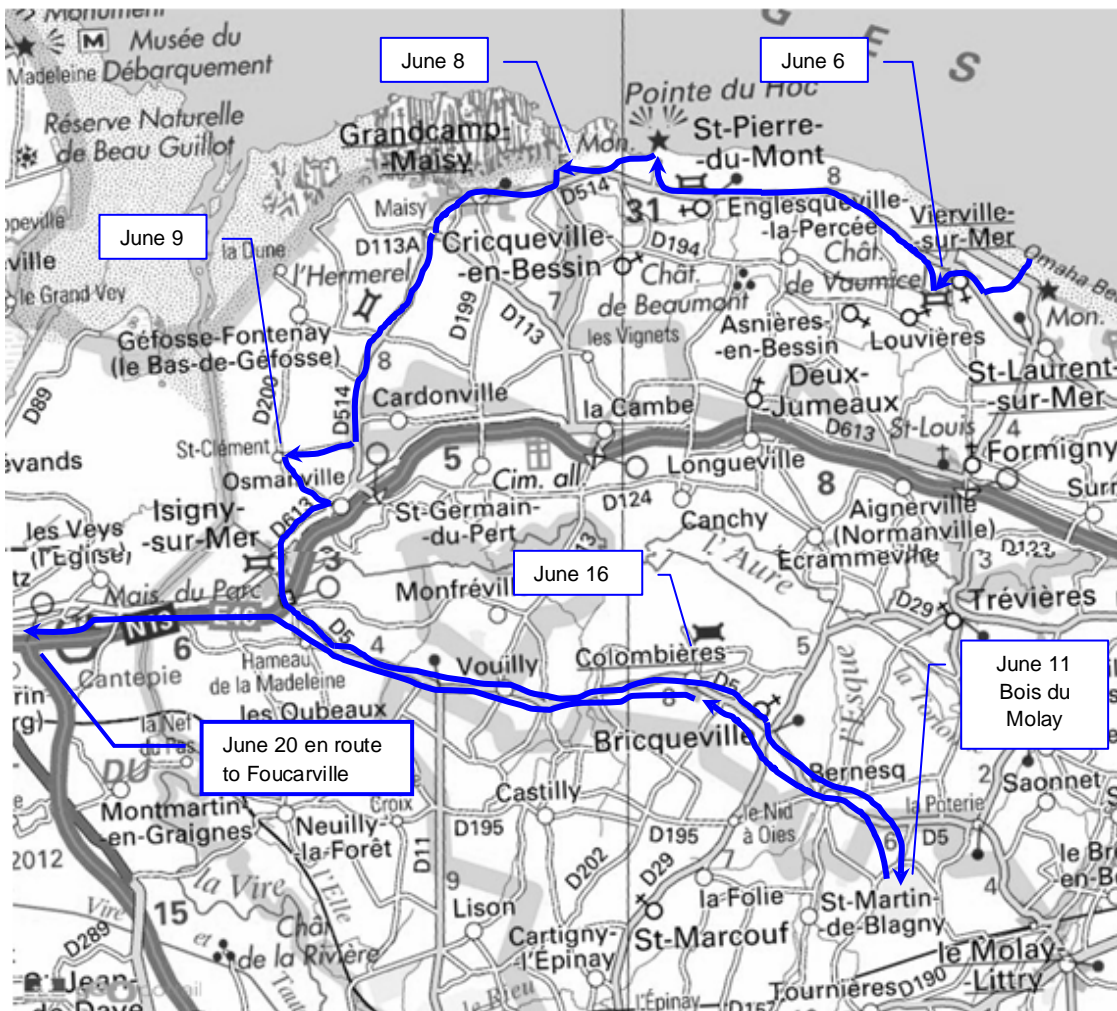


Figure 278: 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger movements from June 6 to June 20, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)

On June 14, B Company reported that S/Sgt Joseph J. Surowitz went to the hospital and was put on light duty for 24 hours. Eleven enlisted men were promoted. Of these, Corporal Herman W. Stuyvesant, Tec 5 Leroy A. Anderson and Sgt Edward W. Dickman were promoted to S/Sgt from 2nd Platoon.

On June 15, B Company took on its first replacements after D-Day. These men were S/Sgt Ralph W. Ragsdale,

S/Sgt Harold I. Smith, Pfc William, R. Monroe, Pvt William B. Bartlett, Pvt William L. Black, Pvt Howard L. Boutilier, Pvt Roy E. Carpenter, Pvt Edward Fishman, Pvt Richard J. Gilmore, Pvt Alton L. Harward, Pvt Dewey C. Dees, Pvt Clyde F. Willis, Pvt Richard H. Norton and Pvt William B. Tice. These men joined from Headquarters, 17th Replacement Depot. It was on this day that 1st Lieutenant Matthew Gregory was relieved from assignment and transferred in grade to Company E, effective June 13. This is the change of platoon leadership discussed by the testimonies of several of the members of the company as a result of D-Day actions. The B Company Morning Report on June 15 also noted the arrival of 1st Lt Darwin D. Harbin, 1st Lt Charles C. Lemon, 2nd Lt George G. Berger and 2nd Lt Louis J. Gombosi as replacement officers from Headquarters, 17th Replacement Depot. Two soldiers joined B Company from Headquarters, 16th Replacement Depot on June 16. They were Pfc Willie Johnson and Pvt Otto F. Recher, Jr. On June 19, PFC Henry J. Cordes of B Company went from being sick to transferred from the unit.

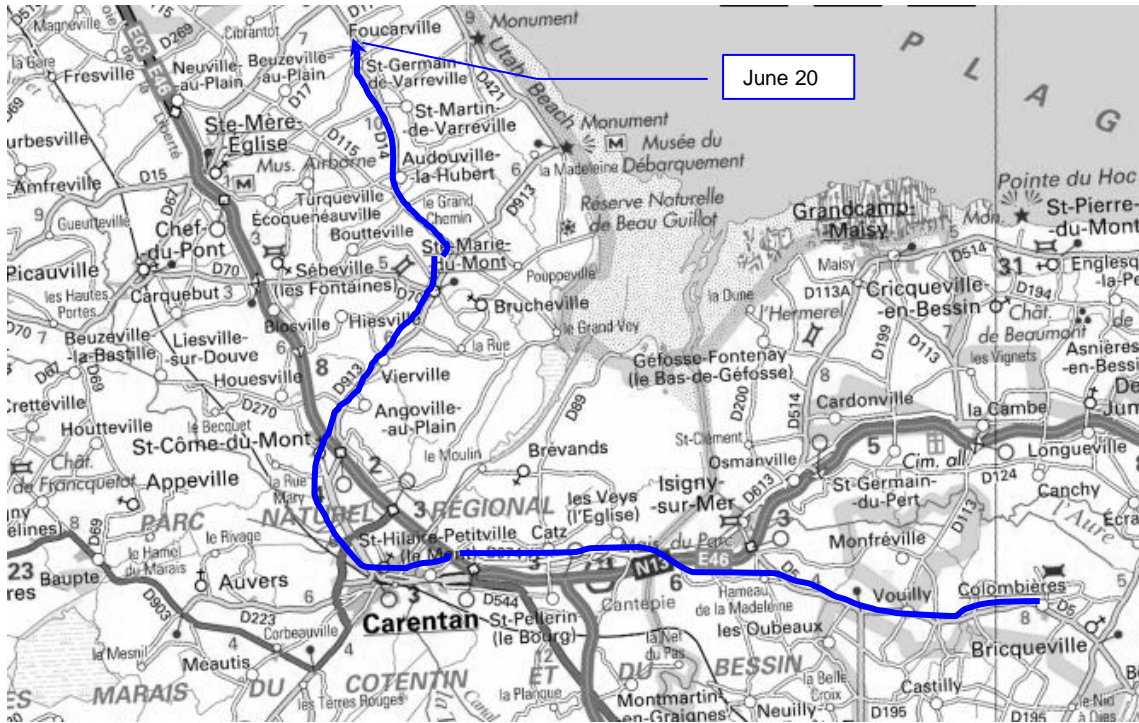


Figure 279: Continuation of 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger movements from June 20, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)

On June 16, B Company left Bois Du Molay at 1330 hours by speed march four miles and arrived at Colombières at 1500 hours and was placed in the 1st Army Reserve. The unit was at Chateau de Colombières bivouacked under the cover of trees on the grounds. They began to train their newly arrived replacements. “For the first time the battalion was in a rear area where French food and drink were available to supplement Army rations”.<sup>9</sup> The B Company Morning Report and those of the other companies in the battalion note that on June 20, 1944 the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion left Colombières, France at 1000 hours and arrived at Foucarville, France at 1130. The MGRS map coordinates for this were 391002. They were assigned duty at the POW Encampment. The village of Foucarville is about two miles west of Utah Beach, slightly southwest of La Selleraie, France on the Cherbourg Peninsula. It is in the department of Manche of the French region Basse-Normandie. The village is located in the township of Sainte-Mère-Église in the district of Cherbourg. The village lies approximately ten meters above sea level. Its coordinates are 49.443° North by 1.256° West.<sup>13</sup> The famous church in Sainte-Mère-Église where the American paratrooper got hung up on the steeple lies north of the village. On June 6, several sticks (planeloads) of the 101st Airborne Division, 502nd Regiment, 1st Battalion, A Company landed in the fields just to the north of the village and fought savage battles against stubborn pockets of German resistance until relieved by the 4th Infantry Division. This location would become a major American Prisoner of War Camp by the time the Rangers arrived and beyond. Figure 279 shows the likely route to Foucarville. The U.S. Signal Corps captured video of German Prisoners being marched along a road counter to the 5<sup>th</sup> Rangers. In the film, the Orange diamond displaying 5 is clearly visible on many of the Ranger helmets. A screenshot of this film is in Figure 280. Figure 281 reveals the location of the POW camp.





Figure 280: Rangers marching past German POWs in summer 1944 (NARA)

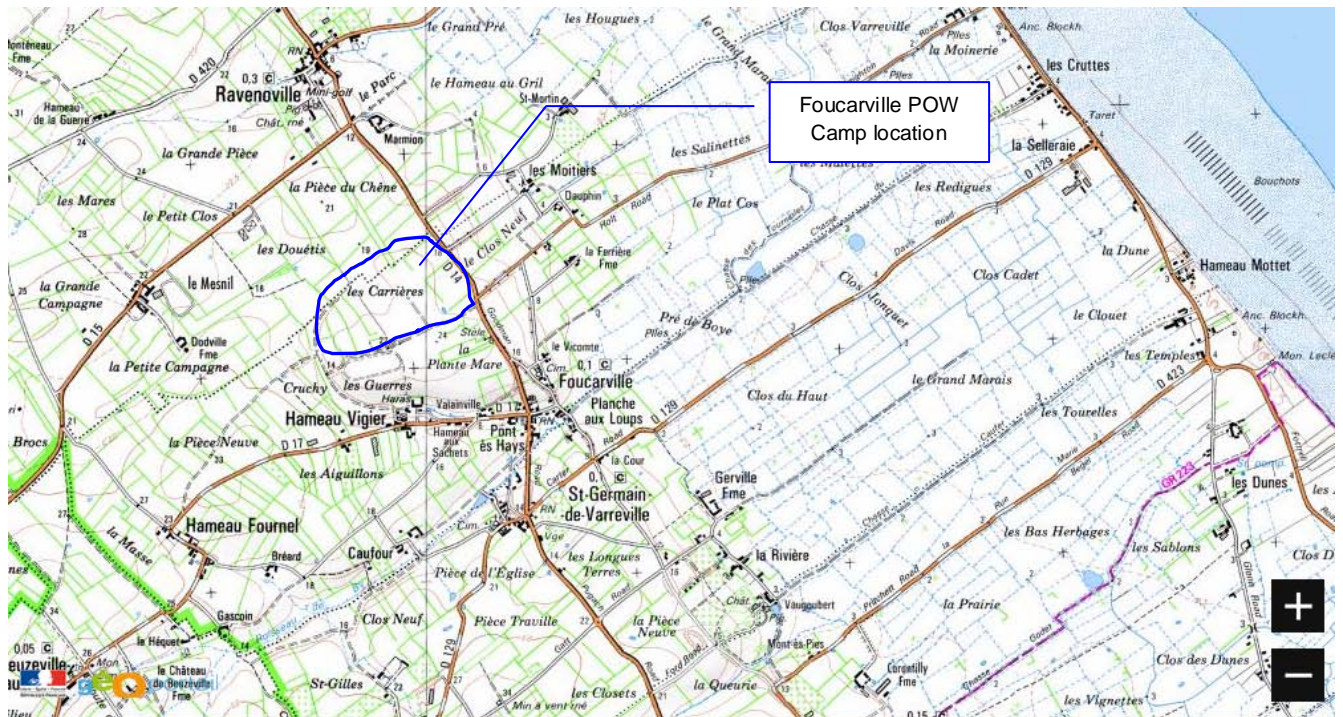


Figure 281: 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger movements to Foucarville on June 20, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)

June 20 had the benefit of the arrival of Army kitchens and hot food. Awards were handed out to those deserving. On June 21, several members of the two Ranger battalions received the Distinguished Service Cross (DSC) or Silver Star Medal (SS) for heroic actions on D-Day. Pictured below (Figure 282) from left to right are eight of the ten men who received the DSC. They are: LTC Max Schneider (BN CO), Captain George Whittington (B Co.), 1st Lt Charles “Ace” Parker (A Co.), Lt Francis Dawson (D Co.), Willie Moody (C Co.), Howard McKissick (C Co.), Denzil Johnson (A Co.), and Alexander Barber (HQ), Medic Detachment. Not shown are Major Richard P. Sullivan and Lt Joseph “Father” Lacy (Chaplain). Figure 283 depicts the Rangers at Foucarville.

As the Cherbourg Peninsula began to collapse for the Germans, the Americans suddenly had a massive influx of prisoners of war (POWs) to contend with. First Army’s Provost Marshal established a 10,000 man enclosure at Foucarville. The Foucarville POW Camp was established at the end of June 1944. It was located approximately 1/4 mile north of the village of Foucarville on present day Vierge de l’Eglise Pugach Road [D14]. Along the first high ground overlooking Utah Beach. They constructed three additional 1,100 man facilities as collection points on Utah Beach in VII Corps area. A 10,000 man facility was constructed at Valognes to assist in regulating the flow of prisoners to be processed through Foucarville with a high tide of 25,000 POWs processed when the German defenses in the Cherbourg Peninsula finally collapsed. The first facilities included barbed wire attached to posts around the perimeter that was later replaced with concertina wire. Eventually carbide floodlights and telephone communications





Figure 282: 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion members who received DSC on June 21 for actions on D-Day (NARA).



Figure 283: 5<sup>th</sup> Rangers at Foucarville (Source unknown)

were installed.<sup>14</sup> The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion was in charge and operated the facility along with the 552nd Military Police Escort Guard (MPEG) from June 20 through July 3. The Rangers were assigned to the MPs as the sheer number of POWs far exceeded the available manpower of the MPs in the area at the time.

The 552nd MPEG activated at Fort Custer, Michigan on June 25, 1943, and in arrived in Normandy on June 17, 1944 and was assigned to COMZ Command with orders to establish a 10,000 prisoner enclosure at Foucarville.<sup>15</sup> “Their major assignment was to guard, water, feed, and generally care for and evaluate the German POWs as they

were captured and fed back to the unit by the First Army. They were also involved in straggler control of both civilian and military personnel.”<sup>16</sup>

In its early rendition, the Enclosure was crudely constructed and extremely muddy. The HQ for the post used a captured concrete German dugout. The fences were made of barbed wire nailed to the posts, which were recycled crooked anti-glider poles harvested from Rommel's Asparagus. The POWs lived in quad tents up to 55 men per tent. The tents had no floors, and were not heated or lighted. The stoves for cooking were made of mud with steel grates to support GI cans for cooking. Water was hauled to the site via truck and was pumped to a canvas water tank. Non-potable water was obtained from a nearby stream some 1,500 yards upstream of the post. There were originally no sidewalks or roads on the post, resulting in extremely muddy conditions during wet weather. A lack of personnel was a hindrance to early camp administration. The original layout had a single guard posted on wooden platforms at each corner of the roughly rectangular enclosure armed with a .30-caliber machine gun as was reported by the 454th MPEG and later members of the 82nd Airborne who were assigned duty at the facility. There were reported instances where one soldier would guard up to 5,000 POWs.

Foucarville operated as an Evacuation Enclosure for Utah Beach until it was designated a Central Enclosure in December 1944. After the 552nd MPEG and Rangers, the Enclosure was commanded by Captain Virgilio, Commanding Officer of the 454th MPE Company with assistance by the 436th MPEG. The post would become Continental Central Enclosure No.19 or also known as Prisoner of War Enclosure (PWE) 19. The POW Camp was at 49.44504° North, 1.25911° West.

On 23 June 44, the 99th Infantry Battalion (Separate) was transported by truck to Colombières and attached to the Provisional Ranger Group, First U.S. Army. (99th INF BN Unit Journal)

Schneider was a hometown hero in his native Shenandoah, Iowa, and they printed several articles about him during the war, including one regarding his duties in charge of the POW camp at Foucarville. I reached out to the paper and received permission to reprint this article to help further explain this duty.

**Evening Sentinel Shenandoah, Iowa**  
**JUL 3 - 1944**  
**In Charge of Prisoners in Normandy**

Lieut. Col. Max Schneider of Shenandoah is "mayor of a predominately German community" now according to the columns of Gordon Gammack, Des Moines Register and Tribune war correspondent who quoted him both Sunday and today.

Colonel Schneider, commander of an American Ranger battalion which stormed the beaches of France and won the Distinguished Service Cross on D-day is now half resting and half looking after an almost constant flow of German prisoners on their way to England.

Schneider has found the German machine-gunners and snipers pretty men, firing all their ammunition then coming out with their hands in the air, but he has not been impressed with the fighting spirit of the Nazis. The Iowa officer is loud in his praise of the paratroopers whom he says makes the "Ranger racket look like an easy way to make a living."

The Shenandoahan who was the first American to set foot on Italy in this war, has played "host" to more than 20,000 German prisoners.

The 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion performed these duties at Foucarville alongside the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion under the Provisional Ranger Group from 25 June through 3 July. Robert Black wrote in his book *The Battalion* about the 2nd Rangers duty at the POW camp. They arrived on June 25, and stayed until July 3. They moved to nearby Valognes, France along with the 5th Rangers where they were quartered. Valognes was bombed extensively and is pictured in Figure 284. Black noted there were 218 German generals and admirals among the POW population. The 2nd Rangers hated the duty. Those men that spoke German were used as interpreters. Part of their duties included moving prisoners between the collection points at the prisoner cages of the 4th and 47th Infantry

Divisions and the POW Enclosure. They also escorted POWs to the beaches to waiting vessels to transport them to England or the States. Never afraid to horse around, the Rangers had competitions to load as many POWs onto Army trucks for transport as they could, kind of like the old clown car gag. The 2nd Rangers boasted a maximum number of soldiers loaded onto an Army “Deuce-and-a-Half” 2 ½ ton truck of 83 prisoners aboard a single truck.<sup>8</sup> “Although they disliked POW duty, Rudder thought that it was good experience because it taught them that Germans “were far from supermen but smart enough to ask if they could be sent to a POW camp in the United States.””<sup>9</sup>



Figure 284: Valognes in summer 1944 (NARA)

On 29 June, the 99th Infantry Battalion (Separate) moved to St. Joseph, on the Cherbourg Peninsula and the following day entered Cherbourg. From 30 June to 8 July, the Battalion, attached to 4th Port Headquarters, secured the city and guarded various military installations. (99th INF BN Unit Journal)

The B Company Morning Report and those of the other companies in the battalion noted that on July 3, 1944 the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion left Foucarville, France (MGRS 391002) at 1500 hours and arrived at Greville (Gréville-Hague), France (MGRS 015278) at 1800. They travelled northwest by truck a reported distance of 38 miles and assumed usual garrison duties. 1st Lt Darwin D. Harbin was relieved from duty as platoon leader and assigned to Hq Company. 2nd Lt William J. Mulligan joined the company from Headquarters Company and assumed duty as platoon leader. I am assuming these assignments are in reference to 2nd Platoon, as Lt Pepper never moved from his post as 1st Platoon Leader as of this point by all accounts. This reveals a pattern of changes in the leadership structure of the 2nd Platoon as a result of combat. The 2nd Rangers reported this move as being through Cherbourg to Cape de la Hague on the northwestern tip of France. Cape de la Hague is very close to Gréville-Hague. The 2nd and 5th Rangers were side by side.<sup>9</sup> This piece of information explains another clue from the original information held by my mom that listed Cherbourg as part of S/Sgt Hull's military experience. He must have talked about his time training and patrolling around Cherbourg after the war to friends and/or family that in turn became included in oral history.



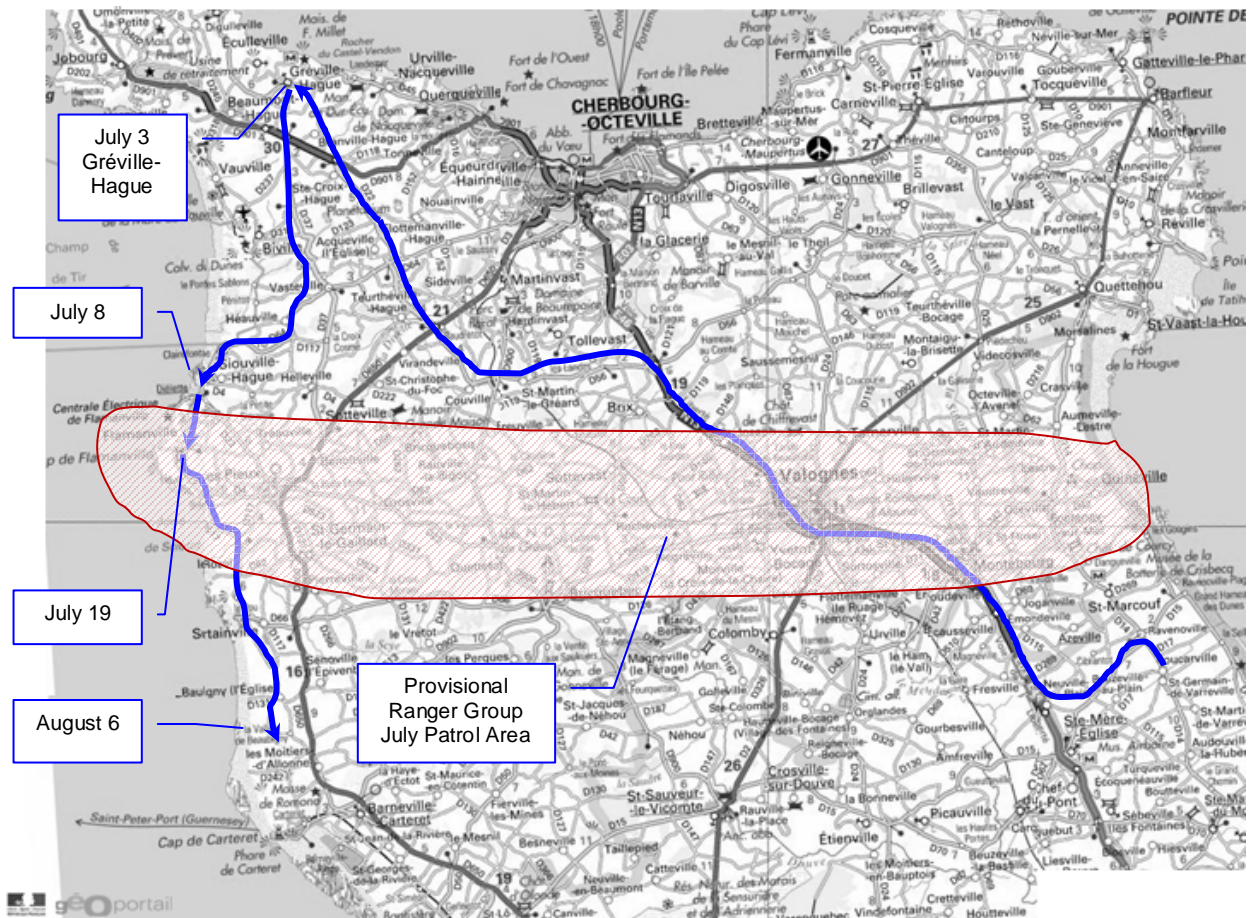


Figure 285: 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger movements from July 3 to August 6, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)

Gréville-Hague is a small village located in the department of Manche of the French region Basse-Normandie. It is in the township of Beaumont-Hague part of the district of Cherbourg and is approximately 8 ½ miles west from the Port of Cherbourg. The village is 140 meters above sea level and is located at a latitude/longitude of 49.675° North and 1.801° West.<sup>18</sup>

The mission of the Rangers at Gréville-Hague was to search for German stragglers missed as the larger infantry divisions moved through and tightened the grip on the port city. They cleared booby traps, patrolled the beaches and searched and cleared the massive German pillboxes and defensive structures through the area. They discovered huge storerooms of ammunition, weapons and equipment. The 2nd Rangers were housed indoors in French Army barracks for the first time in France. These barracks had most recently been home to a German flak battalion. The 5th Rangers were quartered nearby in Gréville-Hague.<sup>19</sup> On the 4th of July, the Americans planned and carried out a surprise for their German opponents in honor of Independence Day. At exactly noon, every American artillery piece in France fired salvos at enemy targets simultaneously. It was reported the sudden widespread explosions caught everyone by surprise.<sup>9</sup> Day and night training was conducted to train the large influx of replacement Rangers between the two battalions as a result of the action on D-Day and through the month of June. Dry fire exercises progressively gave way to live fire exercises and marches increased to thirty miles as the veteran Rangers passed on knowledge to the new recruits.<sup>20</sup> The new recruits were folded into the units as had been the case for all Rangers before. The training regimen included hand-to-hand fighting, scouting, patrolling and the reduction of enemy pillboxes all with the benefit of the experienced men to teach.<sup>8</sup> The Rangers also had to take care to not become injured due to carelessness or as a result of carelessness with alcohol in these months as they sought ways to relieve tension that were not always the safest courses of action. Many men were injured. The men also found themselves attracted to prostitutes in the Cherbourg Peninsula to the point that orders were eventually issued to avoid these houses of ill repute.<sup>9</sup> This problem eventually led to orders issued by Eisenhower's command to abstain from prostitutes.

The Morning Report for July 5 indicated that Pfc Rene R. Brunelle joined B Company from Headquarters

Company. The B Company Morning Report recorded on July 8, 1944 the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion left Gréville-Hague, France (MGRS 015278) at 0830 hours and arrived at Diélette, Flamanville, France (MGRS 973153) at 1000. They travelled by truck convoy a distance of 22 miles to the south-southwest of Gréville-Hague along the west coast of France.

The months of July and August were a period where the Provisional Ranger Group took on multiple missions, was assigned and reassigned to various echelons and took on partnerships with other units. These units included the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion, 99th Infantry Battalion (Separate) consisting of American troops of Norwegian descent trained in commando tactics, 759th Light Tank Battalion, 4th Cavalry Reconnaissance Squadron (Mechanized) and 24th Cavalry Reconnaissance Squadron (Mechanized), 196th Field Artillery Battalion (105 H), and 18th Field Artillery Battalion (105 H). The Provisional Ranger Group expanded and contracted as the mission dictated and as these units were needed elsewhere in theatre. I reviewed the unit records of as many of these units as possible at NARA at College Park, Maryland to ascertain their relationships through summer 1944.

The 99th infantry Battalion (Separate) was activated on July 19th, 1942 at Camp Ripley, Minnesota. The men of the unit consisted only of Norwegians and Americans with direct Norwegian descent and were known as the Viking Battalion. Soldiers picked out for this elite unit had to have a working knowledge of Norsk, the Norwegian language, and preferably already knew how to ski.<sup>21</sup> They were trained in commando tactics.

The 759th Tank Battalion was activated on June 1, 1941 at Fort Knox, KY. They went to Iceland on August 31st 1942 for defense of the island. They moved to England on August 9, 1943. They arrived in France between June 15 and 16 1944. In June, they had attachments to the 2nd Infantry Division then the 101st Airborne Division. During this time, they patrolled mainly on the Cherbourg peninsula between St. Mere Eglise and Valognes. They fought for the liberation of Saint-Lô. The 759th Tank Battalion consisted of a battalion Headquarters and Headquarters Company. It included three tank companies lettered A, B and C. Most other tank battalions contained four companies. The battalion had 34 officers, 513 enlisted men, 59 light tanks (M5A1), three assault guns (M8 with 75mm howitzer), three 81mm mortar halftracks (M21), 13 halftracks (M3) plus unarmored vehicles. This battalion and the 744th Tank Battalion were the only light tank battalions in the European Theatre of Operations. The Army determined the need to attach tank battalions to infantry units during the "Bocage" hedgerow fighting in Normandy. Figure 286 illustrates the unit and type of equipment discussed above.

Ching remembered his assigned duty with the 759th Tank Battalion and Cavalry Reconnaissance Squadron. He said their job was "to protect the tanks". They rode on top of the tanks or armored vehicles. He said "you could not leave the tanks to go in there alone, sometime on patrol, and with the Cavalry, you used to go on the back roads, to ... to protect the tanks, for another thing to go to these hamlets, where they still got some German pockets. We're supposed to clean it up. We would sit on top of tanks in case we met up with some German Infantry. The tanks have got a lot of blind spots, it's very easy to destroy by the enemy. When we meet with the enemy, all we dismount and we engage with the infantry, engage the enemy. In other words we protected the tanks, and we engaged with the enemy. Our objective is to get all the enemy as possible. Kill em' all. So, cut down their fighting efficiency. But the Division, or Combat Team, each run 2,000 or about 10,000 persons. They no go out after these small hamlets or villages. They leave those small jobs for us." He said sometimes the armor would drive at 10 or 15 mph. If they didn't ride on top, they would have to run to catch up.

The 4th Cavalry, 2nd Squadron became mechanized in spring 1942 and then arrived in England in December 1943. After further reorganization the unit became 4th Cavalry Reconnaissance Squadron, Mechanized. In 1943, 2nd Squadron was re-designated the 24th Cavalry Reconnaissance Squadron (Figure 287). The 4th Cavalry had the D-Day mission of getting its troops ashore to link up with the 82nd and 101st Airborne Divisions to provide them armor support. The 4th Cavalry Groups two squadrons, the 4th and 24th Cavalry Squadrons performed flank protection to the 4th and 9th Infantry Divisions during the capture of Cherbourg. They fought for thirty-nine continuous days on the Cherbourg Peninsula capturing over 600 prisoners while protecting the south flank of VII Corps.

The 18th and 196th Field Artillery Battalion (105 mm howitzer) were considered non-Divisional Artillery assets (Figure 288). They were a Tennessee National Guard unit. Each unit had twelve M1 105mm howitzers and around 600 soldiers. The 196th landed on July 8 and was located at Les Deserts near St. Lo by July 23.<sup>14</sup> The U.S. artillery was equipped with armament that was as good if not better than any other nation's artillery units.



Figure 286: 75th Tank Battalion (L) Company B in Montebourg, France with M5A1 in August 1944. (NARA)



Figure 287: M-8 armored cars of 29th Reconnaissance Squadron Mechanized belonging to Task Force Cota of 29th US ID gathered on the east side of the Place Sainte-Croix à Saint-Lô. Photo taken on 19 July 1944 at the moment of their relief by the 35th US ID (NARA). They used the same equipment as the 4<sup>th</sup> and 24<sup>th</sup> Reconnaissance Squadrons (Mechanized)



Non-divisional artillery battalions were normally subordinated to field artillery groups. Nearly every U.S. artillery battalion was organized into three firing batteries with twelve pieces of artillery or tubes. The U.S. had an advantage over others in that its artillery was fully motorized, making it highly mobile on the battlefield. All 105 mm howitzer battalions were truck drawn in comparison to being horse drawn for many German units. The M1 105 mm gun had long range, accuracy and hitting power. The U.S. artillery benefited from good communications equipment and a fire-direction system that highly refined the U.S.'s ability to maximize concentrated fire upon an enemy. The concept of time-on-target (TOT) was perfected in World War II and is still in use by our military today.<sup>22</sup>

The Rangers had assigned duty to protect the attached field artillery units such as the 196th Field Artillery Battalion. Their mission was to protect the battery because as Ching put it, the units were all by themselves with no internal infantry support. The batteries would often be located just behind the front lines. "Sometimes, they need protection because the German infiltration comes after the battery. So, we also protect the battery when we got the orders. We were doing our job" said Ching. He went on to say that a squad, part of a squad or other assemblage of ten to 15 men would be assigned this duty at a time.



Figure 288: US Army 105 mm Howitzer in France similar to ones used by 18th and 196th Field Artillery Battalion (105 mm howitzer) (NARA)

On 8 July the 99th Infantry Battalion (Separate) moved to new location, Hau de Haunt, eight miles south of Cherbourg. From that date until 25th July, the 99th Infantry Battalion, in conjunction with the 2nd and 5th Ranger Infantry Battalions, patrolled the area of Cherbourg Peninsula between Cherbourg and Valognes. In addition, the security patrols checked the area for enemy material, ammunition, and casualties. Night firing exercises were conducted on the beach at Biville during the period using primarily German weapons (99th INF BN Unit Journal). Army veteran Rev. Frank Grubbs sent me some photos he took of Valognes while he was on patrol there and granted me permission to share them. These photos are some of the same streets the 5<sup>th</sup> Rangers patrolled and are in Figures 289 and 290.



Figure 289: Valognes – 1944, Town Center looking South. Church at Center, Left Fork is Road to Apple Orchard (Photo courtesy of Rev. Frank Grubbs)



Figure 290: Valognes – 1944, View Looking South Down Main Road (Photo courtesy of Rev. Frank Grubbs)

The First U.S. Army relieved the 101st Airborne Division from securing the area on an east-west line running through Montebourg and assigned these duties to the Provisional Ranger Group on July 8. The Advance Section, Communications Zone", ETOUSA (ADSEC) was told to call on the Commanding Officer of the Provisional Ranger Group in the event of any emergencies arising as a result of the defense of Cherbourg. The 759th Light Tank Battalion (Light), 4th Cavalry Reconnaissance Squadron (Mechanized) and 24th Cavalry Reconnaissance Squadron (Mechanized) were detached from the 101st Airborne and attached to the Provisional Ranger Group. The 99th Infantry Battalion (Separate) was detached from ADSEC and attached to the Provisional Ranger Group.

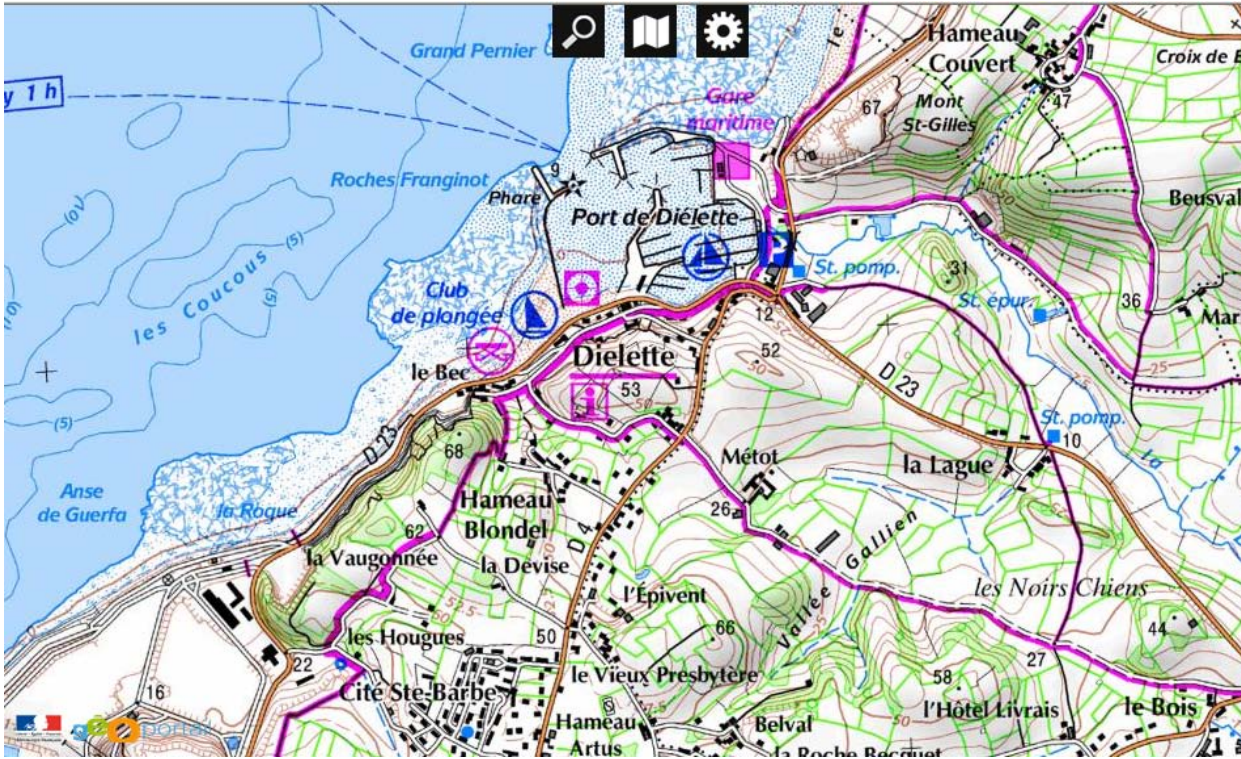


Figure 291: 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger were positioned in Diélette from July 8 through July 19, 1944, Specific location is unknown. (mapping adapted from Géoportail)

The port in the village of Flamanville is known as Diélette with the Port de Diélette as its main marina.<sup>23</sup> Diélette lies in the northern part of the commune of Flamanville. The port serves as a point of embarkation to the British Held Channel Islands, Guernsey, Alderney and Jersey as well as other lesser islands. During World War II, these islands were the only sovereign British territory to be captured and held by the Nazis.<sup>24</sup> Glassman and others reference this as the guarding from German counterattack from the Channel Islands. The Rangers were there from July 8 to July 19. Figure 291 illustrates Diélette. This figure is a close-up of an area pictured in Figure 285.

Lt. Colonel Max Schneider had seen the end of combat as a result of his actions on D-Day. Command knew that his effectiveness as a battlefield commander was now spent having fought heavily in Africa, Sicily, Italy and now Normandy. Although undiagnosed, he suffered from post-traumatic stress disorder (PTSD). He had earned enough points to rotate back to the States. He was done and he knew it, and he had fulfilled every expectation placed on him from above. He became noticeably more relaxed during this period, and his peers and subordinates alike saw it.<sup>9</sup> On July 12, Schneider sent a formal written request for rotation back to the States to Colonel Rudder, Commander of the Provisional Ranger Group. His son wrote in his biography that the memorandum contained one sentence: "It is requested that your headquarters execute the necessary papers for my Rotation to the United States." This request set in motion his return to the States as a hero. What many didn't know at the time, was that Schneider was also a casualty of PTSD. He would have a remarkable career in the postwar military, until his mental wounds caught up to him and he committed suicide on March 25, 1959.<sup>19</sup> The biography written on the man by his son was moving, and a must read.

On July 10, First Army Headquarters issued Troop Assignment No. 77. This relieved 759th Tank Battalion (Light), 4th Cavalry Reconnaissance Squadron (Mechanized) and 24th Cavalry Reconnaissance Squadron



(Mechanized) from the 101st Airborne Division and attached them to the Provisional Ranger Group as of July 8. This order also relieved the 99th Infantry Battalion from ADSEC, and attached it to the Provisional Ranger Group.

On July 12, Tech Sgt Harvie C. Powell joined B Company from the 86th Replacement Battalion. On July 16, S/Sgt Pierre D Gunnoe, S/Sgt Edward W. Dickman, Pfc Albert P. Gipson, and Pfc Richard L. Miller transferred to military hospitals. Pfc Hubert A. Baker and Pfc Frank F. Dimarsico joined from Replacement Depots. On July 17, Pfc Henry Craig joined B Company from the 10th Replacement Depot.

The B Company Morning Report recorded on July 19, 1944 the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion left Diélette, France (MGRS 973153) and marched 2 ½ miles to Flamanville, France (MGRS 956116). Three men, Pvt Edward L. Saffert, Pvt Roland D. Gray and Pvt Ozley K Hamilton joined as replacements on July 19. The company bivouacked at a place called the Chateau de Flamanville. The duties held by the Provisional Ranger Group were taken over by the 15th Calvary Reconnaissance Group.<sup>20</sup>



Figure 292: Postcard showing The Chateau de Flamanville where the Rangers were positioned July 19 to August 6, 1944 (public domain)

Flamanville is a small village located in the in the township of Les Pieux part of the district of Cherbourg, department of Manche and is part of the region Basse-Normandie in northwest France. The average elevation is 73 meters above sea level. It is located at 49.533° North and 1.864° West.<sup>25</sup> Glassman reported that at Flamanville, the “Rangers had the mission of guarding the beach against counter-invasion by the Germans who were on Jersey and Guernsey Islands. While patrolling, the Rangers suffered many casualties, as the beach had been thoroughly mined by the enemy.” He further wrote that during the time the Rangers were there, the Germans made no move against the mainland, although later in the year, they did raid the area and capture U.S. prisoners.<sup>11</sup>

In December 2012, General Raaen and I collaborated on the Rangers’ time at Flamanville. He wrote and emailed me the following account.

“The Chateau de Flamanville is, I believe, located at 49.526692N, 1.870299E. This is just down La Rue de Chateau from the center of Flamanville (Figure 292). In today's Google aerial photos there is a lot of "new" construction around the old chateau. Seems to be much more water than I remember. The main body of the chateau ran north and south. The north wing was occupied by the Rostand family. Madame was the ruler, though her son Peter was the manager. Can't remember the wife's name but they had three, possibly four daughters. Marie, Helen, Bernadette and possibly an infant

Chantal. Bernadette was my friend, we spoke about the same level of French though her vocabulary was much greater at age seven or so than mine after four years of French. Lt. Van Riper, my exec and commo officer, and I used to play contract bridge with Peter and his wife nearly every night.

The chapel was on the first floor of the south wing and only Fr. Lacy was allowed in there except for RC services. Madame was most insistent that we heathen protestants not defile her chapel. Other than that, we occupied the south wing.

In the east yard, suspended from a huge tree, Hq Co, had a large cargo chute. Underneath the canopy we had our pup tents and company HQ. Very comfortable, albeit a little nippy. Schneider and Sullivan lived on the second floor of the south wing.

Most of the companies were scattered in the nearby villages. I don't remember a line company being at the chateau for any length of time. There simply wasn't enough room. Each company had a tactical mission as well as a mission to train replacements. The tactical missions all pertained to the defense of the west coast in the event that the Germans on the Channel Islands decided to make assault landings anywhere on the western shore of the Cherbourg Peninsula.

The Ranger Group was still in existence, but Lt. Col. Rudder had been relieved of his group command and Colonel Slappy was the Group Commander. Slappy had commanded the 115th Infantry and was relieved when he argued with General Gerhardt about making an assault crossing of the Vire River with his exhausted forces. Very nice gentleman.

I could not open the document titled "Le". But the photo you sent is the chateau as I remember it. Only those lakes bother me. I do remember that during the realm of Louis XIV (I think it was he), all the moats around chateaux were filled in. Louis did not want any protracted sieges. Perhaps the lakes were the remnants of the moats restored after the war."

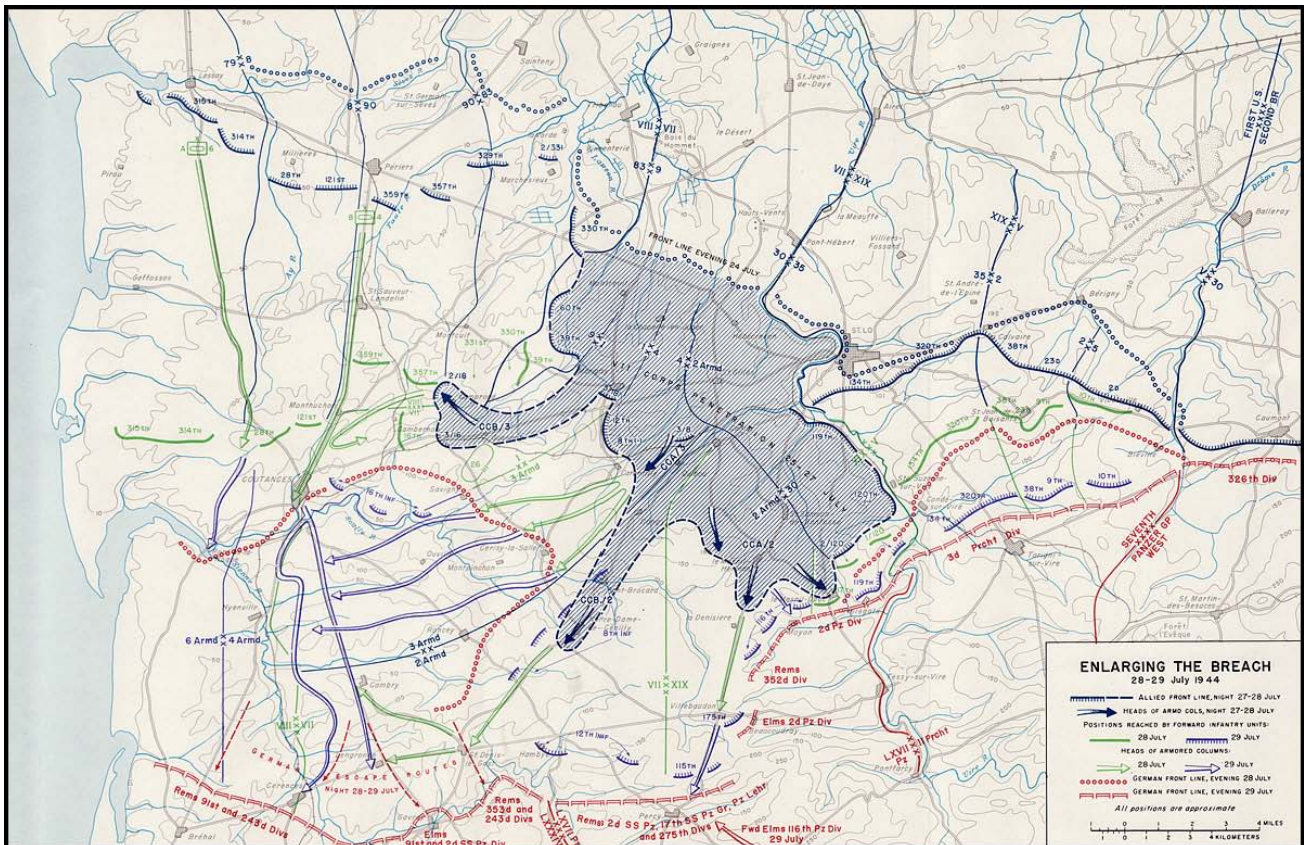


Figure 293: Map illustrating the "Breakout" from hedgerow country (USACMH)



## THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

The famed Breakout occurred in the end of July as American forces began to overwhelm the Germans and drive hard to the south, and ultimately toward Germany. The Provisional Ranger Group stood to protect the flanks and rear areas of this action. Figure 293 illustrates the German positions and the American drive to the south from July 28-29, 1944.

The 759th Tank Battalion (Light) Unit Journal reported for the month of July the battalion was not in contact with enemy. During this period the battalion was stationed in the Cherbourg Peninsula with the mission of patrolling the eastern half of the peninsula to maintain order; locate and report all abandoned United States and Enemy equipment. They reported no vehicular loss during the period. Their casualties consisted of one enlisted man KIA, and two enlisted men severely wounded in action to mines. The 99th Infantry Battalion Unit Journal reported that from 25 July to 6 August, the 99th Infantry Battalion (Separate) conducted night firing, field problems at Teurtheville-Hague. (759th Tank BN Unit Journal)(99th INF BN Unit Journal)



Figure 294: PFC Randall Ching and two Replacement Rangers riding atop an armored vehicle in summer 1944. Note camouflage on Ching's helmet. (Courtesy Randall Ching)



In 1945, Lawton Collins Lieutenant General, U.S. Army Commanding wrote a letter to Colonel John C. MacDonald Commanding Officer, 4th Cavalry Group APO 307, United States Army about the contributions of the 4th Cavalry Group. He wrote:

With the end of the war in Europe, I wish to express to you and to the officers and men of the 4th Cavalry Group, reinforced, my admiration and deep appreciation for the magnificent job the group has done throughout the campaign of the VII Corps in Europe. The 4th Cavalry Group landed in Normandy, some elements on "D" Day, the remainder of the Group a short time after D-day, and performed exceptionally valuable service in the typical cavalry role of protecting the flanks of the VII Corps during the Cherbourg Campaign. A similar task was performed following the breakthrough at St. Lo-Marigny, and then the group was employed to link up the 1st Division at Mayenne with the south flank of the remainder of the divisions of the corps near Le Teilleul during the great defensive battle of Mortain.

On July 21 Pvt Joseph B Barfield (sp?) joined B Company as a replacement Ranger. July 22 brought back Rangers Pfc John C. Marmo, Sgt Howard M. Goldberg, Tech 5 Eugene F. Pavlicek, Sgt Dalton L. Boudreaux, Pfc Henry J. Cordes. S/Sgt Hull became ill on July 25 and was placed on light duty in his quarters until July 29. On August 2, Pfc Donald H Phelps was transferred to a hospital. On August 3, Pfc Andrew L. Stockmaster was transferred to a hospital and returned August 7.

An interesting story developed during the interviews with Randall Ching in 2014. He remembered that there was a way to pick out replacements to the unit after D-Day. It involved helmets and uniforms. In the picture in Figure 294, Ching, a veteran of D-Day had covered his helmet in camouflaged material the men found in the areas surrounding the beaches from the discarded parachutes of the men of the 82nd and 101st Airborne Divisions. The landings resulted in parachutes lying around all over the place. This camouflaged material was cut up and placed on the helmets of most, if not all of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion men. This led to a better understanding of the parachutes used for the invasion. They were not white as often portrayed in Hollywood pictures. The men sitting next to him on the armored vehicle did not have the camouflage on their helmets, and in fact their helmets exhibit very little wear. Also the new replacement's uniforms are nice and crisp or clean. By this point in summer 1944 the Rangers who had been around a while had well-worn uniforms from being in the field and exposed to combat.

At 1000 hrs, 5 Aug 1944, the 759th Light Tank Battalion was relieved from attachment to 2nd Infantry Division by VCG, V Corps and assembled during the night in the vicinity of T6I0402 near Laumat, France. The Battalion immediately prepared for further operations by performing first echelon maintenance of equipment and personnel. (759th Tank BN Unit Journal)

The B Company Morning Report recorded on August 6, 1944 the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion left Flamanville, France (MGRS 973153) at 2300 hours and arrived at Les Moitiers, France (MGRS 956116) at 2400. Les Moitiers-d'Allonne is a commune in the Manche department in Normandy in north-western France about 19 ½ miles southwest of Cherbourg along the west coast of France.<sup>27</sup> They travelled by truck convoy a distance of 15 miles from Flamanville south to Les Moitiers-d'Allonne. On August 7, the Rangers travelled southeast 45 miles by truck from 0001 hours to 0445 hours, arriving at Saint-Martin-de-Bonfossé (MGRS 434556). Saint-Martin-de-Bonfossé lies approximately six miles southwest of Saint-Lô where the 29th Infantry Division fought a long and ferocious battle against the Germans. The mapping in Figure 295 illustrates this move.

On 6 Aug 1944, the 759th Light Tank Battalion was detached from V Corps and placed in First U.S. Army reserve, attached to the Provisional Ranger Group as part of a Special Task Force. The Battalion Commander immediately reported to First U.S. Army Headquarters and Provisional Ranger Group Headquarters for orders, where upon the Battalion moved to bivouac at 441555 near Le Mesnil Herman, France that was the designated assembly point for the task force. The task force consisted of the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion, 5th Ranger Battalion and the 99th Infantry Battalion (Separate). None of the units had worked with tanks previously, therefore, the 7th, 8th, 9th and, 10th of August were spent in practice of small unit tactics with the Tank Battalion teaching the Ranger Battalions and the Separate Infantry Battalion the lessons learned during July and Aug with the 2nd Infantry Division. (759th Tank BN Unit Journal)

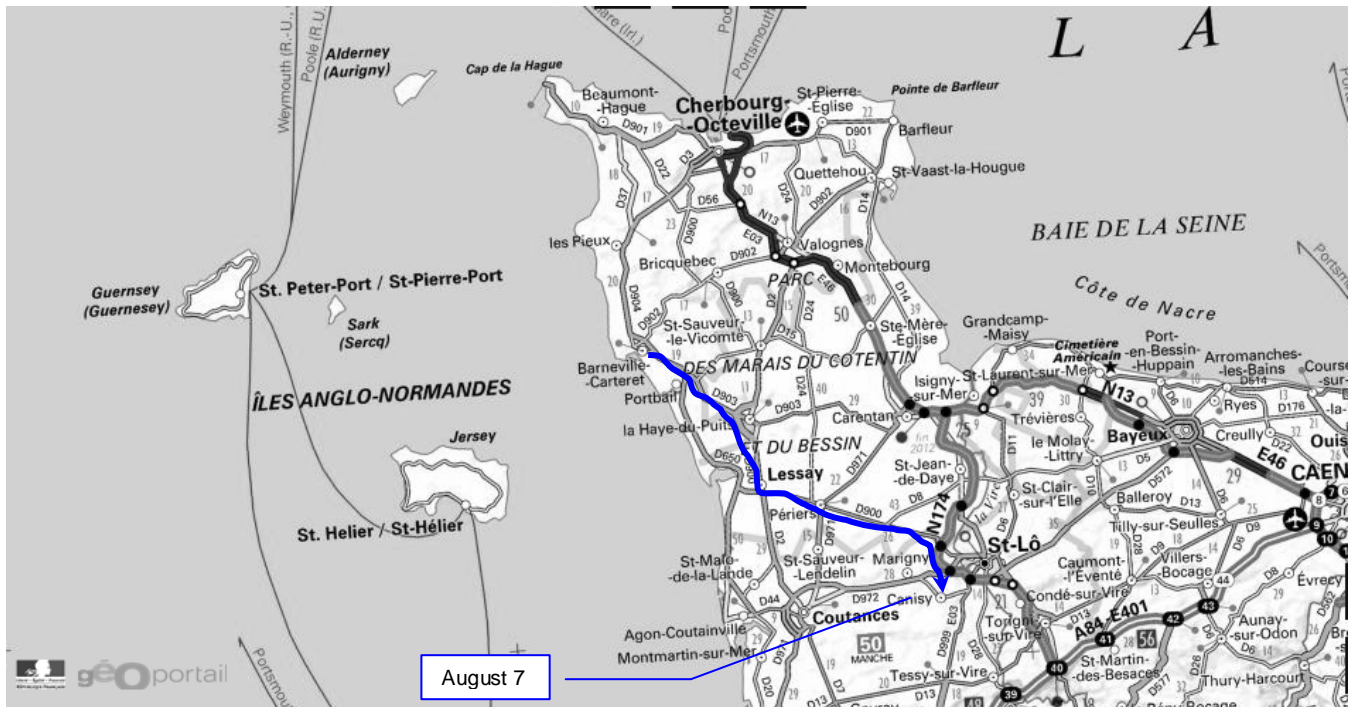


Figure 295: 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger movements on August 7, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)

According to the 759th Tank Battalion Unit Journal there were several lessons learned from the hedgerow fighting that they brought with them to train the infantry units of the Provisional Ranger Group. The light tanks were fitted with “Hedgerow busters” or “Rhinos”. The new ability of the tanks to break straight through the hedges with these devices enabled close fire support between tank and infantry asset. The tanks fought in close support of the advancing Infantry. The tanks were fitted with a hand mike or telephone on the rear of the vehicle that enabled direct communications between the troops on the ground and the tanks. The battalion found that it was most successful than attaching no less than a company of light tanks to an infantry battalion. The tanks were employed in sections, each with an infantry team. The ground units consisted of one to two squads of infantry and a tank director to guide the tanks movements or to targets. The infantry would kill any Germans with rocket propelled weapons or other tank-busting capability. The Tank Company Commander would work directly in liaison with the Infantry Battalion Commander for maximum effectiveness.

According to the First Army After Action Reports, one of the combat lessons thus far was that the “infantry-tank training was inadequate”, and that “closer knitting of this team is mandatory”. Thus the 759th continued training with infantry units for hedgerow fighting in the rear areas. From August 7 until 10, the 759th trained with the 2nd Ranger Battalion in Canissy, for a mission that was subsequently cancelled. From 7 August to 10 August, the 99th Infantry Battalion (Separate) was located at Le Mesnil Herman where training was coordinated with the 759th Light Tank Battalion. (99th INF BN Unit Journal) 7 Aug to 14 Aug: 759th Tank Battalion (Light) Attached to Provisional Ranger Group. (759th Tank BN Unit Journal)

On August 10, 1944, 1st Sergeant Avery J. Thornhill went from duty to Absent Sick on light duty at an unknown hospital in what was to become a major shakeup of the leadership of the company during the month of August. He would return temporarily on August 12. B Company departed Saint-Martin-de-Bonfossé (MGRS 434556) on August 10 and travelled by motor convoy approximately 25 miles. The Rangers arrived at Villedieu des Poêles at 2355 hours en route to Buais. Villedieu des Poêles is approximately 20 ½ miles south-southwest of Saint-Lô. The B Company Morning Report recorded on August 11, 1944 the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion left Villedieu des Poêles, France at 0005 hours and arrived at Buais, France (MGRS 557967) at 0400 hours. 2nd Lt William J. Mulligan went to an unknown hospital on August 11 and would be lost to the Company on August 20 due to medical reasons. Buais, France is located approximately 43 miles south of Saint-Lô. They travelled by motor convoy a distance of 25 miles. These moves are illustrated in Figure 296.

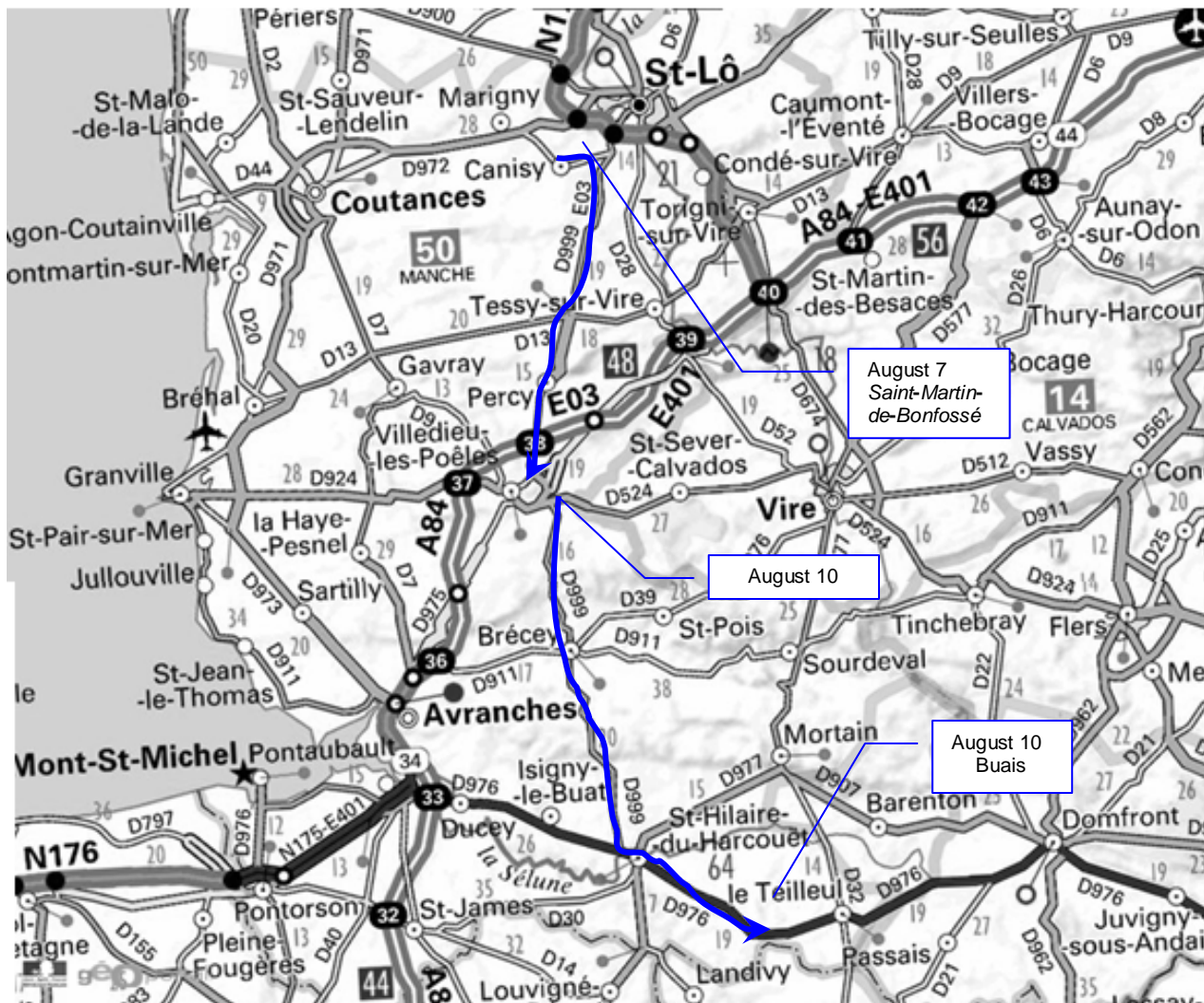


Figure 296: 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger movements on August 7 to August 10, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)

At the time of World War II, Villedieu les Poêles was a center for metal-work. The artisans there were known for making brass and copper pans and for the manufacture of large church bells. The name of the town comes from the French word for frying pan, *poêles*. The town is located on the Route de la Dentelle Normande or “Lace Road”. Other towns on this route include Alençon, Bayeux, Caen, Argentan and Courseulles-la-Perriere. The Germans left a sniper behind in the town upon withdrawing who shot some of the first U.S. soldiers entering the town. The town’s mayor spared the town from Allied air and artillery attack by imploring the U.S. commander to spare it, making it one of the first French towns to escape utter destruction.<sup>28</sup>

During the period 11, 12 and 13 August, the 99th Infantry set up a general defense of the town of Buais. On 14 August, the battalion became attached to the Second Armored Division and assigned to Combat Command “B” of that division for a mission. Mission was cancelled and battalion was assigned to Division Reserve. Until August 18th, the unit was indoctrinated in the methods of armored infantry tactics and was given instructions and demonstrations by the 41st Armored Infantry Regiment in the proper installation of road blocks, proper use of artillery, and proper use of communications within an armored division. (99th INF BN Unit Journal)

At 0100 hours, 11 Aug 1944; the 759th Tank Battalion marched to the vicinity of Buais, France along with the units of the Provisional Ranger Group. (759th Tank BN Unit Journal) The mission of this force was to secure the road net in the vicinity of Buais. The Tank Battalion was used as a mobile reserve to meet a threat from any direction. Officers and NCOs made detailed reconnaissance of all available routes in all directions from their unit positions and selected and marked cross country routes for day or night use in the event regular routes of approach to threatened areas were rendered useless.



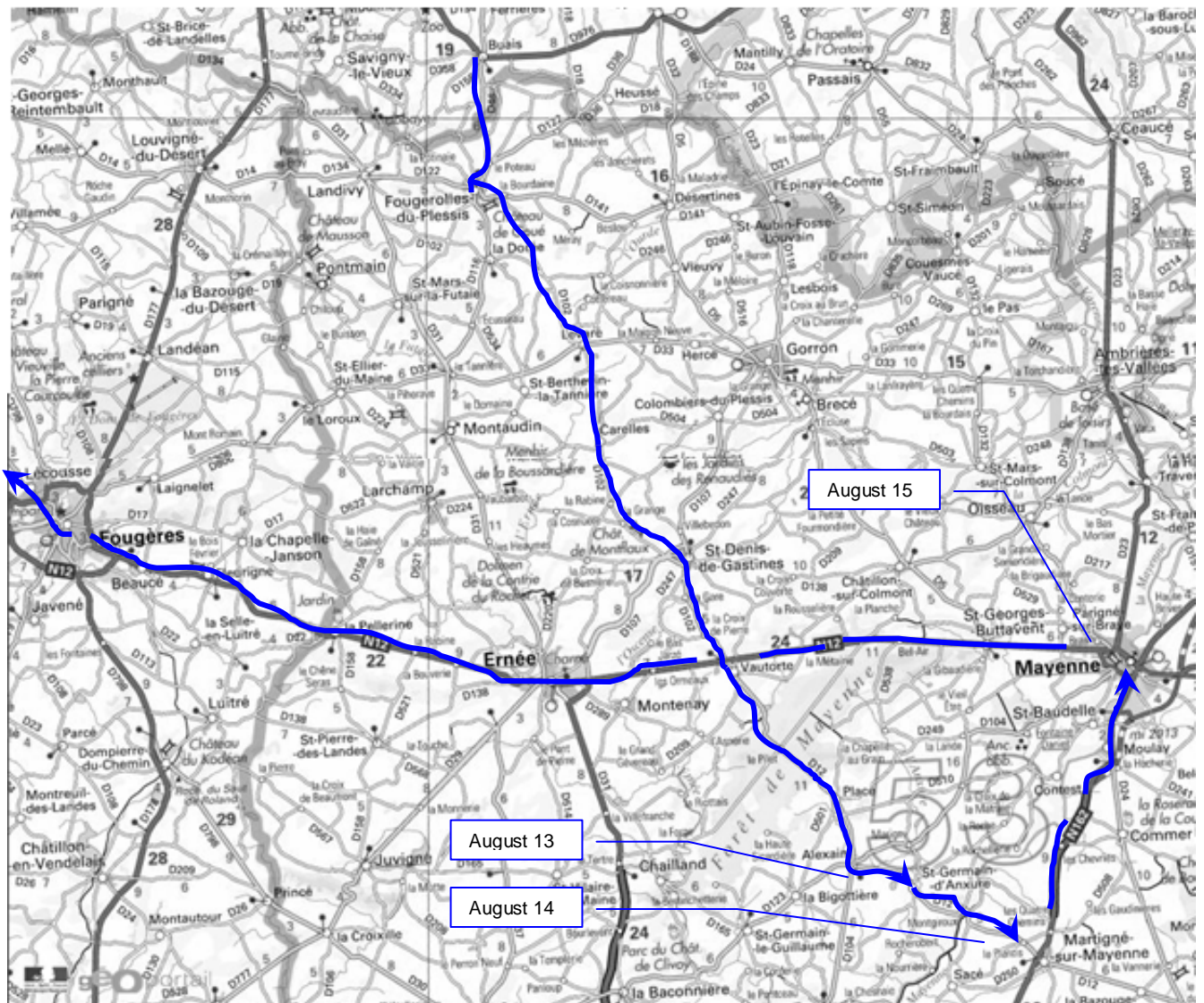


Figure 297: 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger movements on August 10 to August 15, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)

On August 13, 5<sup>th</sup> RN INF BN, B Company left Buais (MGRS 557967) at 2130 hours by motor convoy. They travelled 25 miles to St. Germain d’Anxure, France (MGRS 734616) arriving at 2350 hours. Their movements over the next several days were frequent, and they saw combat action in this time. The movements are illustrated in Figure 297.

On August 13, First Army issued Troop Assignment No. 97. This attached the Provisional Ranger Unit consisting of the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, 99th Infantry Battalion (Separate), 759th Tank Battalion (Light), 196th Field Artillery Battalion (105 H), 18th Field Artillery Battalion (105 H) to VII Corps administration, supply, and communications effective August 11. On August 12, the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion, assigned Twelfth Army Group, and the 18th Field Artillery Battalion (105 H), assigned First Army were relieved from attachment to the Provisional Ranger Group and attached to VII Corps.

On August 14, B Company left St. Germain d’Anxure by motor convoy and travelled 13 miles to Martigné, France (MGRS 760591).

On August 14, First Army issued a Troop Assignment that detached the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, assigned Twelfth Army Group, from the Provisional Ranger Group and attached them to VII Corps effective August 13. The First Army relieved the Provisional Ranger Group Hq, 759th Tank Battalion (Light) and 196th Field Artillery Battalion (105 H) and attached them to VII Corps effective August 13. The 99th Infantry Battalion (Separate),

assigned First Army, was relieved from attachment to the Provisional Ranger Group and attached to XIX Corps effective August 13. On August 14, the 759th Tank Battalion was relieved from assignment to the Provisional Ranger Group and reassigned to the VII Corps and the 4th Infantry Division and the battalion CO reported to the Commanding General, 4th Infantry Division for orders. (759th Tank BN Unit Journal)

On 15 August, B Company moved from Martigne (MGRS 760591) at 1500 hours by motor convoy eight miles to Mayenne, France (MGRS 805727) arriving at 1600 hours.

On August 16, the Provisional Ranger Group consisting of the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, 99th Infantry Battalion (Separate), 759th Tank Battalion (Light), 18th Field Artillery Battalion (105 H), 196th Field Artillery Battalion (105 H), were attached to VII Corps and further attached to 4th Infantry Division for administration, supply and communications only effective August 11. The 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion and 18th Field Artillery Battalion (105 H), assigned Twelfth Army Group, were relieved from attachment to Provisional Ranger Group and 4th Infantry Division and attached to VII Corps effective August 12.

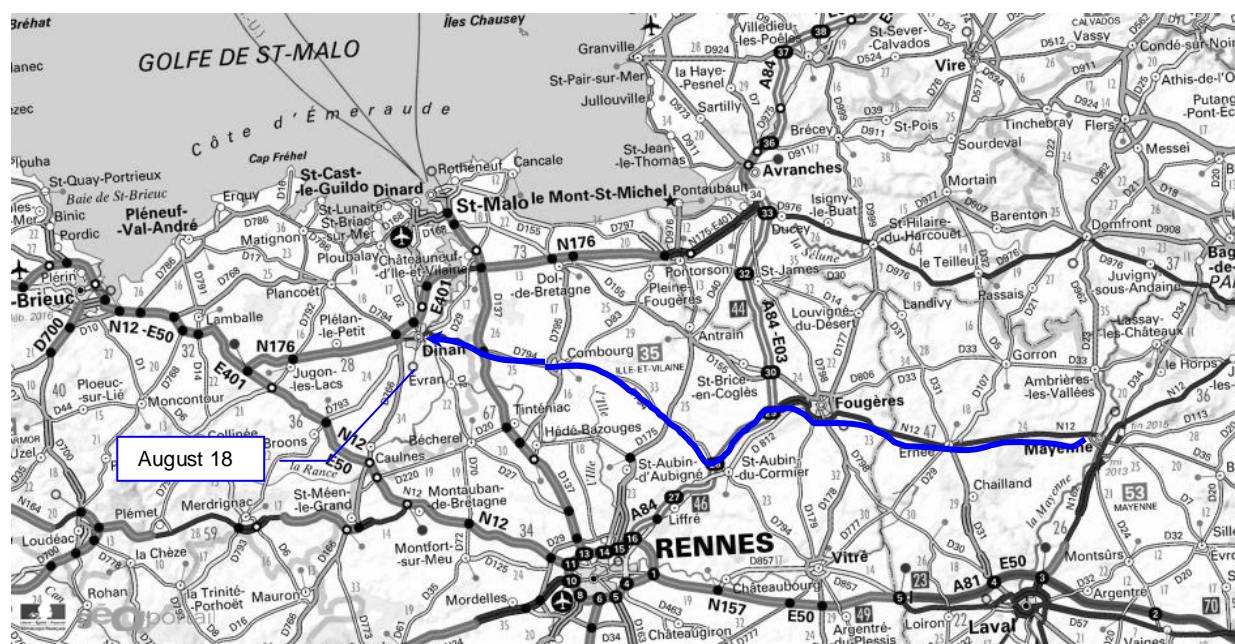


Figure 298: 5th Ranger movements on August 15 to August 18, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)

By August 18, the Battle for Brittany began to take shape and as a result the Army committed the Rangers to combat operations. The First Army Troop assignments of August 18 and August 20 began to assign the units of the Provisional Ranger Group with destiny. Effective August 18, the Provisional Ranger Group Headquarters, assigned First Army, was relieved from attachment to VII Corps and reverted to Army Control. The 196th Field Artillery Battalion, assigned First Army, was relieved from attachment to VII Corps and attached to V Corps. They were then relieved from attachment to the Provisional Ranger Group on August 18. The 759th Tank Battalion (Light) was relieved from attachment to Provisional Ranger Group HQ and attached to 6th Armored Group on the same day.

Dinah Shore performed for the troops on the same day the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion moved out for Brittany from Mayenne. Ching knew her from watching Danny Kaye movies. He recalled that their movement order to the front in Brittany came all of the sudden. The men were told that she was coming to perform for them. Ching did get a glimpse of her during the commotion. Dinah Shore noted the men boarding the trucks to move out and came “and she sang a song “I’ll be seeing you.”” She made a point to serenade the Rangers as they pulled out. “That’s the first and last we saw of her.” Other than that, the men had very little entertainment of that type in France, or later in Germany for that matter. Ching recalled that they occasionally were treated to the Red Cross girls. He said that once in a while a platoon or company would pull back off the line and go to the rear where the Red Cross had set up facilities for the GIs. The men could take a shower, get a new change of clothes and get served coffee and donuts. He remembered often getting four or five donuts as the Red Cross girls thought he was handsome. In the field, they got “dry cleaned” by sponge bathing. Using a little water and wiping down important parts of the body.



B Company left Mayenne at 1230 and arrived in Dinan, France (en route) at 2355 hours having travelled 120 miles by motor convoy (Figure 298). On August 19, B Company left Dinan at 0005 hours and travelled 80 miles to Trégarantec, France (MGRS 104164) at 0800 hours. On August 20, the Provisional Ranger Group HQ, 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion and 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion were relieved from attachment to VII Corps by VII Corps, Troop Assignment No. 21. The Rangers bivouacked at Trégarantec, a small village southeast of the town of Ploudaniel-Lesneven which itself is fifteen miles northeast of the city of Brest. On August 19, the Provisional Ranger Group was assigned to VIII Corps for the assault on Brest. This movement is shown in Figure 299.

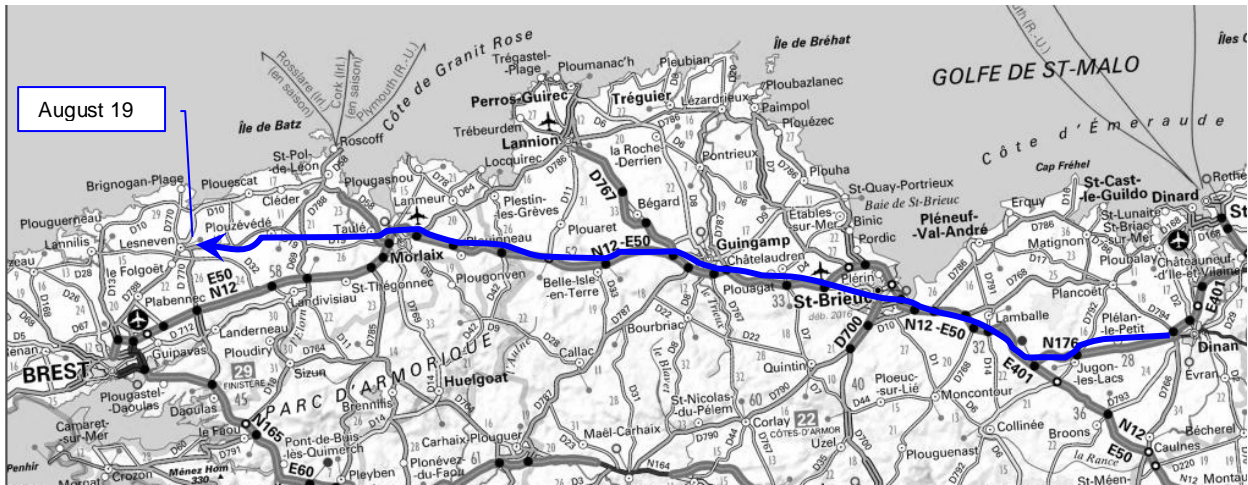


Figure 299: 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger movements on August 19, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)

August 22, 1944 had far reaching implications for Company B. Captain Whittington made a personal choice that day to go and have a drink. General Patton had issued orders for all U.S. commanders to prevent U.S. soldiers from committing crimes against French civilians on August 20. The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion was bivouacked on the outskirts of Lesneven, France. Whittington had explicit orders to stay put. There were suspected German intelligence gathering operations in the vicinity. U.S. military intelligence assets had requisitioned the l'hôtel de France à Lesneven (Hotel de France) as a place to gather needed counter-intelligence, and orders had been issued to all other U.S. forces to remain out of Lesneven unless an MP or intelligence asset. Whittington entered the hotel bar with Captain Runge of the 5th Rangers at about 1830 hours and began to drink. Both men were AWOL. The end result was an altercation between Whittington and a possible member of the French resistance named Francis Morand. Whittington killed Morand, shooting him six times thinking him a spy. Whittington's children told me he fired three shots, hitting him twice. As a result, Whittington was relieved from command on 23 August as he awaited court-martial.<sup>29</sup> The August 23 B Company Morning Report shows that Captain Whittington went from duty to absent and confined in the hands of military Authority at Lesneven, France as of 2300 hours on August 22. He was administratively assigned to Battalion Headquarters. 1st Lt Bernard M. Pepper was relieved of his duties as 1st Platoon Leader and assumed command of the Company on August 23.

On August 23, Pfc Bernard C Akers, Jr, Pfc Frank F. DiMarsico, Pfc Maurice V. Thibodeau, Pfc Otto F. Recher, Jr, and Pvt William B. Bartlett transferred to Headquarters Company. On the same day, Pvt Hubert A. Baker, Pfc John Walinski and Pvt Roy E. Carpenter transferred to E Company. On August 23, B Company, 2nd Platoon Sergeant, Tec Sgt Chester B Warich went from duty to Absent, Sick light duty Hospital. The B Company Morning Report on August 26 shows that 1st Lt Stanley L. Askin joined the company from Company A and assumed duty as 1st Platoon Leader. Pfc Robert S. Goodwin, Tech Sgt Chester B. Warich and Pfc Robert W. Gorzynski all were dropped from the unit roster due to medical reasons. On August 29, Pfc Bernard C Akers, Pfc Otto F. Recher, Jr, and Pvt Raymond D. Feagan joined from Headquarters Company. On August 30, B Company was at Tregarantee, France (MGRS 104164). Their telephone code name was Paris. On August 31, 1st Sergeant Avery J. Thornhill ended up going to the hospital again. This caused further upheaval in the platoon leadership. This is not to say in the least that the unit was any less effective. The battle in Normandy resulted in a thirty percent loss of casualties to B Company, 2nd Platoon. Many of the men who had trained with and known S/Sgt Hull were slowly being wounded and or otherwise replaced. The institutional knowledge of fellow Rangers was being bled from B Company.



## 19 BATTLE FOR BREST: FORT DE TOULBROCH

The Battle for Brest is an often missed campaign when it comes to studying the liberation of France. The city of Brest is a deep water port located on the extreme western tip of France. At the time of World War II, it was a city of some 80,000 people. During the past several hundred years, it has played a pivotal role in the seafaring nature and defense of the country. During World War I, it played a vital link to the allies by allowing the United States to directly ship arms and men to France for service at the Western Front. The French had over the centuries constructed many fortifications in order to defend this vital port, and by World War II, the Germans captured, then improved upon them and incorporated them into the “Atlantik Wall.” To understand exactly what happened to S/Sgt Hull during this battle, it is important to understand the context of the campaign.

Brest is in the region of France known as Brittany. Brittany is a cultural region in the north-west of France. It contains the westernmost portions of France as a peninsula jutting out to the Atlantic Ocean. It was formerly a kingdom, then a duchy, part of the United Kingdom. England had claims to it dating back to 1532, and then off and on again as they warred with France over the centuries. The result is a heavy Celtic influence in the region and is referred to as one of the six Celtic nations. It is bordered to the north by the English Channel, the Celtic Sea and Atlantic Ocean to the west and the Bay of Biscay to the South. It has a land area of 13,136 square miles.<sup>1</sup> The terrain on the peninsula is a gently rolling plateau with small hills and low ridges. There are narrow, deeply cut valleys and the area has many streams.

During the Battle for Normandy the Port of Cherbourg, France was a primary target for capture by the allied forces. After D-Day several American units laid siege to the port city, and as a result, between allied assault and German sabotage, the port was effectively put out of action requiring extensive repair. They then used it until after the allies had advanced deep enough into France to strategically limit the usefulness of the port. The port of Brest was the next major desirable deep water port facility to the allies, particularly the Americans who would be able to sail from the U.S. and land directly at Brest, without having to stop in England. Another very important key to Brest was the German submarine base located there. The construction of the U-boat bunker at Brest commenced in early 1941 and in the summer of that year the 1st and 9th U-boat flotillas moved from Germany to Brest. The bunker was built in two phases, the first comprising 13 submarine pens, and the second 9 pens. The German sub pen and surrounding area is pictured in Figure 300.

The sub pen was 1090 feet long by 630 feet wide. The roof was twenty feet thick and able to withstand even the English “Tallboy” bomb. This U-boat submarine bunker was the largest German facility of this type constructed during the war. Between 1943 on, the Allies launched over 80 bombing missions against the facility at a loss of some 50 aircraft. The English RAF launched “Tallboy” bunker-busting bomb strikes against the pens on August 5, 12 and 13, 1944. Even these strikes only modestly caused damage, with only five bombs penetrating the roof resulting in very minor damage. The Germans knew the end to Brest was coming, and the last U-boat, U-256 left the facility on September 4. In a testimony to the German engineering, the French Navy uses the sub pens to this day.<sup>2,3</sup>



Figure 300: German Submarine Bunker at Brest, France. Note Fort du Protzic, captured by the 5<sup>th</sup> Rangers on September 18 to top and left of sub base. (NARA)

The Germans defending Brest included between 40,000 – 50,000 soldiers, sailors and marines. General Hermann-Bernhard Ramcke commanded these men with fervency to the Führer. The 2nd Fallschirmjäger (Parachute) Division was among these forces. They were well battle hardened after fighting on several fronts of the war. Other units in the region included the 343rd and 266th Infantry Divisions, and units consisting of Ostbattalions or captured Russian and other Eastern European soldiers. The 343rd was in charge of the defense of the forts under Generalleutnant Erwin Rauch. Ramcke had been given the assignment by Hitler on August 5 with orders for the “unconditional holding to the last of even the smallest fortifications.”

Ramcke divided the defense of Brest into eastern and western sectors. The Penfield River was the boundary between sectors. This river runs through Brest, emptying into the harbor. His experienced and well-trained 2nd Fallschirmjäger (Parachute) Division was spread around the perimeter to bolster the effectiveness of infantry forces at any single point. The main line of German resistance was fronted by small outposts that were frequently patrolled by German units. Of the 40,000-50,000 German defenders, 3,500 were naval anti-aircraft and artillery personnel and 9,000 were naval personnel and marines. There were also a number of Organization Todt personnel available.

The Germans had quite some time to prepare the final defenses of Brest while the Americans fought their way through Normandy. Brest was a fortress. It was protected from attacks from air, sea or land. Included as part of this final bastion were multiple rings of defensive lines that incorporated ancient forts, strongpoints, heavy artillery and coastal batteries and the use of the hedgerows in the area. As the Americans had learned fighting in Normandy, the hedgerows formed the most arduous defensive structures they would face. The French called this “bocage” meaning

hedgerow country. General Omar Bradley referred to this area as “the damndest country I’ve ever seen.” The majority of fields in the area were shaped irregularly and averaged in size approximately 200 by 400 yards in size. The hedges were up to fifteen feet in height, and they were flanked by drainage ditches. The attackers by their often limited maneuvering ability through one field at a time due to poor visibility. Taking advantage of the terrain, as they had done throughout this region of France, the defenders used the hedgerows to camouflage and conceal the many small unit positions incorporated into their defense. They dispersed many minefields and many small heavily armed antitank and antipersonnel units to contend with the advancing Americans. This strategy allowed the German small unit forces to often repel American units up to five times their strength in number. The fighting in this environment was up close and personal often at ranges of less than three hundred yards. Much of the training conducted by the Rangers in the summer months was aimed at overcoming this terrain and the German tactics used in it.

By the time St. Lo fell in the summer months, the Germans and Americans had each suffered some 100,000 casualties. The Americans were overconfident as they approached the Battle for Brest in thinking they could quickly cause the Germans to surrender.<sup>4</sup> The Germans were ready for them and would make them pay for every inch of ground. Surrender was not in their plan. American Lieutenant William Arendt wrote a book *Midnight of the Soul*, that included a vivid account of hedgerow fighting that included a fair assessment of the task at hand.

"In my opinion, hedgerow fighting is the toughest in the world, with the possible exception of close-contact, jungle warfare. Traditionally, the attacker needs a 3 to 1 advantage; the Germans showed they could defend successfully in the Normandy bocage country against a 5 to 1 ratio, and the reasons are simple. Each hedgerow is easily defended; hedgerows running at right angles to line of attack offer good retreating shelter to where another defense line can be set up, sometimes even at the next hedgerow; heavy equipment, such as tanks, are virtually useless and artillery is handicapped because of the closeness of the fighting troops. We were fighting for 100 yards at a time."<sup>5</sup>

The city of Brest was surrounded by a medieval wall 35 feet tall and 60 feet wide in some places. The wall was impervious to artillery fire, and the Germans had cleared everything within 300 yards to its front facing the attackers. This resulted in outstanding fields of fire on any assault force. The wall had thoroughly frustrated the attack of the 2nd Infantry Division “Indianhead Division” until patrols eventually discovered a neglected portion of wall they could successfully exploit.<sup>6</sup>

The German defenses of Brest were covered in the War Department book, *United States Army in World War II, European Theater of Operations, Breakout and Pursuit*. The book described the defensive works protecting Brest. These included ancient fortifications, bolstered by gun emplacements, casemates, concrete pillboxes and simple trenches. The Germans enhanced these further by adding barbed wire obstacles, mine fields and antitank ditches. A lynch-pin of the German defenses was the line of old French forts dating from the time of Louis XIV (1774-1793). The ancient fortifications had been constructed prior to the Franco-Prussian War, and were located primarily to the west and northwest of the city of Brest. These forts were continually upgraded over time and had casemates and heavy guns. There were additional forts located throughout the region. The old forts were constructed with a defensive strength of assault from the sea in mind. To that end, they were still formidable positions during World War II. The Germans incorporated ramparts, thick walls and alcoves for the shelter of gun emplacements that gave advantage over an attacker. The Germans positioned either their own or captured French coastal, field artillery and naval battery emplacements. They added defenses consisting of field artillery of varying sizes and dual-purpose antiaircraft guns and naval guns stripped from ships sunk in the harbor by Allied planes. The Germans, masters at the concept of fields of fire, relied on their batteries of coastal and field artillery on the Daoulas promontory and the Queler peninsula for additional fire support. The German heavy guns near Le Conquet, could fire seaward or landward. The Germans employed twelve batteries of Army field artillery and eighteen batteries of Navy Flak to defend Brest. Some of the heavy German coastal and artillery batteries could be turned landward to fire.<sup>7</sup>



There were additional scattered forts further west on the coast, such as the Graf Spee Battery near the village of Lochrist with its four 280mm naval guns, three of which that could fire landward (Figure 301). The 2nd Rangers would take on the mission of silencing this location. The Rangers fought hard in the western most tip of the Le Conquet peninsula. Then, in what is one of the most brazen acts of heroism that I have learned of, four Rangers from the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion simply walked up to the fort, requested audience with the commander and requested the Germans to surrender, which they did. The Rangers had a reputation as fighters among the Germans, one that was well earned by the five battalions in theater through the war. The fierce reputation of the Rangers enabled that to happen.<sup>8, 4</sup> Two good books that cover this event are *The Battalion* by Robert Black and *From Beachhead to Brittany, the 29th Infantry Division at Brest, August-September 1944*, by Joseph Balkoski.



Figure 301: 280 mm guns of the Graf Spee Battery defeated by the 2<sup>nd</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion (NARA photos)

Each of the five coastal forts was separated by intervals of about one mile. From west to east, the forts were Fort de Toulbroc'h, Fort de Pointe du Petit Minou, Fort de Mengant, Fort de Dellac and Fort de Portzic. They were in a section of rugged coast with deep coastal ravines separating the prominences where the forts were located high on cliffs. This was considered the toughest terrain in this portion of Brittany. Of five coastal forts integral to the defensive lines of Brest, the westernmost and largest of these forts was Fort de Toulbroc'h. It was over a mile long and a quarter mile deep. It bristled with weaponry.

Fort de Toulbroc'h, otherwise known as Batterie Toulbroc'h, formed part of the coastal defenses guarding the approaches to Brest Harbor along the goulet de Brest in the commune of Locmaria-Plouzané. The fort is located at latitude: 48.3406076, longitude: -4.6289067. As previously stated, the fort dates to the late 1700s. The oldest of the existing buildings onsite date back to 1884. By World War II the fort had four 240mm French guns from 1903 in open and unshielded concrete firing positions (Figure 302). There is a report that the Germans replaced the 240mm guns with 75mm guns, but photographic evidence suggests the presence of the larger pieces before the assault (Figure 303). There were three main batteries and one under construction, but operable by September 2. At either end of the various batteries the Germans had observation posts. They had ample ammunition storage in protected bunkers and multiple observation posts for a whole field of view of the region. The other batteries consisted primarily of 75mm artillery pieces. The fort also had ample 20mm Flak V pieces (Figure 304), heavy Mortar positions, and the entire perimeter was surrounded by light Mortar and machine gun positions (Figure 305) with interlocking fire. There were also reported to have been several 30 cm mortars, model 1883 T-93, situated at Toulbroc'h. These had a range of 8000 meters, could fire 1 round every four minutes and could rotate up to 360 degrees to fire.<sup>9, 10, 11</sup>



Figure 302: One of the 240 mm guns at Fort de Toulbroc'h, later reportedly replaced by the Germans with 105 mm guns (patrimoine.region-bretagne.fr)



Figure 303: German 75 mm gun in Casemate at Fort de Toulbroc'h (patrimoine.region-bretagne.fr)



Bundesarchiv, Bild 183-J08339  
Foto: Schwahn | 5. November 1943

Figure 304: German 20mm Flak V, anti-aircraft weapon (German Federal Archives)



Figure 305: German MG-42 machine gun (NARA)



The Projecteurs of Fort de Toulbroc'h were high powered spotlights that were installed at the turn of the century. They were massive searchlights that were capable of blinding anyone gazing their direction. They could flood the entrance to the Brest harbor with light and send rays of light into all the crevices of the harbor in effort to seek out any enemy warship seeking to silently enter the port.<sup>11</sup> The German Naval Artillery existed to defend sensitive coastal sectors and port facilities. The units comprising the Marineartillerie formed multiple batteries along the Atlantik Wall and used a combination of German equipment and captured equipment from occupied nations. The batteries used railway guns, encumbrances, pillboxes and concrete or armored turrets. Along the coast, units were part of the Kriegsmarine. A subgroup of the Marineartillerie was the Coastal Artillery Group (Marine Artillerie Abteilung - MAA) whose purpose was to detect and engage enemy fleet action and to defend large ports and sensitive defensive sectors. Some of the MAA units were formed as Regiments or Brigades in the defenses around Brest.<sup>12</sup> Specifically defending Fort de Toulbroc'h were the German Naval Ordnance Department 262 units 3./MAA 262 and 7./MAA 262. These units were also referred to as the Third and Seventh Batteries. They had formed in Brest in 1940 with five companies. They were subordinate to Marine Artillery Regiment 26.<sup>13</sup> The soldiers, marines and sailors at the fort included Italians and Germans and were under the command of an Italian Ensign 1st Class Sovelli, who served the German Navy. The mission of the fort and her batteries was to protect the entrance of the Goulet (estuary) de Brest and the surrounding beaches.<sup>9</sup> Figure 306 illustrates the construction of casemates and more importantly the cliff edges used to approach the fort by the Rangers.

The following maps taken from US War Department publications reveal the movements of the U.S. Army shortly after the Breakout of Normandy and the movements into Brittany and ultimately Brest. The movements of the Rangers discussed in the previous chapter can be compared against these larger movements through Brittany and into position at the western tip of the peninsula.



Figure 306: Casemate construction at Fort de Toulbroc'h (patrimoine.region-bretagne.fr)

THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

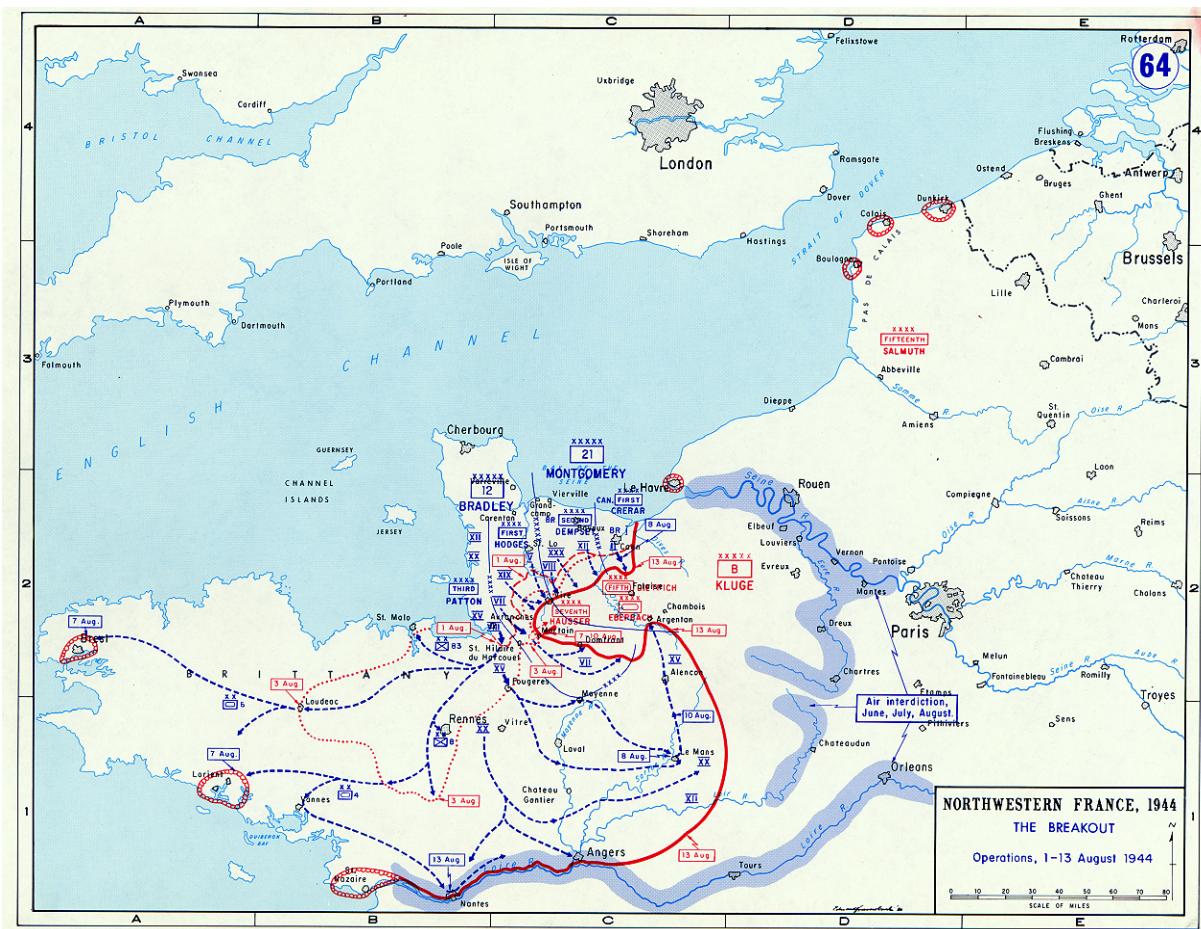


Figure 307: The Breakout of Allied forces from Normandy (USACMH)

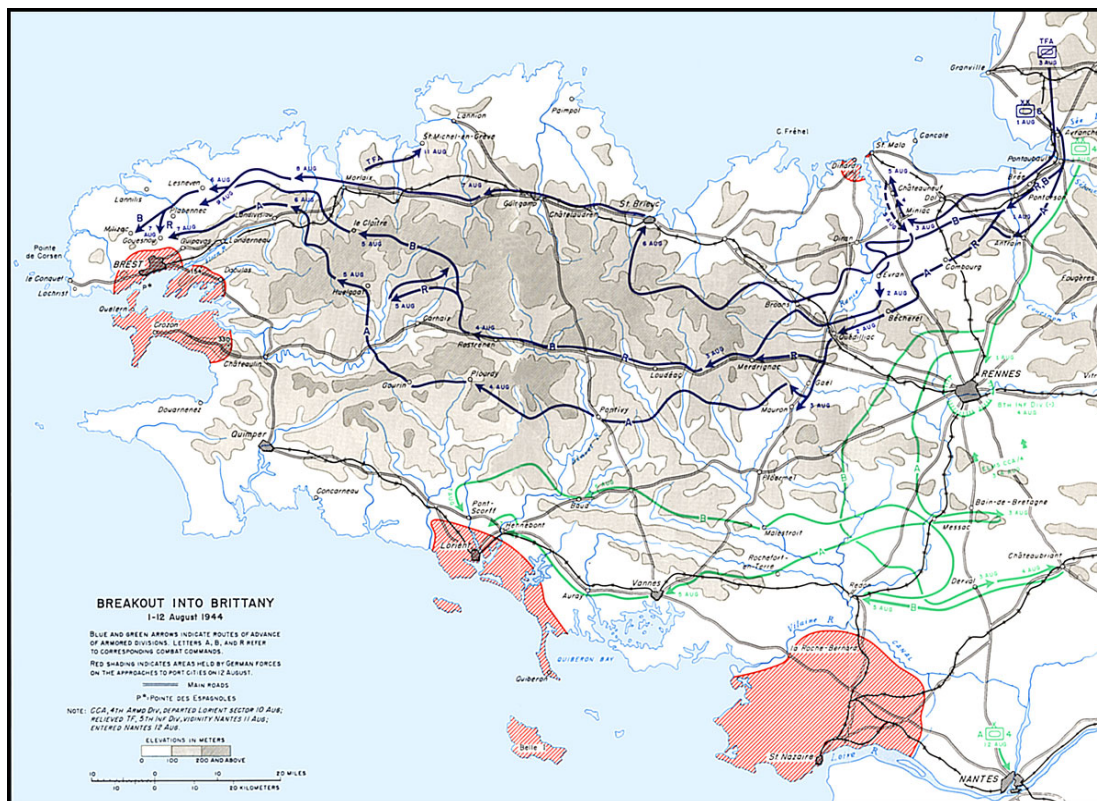


Figure 308: The breakout of U.S. forces into Brittany (USACMH)



General Eisenhower placed the capture of Brest on his timetable for August 1, 1944. The summer fighting had slowed the Allied advance down such that this did not occur. The collapse of certain of German forces in France and the ensuing Allied Breakout as it is called resulted in rapid advances to the east by the end of August. The port of Brest was a daunting challenge that the Allied forces could not ignore. The U-boat threat from there needed to be neutralized. The usefulness of the port to move logistics was not lost on the high command, and the matter of the large number of Germans known to exist in the peninsula was of concern to a rapidly moving Allied force as it moved east to liberated France. The Allies could not risk leaving a force of crack troops in their rear areas unopposed that could otherwise cause havoc in these zones.

U.S. Forces first arrived in the vicinity of Brest on August 6, where elements of the 6th Armored Division met German forces east and north of the city. The Americans drove the Germans back to the outskirts of the city through Calvary and armored action. The Americans promptly demanded the Germans to surrender, to which the Germans refused on August 8. With the arrival of the 2nd Fallschirmjäger Division, Ramcke took command of German forces on August 11. He consolidated his defenses and deemed the area “Festung Brest”, meaning fortress Brest. He became aware that the Germans faced three U.S. Armored Divisions, and a strong French underground (FFI) contingent in the area. To his credit, Ramcke evacuated some 40,000 civilians from the City of Brest and surrounding areas prior to the American assaults on August 20.

Further west of Brest, patrols pushed scattered enemy forces back to Le Conquet, and St. Renan. To the southeast, Allied forces pushed the Germans back to the Daoulas and Crozon Peninsulas. The Americans then employed armored and Calvary forces with infantry support of the FFI. This was the case in early August until the arrival of the infantry divisions. The first of these to arrive was the 8th Infantry Division on the night of August 17-18. The VIII Corps, under the command of General Troy Middleton, and consisting of the 2nd, 8th and 29th Infantry Divisions were given the task of capturing Brest. So it was that the Fortress of Brest stood as a formidable challenge to capture, intact if possible. Their unit patches are below in Figure 309 in the aforementioned order. The overall assault on Brest began on August 20.<sup>4</sup>

The 8th Infantry Division began to establish a plan by sending out patrols to identify the German defensive lines. The 2nd Infantry Division moved to their left flank on August 20. The 29th Infantry Division moved into position on the right flank of the 8th Infantry Division.<sup>14</sup>



Figure 309: Patches of the 2<sup>nd</sup> Infantry Division (left), 8<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division (middle) and 29<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division (right) (public domain)

August 22 was a warm and sunny day. The 29th Infantry Division moved west into Brittany from Normandy on a seemingly never-ending convoy of Deuce-and-a-Half trucks. This move took until the 23rd. The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion was already on the western portion of the peninsula, and on this day, Captain Whittington had killed the French operative. The vast convoy was preceded by a Cavalry Reconnaissance Troop and it was monitored from the air by Piper Cup observation planes. The trucks travelled on the peninsular highway, well away from the coastal areas to avoid direct observation by the enemy. The division convoy took hours to pass any given point due to its length.<sup>15</sup>

The Battle for Brest is displayed in Figure 310. The major U.S. Army assets are noted on the map by their respective unit patches.



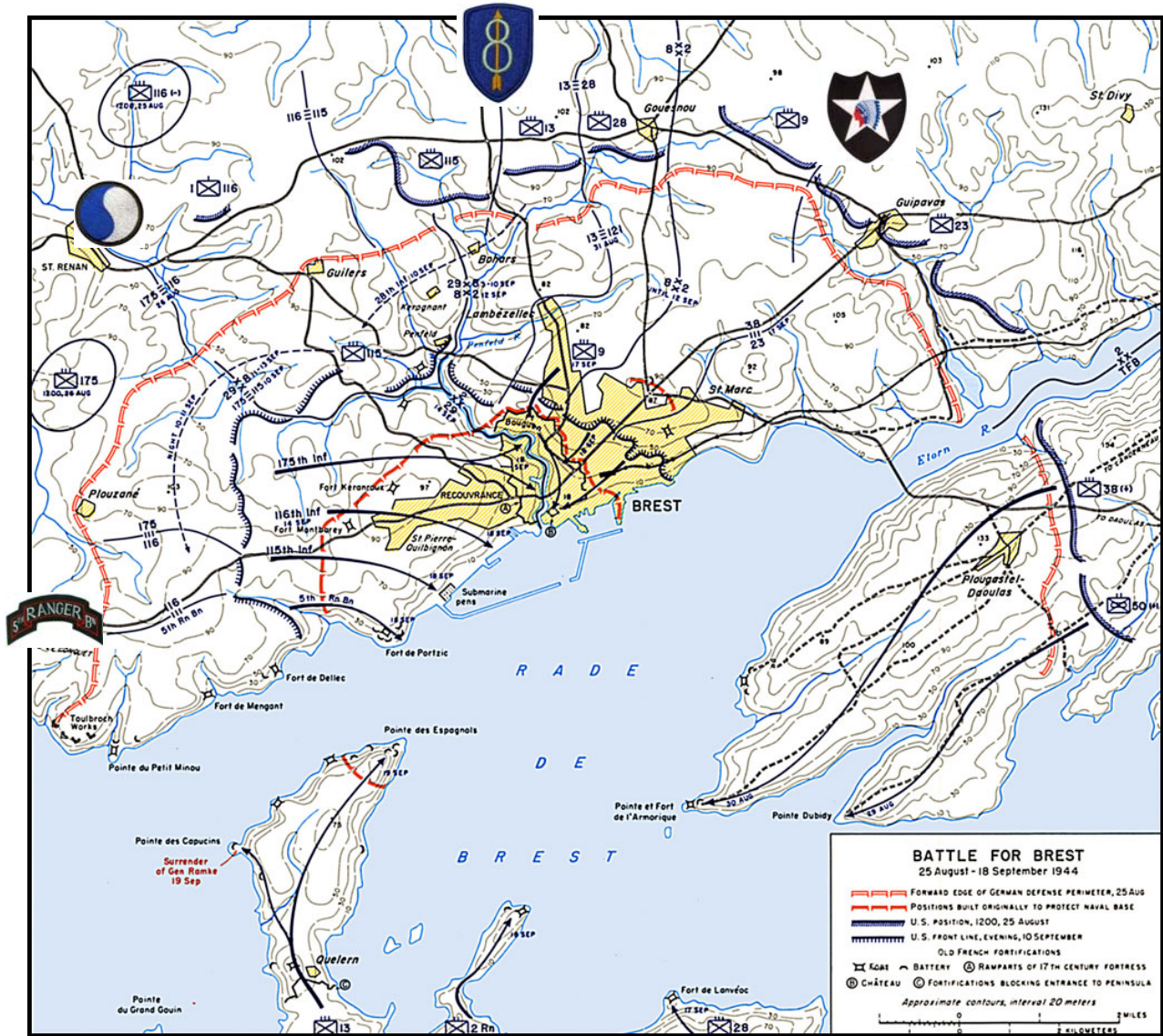


Figure 310: Map showing Battle for Brest (USACMH)<sup>16</sup>

On August 24, the British battleship HMS *Warspite* was called upon to silence the German coastal batteries on the peninsula. At the time, the majority of available Allied warships were in the Mediterranean supporting the Allied amphibious landings on the South of France. The *Warspite* had 15” guns (Figure 311). She closed to between 29,000 and 32,000 yards of her targets. The targets were the Graf Spee battery with her 11” guns, the Les Rospects 6” gun battery, Fort de Toulbroc’h with her two batteries, Fort Minou, and Fort Monthbarey. *Warspite* fired salvos for two-and-a-half hours at these targets expending over 213 high explosive and amour-piercing rounds with her main batteries. This was done to support the assault of the attacking American Infantry just prior to commencing the ground attack. Fort de Toulbroc’h was zeroed in on after two salvos. The warship fired eleven salvos consisting of 32 rounds at the fort’s batteries at a range of 32,000 yards. The Allies ascertained that day that infantry assaults of these forts would result in heavy casualties, so the *Warspite* was called in to silence the guns. After *Warspite* received word to cease firing at 1745 hours, she began to take 11” fire from the Graf Spee Battery. The German shells fell close enough to the warhorse to shower the ship with shell fragments, but none scored direct hits. The result of the British bombardment was disappointing, as only one of the German positions was knocked out of action.<sup>4,17</sup>



Figure 311: Operation Overlord (the Normandy Landings), 6 June 1944, The 15 inch guns of HMS *WARSPITE* bombarding German positions around Caen during the invasion of Normandy (Admiralty Official Collection)

The 2nd Infantry Division attacked on August 25. They fought vigorous battles with the Germans. By August 30, the 2nd had captured a total of 3,039 prisoners. As the American forces drove the Germans inward toward Brest, the fighting became more and more savage as the Germans began a house-to-house defense.

On August 28, Companies A and C of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion were attached to the 2nd Infantry Division and moved to the northeast of Brest for operations in support of the Division near Guipavas, France. They moved out on the 29th along with Company E who were assigned to the 2nd Infantry Division on that day to maintain communications between the 2nd Infantry Division and the 8th Infantry Division. This left Headquarters and Headquarters Company, B Company, D Company and F Company to fight on separately for a time in early September.

By August 31, the 29th Infantry Division, 116th Infantry Regiment found itself being shelled by artillery from multiple directions. The Germans were shelling the Allies using the heavy guns of the coastal forts south and west of the Allies who were attacking Brest toward their east. As a result of these attacks on their flanks and rear areas, the 29th Infantry requested reinforcements. Their help would be the 2nd and 5th Ranger Infantry Battalions. Although the 29th had suffered over 90 percent casualties since D-Day, the more experienced men among them knew the Rangers were just the outfit to sort out the artillery issues inflicting additional carnage to their ranks.

The 29th found itself embroiled in bitter fighting northwest of Brest in the vicinity of Hill 103, Ilioc, and La Trinté beginning on August 29. The 175th Infantry Regiment was the main attacking force engaged for Hill 103, while the 116th Infantry Regiment moved southeast to the right flank of the 175th in an effort to advance toward La Trinté. This village straddled the vital east-west coastal road, D789 from Brest to the Le Conquet peninsula, and was considered of vital importance to capture. Three miles to the east of La Trinté were the German submarine pens in the port of Brest. The road could serve as an important avenue of attack toward this major objective.

The 29th was no stranger to bitter fighting and would suffer massive casualties in this six day engagement. The 116th Infantry Regiment suffered 469 casualties, while the 175th Infantry Regiment lost half that number in what was called the most intense infantry combat during the battle for Brest. Part of the shortcomings faced by these men was a severe shortage of artillery ammunition to the area by the Army supply system. The Americans had advanced so quickly in the last weeks of August, that the VIII Corps hadn't been able to bring the supplies up from the Normandy supply points quick enough to keep up with the advance.

“During the first half of the Brest campaign the nearest ammunition supply dump was nearly a hundred miles back on the road to Normandy, and the long extension of supply lines from their original landing area at Omaha Beach resulted in slim ammunition allowances for the artillery batteries. Later, before the end of the campaign the problem was partially solved when LSTs bearing supplies and ammunition commenced landing at Morlaix, on the north coast of Brittany.”<sup>15</sup>

In addition to the ammunition shortages, the 116th found itself on the far right flank of the whole allied assault. In their positioning, they had German forces to their south to the coast. The Germans had forces at all of the coastal forts and other strongpoints further west. This enabled the them to shell the 116th from three sides, and left their flanks open to counterattack from Germans who were easily within two miles of their vulnerable position. Colonel Phillip Dwyer was in command of the 116th. He found that he had to ignore the forts in attacking forward to La Trinté. During his effort to advance on Friday, September 1, he found that his regiment's forward progress was hindered greatly by the defenders. At 1000 hours he reported to General Gerhardt that the 116th was “getting artillery fire from all directions.” The advance of the regiment ground to a halt with many discussions between Dwyer and his commander to try to figure out the best way out of the jam. On September 1, Gerhardt approached Major General Troy Middleton, the VIII Corps Commander for reinforcements to seal up the exposed right flank of the 29th Infantry Division.

Middleton immediately issued orders to deploy four companies from the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion to the 29th Infantry Division to clear the coastal forts. This all happened within a two hour period, as the Rangers were notified to move out by noon. Author Joseph Balkoski wrote: “those Ranger reinforcements amounted to only about 250 men. But the 5th Rangers were superb fighters, a fact that Gerhardt readily grasped because that outfit had landed alongside his 29ers on D-Day at Omaha Beach, and it had carried out its mission on that dreadful shoreline with impressive determination.”<sup>4</sup>

Once the Rangers arrived near Locmaria-Plouzané, Sullivan was briefed on his mission. The Ranger mission was to assault nearly due east along the coast, taking or neutralizing each of the five forts in succession. Sullivan was told that if the Rangers could do this quickly, then the 116th Infantry Regiment's burden of fire into their flanks and rear could be lessened. Sullivan was given the latest intelligence estimates that indicated each fort was manned by a garrison that greatly outnumbered his own forces. General Raaen told me “I am sure we would have been notified of the failure of HMS Warspite to knock out the forts a week earlier”. He was aware that if the Rangers couldn't assault these by land, then a seaborne assault would be attempted. This awareness passed down to men such as PFC Ching through the rumor-mill.

Major Sullivan, now commanding the 5th Rangers, borrowed some trucks. This is referred to throughout the various 5th Ranger Company Morning Reports. For the campaign at Brest, the 5th Ranger Battalion, B Company was under the command of 1st Lt. Bernard M. Pepper, and was organized into two platoons. The 1st Platoon was under the command of 1st Lt. Stan Askin. The 2nd Platoon was under the command of 1st Lt. Louis Gombosi.



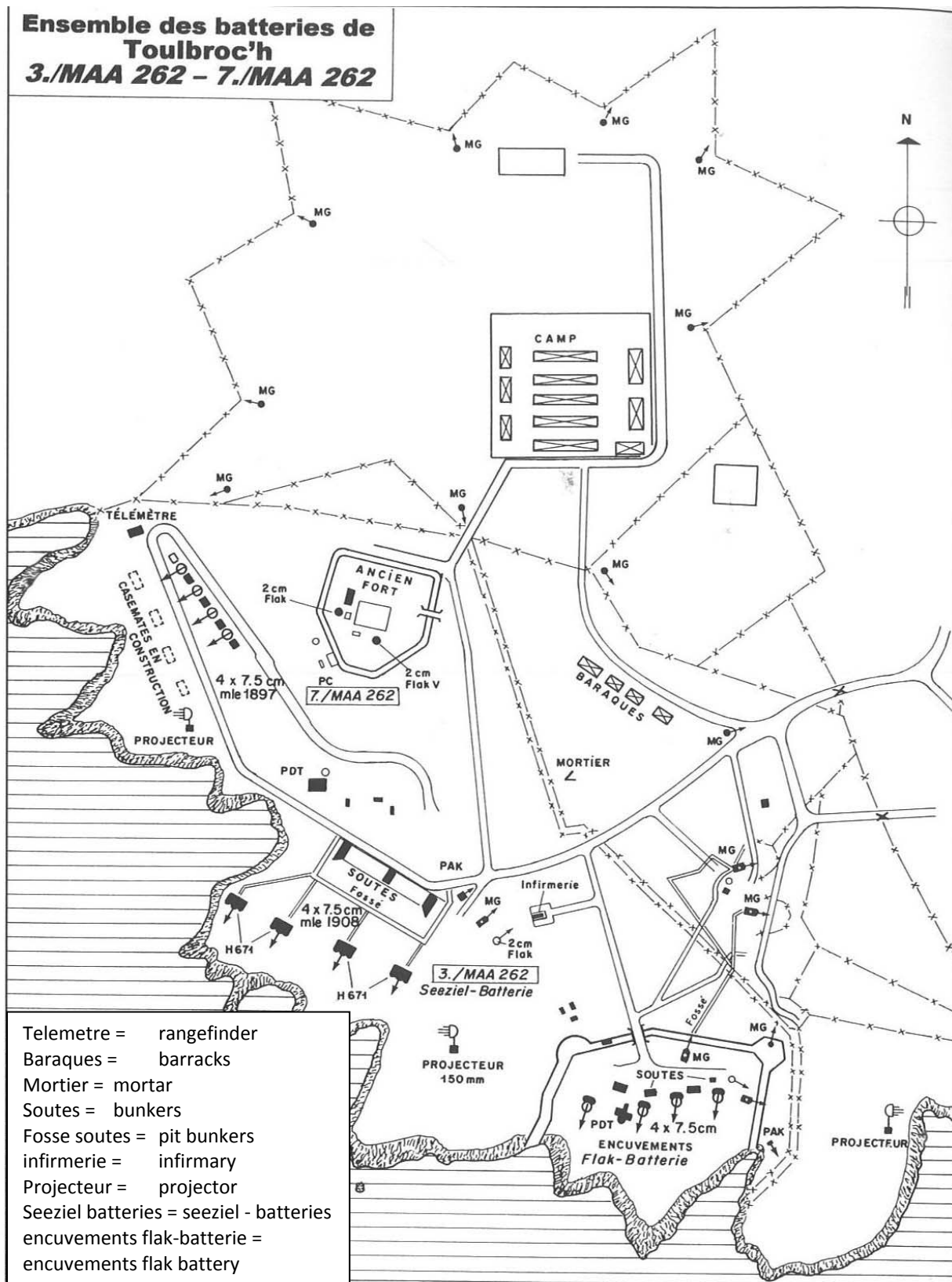


Figure 312: Map of German Fortifications at Fort de Toulbroc'h (from *L'enfer de Brest*, Page 18)

On September 1, the U.S. 100th Bomb Group (Heavy) reported overcast conditions at 28,000 feet in the vicinity of Brest. On September 2, they recorded a morning shower. On September 3, they reported clear weather. On September 2, the RAF Lancaster Bomber, No 5 Group bombed ships in Brest harbor in clear visibility. Historical weather records indicate the weather in Brest to have been fair and warm on September 1, fair and warm with a late day shower on September 2, and dull in the morning with afternoon clearing on September 3. There was a full moon on September 2, sunrise was at 0737 hours and sunset was at 2057 hours. The average early September temperatures for the area are a low of 53 degrees Fahrenheit and a high of 66 degrees Fahrenheit

The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, less Companies A, C and E, received orders and was attached to the 29th Infantry Division for operations at 1200 hours on September 1. The individual companies were alerted to move out at 1207 hours while trucks were readied. The Rangers moved out by truck from their position at Trégarantec (MGRS 104164), located southeast of Ploudaniel-Lesneven at 1500 hours. They travelled south approximately 30 miles and arrived at their bivouac position near Kerionoc at MGRS 842973 at 1630 hours per several of the Company Morning Reports. The battalion records indicate the arrival time at 1730 hours. This location is just north of the French Route du Conquet (D789) about 8 km west of the westernmost edge of Brest. The four companies sent out patrols and established a defensive perimeter around their command post. The mission of these patrols was to seek any enemy forces in the area that might engage the Rangers that night on order to protect the bivouac area. At 1800 hours the 29th Reconnaissance Troop was attached to the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion to assist them. D Company encountered enemy troops approximately one mile to the southeast of the command post in an area just west of Kerneis (MGRS 857963). They captured three enemy prisoners and the remainder of the reported thirty or so Germans withdrew. None of the other patrols encountered enemy forces on September 1. The Rangers took four casualties on September 1st. The casualties recorded in the Battalion Journal as S/Sgt William Harvey, Tech 5 Walter Schroh, Pfc Stanley Berger and Pfc Charles Robbins for the day. I believe these men were from A, C or E Companies as none of these men were listed as casualties in the B, D, F or HQ Company Morning Reports for the day. They were reported to have been evacuated to the 23rd Infantry Aid Station. The 23rd Infantry assaulted Brest from the east as part of the 2nd Infantry Division. Other Rangers would be reported to have been evacuated there in the coming days. The telephone code name for the battalion was "Marauder White."

Figure 312 shows a map from a French book called *L'enfer de Brest*; Henri Floch & Alain Le Berre; Heimdal Publishing. This map is important because it details the German defenses at Fort de Toulbroc'h. The layout of the fort's defenses is critical in understanding the actions involved.

The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion began the task of conducting reconnaissance of Fort de Toulbroc'h on Saturday, September 2 in the early morning. The four remaining companies of the battalion moved south from their bivouac positions in accordance with the Battalion mission to gain contact with the 116th Infantry Regiment, seal up their exposed flank, and straighten out the lines. The first task was to maneuver the companies into position to accomplish their assigned missions. In the early morning, F Company took up position east of Kerneis along Route de Mengant (MGRS 858960). This coastal road position overlooks a ravine. It allowed the company to stop any German counter-attack or reinforcement from the forts located further to the east. There was little German interference in the Company F movements. Early in the morning, B Company 1st Platoon commanded by Lt Stan Askin was ordered to a position just south of Lesconvel on the high ground at the head of a ravine leading to the coast. Lesconvel is located just south of D789, south of Locmaria-Plouzané. This position more or less allowed the platoon a view of the entire battlefield. Once there, they were to await further orders. They faced little resistance in their movements. D Company moved to a position west of Kerneis and prepared to hold (MGRS 852960) meeting little resistance. At 0948 hours on September 2, D Company, took three prisoners and reported a possible thirty additional Germans to capture located west of Kerneis (MGRS 852965). At 0948, the Battalion S-2 requested coordinates for a bomb line. By 1035 hours, D Company had moved west toward Kervaër (MGRS 843965) and reported no opposition. The 29th Infantry Division reported a new bomb line to the Rangers that ran east-west through the 955 grid reference line and east of the 84 grid reference line on the map at 1045 hours. By 1055 hours, D Company had captured two additional prisoners, and was trying to find the disposition of the enemy. At 1100 hours, B Company reported in that they were moving into position south of Lesconvel. D Company reported no change in their status at 1105 hours. At 1110, B Company reported that they would send new coordinates, finally reporting the coordinates of 842963 at 1111 hours. Company B also reported they were in position halfway between Lesconvel and Kervaër (MGRS 842963).

Company D had interrogated their POWs and reported back to Headquarters at 1130 hours that the prisoners reported 60 enemy soldiers at MGRS 860861 which is northwest of Kerneis and F Company's position. At 1135 hours, B Company reported that three enemy soldiers ran into a dugout about 500 yards in front of their position. At the same time, D Company reported no change in their status.

At 1148 hours, B Company sent a recon patrol consisting of 2nd Platoon down the ravine to the beach. This is the ravine that is just northwest of Fort de Toulbroc'h north along the 84 grid reference line and ends up with two branches at its head, one near Languifor'ch and one north of Kervaër. The patrol encountered no opposition. The Battalion Unit Journal reported that "The second platoon of Company B; commanded by Lt Gambosi, was then ordered to make a reconnaissance in force of the draw running roughly along the 84 grid line." At 1156 hours, B Company reported no change in status. At 1159 hours, D Company reported they were moving up (south) from their present position. Lt Gombosi was instructed to continue on plans as instructed, while keeping the Battalion Commanding Officer informed at 1204 hours. B Company, 2nd Platoon was to provide critical intelligence gathering concerning the fort.

B Company reported being shelled at 1215 hours. This reference to B Company was likely 1st Platoon. They had identified the firing positions of one of the guns to their right. Headquarters asked for the coordinates of the location under attack. At 1230 hours, B Company reported the location was the crossroads at the coordinates provided at 1130 hours. At 1305 hours, B Company was still being shelled. At 1327 hours, the Battalion received word from Companies A, C and E that they had expended 375 rounds of .30 caliber ammo and 14 rounds of 60 mm Mortar. Captain Wise had become a casualty. At 1329 hours, Company B sent a casualty back to the rear, but it is unknown who this man was or which platoon he was in. Two minutes later D Company reported no change to their status. B Company reported the artillery fire was lightening up at 1405 hours.

HQ sent a message at 1425 hours and asked B Company if they were advancing on the fort. B Company replied to HQ at 1430 hours that they were not advancing yet. Twenty-five minutes after that, Colonel Watson, Assistant Commander, 29th Infantry Division visited the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion command post to check on progress. There was no change in status between B and D Companies through 1512 hours. Company B, 2nd Platoon had carried out its mission and gone into position in a ravine north of Kervaër at 1525 hours. D Company continued to report no change in status. At 1530 hours, the Battalion XO reported that C Company had not heard from the 23rd Infantry Regiment. He decided to withdraw the company from the front line. Companies B and D reported no additional changes in status through 1630 hours. During this time B Company, 2nd Platoon was moving in force down the ravine toward the beach. Arriving at the water at 1650 hours they reported they had reached the beach back to HQ (MGRS 841952). At this point, 2nd Platoon split into two elements. The first element was the 1st Section, under Lt. Gombosi who worked their way along the coastal road (trail) along the cliff bluff toward the fort. Gombosi would recon the position along this route to assess the defenses on the western edges of the fort.

The second element was 2nd Section under Section Leader S/Sgt Herbert Hull. He had been listed as the Platoon Sergeant by this date according to the September 4 Company B Morning Report. His section retraced their steps up the main ravine until they came to an east-west ravine leading to Kervaër. This patrol consisted of twelve men. Their mission was to recon the perimeter of the fort's northwestern defenses (Randall Ching Interviews). They skirted the perimeter of the fort in accordance with their mission.

Back to the north, B Company, 1st Platoon under Lt. Stan Askin was ordered to relocate to more tactical position at the intersection of Route Kervaër and Route de Toulbroc'h (MGRS 847957) shown on the military maps as Road Junction 67 (RJ 67). The Road Junctions on the maps of the area are noted by numbers. "The numbers actually represent the altitude in meters above sea level. If you understand contours, you will see that the RJ numbers reflect the contour elevations." (General Raaen – correspondence) Their orders were that upon receiving the signal, they would attack southward to the fort along Route de Toulbroc'h. Company D was moved to RJ 74 shown on the military maps at the intersection of Kerhallet Penandour Kerhoalac'h and Route de Toulbroc'h. Company D's orders were to send one platoon south in support of Lt Askin, and to hold their other platoon in Battalion reserve. At 1750 hours, D Company reported meeting stiff resistance by the road junction just off Route 69 at MGRS 847957. At 1755 hours, B Company, 1st Platoon reported meeting enemy forces in the direction of Company D to their north. These would be the same German forces engaging D Company reported five minutes earlier. Based on reports, the Germans were in force in a corridor between the fort itself, Kervaër, and Kerhallet Penandour Kerhoalac'h (Route



69). B Company, 2nd Platoon reported running into the enemy at 1810 hours north of Kervaër (MGRS 844958). Again these were probably the same German forces that had made contact with D Company and with B Company 1st Platoon earlier. D Company reported no change in their situation at 1830 hours. At 1903 hours, D Company reported that B Company, 1st Platoon was held up on Route de Toulbroc'h (MGRS 847959) by attacking Germans. Lt. Askin kept up the fight and continued south.

At some point during the next hour, Lt. Gombosi, having worked along the coastal trail reached the perimeter of the fort, I believe near the télémètre shown on the German defense map in Figure 312. This was just west of the pentagon shaped historic fort and just north of the northernmost gun batteries at the fort. The likely time Gombosi entered the fort was between 1845 hours and 1930 hours. The Battalion After Action Report recorded: "Lt Gombosi was in position just outside the fort. He requested permission to attack, since he had observed no enemy within. The permission was granted, and he advanced. At 1915 hours, HQ Company reported to the companies that one platoon of B Company was already in the fort area and gave orders to "Watch who you fire upon." The approach along the cliffs were to the left of the fort pictured in Figure 313.



Figure 313: Fort de Toulbroc'h as seen from sea looking roughly northeast. Rangers approached along cliff to left (patrimoine.region-bretagne.fr)

Recalling from Chapter 1, all that was previously known about S/Sgt Hull getting wounded was that a wire was tripped, he put his hand up and down, it went off but he was hit. He then reportedly lay in the field for three days before the medics got to him and he was put on a plane to England. The original note said that he got gangrene in the knee but that it got better. When presented with this information in 2012, General Raaen, began to vaguely recall and place the incident, allowing us to reconstruct the events that occurred. These recollections by Raaen led to his being able to assist me in placing S/Sgt Hull in B Company, 2nd Platoon. Eventually facts began to piece together as records were searched and stories collaborated. A major breakthrough came in 2013 when PFC Ching stepped forward with his information.

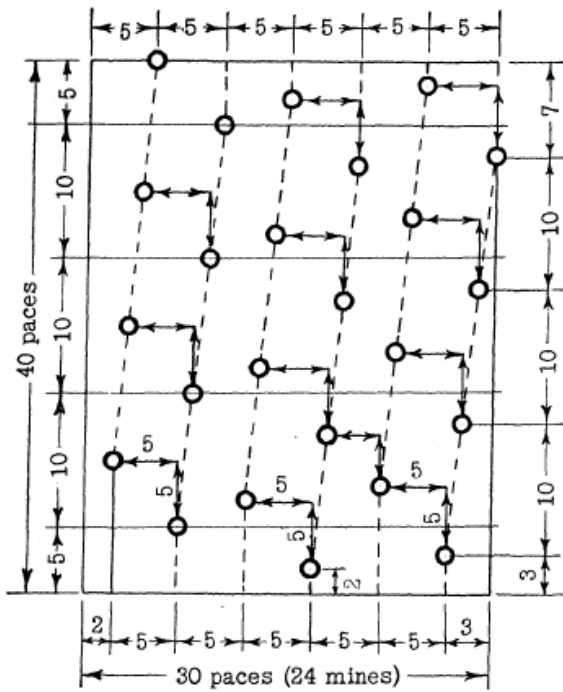
Randall Ching provided a first hand account of the September 2nd attack on Fort de Toulbroc'h. The 2nd Section of 2nd Platoon, B Company advanced through the ravine leading south from Kervaër to the beach, then up to the perimeter of the fort before sunset. Their mission was physically led by Platoon Sergeant S/Sgt Herbert Hull with orders to advance up the steep slopes and then up to the outskirt of Fort de Toulbroc'h and perform reconnaissance of the defenses of the fortification. The twelve man Section had advanced down the draw, and then up its steep eastern slopes. This reconnaissance patrol is associated with the B Company, 2nd Platoon patrol of Lt. Gombosi referred to in Glassman, Black and others' work. They were close to the fort when S/Sgt Hull was wounded by the landmine, connected to a booby trap trigger mechanism.

Ching recalled: "How your grandfather got hurt is that our section is supposed to do reconnaissance patrol, find out what the situation is. We never had mind to try to attack or do any engagement. Normally when we go far, we were spread about 5 paces apart. Before, you know, in case we step on a mine, or if the Germans open up with a machine gun. They would only get one or two of us, that's about it. That way, they don't get a whole bunch of us, you know. Well, I was almost the last man to the rear, because I am always in the rear, anyway. I was the youngest, the shortest, the lightest, and don't speak English, so, all the sudden, in the front, it go BAM, I heard it. I said, "Oh s-t, somebody stepped on a mine"."

Ching recalled that Hull had his leg "mangled by the mine." He expanded his description to me in a later interview that he was wounded in his feet, arm and his knee was mangled. He said it looked like a shotgun hit him, with many small little holes from tiny ones up to two inches everywhere, and filled with shrapnel. PFC Ching and his fellow Rangers administered first aid to S/Sgt Hull. Each Ranger was equipped with 3 doses of morphine, sulfa powder, bandages and a safety pin for the bandages. He told me they used the safety pin to hold the largest wounds closed on the leg and covered his wounds in sulfa powder to coagulate the blood. They worked hard to try to stop the bleeding. Ching is sure Hull received a dose of morphine with repeated instructions to "wait for 4 hours for the next dose." Randall was interviewed by his daughter, and she asked him, "Did he say anything to you when you saw him step on the landmine, or did you see him wounded or did you just hear about it?" Randall told me, "We left your grandfather there. I told him, "there's no, we are only about, he's, we're only about 500 yard from the company, more or less. We told him there is no enemy behind him, he's pretty safe. So we told him, I told him, I will see you back in the States." The two men shook each other's hand in friendship. Hull responded, "Be careful," and that was the last the two men ever saw of one another.

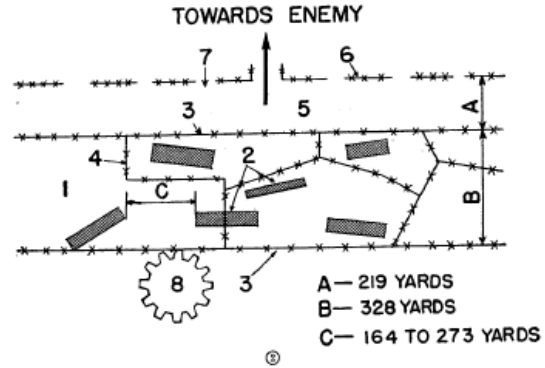
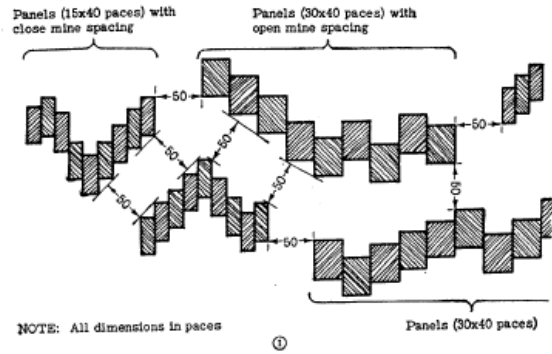
The Assistant Squad Leader took Hull's role after he went down. Randall went on in his interviews to say, "So we left him there, he could not proceed with us to the fort, because, we got to the fort, actually nice and quiet." Ching reported that 2nd Platoon spread out in formation and approached the fort to proceed with their recon. The Section Leader, Cardinali said send a message back to Headquarter Company, for permission for attack. The Assistant Section Leader radioed back to Battalion HQ for permission to Attack the fort at 1930 hours. This call to HQ was shortly after Hull was wounded, and appears in the Battalion Journal. Headquarters immediately responded with orders to attack. "So we went to attack the fort," recalled Ching.

For Randall, the loss of a comrade often became forgotten. Not so here. S/Sgt Hull was his friend. He spoke of their time training and fighting together where he said, "That's a whole year, it was brief, not too long though, one year." His daughter relayed to me elsewhere in our interviews that as soon as Randall heard the name Herbert Hull, he decided to help me. He had never opened up about his wartime experiences to anyone before, including his own family members. He felt so strongly about his friend and how he was a lost Ranger, that he made a personal choice to tell me about my grandfather, so that I could know him through his eyes. His personal accounts form a very deep, personal and resonating conclusion to the journey to find my grandpa. The interspersion of his personal accounts has resulted in massive rewrites to this book before going to the publisher.



NOTE: All dimensions in paces  
**Figure 9.—Deliberate minefield pattern (open spacing).**

Figure 314: German Coastal Defenses, Special Series Number 15, June 15, 1943, U.S. Army Military Intelligence Service.



**Figure 12.—Extensive layout of minefields.**

The Germans had taken great pains to employ mines and booby traps into their defenses all around Brest. They utilized their Teller-mines and S-mines. They also developed improvised explosives by rigging naval explosives and French artillery shells as booby traps. Some of these were as big as 200 pounds. They used antisubmarine mines and torpedo heads as charges, set to be used against infantry. The Americans found two road intersections to be rigged with up to one ton each of explosives. They also used 75 mm shells fitted as mines. Around the old French forts, they placed crops of thickly sown S-mines, complete with trip wires that were completely hidden in tall grass. They would employ their mines in well laid out minefields such as in the preceding diagrams, or along natural paths or routes of travel. They meticulously mapped them for their own records. A typical German minefield pattern is illustrated by Figure 314.

It is highly likely that an S-Mine was the type of device tripped by a Ranger that caused the crippling wounds to S/Sgt Hull. In the family history, it was said that a wire was tripped, and then S/Sgt Hull put his arms up and down. As the Section Leader, these motions would have correctly been used to indicate to his men to immediately drop to the ground and take cover. This would allow them to avoid becoming casualties from the imminent blast from the S-Mine. He didn't have a chance to get down as the mine then went off.

The S-Mine was normally triggered by a three pronged pressure fuse, but could be modified for use with a special German tripwire, as was the case on September 2. When triggered, the mine had a two stage detonation sequence.

1. The first stage was to fire the mine 2' 10" to 4' 10" up into the air by means of a propellant charge.
2. 1/2 second after the propellant charge ignited, the main charge detonated to more fully disperse the shrapnel contents of the mine as an air burst.



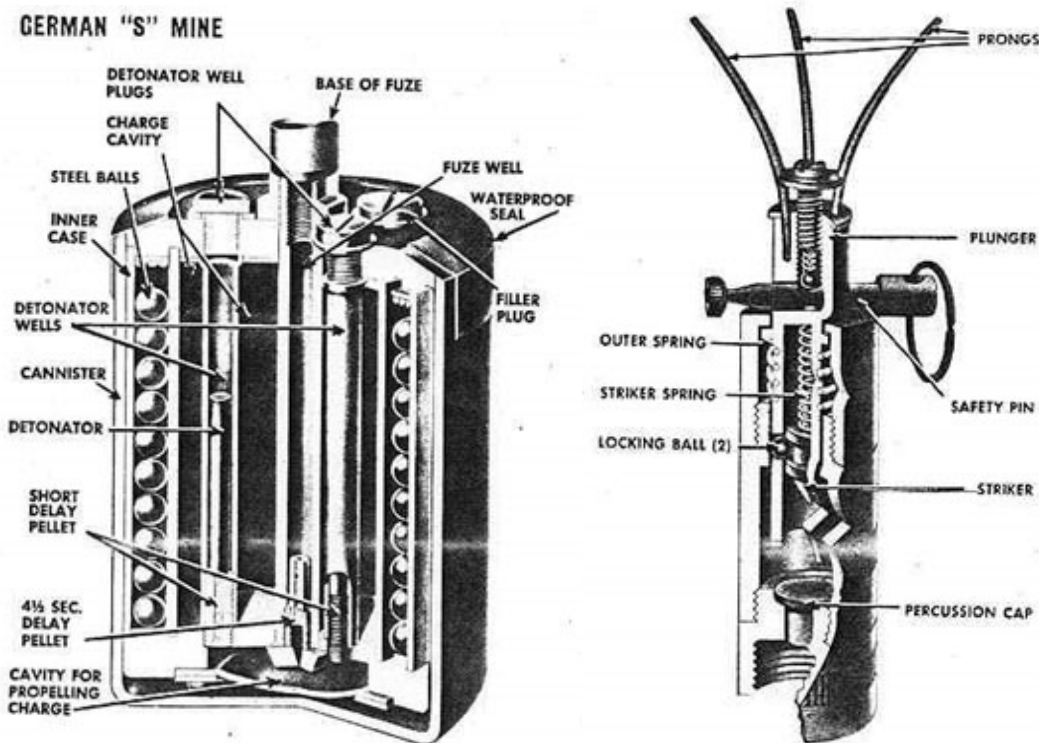


Figure 315: Diagram of S-35 German landmine and pressure sensor from 1943 US Army training manual. (FM 5-31, Nov 1 1943)

The method of detonation made this a very effective killing device that would kill or severely injure anyone in the immediate blast zone of the device. The mine contained 360 steel balls, short steel rods or scrap metal fragments. Whatever the contents packed into the device, the shrapnel sprayed horizontally at high velocity. It was lethal within 20 meters (66 feet), and could inflict casualties within 100 meters (330 feet) of the blast. The time delay from triggering and the firing of the propellant charge varied between 3.9 and 4.5 seconds. U.S. Training manuals instructed soldiers to immediately fall and lie face down as quickly as possible to avoid as much of the blast as possible. Any attempt to run from a triggered mine would likely result in death.<sup>18</sup> It appears as if S/Sgt Hull took the quick actions required to protect his men at his own peril. Accounts from both Ching and Copeland regarding their friend indicated Hull was a strong leader and protected his men from his earliest time as a Ranger. This knowledge helped fit together those very cryptic early notes from my mom. A diagram of the offending mine is shown in Figure 315.

S/Sgt Hull's medical records state "On 2 September 1944 at Brest, France, this soldier was wounded in action when a field mine was tripped by one of his comrades, striking the soldier in the left arm and left knee." Elsewhere his medical records state, "this soldier was struck by fragments from a landmine sustaining wounds to the left arm and knee." He also received several lacerations to his back resulting in scarring that his children remembered seeing on him after the war.



Figure 316: Drawing of ravine reconnoitered by the 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company, 1<sup>st</sup> Platoon on September 2, 1944.

The drawing above shows the ravine that B Company, 2<sup>nd</sup> Platoon reconnoitered during the afternoon of September 2. The approximate location of the drawing is latitude 48.345524° longitude -4.632064°, with an elevation 105 feet above sea level and is looking south. Lt Gombosi and the 1<sup>st</sup> Section went down the lane to the water, then they took the coastal trail to the fort, while 2<sup>nd</sup> Section under Platoon Sergeant Herbert Hull took the ravine noted to the left and ended up exploring the perimeter of the fort pictured below in the fields above the slopes.



Figure 317: Drawing of ravine reconnoitered by the 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company, 2<sup>nd</sup> Platoon on September 2, 1944.

Figure 317 is a view of the field where S/Sgt Hull was wounded looking from the southwest corner of Kervaër, France. The approximate location of the drawing is at latitude 48.345366 longitude -4.627413, with an elevation 228 feet above sea level. The ravine near MGRS 842956 begins as the ditch in the center of the picture, turns left at the end of the road and then continues west in the brush shown to the left of the power pole. This is the same ravine that the B Company Rangers took cover in at 1810 hours. The suspected location of the S-Mine that struck Hull was to the left of the ravine in the field. Fort de Toulbroc'h is to the left of the drawing along the horizon. The barracks shown in Figure 318 are what the men saw as they reconnoitered the edge of the fort. These structures remain today as homes.



Figure 318: View of German barracks battery Toulbroch towards 1944-1946, Service Historique de la Marine, Brest German Barracks buildings noted as “Camp” on map on Page 19. (patrimoine.region-bretagne.fr)

As the Rangers of 2nd Platoon, 2nd Section approached the fort Randall Ching recalled: “What happened, we got close to the fort, about 75 yards into the fort, and the damn Germans opened up on us, with machine gun, mortar, and everything, and we almost got slaughtered, but we didn’t.” They approached the fort generally from the direction shown in the Figure 322. Ching continued: “We were just lucky to get out of that “God-damned” {can’t make out} so we say ‘Let’s get the hell out of here.’ So we haul ass back to the Company.” The Rangers made for the ditch first and returned from the direction they came. This German opposition hindered this Section of Rangers from ever entering the main part of the fort from the northwest. This massive fire directed on 2nd Platoon, 2nd Section corresponded time-wise to the fire taken by Lt. Gombosi and 2nd Platoon, 1st Section already inside the fort to the southwest.

Back to Gombosi’s 2nd Platoon, 1st Section, the Battalion After Action Report recorded: “Going slowly from dugout to dugout, it was nearly a half an hour before he struck any enemy. Then he found himself outnumbered better than ten to one and was forced to withdraw to the ravine west of Kervaër (MGRS 842956). If he had only half the platoon inside the fort, he was outnumbered by much more than the reported 10:1 ratio often attributed to the event. Gombosi had entered the fort in the area near the coast at the top of the picture below. They rejoined 2nd Platoon, 2nd Section after they too took refuge in the same ravine. At this point, the Battalion reserve platoon (the Company D platoon) came to B Company, 2nd Platoon’s aid and the enemy was stopped. All casualties had been carried from the fort in their retreat.” This counters the account he remained in the field for days.

By 2007 hours, the Germans were fully alerted to the Rangers Company’s positions and were mounting fierce resistance and a determined counterattack. B Company requested an ambulance. T/4 Mullin, Germaine, and Clawson were tied down and the Rangers were unable to get to the casualties. General Raaen and I believe that Hull was one of the casualties who were pinned down for a time. One of the casualties was reported shot in the head under enemy fire. The men reported they would stay put until resistance is cleared. At 2012 hours, D Company



reported the situation was the same, with B Company attacking. During this time, Lt. Askin commenced his attack southward along Route de Toulbroc'h and proceeded some 500 yard south of RJ 69. He was then ordered to withdraw to RJ 69 to avoid being cut off. The Battalion situation was deemed critical as the only reserves had been committed and the companies were stretched out very thin. The Germans counterattacks intensified against all positions. The battalion situation was critical as night fell. All four platoons of Companies B and D were stretched out in a thin line and were under ferocious German counterattack. Company F was attacked so fiercely, it appeared as if they might have to withdraw. They attacked the Germans and held. By 2141 hours Major Sullivan radioed the rear echelon and ordered an alert of every available man in the Battalion. He ordered that these Rangers move to the command post immediately, bringing one truck and all available weapons, machine guns and ammunition. These men would form up as a Ranger Company to act as a Battalion reserve.

The fighting waged on through midnight and beyond. It was heavy enough that there were no unit record entries beyond the last report made at 2141 hours. By the end of September 2, the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion had suffered 8 casualties. Of that number, B Company had suffered three wounded and two killed in action. One of the wounded was S/Sgt Herbert Stanton Hull. The battalion had taken twelve POWs and killed twelve enemy personnel.

General Raen wrote to me that the main reason the Germans were so bold on September 2 was that the Americans obviously had very little artillery support as they attacked. The Germans picked up on this and were emboldened by it. He told me the Americans were restricted to firing less than ten rounds of High Explosive (HE) rounds a day. By nightfall there was no artillery ammunition left. There was an artillery liaison officer; Lt. Van Cook positioned at the Rangers battalion headquarters. He distinguished himself by going to the main elements and adjusting artillery fire, in which he saved the platoon from destruction. They were able to call in only a few smoke rounds to support B Company, 2nd Platoon as they were fighting for their lives the night of September 2. This fire was largely ineffective, but did aid 2nd Platoon. (Raen correspondence)

In 2012, General Raen shared his thoughts with me regarding why Hull was not properly reported in the Battalion level documentation. "The company clerks who made out the MRs worked in Headquarters Rear. They may have been caught up in the sweepings when we formed Headquarters Company into a provisional Ranger Company. What I am trying to say is the clerks may have been late in their reporting for a number of reasons, such as late reporting to them..." Raen also sent me a copy of the "Combat Journal for the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion covering much of the Toulbroc'h battle. Usually it would list the casualties, but because we couldn't get to them to evacuate them, who was wounded was unknown at the time of this journal." (Raen correspondence) The Company records including the Company Morning Report and the Company Daily Sick Report had recorded his wounds and disposition properly, however, a clerical oversight at the Battalion level reporting in the midst of fierce fighting directly led to S/Sgt Hull becoming a Lost Ranger. When Glassman and others would compile the unit history at the conclusion of the war, he was left out.

September 3 began with heavy combat. At 0015 hours, Headquarters sent word for all Company Commanders to report to the Command Post at 0900 for a briefing. A jeep carrying rations en route to the company positions hit a landmine at 0055 hours wounding James E. Royle and Arthur Laskowski. By 0100 hours, wire had been run out to the Company positions except B Company, who were out of contact with Headquarters. The German Counterattacks had abated by this time. Hull lay wounded on the battlefield for several hours pinned down until he was recovered by his fellow Rangers and evacuated to the 108th Evacuation Hospital where he remained for several days. Casualties were now focused on and moved to the rear. I think that this is when S/Sgt Hull was evacuated by ambulance to the battalion aid station. At 0240 hours, F Company requested artillery support south of Kerneis (MGRS 861959) to fend off German action. Things quieted down the remainder of the night. This was the time in the middle of night when PFC Ching returned to his Company and found S/Sgt Hull had been evacuated. The overnight hours were spent scrounging for every last bit of ammunition to load clips, particularly clips of .30 caliber ammo for the BARs. This was done by taking apart bandolier ammo meant for .30 caliber machine guns. The newly loaded ammo was then run out to the fighting positions for distribution. The Rangers on the front line had to gather up all clips and magazines and send them to the rear to be reloaded the ammo situation was so bad. {Raen correspondence}

In the morning at 0900 hours the provisional Ranger Company was formed and moved into position behind B Company (MGRS 884963). The Company Commanders met at the Command Post to plan out the attack. Orders received, the companies then readied themselves for the assault. F Company remained in position on the left flank to

prevent German counterattack from fresh troops. Orders were for B Company to attack the fort from the north. 1st Platoon would again assault straight down from RJ69. 2nd Platoon would assault south from its position near RJ 49 at Languiforc'h (MGRS 842956) which is at the head of the ravine they saw action in the day earlier. This had been their fallback position after the Germans fought them overnight. D Company would form up in column about 500 yards to the rear of Company B and carry the assault behind them. Headquarters Company remained in reserve consisting of all the available men pulled together the night before. The plan was for the attack to commence at 1030 hours, and was to be preceded by an aerial assault of the fort. Just before the attack commenced, the Germans shelled the Ranger Command Post with 105 mm artillery.

Headquarters had made arrangements with the XIX Tactical Air Command for the air support. The air support came in the form of eight P-47 Thunderbolt fighter-bomber aircraft. The P-47 was produced by Republic Aviation and was also known as the "Jug." They were the largest and heaviest fighter aircraft in history with a single reciprocating engine (Figure 319). The P-47 was powered by the Pratt & Whitney R-2800 Double Wasp engine, and was effective from the deck to high altitude. Each plane came heavily armed with eight air-cooled .50-caliber machine guns with four in each wing. The machine guns used armor-piercing (AP), armor-piercing incendiary (API) and armor-piercing incendiary tracer (APIT) ammunition that could penetrate most but not all German armor (Figure 320). The fighter-bomber weighed up to eight tons fully loaded. When configured for ground support, each aircraft could carry up to 2,500 pounds of bombs or five inch rockets. This bomb load was equal to more than 50 percent of the load able to be carried by the B-17. The ground assault variants could be armed with triple-tube rocket launchers with M8 high explosive 4.5 inch rockets. These had the explosive power of a 105 mm artillery shell. The plane was heavily armored and could take a pounding from antiaircraft fire and remain in the battle. They offered their pilots excellent visibility, which made them good for the ground assault role, because the pilots could often make out friendly forces. When the P-47s arrived, the Germans often decried "Achtung! Jabos!" (fighter-bombers) with much trepidation and fear.<sup>19</sup>



Figure 319: A P-47 and a high-speed M2 Klettrak tractor at the Poleva Airfield in Northern France. (Mercury Marten, Pinterest)

When the fighter bombers first attacked at 1425 hours, their first bombardment missed the target by some 400 yards. Lt. Gombosi moved 2nd Platoon south in the ravine within the bomb-line established the previous day and positioned his men just out of view of the Germans on the northern perimeter of the fort in the same exact area S/Sgt Hull had been wounded the previous day. The P-47s made a second strike that missed. The Rangers called off their ground assault for a second time. There was no shortage of armaments and bombs for the Air Corps, unlike the artillery ammunition supply. The commanders worked with their supporting artillery asset, the 111th Field Artillery Battalion, to mark the target with purple smoke rounds. At this time, 2nd Platoon was in position for their assault at MGRS 842963. The smoke rounds were duds, so they called in white phosphorous (WP) rounds. WP rounds

produce a thick white smoke. With the WP rounds a success, the Air Corp attacked and struck 16 direct bomb hits on target. Lt. Pepper and 1st Platoon began the assault immediately south down Route de Toulbroc'h as the bombs went off.

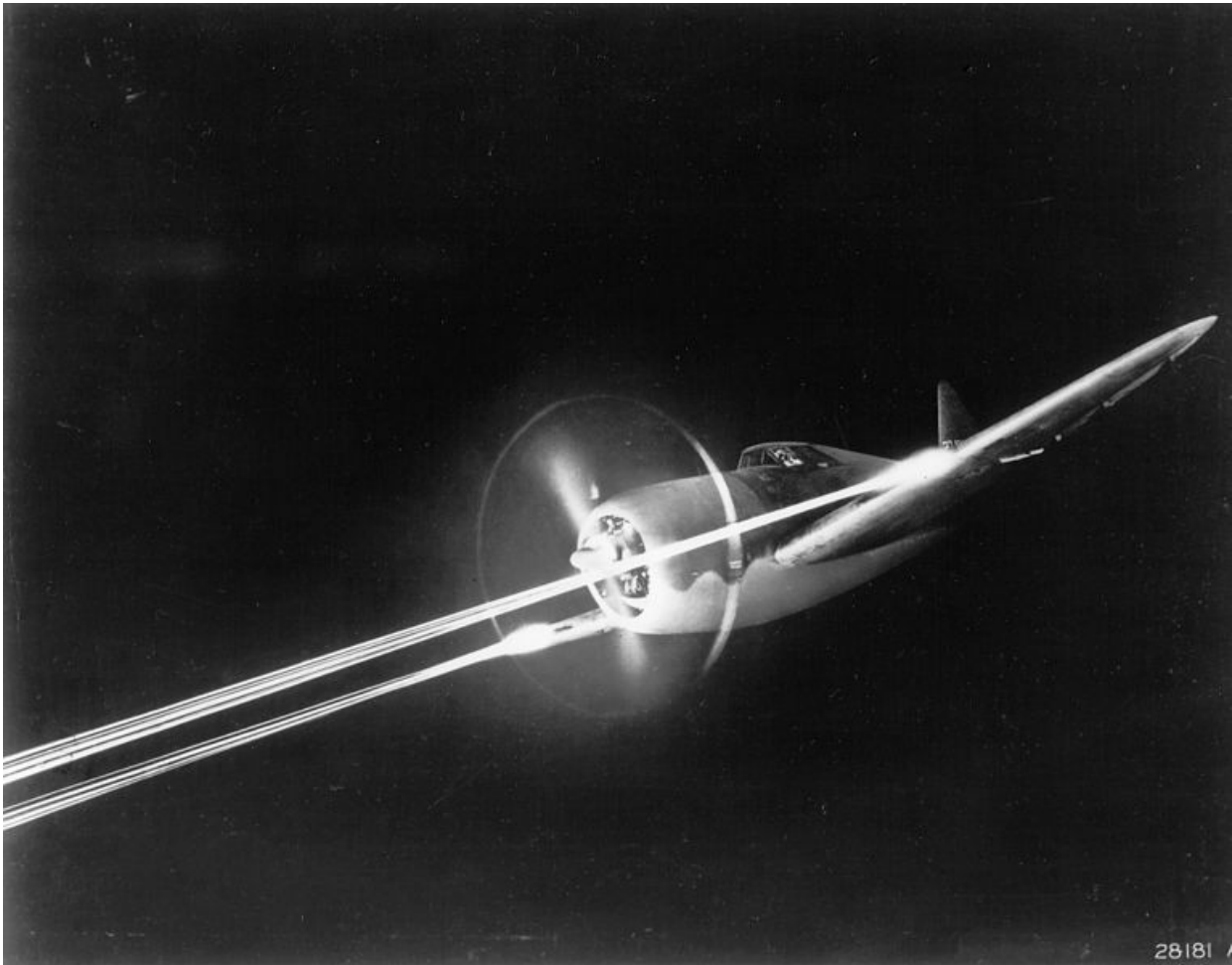


Figure 320: P-47 Thunderbolt night-firing machine guns (USAF)

“Air has been a critical factor in the progress of the attack on Brest. Air has been able to effectively attack targets beyond the range of observation and has been particularly valuable in silencing enemy artillery. The plan of keeping planes on air alert was exceedingly effective and resulted in exceptionally swift and effective air operations.” “It was possible to utilize close coordination in the same manner that we use direct artillery. The Infantry soldier could take cover very close to the target during bombardment and advance on the target immediately after bombardment. An instance of this was the attack of a Ranger Battalion on Fort Toulbroc’h on September 3. In this action the planes were in the air at the time of the ground attack and were ordered to attack the fort immediately. As the last bomb struck, the leading elements of the Ranger Battalion closed in and captured the fort before the defenders had an opportunity to organize further resistance. It was reported that the leading elements of the battalion reached the fort six minutes after the last bomb was dropped... Time after time during the assault on Brest Ninth Air Force fighter-bombers attacked particular targets. On September 3...eight Thunderbolts strafed an enemy position from 150 to 200 yards in front of two companies of infantry. The position was taken.”<sup>20</sup>

The P-47s circled overhead, they swooped down over and over and strafed the fort. 2nd Platoon was a mere 100 yards from the fort as of the second strafing run. Figure 321 illustrates the damage visible to the fort in a 1947 photo. Lt. Gombosi and his 2nd Platoon, with 1st Platoon right on their heels rushed into the smoke and dust caused by the impacting machine gun rounds less than twenty yards from the ricocheting bullets. The Rangers swept over the fort, and in six minutes, these 60 Rangers managed to capture 242 enlisted personnel and five officers as prisoners. They reported the fort captured at 1441 hours. Fort de Toulbroc’h was a mammoth complex and it took elements of D



Company and F Company a full hour to check all of the remaining fortifications and buildings and mop up the entire German position. Immediately after this action, Companies B and D wheeled to the east and took positions overlooking the deep draw along the 854 grid line, which is the draw leading down to Fort du Minou, their next objective. The Battalion suffered 14 casualties for the day. They had killed 105 enemy personnel and had managed to capture 333. The commander of the garrison, Italian Ensign Sovelli was among the dead in the fort. Lt. Pepper, the B Company Commander was invited to dinner with the Commanding General of the 29th Infantry Division where he was awarded the Silver Star for his actions that day.



Figure 321: Aerial view of the heavy battery Toulbroc'h II, No. 93, Pinzon report Sel.Book IV, circa 1947, Service Historique de la Marine, Brest, French Ministry of Defense Aerial photo showing southern portion of the fort just after the war. (patrimoine.region-bretagne.fr)

On September 3, Randall Ching reported that Sgt Pete Cardinali was hit in the helmet by German fire and the bullet grazed his forehead. This head wound resulted in massive bleeding, as often accompanies a head wound due to the thin skin and many near surface blood vessels. Ching said “he was bleeding like a stuffed pig.” The men conducted first aid on Cardinali, bandaging his face with some of the bandages going around his chin to the top of his head. Several bandages were flowing all over the place, hanging free. There was dried blood on his face. Randall looked at his friend, and said, “Hey Pete, you won’t have to shoot these bastards. One look at you, and you’ll scare the hell out of em.” He said Cardinali would scare them to death because he looked like a mummy from a monster movie. In reviewing the B Company records, it is possible, that Cardinali sustained this head wound reported at 2007 hours on September 2, with the account above occurring on September 3. The Morning Report shows him wounded on September 3, while the Battalion Journal lists a Ranger with a head wound in B Company 2nd Platoon at the time previously mentioned. Perhaps the “mummy” played a part in the quick surrender of the German defenders on September 3. I state this as a bit of humor, having been fed the joke by Randall Ching.

Regarding the September 3 assault on the fort, Ching told me, “And finally, we overrun the fort, we had about a twenty minute battle in the fort itself. Some of the Germans already got out of the trenches when they bombed the fort. The P-47 strafed the fort, six machine guns in each plane, and four planes. And finally when it was over, we got

to the top of the fort, we got rid of those Germans in the trenches. We took them all out. And then some machine gunner, an automatic rifleman, aimed at the entrance to the dugout, tell the defending Germans to come out. So finally, they surrender. There were 300 Germans in there. And just think... we tried to take it with eleven men! That was kind of stupid!" He went on to say that all of the prisoners taken at the fort were sent to the rear to the POW camp.

PFC Randall Ching was awarded the Bronze Star Medal for his actions at the Battle for Brest. The ferocity of the fighting is summed up in the citation for this medal for him and those other members of the unit. He is too humble a man to discuss this openly. He told his daughter essentially that the taking of a life is serious business, and not to be taken lightly. I agree. His citation reads:

Headquarters XX Corps  
29 August 1945  
General Orders Number 151  
Section I – Award of the Bronze Star Medal

Private First Class Randall Ching, Infantry, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, for heroic achievement in connection with military operations against the enemy in France on 2 September 1944. As a member of a reconnaissance patrol, Private First Class Ching assured the success of its mission by knifing all the occupants of a fortified position. Later that night when an enemy patrol got to his rear and was crawling toward his outpost, he waited and at the proper time, used his knife again to eliminate this patrol. His actions reflect great credit upon himself and the Army. Entered Military Service from California.

As previously noted, PFC Ching never saw his friend Herb Hull again. When Ching got back to the company in the overnight hours between the 2nd and 3rd of September, Sgt Hull was already evacuated to the hospital in the rear. He told me that the Rangers never left a man behind. He received a letter from Carl Weast after the war recounting a visit between Weast, Hull and Stuyvesant. The last time he heard of his friend was in 1960 when he received a phone call from William Campbell (B Company, 2nd Platoon) where Campbell told Ching of Herbert's death. During our interviews, Randall recounted an important piece of information concerning how S/Sgt Hull became a Lost Ranger. He said "Now you know, all through the campaigns of the war, we got casualties, so before that time, the early campaigns, the ones that got killed or wounded, we forget. We remembered the recent ones that got killed." Randall stated in a different part of his interview, "The Brest campaign took us about 20 days, fighting to capture Brest. And got pulled back again for more replacements, more training." I had suspected that the process of men being wounded and replaced at a heavy rate led to my grandpa becoming lost to the unit from the early stages of my research, and this wonderful and unassumingly humble man, a personal friend of my grandpa confirmed it. Randall and his family have helped find this lost Ranger. His family even took time on Thanksgiving Day 2013 to conduct interviews, showing how much Randall values his friend. I will forever be grateful for Randall and his daughter, and the friendship we have struck.



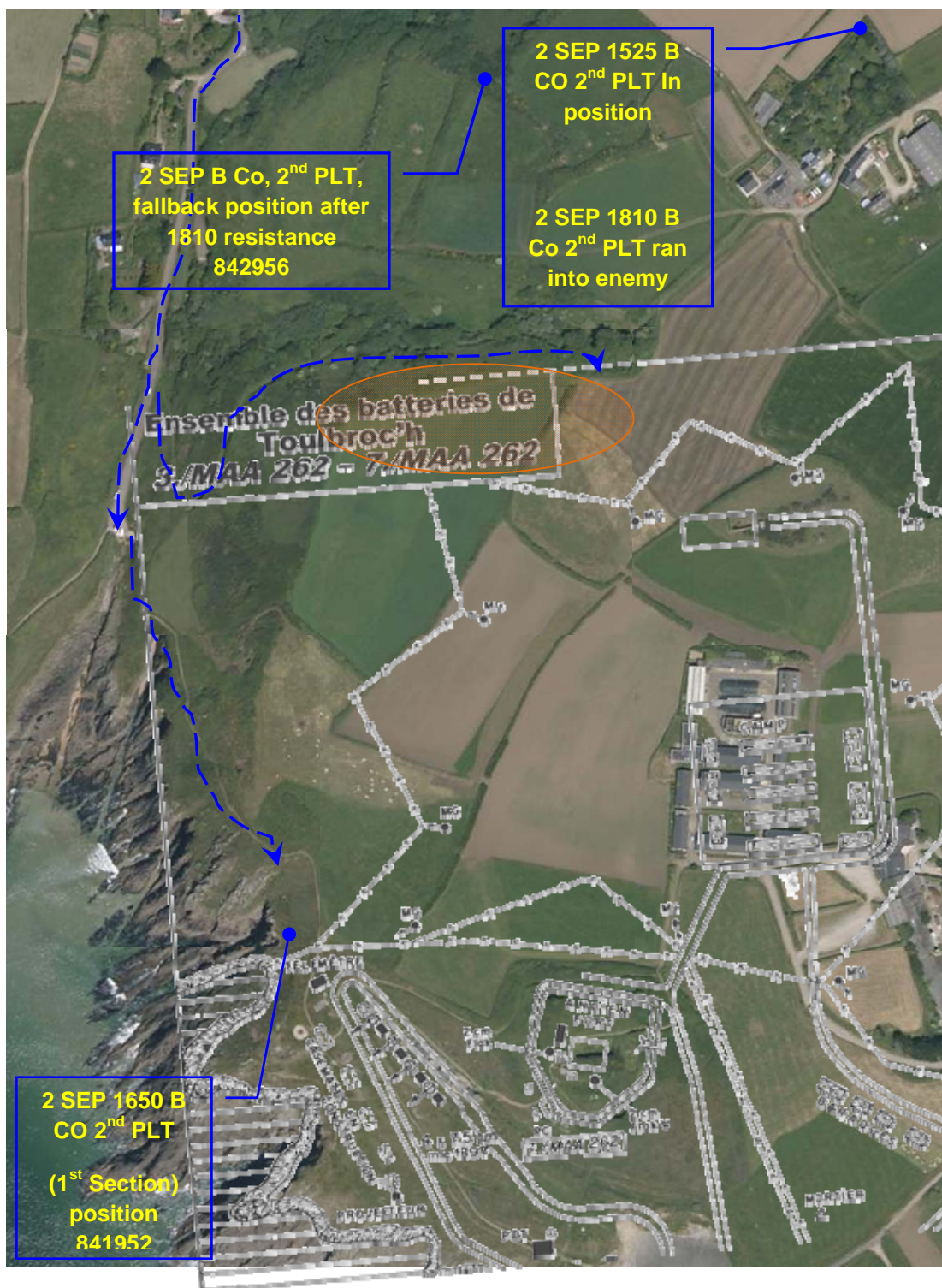
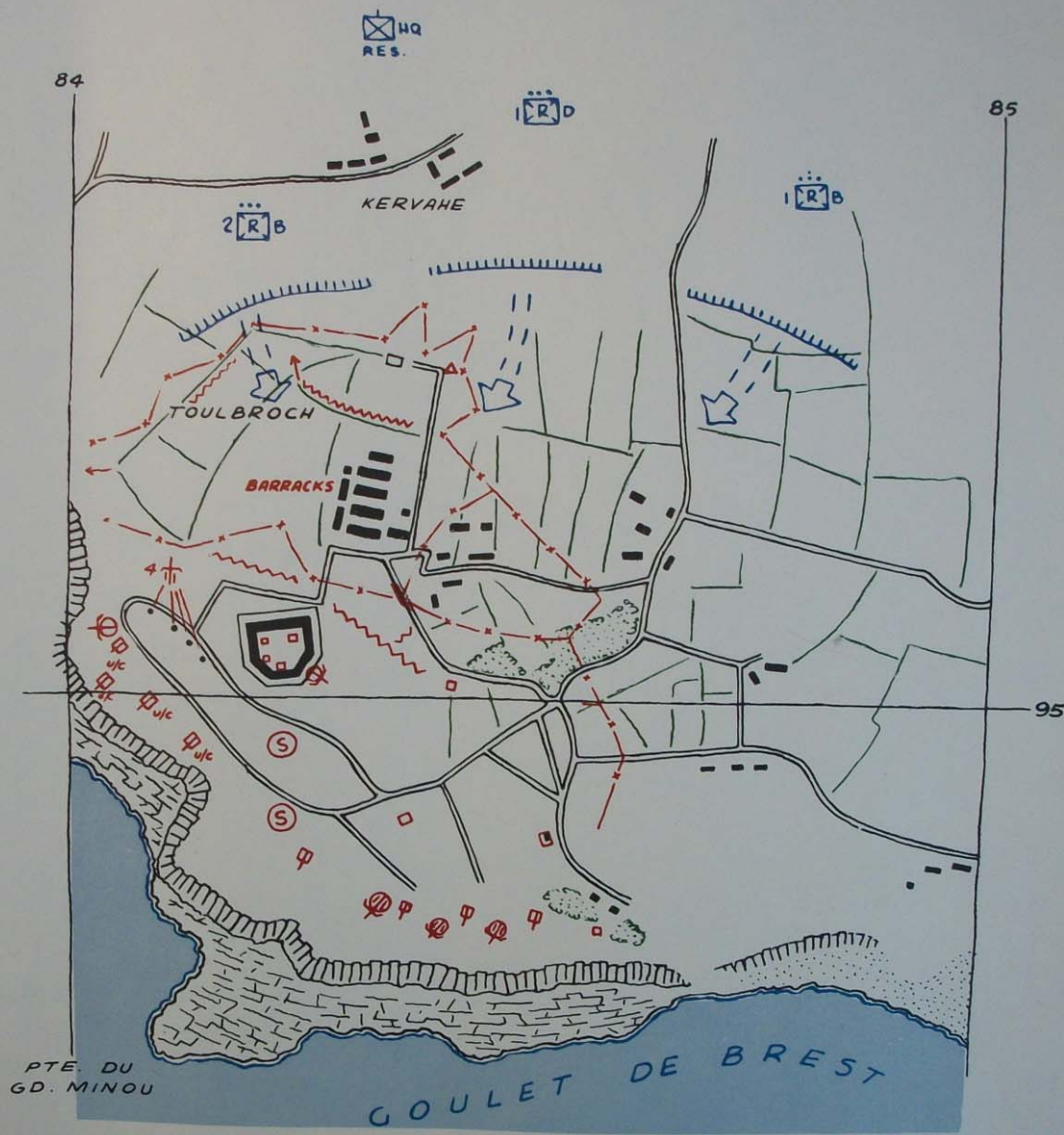


Figure 322: Composite map over aerial photo of Fort de Toulbroc'h with attention paid to certain Ranger positions and actions on September 2, 1944. The orange oval denotes the area where the landmine was tripped wounding S/Sgt Hull as reported by Randall Ching. (Image courtesy of Geoportail, France)(Overlay from L'enfer De Brest)

The map in Figure 322 denotes the movements of the 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company, 2<sup>nd</sup> Platoon as they moved into position on September 2, 1944. Figure 323 illustrates the overall Battle for Fort de Toulbroc'h prepared after the engagement by the 29<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division as part of their After Action Report.



ASSAULT ON FORT BEGAN ON 2 SEPT BY 5<sup>TH</sup> RANGER BN (LESS COS "A, C & E") ATTACHED TO 29<sup>TH</sup> INF DIV. THE ATTACK MET STIFF OPPOSITION AND 2<sup>ND</sup> PLAT "B" CO WAS FORCED TO WITHDRAW. ON 3 SEPT. THE ATTACK AGAIN GOT UNDER WAY PRECEDED BY AN AIR STRIKE AND REDUCTION BY ARTILLERY. THE 2<sup>ND</sup> PLAT "B" CO FOLLOWED THE STRAFING CLOSE IN AND CAPTURED THE FORT IN SIX MINUTES. A TOTAL OF 242 PW'S AND 5 OFFICERS WERE TAKEN IN THIS OPERATION BY 60 RANGERS.



FORT TOULBROCH - V842950



- LEGEND
- ⊕ LT GUN (OPEN EMPL.)
  - CASEMATE
  - SHELTER
  - ⊕ LT AA (OPEN EMPL.)
  - ⊙ SUPPLY DUMP
  - WEAPON PIT

DECLASSIFIED  
Authority *NAV 735047*

Figure 323: After Action Map prepared by 29<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division of Ranger Action on September 2-3, 1944

As the Rangers surrounded their next objective, a German officer named Lemcke, who commanded the 262nd Artillery Group from the coastal position at Minou, began destroying the archives of the post having just witnessed the utter victory fought and won by the Rangers at Fort de Toulbroc'h.<sup>9</sup> I have no doubt in my mind that he reported what he clearly witnessed that day back up the chain of command.

At the time of my grandpa's injury, the Americans had yet to win the Battle for Brest. Near the conclusion of the engagement, General Middleton implored General Ramcke to surrender. The Germans held out for six more days. Here was the exchange:

HEADQUARTERS VIII CORPS  
UNITED STATES ARMY  
Major General Ramcke,  
Commanding General Forces at Brest and on Crozon Peninsula  
12 Sept 44

Sir:

There comes a time in war when the situation reaches a point where a commander is no longer justified in expending the lives and destroying the health of the men who have bravely carried out his orders in combat. I have discussed with your officers and men, who have served you well and are now prisoners of war, the situation confronting the German garrison at Brest. These men are of the belief that the situation is hopeless and that there is nothing to be gained by prolonging the struggle. I therefore feel that the German garrison at Brest and on the Crozon peninsula no longer has a justifiable reason for continuing to fight.

In consideration of the preceding I am calling upon you, as one professional soldier to another, to cease the struggle now in progress. In accepting the surrender of Brest, I desire that your men lay down their arms and be assembled in proper military formation. For you and such members of your staff as you may designate, proper transportation will call at such place as you may select.

I trust that you as a professional soldier who has served well and who has already fulfilled his obligation, will give this request your favorable consideration.

TROY H. MIDDLETON  
Major General, U. S. Army  
Commanding

General Middleton received the following answer:

Commandant Fortress Brest  
Brest 13 Sept 1944  
TO: Commanding General, VIII U.S. Army Corps  
Major General Troy H. Middleton

General:  
I must decline your proposal.

RAMCKE  
Major General and Commandant  
Fortress Brest

The 29th Infantry fought and fought until they reached the Penfield River within the city walls on September 16. By this point much of the German resistance was crumbling. The remaining German paratroopers shot any German forces that appeared to shirk their duty. The forces at Fort Du Portzic were obstinate and resisted through the day until the 5th Rangers convinced them otherwise. Ramcke fought on to the bitter end, throwing every available

soldier, sailor, marine and airman into the battle. The enemy fiercely contested every inch of Brest as it slowly and inevitably fell. They placed machine gunners and snipers in every building they could. The massive rubble provided great cover for defenders. At the same time, it was a nightmare for attackers. The Germans used their tested tactics regarding strong fields of supporting fire to make the American Infantryman pay in blood for his advance.

The battle would wage on through September 18, when the German defenders finally surrendered Brest to the 29th Infantry Division. In that time, the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion would assault and capture four additional forts along the coast. These remaining fortifications assaulted by the 5th Rangers between September 4 and 18th included the Fort at Pointe du Petit Minou, Fort de Mengant, Fort de Dellac and Fort de Portzic. U.S. Brigadier General Charles Canham arrived to accept General Ramcke's surrender. General Canham had been the Colonel on D-Day who had "impressed" S/Sgt Hull's Platoon to act as security south of Vierville for the 116th Infantry Regiment. He had risen in rank to be the deputy commander of the U.S. 8th Infantry Division by the Battle for Brest. When he asked for the German surrender, Ramcke asked the lower-ranking man to show his credentials. Canham pointed to his nearby infantry troops and said "These are my credentials". The phrase has since become the 8th Infantry Division's motto.<sup>21</sup> That Canham said this to his adversary was a stark testament to the grit of the American Infantryman, and an honor to them.

The defense of Brest must have been a discouraging assignment for the soldiers, sailors, and marines of the German garrison. The most they could hope for was a long-drawn-out battle that would have denied the Americans a more profitable use of the divisions which were besieging the city. "Death or the prison ship!" was the way one unidentified German marine summed up the hopeless situation in his personal diary, which eventually found its way to the 29th Division's G-2 section. This diary, which reflects the conviction of eventual German defeat, was apparently meant to record all the days of the Brest campaign. Its first entry was August 25, the day the attack began, and the last entry September 12, a week before the fall of the city.<sup>15</sup> The German measure of heroism can be measured by the award of the German Knights Cross Medal, which is roughly equivalent to our Congressional Medal of Honor. The Germans awarded seven of these prestigious decorations to its military forces as a result of the battle. General Ramcke would receive highest honors from the Führer as he was led away to captivity. He was a good military commander and leader to his men. Once taken prisoner, his main concern was for the welfare of his men also taken prisoner. He was often called "Papa" by his subordinates in respect of his leadership.

To define the butcher's bill as it were of the battle, one only need look at the totals of the rounds expended by the 29th Infantry Division alone. During the twenty-eight day siege of Brest, they fired 1,758,000 rounds of small arms ammunition and 218,000 rounds of larger caliber ammunition. The Allies flew ninety-seven air sorties involving 705 aircraft. The fighter-bombers alone dropped 360 tones of ordinance on target and strafed enemy ground positions for ninety-four of these missions. The twenty days of fighting during the Brest campaign resulted in casualties in B Company, 2nd Platoon of over 70 percent of personnel strength. Ching seemed to recall that Peter Cardinali took over Hull's short-tenured position as Platoon Sergeant after he was injured, but was not 100 percent sure about that. Pete as he called him was a curly-haired Italian with red cheeks from Hoboken, New Jersey who liked spaghetti. He said that Carl West would rise in rank and be the last Platoon Sergeant by war's end. He indicated that there were four men to hold the position through the war. "As the enemy fell back slowly, trying to hold his fortified positions along the coast, the Rangers pushed their attack eastward toward Recouvrance. Fort de Mengant and Fort de Dellec subsequently fell to the Rangers. Each time they used the same pattern as they had at Toulbroch, a rapid follow-up of artillery and air before the enemy could recover from the pounding. The aggressiveness and efficiency of B and D Ranger Companies at this and other coastal forts was later to be officially recognized by the War Department in an award of the Distinguished Unit Citation."<sup>15</sup> The 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion would become known as the "Fort Busters."

Joseph Balkoski wrote in *From Beachhead to Brittany*, "The GIs who would survive the Brest campaign, however, could never forget that campaign because it was among the toughest fighting the 29th Division was subjected to throughout World War II." This assessment also held true for the men of the 2nd and 5th Ranger Infantry Battalions. Randall Ching summed up the battle by saying, "That's Brest. After that... lots... we got casualties again, so, we got pulled off the line, got replacements, retrained, and we went on for another campaign." This stated almost as if it was just another day at the office. The story of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion would go on, but without yet another of their own family.



## 20 EVACUATION AND LOSS

This chapter will focus on his treatment and recovery. It will also discuss how he was found in the official record. This enabled finding him as a Ranger, because the best early leads regarding his official records were his medical records. S/Sgt Hull was listed in a record called the B Company Daily Sick Report for September 2 as being wounded in the line of duty, and as being transferred as indicated by the code, Transferred (TRFD). This record is available at NARA, St. Louis, in the microfilm research room. It is found in World War 2 Records, Sick Books Army, 5 RN BN, 2128, 04296 (Figure 324).

ORGANIZATION OR DETACHMENT COMMANDER'S REPORT						MEDICAL OFFICER'S REPORT	
DATE IN PT	LAST NAME—FIRST NAME—MIDDLE INITIAL	ARMY SERIAL NO.	GRADE	WHEN TAKEN SICK	IN LINE OF DUTY (Y or N)	IN LINE OF DUTY (Y or N)	DISPOSITION
1 SEPT	BERNARD M. PAPPAL		1ST LT	INF		THOMAS G. PATRICK CAPT MC	
1 SEPT	THORNHILL, AVERY J.	6967699	1ST SGT	2-8-44	YES	YES TRFD	
	BERNARD M. PAPPAL		1ST LT	INF		THOMAS G. PATRICK CAPT MC	
2 SEPT	PONWELL, HARVIE C.	34630631	TECH SGT	2-9-44	YES	YES KIA	
"	SARAWAN, JAMES C.	34455592	SGT	2-9-44	YES	YES KIA	
"	HULL, HERBERT S.	35387467	S/SGT	2-9-44	YES	YES TRFD	
"	MCLENNY, EDWARD J.	26102072	S/SGT	2-9-44	YES	YES TRFD	
"	RYAN, WILBIE A.	35224478	T/5	2-9-44	YES	YES TRFD	
	BERNARD M. PAPPAL		1ST LT	INF		THOMAS G. PATRICK CAPT MC	
3 SEPT	SCHUBBERG, HOWARD M.	32322558	SGT	2-9-44	YES	YES TRFD	
"	HEALY, FRANK J.	32609927	PFC	3-9-44	YES	YES TRFD	
"	MONTGOMERY, HARVEY M.	36588549	PFC	3-9-44	YES	YES TRFD	
"	WINZLOW, PAUL W.	34463498	T/5	3-9-44	YES	YES TRFD	

Figure 324: 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company Sick Log Book, September 1944 (NARA)

A real lead to his history came after submitting a request for his records through National Personnel Records Center (NPRC). Although his Military personnel records burned in the 1973 fire in St. Louis, NARA was able to assist to recreate his medical records from an outside source and these records fully document his injuries, medical treatment and recovery. Expanding on this, I sent away to the U.S. Department of Veterans Affairs for his VA medical records. These records contained additional information not contained in his reconstructed medical records held by NPRC. The VA records were a little more bureaucratic to obtain, as they are held in federal archival storage, but with the help of the Cleveland Ohio VA Office, Mr. Derrick Brown of the VA Records Management Center in St. Louis and Mr. Tom Reed of the Dayton Federal Records Center, I was able to obtain the records, and they are a gem in terms of what happened and when.

The 5th RN BN had medics attached to the unit. These men made up the Medical Detachment assigned to the 5th RN BN, Headquarters Company. Once the battle progressed enough that S/Sgt Hull and the other men who had been pinned down were able to be reached, it would have been some of these men who would have begun the

process of treating and evacuating him, the other three wounded, and two dead Rangers. According to conversations with Major General John C. Raaen, Jr. (ret.), during this campaign, the 5th RN BN would have evacuated the wounded men immediately to a 29th Infantry Division Battalion Aid Station. The Rangers were attached to the 29th Infantry Division, and the 29th Infantry Division was attached to VIII Corps. All Ranger casualties were processed through the medical units supporting the 29th. (Raaen, correspondence) From that point, the men would have been treated and processed in the Army medical system as appropriate.

The Company Morning Reports for 2 SEP 44 and 4 SEP 44 respectively list S/Sgt Hull. As indicated in earlier chapters, the Morning Report explains the happenings for a given unit within a given day. The report for 2 SEP 44 shows that S/Sgt Hull was wounded in action and was changed from being on duty to being listed as lightly wounded in action (LWA) in the hospital and not having been dropped from assignment. Upon having his battlefield wounds stabilized enough for transportation on 2 SEP 44, he was sent to the 108th Evacuation Hospital (EH) according to his actual medical records. The Morning Report infers that the medics and Aid Station medical personnel did not at first realize the extent of the wounds that he had suffered by listing him as LWA on 2 SEP 44. This might have been due to a lack of communication between the medical personnel back to the unit. This was reported to me by former 5th RN BN medic, Richard “Doc” Felix in spring of 2012 as being something that routinely happened. By 4 SEP 44, the damage done to his knee had become more fully diagnosed and a decision was made to evacuate him from France to England, and his medical records indicate that he was treated with penicillin and sulfa on 4 SEP 44. Another consideration in the time delay for actual treatment is found in the overall situation regarding the Brest campaign. As you recall, the 29th Infantry Division was engaged in Divisional action that was decimating their ranks. The sheer amount of casualties incurred by them would have rendered what on the surface looked like a simple knee wound with much less attention than those men more severely wounded. Think of the old television show, M\*A\*S\*H. The World War II equivalent to the Korean War M.A.S.H unit was the evacuation hospital. The triage system often seen on that show was based on real life battlefield medicine. This explains why the family knowledge of laying on the battlefield for three days and the knee becoming gangrene originated.

It is for the reason of more fully assessing and diagnosing his wounds that the Morning Report for 4 SEP 44 lists him as dropped from assignment. The term dropped from assignment means dropped from the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion. This chain of events is extremely important to note here, as it ultimately lead to his being lost from the unit history of the 5th RN BN. Nothing was done improperly, as everything had been documented in accordance with all appropriate U.S. Army regulation and guidance. As per regulation on 4 SEP 44, he was transferred from the Rangers to the various units of the U.S. Army Medical Corps and this ultimately resulted in his discharge reading “5th Ranger Battalion, unassigned”. Anyone wishing to see Company Morning Reports for themselves or loved ones need to set an appointment and travel to NARA, St. Louis, in the microfilm research room and view the appropriate unit in the World War 2 Records.

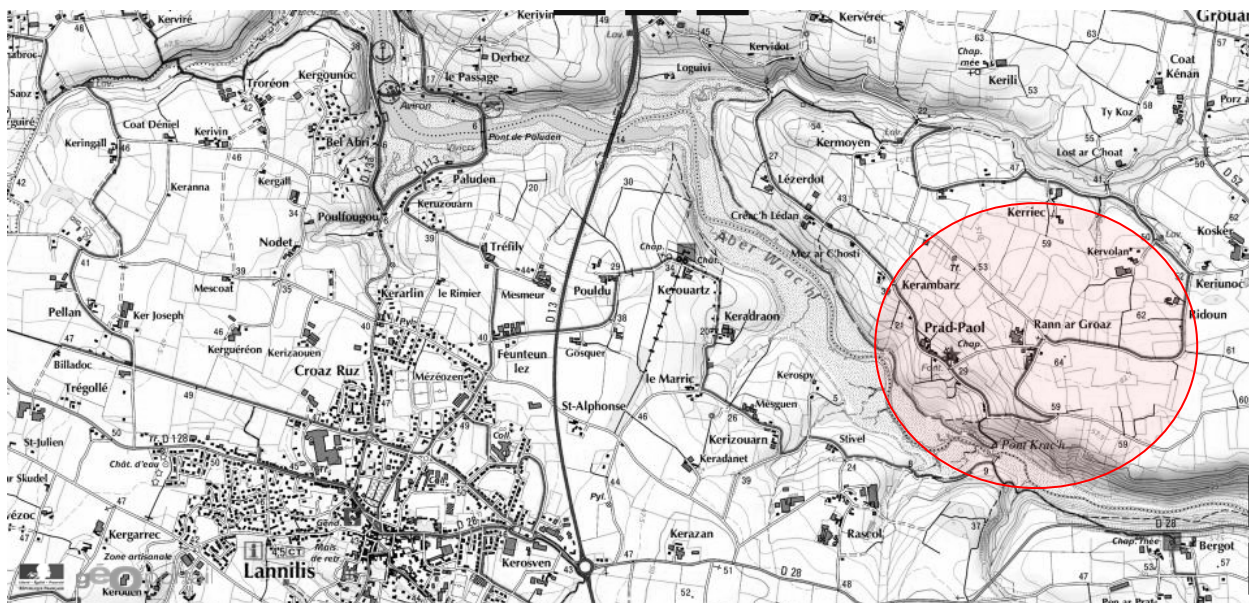


Figure 325: Circle showing possible location of 108<sup>th</sup> Evacuation Hospital in Lannilis France, Sep 44

The 108th Evacuation Hospital (EH), attached to the Third United States Army, left Rennes on 22 August 1944 in order to provide proper medical support for the siege of Brest and took up a new station at a spot of land overlooking a river, just outside of the town of Lanillis, France (Figure 325). Lanillis is about nine miles north of Brest. The 108th remained in Brittany so long that the rapidly moving Third Army left them in their wake. The 108th EH was transferred to the Ninth United States Army and remained under its jurisdiction to the war's end. Lanillis, France was located approximately 20 miles by ambulance from the Fort de Toulbroc'h area. It is unknown where the airfield was that supported the 108th EH, but it had to be close-by. As the battle for Brest waged to the south, the wounded came pouring in to the unit. The Army had positioned the 108th EH several miles closer to the front lines than were other similar units in the area. The result of this was that many of the most seriously wounded men were transported there to avoid longer ambulance rides to other units. This spared the wounded additional pain, and actually began to form the understanding of what now is commonly referred to as the "Golden Hour" in terms of emergency medicine today.



Figure 326: Patients are brought to the 108th Evacuation Hospital by WC54 Ambulances. (NARA)

The medical staff of the 108th EH worked at breakneck speed and often worked much more than twelve hour days. Many of the skilled physicians, surgeons and other medical staff had come from the private medical sector in the States, and some from the best hospitals in the nation. The hospital was so close to the front lines, that the thunderous sound of artillery could be heard as the adversaries waged an unrelenting artillery duel against each other for the control of Brest. The bombers could actually be seen dropping bombs on the points south. The Germans had burrowed into the ground, and had carved out caves for living quarters, hospitals and supply depots. They used extensive defensive works such as the forts and pillboxes and other casements that required the use of extensive bombing to ferret out. This bombing was all visible from the 108th EH.<sup>1</sup> They applied a plaster cast and prepared Hull to move. He would have been moved by WC 54 Ambulances like the ones seen in Figure 326.

During my research I found an outstanding resource for understanding the military medical establishment. I would recommend anyone interested in learning more as to how it worked during World War II to study it at the World War 2 (WW2) U.S. Medical Research Centre.<sup>1</sup> An extensive description of the 108th Evacuation Hospital may be found there. This excellent resource is the private and loving work of two European historians Alain S. Batens and Ben C. Major. They collaborated with me on much of the unit information in this chapter. These guys are amazing, and their website is a must see for anyone interested in World War II.





Figure 327: Wounded being loaded for transport for evacuation to England (NARA photo)

Further medical treatment including debridement at the 108th Evacuation Hospital led to S/Sgt Hull being transported by air to the 94th General Hospital located in Tortworth Court, Falfield, Gloucestershire, England (north of Bristol), APO 508. Figure 327 illustrates transfer of a patient to air transport during the war. Debridement is the medical removal of dead, damaged, or infected tissue to improve the healing potential of the remaining healthy tissue. Removal may be surgical, mechanical, chemical, autolytic (self-digestion), and by maggot therapy, where certain species of live maggots selectively eat only necrotic tissue.<sup>2</sup> It is a very painful treatment. He had to endure multiple treatment sessions of this through September. They treated the gangrene through the use of antibiotics and Sulfa. Had the extent of his wounds not been more thoroughly evaluated and treated he would have likely developed full gangrene with the removal of his leg or worse.

It is important to understand the medical system in World War II. What has been discussed up to now entailed his treatment in the First, Second and Third Echelons of U.S. Army medical care. The 94th and 74th General Hospitals in England as well as transport on the HMS Queen Mary discussed later represent care in the Fourth Echelon. Then finally, his treatment at Halloran, O'Reilly and Percy Jones General Hospitals represent care in the Fifth Echelon of the U.S. Army medical care establishment.

The United States Army 94th General Hospital (GH) was a hospital in operation in the European Theatre of Operations (EUTOSA) during World War 2. For the period covering fall 1944, the unit was headquartered at Tortworth Court, Falfield, Gloucestershire, England located some 18 miles northeast of Bristol. When I began my research, I found that a prepared unit history for the 94th was not readily accessible online. This unit proved to be the most challenging military unit to uncover details regarding this body of research. I actually began to correspond with the authors of the website referenced earlier in the chapter, <<http://www.med-dept.com>> (AMEDD), to see what could be done to flesh out the information.

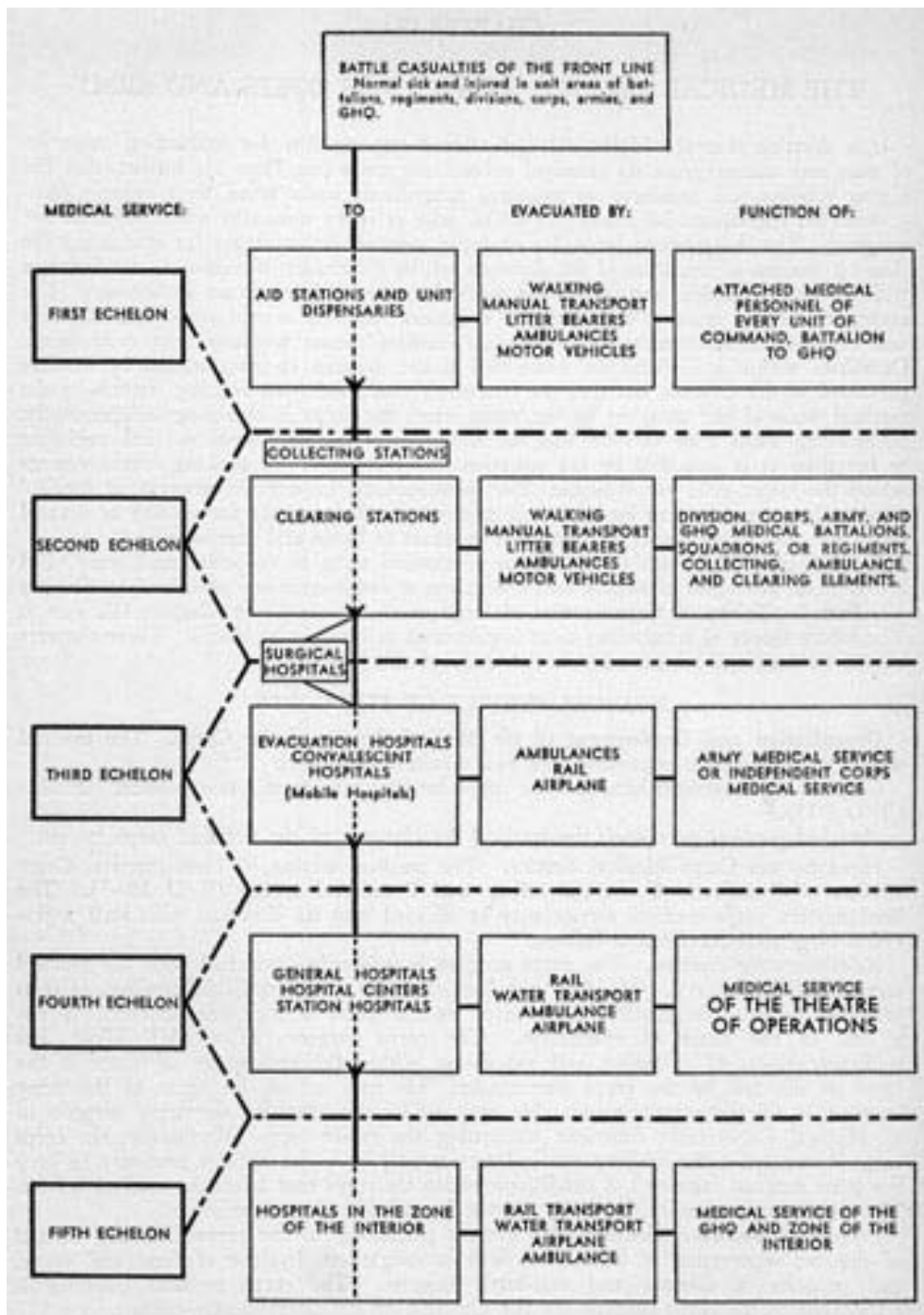


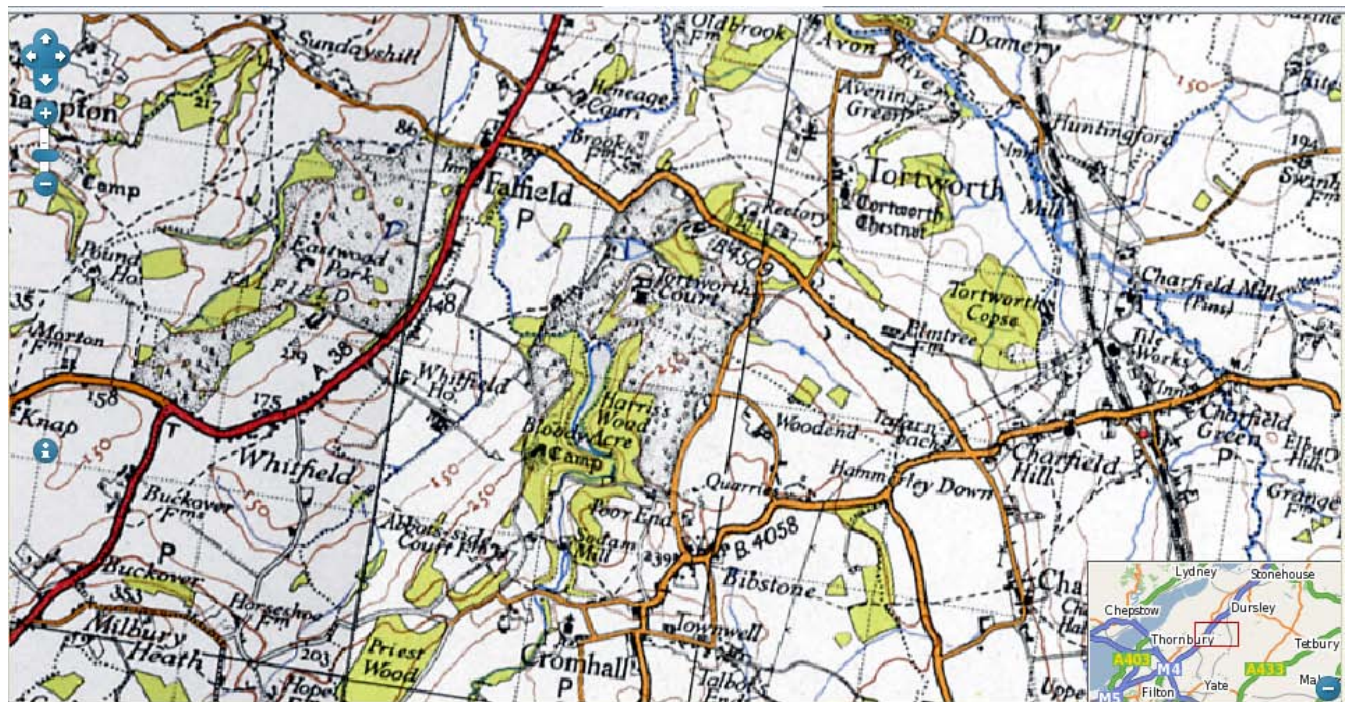
Figure 328: Flowchart of U.S. medical establishment, War Department (courtesy of WW2 U.S. Medical Research Centre and Olive-Drab World War II Research websites)

The U.S. military in World War II had an organized, structured system for evacuation and treatment of casualties that stretched from frontline foxholes to hospitals in the United States homeland, based on medical care echelons. Sick or wounded individuals would be transported from one echelon to another as rapidly and efficiently as possible, subject to conditions which often prevented optimal handling, to optimize their care and potential to return to duty. This is illustrated in Figure 328 above. The ability of the American military system to provide medical aid and treatment to its personnel was a source of strength and increased morale, an important factor in ultimate victory.<sup>3</sup>

## Doctrine of Medical Treatment in World War II

Governing all WW II medical planning were a series of general doctrinal rules, most of which remained valid long after 1945:

1. Commanders of all echelons are responsible for the provision of adequate and proper medical care for all noneffectives [persons whose medical condition prevents them from performing their military duties] of their command;
2. Medical service is continuous;
3. Sick or injured individuals go no farther to the rear than their condition or the medical situation warrants;
4. Sorting of the fit from the unfit takes place at each medical installation in the chain of evacuation;
5. Casualties in the combat zone are collected at medical installations along the general axis of advance of the units to which they pertain;
6. Medical units must possess and retain tactical mobility to permit them to move to positions on the battlefield and enable them to move in support of combat elements;
7. Mobility of medical installations in the combat zone is dependent upon prompt and continuous evacuation by higher medical echelons;
8. The size of medical installations increases and the necessity and ability to move decreases the farther from the front lines these units are located;
9. Medical units must be disposed so as to render the greatest service to the greatest number.<sup>3</sup>



Currently showing:  
Ordnance Survey of Great Britain New Popular Edition, Sheet 156 - Bristol and Stroud

Figure 329: Location of 94<sup>th</sup> General Hospital located at Tortworth Court, UK. (A Vision of Britain Through Time – Public Domain)<sup>5</sup>

The first clues as to the whereabouts of the 94th GH came from anecdotal reference through the AMEDD website. Further investigation of the unit yielded an important clue in the form of an obituary for a gentleman named Roscoe Ray Giessey, 92, of Kalispell, Montana, who died on October 2, 2011. His passing was reported in the Daily Interlake.com newspaper. He served as a medical and surgical technician in the 94th General Hospital during the period that Herbert Hull would have been treated at the facility. This valuable clue provided a basis and a geographic location to continue searching for additional information regarding the history of the unit. Additional evidence of the location came from an internet piece that chronicles a gentleman by the name of Wayne Baker, who was reported wounded in the Ruhr Valley in Germany in March of 1945 and was reportedly “taken to the 94th General Hospital,



18 miles from Bristol.”<sup>4</sup> Finally, when I travelled to NARA Archives II at College Park, MD, I was able to find and capture some of the Unit records which yielded valuable information as to location and actions of the unit. I subsequently shared this with my new friends at AMEDD for them to share with others. I wanted to add this brief discussion because it was amongst the most challenging of information to find. I had to find it as an important puzzle piece. The way that research for this went was that I had to find some small clue or piece that would lead me to another piece, leading to another clue, etc., and it was rather tedious. During the development of the information, I found the probable location by using period maps at a website called [visionofbritain.org.uk](http://visionofbritain.org.uk).<sup>5</sup>

One challenge with the website, for any readers that care to do it, is that you have to go and find the actual location that you are looking for by hand. Many hours were spent researching the unit using the internet in many different ways, eventually coming across the photo in Figure 331. The 120th Station Hospital was a unit that predated the 94th General Hospital in operation at this site. The photo is important because it gives great geographical clues as to location in the form of the manor house in the background, which stands today. From there, I was able to use Google Map to locate the place, and it turns out that the former site of the hospital is now a British low-security prison called HM Prison Leyhill.

When war broke out in 1938, the location was used instead by the British Navy in 1940. Tortworth Court was commandeered by the Government during the Second World War as a naval establishment. Alterations were made and the house became a training establishment for coding and signals. The Navy called it a ‘Stone Frigate’ and it was named HMS Cabbala. Incidentally the ceremony of the flag took place daily where Reception is now sited in the main hall. This was done inside the building to avoid drawing attention to what was, at the time, top-secret premises. It was left to Mr Diment to arrange for all the furniture in the Court to be put in store. At the end of the war the contents were sold at auction.

In 1942 HMS Cabbala moved to Warrington and Tortworth Court became home to American servicemen. A hospital was built on the grounds in the park, and the doctors and nursing staff lived in the house. On the 26th November 1943 the 91st and 128th Evacuating Hospital Units arrived with hundreds of wounded from the North African Campaign. Trains would arrive at Charfield and Thornbury full of wounded Americans. From June 1944 until March 1945 other American General Hospital units, including 224th and 225th, were temporarily stationed in Tortworth Court looking after American Service personnel. After the war, the buildings constructed for the hospital and, for a time the house itself, became H.M. Leyhill Open Prison. Tortworth Court was then used as a training school for prison officers. Now, after a devastating fire and then extensive refurbishment prior to 2010, it is a luxury hotel. The arboretum is open to public, and the beautiful Tortworth Lake hiding serenely in woodland on the estate, opens on the first Sunday of the month from February to October.



Figure 330: Unit Crest of 94<sup>th</sup> General Hospital (USACMH)

As to the care given at the 94th General Hospital, this is the location where S/Sgt Hull’s leg and life were saved, as he got sicker before he got better. The motto of the unit was to aid, comfort and heal as noted on their Unit Crest (Figure 330). He arrived to the unit on 7 SEP 44 as his medical records indicate, where he was evaluated and assigned to Ward 16 with a diagnosis of having a penetrating wound to his left knee. Originally, he had been listed as having shrapnel wounds to his left knee and arm and right hand. By this point, I assumed that the other two wounds were treated and well on their way to healing.



Figure 331: The 94<sup>th</sup> GH took over the facilities of the 120<sup>th</sup> GH, located at Tortworth Courts, Falfield, Somerset, England, showing castle in distance. August 5, 1943 photo. (NARA photo)

By 11 SEP 44, his knee started to cause him considerable pain and he was treated until an operation to remove a considerable piece of shrapnel from his knee was performed on 30 OCT 44. X-rays revealed that he had a fracture in the bones surrounding his knee as well. After this second surgery, the first having been done in France, his body began to be able to properly heal. It was his medical records which actually gave proof of his injury and ultimately were able to lead me, with the family oral history and with considerable help from Major General John C. Raaen, Jr., (ret), and later, Randall Ching to be able to place him on the battlefield in the previous chapter.

The record in Figure 332 presents his final diagnosis as of 11 SEP 44. With this information, the official story was laid out for the family for first time. The medical story is accurate; however, the record indicated that a German grenade hit him while assaulting a German pillbox. In later records, this was revised to consistently indicate a German landmine.

94th General Hospital  
Final Summary (contd.)

Summarize below pertinent laboratory and X-ray findings, final diagnosis, line of duty, progress in hospital, present condition, and prognosis in that order.

*Lab normal.*

*X-ray of left knee shows a small tangential fracture of ant. sur. angle of the medial epicondyle of the femur. There is a large metallic f. probably within the capsule of the inf. med. ang. of med. epicondyle anteriorly.*

Date *Nov. 27, 1944* *Prof. [Signature]*  
M.C.

P. *Be*

94th General Hospital  
Final Summary

*Hull, Herbert S. 16*  
(Name) (Ward) (Date of Disch)

*35597467 S/Sgt. Co. B 5 Rangers*  
(ASN) (Rank) (Organization)

*2 yrs. 20 7 Sept. 44*  
(Yrs. of Serv.) (Age) (Date of Admis.)

CHIEF COMPLAINTS:  
*shrapnel potato masher in left leg*

PRESENT ILLNESS:  
*2 Sept-1944 in France while attacking pill boxes a german hand grenade exploded and a piece of grenade struck him in left knee (penetrating) piece removed. *(with X-ray)**

PREVIOUS HISTORY:  
*medicant*

PHYSICAL EXAMINATION:  
*normal except for wound & quadriceps atrophy*

Date *11-11-44* *Prof. [Signature]*  
(over) M.C.

55BC

Figure 332: Example of S/Sgt Hull medical records provided by Department of Veterans Affairs.

Sometime between his surgery on 30 OCT 44 and 14 DEC 44, a medical decision was made to evacuate Hull from Europe to the USA for care in the Fifth Echelon of the medical system. He was transferred from the 94th General Hospital in Falfield to the 74th General Hospital in Tyntesfield Park, Wraxall, England located southwest of Bristol. He arrived at the hospital on 16 DEC 44. By this time in the war the 74th General Hospital had converted from a major general hospital to that of a hospital dedicated to preparing wounded troops for movement overseas and back to the USA. The following photos provide the location and give an example of the surroundings there. Figure 333 shows the 74th General Hospital.



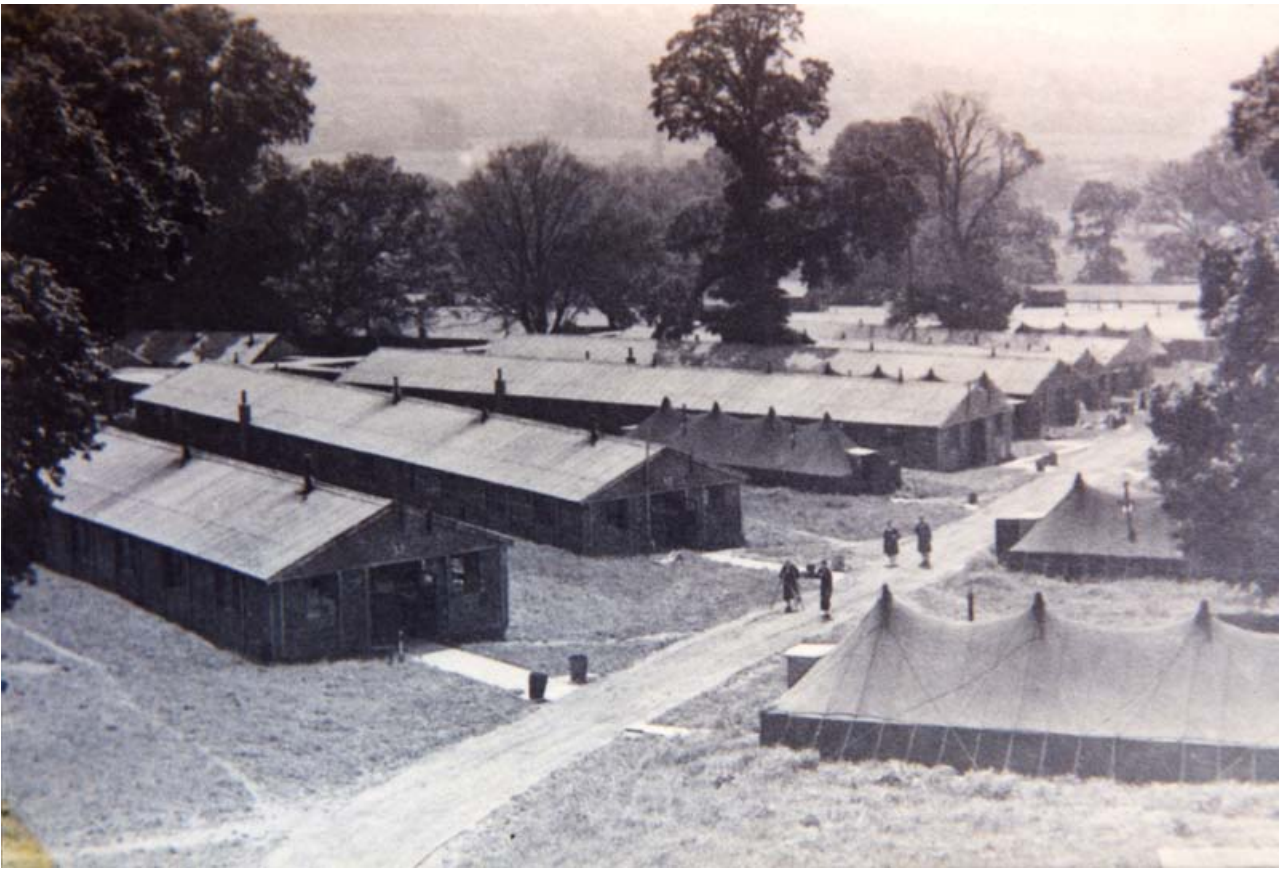


Figure 333: 74<sup>th</sup> General Hospital, Falfield, England 1944 (NARA photo)

S/Sgt Hull's records indicate that he received no treatment while at the 74th GH. From there however, he was prepared to move home aboard the HMS *Queen Mary*. He departed from England on 20 DEC 44 and arrived at the Port of New York aboard the HMS *Queen Mary* on 27 DEC 44. He would have come back to the same port where he left from aboard the HMS *Mauretania* earlier in the year. From there, he was transported to Halloran General Hospital on Staten Island, NY. He travelled home on the Gray Ghost "*Queen Mary*" according to his medical records. The best available information about troop ship crossings can be viewed at a website known as: <http://ww2troopships.com/crossings/1944b.htm>

The official records of ships used to carry troops to their theaters of operations were destroyed intentionally in 1951 by the U.S. Government. "According to our [U. S. National Archives] records, in 1951 the Department of the Army destroyed all passenger lists, manifests, logs of vessels, and troop movement files of United States Army Transports for World War II." There was no word on why the records were destroyed. Thus there is no longer an official record of who sailed on what ship, though there are still valuable sources that can be found. So the web page above is an informal collecting ground for information about troop ship crossings.

The HMS *Queen Mary* is shown proudly entering New York Harbor in Figure 334.



Figure 334: The British liner RMS *Queen Mary* arrives in New York harbour, 20 June 1945, with thousands of U.S. troops from Europe. The Queen Mary still wears her light grey war paint. Seen from near Hamilton Avenue, Weehawken. June 20, 1945, Source U.S. Navy photo 80-GK-5645; U.S. Defense Visual Information Photo HD-SN-99-03026 [1], (USN)

From December 27 through December 31, 1944, S/Sgt Hull was a patient at Halloran General Hospital, New York. At the time, Halloran was the largest Army hospital in the world, with over 3000 beds. During his evaluation there, it was determined that his injuries were now considered orthopedic and that physical therapy was the best course of action for him. Halloran General Hospital was established in 1941 in structures that had been built during the 1930s to house the Willowbrook State School. Willowbrook State School was located in the Willowbrook neighborhood on Staten Island in New York City. It was planned in 1938 on a 375 acres (1.52 km<sup>2</sup>) site in the Willowbrook section of Staten Island. Construction was completed in 1942, but was converted into a United States Army hospital and named Halloran General Hospital, after the late Colonel Paul Stacey Halloran for the duration of the war.<sup>7</sup> The Army annexed the buildings and set up the hospital for returning wounded soldiers. It is located where the College of Staten Island is located today. Halloran General Hospital is displayed in the images in Figures 335-336.





Figure 335: Halloran General Hospital postcard (public domain – New York Public Library)



Figure 336: Halloran General Hospital aerial photo (public domain – National Institute of Health)



Hull was next transferred by train to O'Reilly General Hospital in Springfield, Missouri, leaving New York on 27 DEC 44 and arriving in Missouri 2 JAN 45. Upon arriving at O'Reilly General Hospital in Springfield, MO, S/Sgt Hull was given a full physical. It was noted that his wounds had all healed. It was determined that he should be eventually transferred to a convalescent center for further orthopedic treatment, and the eventual possible return to duty.



Figure 337: O'Reilly General Hospital postcard (public domain – Missouri Digital Heritage, Collections, O'Reilly General Hospital of Springfield, Missouri)

In February 1941, Springfield was chosen as the site of the O'Reilly General Army hospital, to be located on a reservation bounded by Division, Fremont, Pythian and Glenstone Avenue, an area later occupied in large part by Evangel University. O'Reilly General Hospital is shown in Figure 337.

The staff of O'Reilly was recognized as among the best among Army hospital staff. This was a result of an early decision made by the post commander. In May 1941, Colonel George B. Foster Jr. declared his intention to make O'Reilly the "hospital with a soul." Foster's emphasis on excellent health care was later recognized by the Army Surgeon General as a model for most Army hospitals and the "best in the Nation." By the end of 1941, the United States was totally committed to World War II, and the Hospital took on new importance, as long term medical care became necessary for returning soldiers. O'Reilly staff served over 100,000 patients during the hospital's five years of operation. Forty-two thousand of those patients were wounded and injured soldiers. In addition 60,000 military dependents were also cared for. A few P.O.W.s were also treated.

O'Reilly was a state-of-the art hospital in its day. The 12 operating rooms had the latest equipment available. Surgeons performed plastic surgery, orthopedic, neurosurgery and maxillofacial surgeries on wounded soldiers as well as many more life-saving operations. O'Reilly was huge compared to the hospitals of today. For comparison, a 1,000-

bed hospital would be considered very large today. O'Reilly had six times that many. In addition to offering medical treatment, O'Reilly was also used as a training facility for the Army. More than 16,000 enlisted personnel were trained as laboratory, X-ray, medical/surgical and dental technicians in the technician school at O'Reilly. The hospital also housed prisoners of war for a time.

His evaluation and diagnosis at O'Reilly stated the case very well. "On 2 September 44 in Brest, France, this soldier was struck by fragments from a landmine sustaining wounds to the left arm and left knee. He was treated the same day in the 108th Evacuation Hospital and debridement and application of a long leg plaster splint on the left was carried out. On 16 September 44 at the 94th General Hospital, there was a removal of the foreign body and a secondary closure of his wounds was carried out. Two weeks following this, the soldier had physiotherapy and since that time has improved very well. Soldier was then transferred through channels arriving at O'Reilly General Hospital on 2 January 1945. At the present time, the soldier has 70 degrees of flexion of the left knee and full extension. Collateral ligaments seem intact. Working Diagnosis: Wound, penetrating, severe, knee, left". The land where O'Reilly hospital was located is now Evangel University (Assemblies of God) in Springfield, Missouri. A map of the facility is shown in Figure 338.

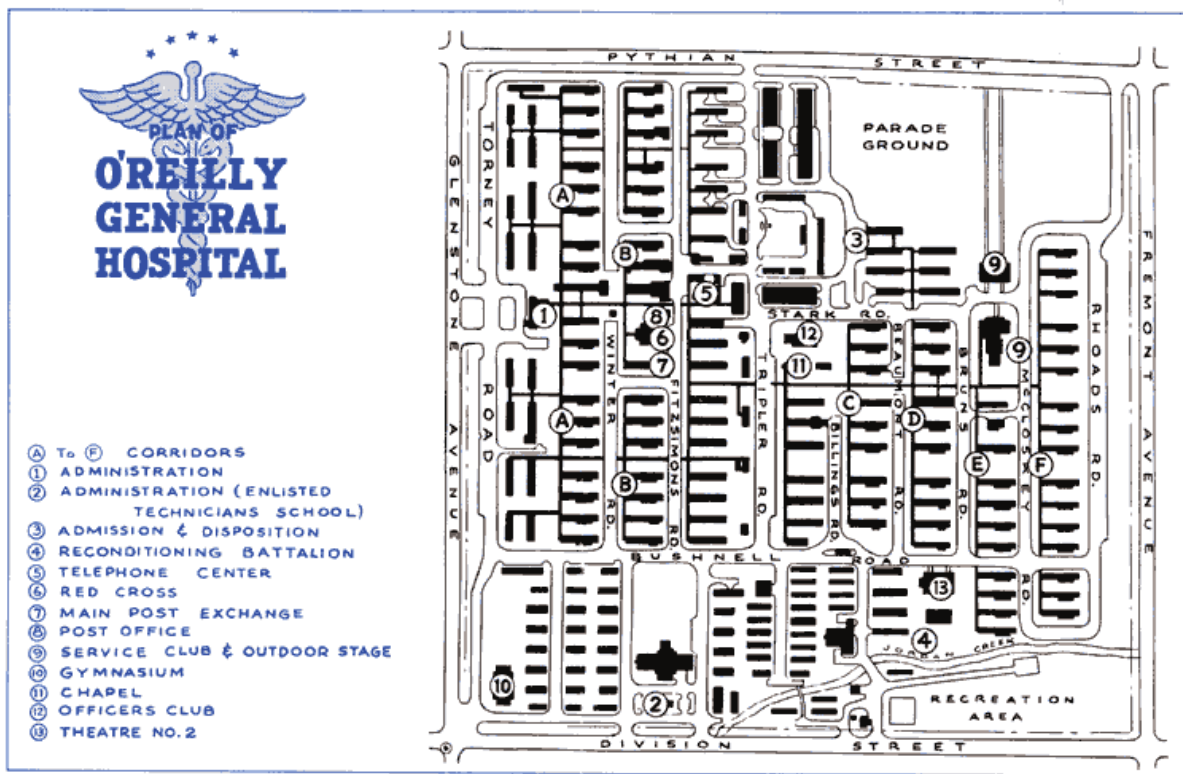


Figure 338: O'Reilly General Hospital postcard (public domain - Springfield-Greene County Library, Springfield, Missouri)

Herbert Hull remained in Missouri until he was transferred to Percy Jones General & Convalescent Hospital, Battle Creek, Michigan, Company B, 2nd Battalion, arriving by train on January 14, 1945. A photo showing patients arriving by rail at the hospital is shown in Figure 339. The Battle Creek Sanitarium opened in 1866 as the Western Health Reform Institute. The institute was founded on health principles advocated by the Seventh-Day Adventist Church. In 1876, Dr. John Harvey Kellogg became the medical superintendent at the sanitarium. Kellogg's many innovations included the use of radiation therapy for cancer patients and the invention of flaked cereal. The sanitarium burned in 1902; the following year a six-story Italian Renaissance Revival-style building, designed by Dayton, Ohio, architect Frank M. Andrews, was constructed. Kellogg's brother W. K. Kellogg worked at the sanitarium for twenty-six years before leaving to establish the Battle Creek Toasted Corn Flakes Company. The Battle Creek Sanitarium is listed on the National Register of Historic Places. The Battle Creek Sanitarium and later Percy Jones Medical Center were what John Hopkins or the Mayo Clinic are today. The former hospital is shown in Figure 340.



Figure 339: Medical Train arriving at Battle Creek Michigan to deliver patients to Percy Jones General Hospital (NARA Photo - <http://www.dispositionsservices.dla.mil/pubaff/hospital.shtml> )



Figure 340: Hart Dole Inouye Federal Center, Battle Creek, Michigan (Federal Government Photo)



In 1928 the Battle Creek Sanitarium was enlarged with a fourteen-story "tower" addition and dining room annex designed by M. J. Morehouse of Chicago. After the stock market crashed in 1929, business declined; the facility went into receivership in 1933. The sanitarium continued to occupy the site until 1942 when the U. S. Army purchased the buildings and established the Percy Jones General Hospital, named for an army surgeon whose thirty year career included commanding ambulance units during World War I. The facility had over 1,500 beds. The hospital specialized in neurosurgery, plastic surgery and the fitting of artificial limbs. Approximately 100,000 military patients were treated at the hospital before it closed permanently in 1953. In 1954 the building became the Battle Creek Federal Center, now known as the Hart Dole Inouye Federal Center. The address for the former Percy Jones Hospital is: DLA Disposition Services, Hart-Dole-Inouye Federal Center, 74 Washington Ave, Battle Creek, MI 49037-3092. A period postcard of the hospital is seen in Figure 341 showing the hospital grounds.



Figure 341: Postcard of Percy Jones General Hospital, Battle Creek, Michigan (Public domain)

During the winter months, his parents literally borrowed tires for their car from neighbors and friends and made a road trip to see their son in Michigan. This was the first time they saw each other since he left for war overseas. Undoubtedly, they saw that their son had grown up as did many other young men subjected to the rigors of war. By March 1, 1945, further medical evaluation revealed that S/Sgt Hull had developed moderate atrophy and limited motion in his left knee. The doctors recommended a four week course of physical therapy to see if any improvement could be made. It was then decided that he would be sent to permanent limited duty. By April 4 he had completed the physical therapy with no signs of improvement and was seen by a Disposition Board for final recommendation. His psychiatric evaluation revealed no issues of concern.

**IDENTIFICATION  
DISCHARGE  
CERTIFICATE**

**Certificate of Army, Navy, Marine  
Corps or Coast Guard Officer**

**THE HOLDER**

is traveling at own expense and is entitled to **SPECIAL COACH FARE** authorized account;

(a) Discharge, or  
(b) Retirement or release from active duty and not entitled to travel on transportation requests,  
if presented within 30 days from date of discharge, retirement or release.

From Battle Creek Michigan  
(Place of discharge, retirement or release)

To East Palestine, Ohio  
(Home or place of enlistment or induction, or place of employment)

19 APR 1945  
(Date of discharge, retirement or release)

Helen L. McHugh  
(Signature of certifying officer.)

Helen L. McHugh  
1st Lt. AUS (WAC)  
(Name and position of certifying officer)

Ticket Agent will take up this Certificate, noting thereon form and number of ticket issued, and forward with ticket report to Auditor, stamping back hereof with regular ticket date.

When this certificate is properly executed and presented with officially executed discharge, retirement or release papers, it becomes a specific request of the United States Government that the holder when traveling at own expense, be authorized to purchase a one-way coach ticket at the special reduced fare authorized, account discharge or retirement or release.

The United States Government will not be responsible for the payment of fare for ticket accounts with this certificate.

Figure 342: Herb Hull Bus ticket stub home upon discharge from Army

At this board, it was recommended that he be separated from service under the provisions of AR 615-361, because of the following diagnosis: Ankylosis, fibrous, partial, left knee, secondary to wound, perforating, left patella, due to enemy action when struck by shrapnel 2 September 1944 in Brest, France. He was then discharged on April 19, 1945, and sent home under a disability discharge classified as Honorable. The Administrative personnel at Percy Jones General Hospital did not fully document all of his appropriate citations and other information from his military personnel record. In the process of preparing his paperwork, his WD AGO Form 20, Soldier's Qualification Record was not copied and advanced to the VA as it should have been.

He returned home by bus the same day (Figure 342). When he arrived home a hero, he had been awarded the Bronze Star Medal, Purple Heart, Good Conduct Medal, American Campaign Medal, European-African-Middle Eastern Theatre Ribbon with two bronze star devices, and the Combat Infantrymans Badge and these all appeared on his uniform. He was then evaluated further by the VA and he was awarded a 30 percent permanent disability rating for his wounds.

He reunited with family and friends, including his parents, Stanton and Ethel Hull, brother, Raymond and four sisters, Helen, Shirley, Lucile, and Doris. He returned to his old job at Brittain Motors in East Palestine, Ohio. He later would take a job as a police officer in the East Palestine Police Department. In 1945, he met and married Mary Mae Whitehouse. They eloped to West Virginia to marry as she was 16 and underage by Ohio law at the time. They started a family. First born was my Aunt Linda in 1946, followed by my mom in 1947. They later had two sons, Herbert in 1949 and Thomas in 1951. The picture below (Figure 343) is of him, my mom, aunt and uncle Herb taken in the early 1950s'. I know I presented this picture earlier in the book, but the story has now come full circle. I do not have a photo of all four kids with him. I have always liked this picture of them. His children knew him as a loving father who liked to sing, hunt, swim and play. They remembered the two war dogs he adopted and kept. They loved their dad and still do to this day.





Figure 343: Herb Hull and three of his kids, taken early 1950's (author's collection)

In 1954, cracks began to appear in the marriage between Herb and Mary Hull. It is known that my grandma had an extra-marital affair with another man. In a small town, this news got around. My grandpa implored his parents to allow him to take the children and move in with them. His mother told him no, thinking about divorce consistent with the sensibilities of the era. He moved in with his parents without the kids to figure his next move.

On May 4, 1954, he was shot in the chest with his .38 caliber police service pistol. His body was found on the floor of the Herb and Mary Hull home by young son Thomas. There were questions surrounding the death. A suicide note was found a week later stuffed in a coat pocket, written on a love note between the adulterous lovers. The police and coroner ruled his death a suicide. Various members of the family still consider whether he committed suicide or if he was murdered. After the first edition of this book was published, my uncle came forward with information he had witnessed the event and it was not suicide. Grandpa came home from work, removed his police revolver, set it in the kitchen, and used the restroom. While in there, an argument ensued between he and my grandma. She picked up the revolver and headed down the hall to the bathroom. He left the restroom and met her in the hall. He attempted to disarm her placing his hand on the weapon and the gun went off, shooting him in the chest.

The real cost was to his children. My mom has always been haunted mightily by his death. My grandma remarried shortly after the death to a man who was abusive to the Hull children that exacerbated their pain and hindered emotional healing. My grandma forbade her children from talking about their dad. They all bore scars from this. After the second marriage failed, she remarried a third time to the man I always knew as my grandpa. His name was George Parks. Herb Jr., and Thomas took the name Parks. The Hull family was torn asunder. The kids were kept from their grandparents, aunts and uncles at a time when they all needed each other the most. Deep rifts formed in the family. Through all of this, the thread of who Herbert Stanton Hull was as a man became lost to the family. I never knew him. All I had been told and knew for sure was that he was a Ranger in World War II, had been a police officer and was told he had killed himself. It was for this reason that that this Lost Ranger had to be found.

Now, finally after 60 years, the truth is known and healing can begin.



## 21 MY JOURNEY TO FIND A LOST RANGER

I have always been fascinated with American history and World War II history in particular. The fact that several relatives of mine including my Grandpa Hull fought in the war drives home valuable lessons from this part of American and world history. The answers as to why America did what she did to help defend the world for freedom is important not just to our society, but to the lives of millions worldwide. The American Ranger was a deadly weapon in the “arsenal of democracy” as President Roosevelt described our military might of the day.<sup>1</sup> The fact that my Grandpa Hull served as a Ranger has always instilled me with a sense of great pride. I proudly served in the Army in part because of his example. In my mind, it is the duty of every American to serve the nation.

I can't help the past in terms of family history that transpired in the years following the war. I am little issue to that part of the story, and it is my hope that this work can renew family bonds that should have never been broken as a result of his death through people talking and getting to know each other again, or for the first time. As stated in chapter 1, upon the passing of my grandma in Florida, I was blessed to inherit his uniform from my Aunt Linda along with a copy of his discharge paper WD AGO Form 53-55. Upon receiving this treasure, my immediate family embarked with me on a journey that has taken the better part of two years to undertake in order to explore Grandpa Hull's military history. Pictured below is one of his great-grandchildren, Christian Mehlo. The first photo was taken the day that the uniform arrived on January 30, 2012. In his own words, Christian said that he was “happy and proud that he got to see, touch and put on his uniform.” This is the same little boy who put an American flag on his grave in 2004 in Figure 345. Herbert Stanton Hull is buried in his hometown of East Palestine, Ohio.



Figure 344: Great-Grandson Christian Mehlo on January 30, 2012.



Figure 345: Grave of Herbert Hull being honored by Great-Grandson Christian Mehlo in September 2004.



I always saw my grandpa as one of my childhood heroes. His son, my Uncle Herb, was another. He was known as Herb Parks. He worked as the Crew Chief for NHRA Drag Racing legend Mr. Don “Big Daddy” Garlits. Together, the two men won, and won, and won. Pictures of him are shown in Figures 346-347. They worked together to create and race some amazing machines. I remember as a boy when my uncle would come into town between races and I would actually get to touch the dragsters. How exciting was that for a boy under twelve? One of their last cars, Swamp Rat 30, broke all manner of records and found its way to the Smithsonian in Washington D.C. Herb’s name adorns the vehicle as the Crew Chief. This is but one of the legacies of Herb Hull that is a good one. His children went into banking, nursing, professional drag racing and HVAC appliance sales, repair and maintenance. His grandchildren and great-grandchildren span the country and most of us who are old enough have good professional careers.

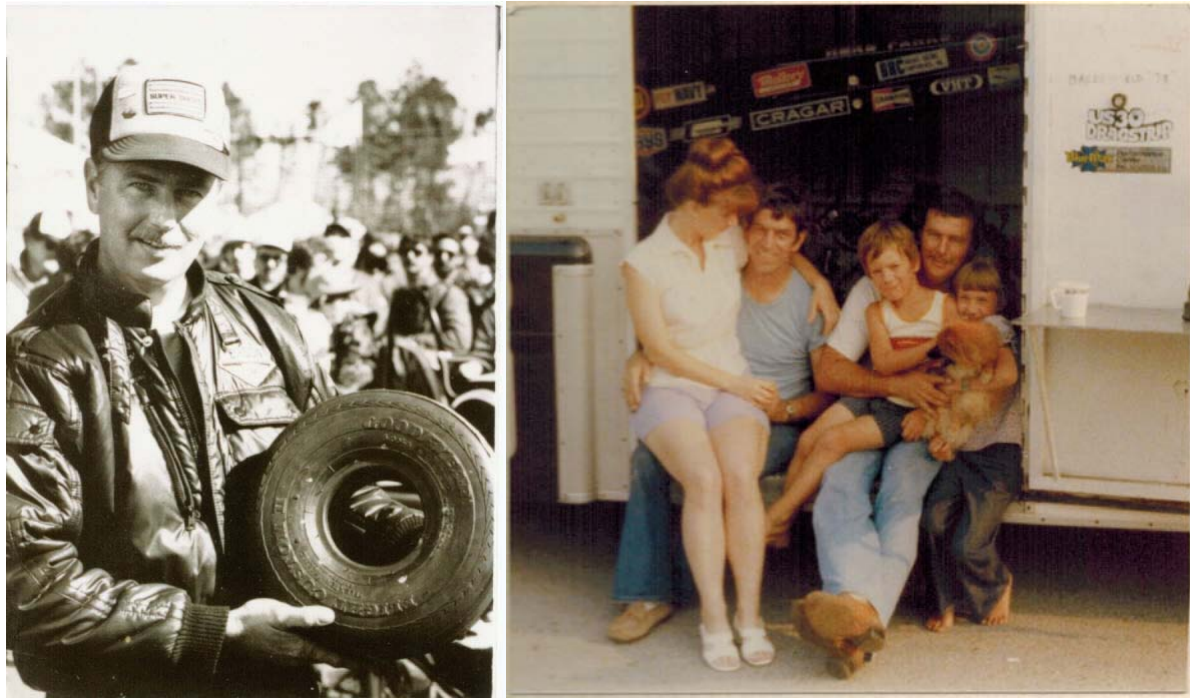


Figure 346: The picture above is Herb Parks holding revolutionary wheel used on the record setting “Swamp Rat 30” dragster (left) and Herb with his sister and Mehlo family in Youngstown, Ohio during the late 1970s. My mom and dad are to his right, I am on his lap, and my sister is to his left.



Figure 347: Herbert Hull, Jr “Herb Parks” standing with his boss, racing legend Don Garlits (photo courtesy of Don Garlits)



Herb Parks died on December 4, 1988 in a freak accident after being struck in the head by a dragster at the NHRA 1988 Snowbird Nationals at Desoto Dragway in Bradenton, Florida. He was 38 at the time of his death. Don Garlits had taken a hiatus, and Herb was helping another racer, Rocky Epperly that year. For anyone who knows top fuel drag racing, the cars warm up at the line and peel out briefly before the main race to ready the car for the run. After the "burnout" as it is called, Herb bent over to pick some debris off the track, and the racer accidentally put the car into full reverse, the wing of the car cutting away a portion of my uncle's head and then running him over on television. This event was also devastating to our family as Uncle Herb looked and acted quite a bit like his father. He also had many of the fine qualities of his adoptive father, George Parks as he was a true dad to him over the years. Both Herb Hull and Herbert Hull, Jr. were taken from the family in their thirties. This aside might seem disjunctive, but think about how it affected our family emotionally.

The story of how S/Sgt Herbert Stanton Hull became lost to history is a complicated one. Finding him in history has been a long road. It has taken me to four States, and communication with soldiers and family members from around the nation. I had to research and communicate with parties both public and private from across America and from as far away as England and France. I attribute his loss to history to a few key factors:

1. When he was wounded in France, he was dropped from assignment to the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion.
2. When he was in the medical treatment system of the U.S. Army, there was a disconnect between him and his unit in terms of proper documentation of his personnel records.
3. As the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion fought on across France and Germany, the ferocity of fighting continued. This ferocity ended in much of the original members of the unit being replaced by War's end in 1945.
4. When he was discharged from service in April, 1945, a few key elements were documented incorrectly in his discharge papers and were not transmitted to the correct offices per U.S. Army protocols.
5. His untimely death in 1954 created internal family issues that resulted in key documentation being discarded or misplaced.
6. The 1973 fire at the National Archives in St. Louis, MO resulted in the destruction of his personnel records file.

I will attempt to explain each of the points made above further. This process can help to serve as a model for other families in search of information regarding their service or that of loved ones.

When S/Sgt Hull was wounded on September 2, 1944, the fighting was very fierce. So fierce in fact that nearly all members of the battalion were pressed into active combat to hold off a determined German counterattack as described in Chapter 19. General Raaen reported that due to the ferocity of the fighting, the unit record-keeping was delayed for several days. When the fighting subsided on the following day and more normal unit operations ensued, he was shown to have been processed through the Battalion Aid Station up through the Division Level Medical Evacuation Center for the 29th Infantry Division, which for the Battle of Brest, was recorded as the 108th Evacuation Hospital. Another potential key factor was that his Company Commander, George Whittington, had walked into a bar on August 22, 1944 under direct violation of orders from General Patton, and killed a man resulting in his being relieved from command just prior to the assault on Brest and being charged with murder. This loss in continuity of leadership can't have helped when Grandpa Hull was wounded from a records perspective.

It is clear in looking at the Company Morning Reports that he was dropped from assignment as of September 4, 1944 due to being Severely Wounded in Action (SWA). The changing in status from Lightly Wounded in Action (LWA) to SWA would be due to the worsening condition of his left knee which had multiple mine fragments. His being dropped from assignment was a common practice in the Rangers due to their units being small and light and not being equipped to extensively deal with wounded and recovering soldiers long term.

From the 108th Evacuation Hospital, he was shipped by plane from France to England to the 94th General Hospital for extensive treatment. He was assigned to the 94th from 7 SEP 44 through 14 DEC 44. His award of the Purple Heart came through this unit. It is executed by HQ, 94th General Hospital, APO 508, General Order #15, on September 20, 1944. A copy of this is in the Appendix C. This order is available at NARA, St Louis on microfiche. It must be requested in person. His Purple Heart was issued at the receiving General Hospital and not from his parent unit due to the seriousness of his injuries. This said, many other soldiers had had Purple Hearts issued by their

home unit. This was not unusual, but it is a point where his unit would have additionally lost evidence of his service to a small degree, as he was transferred out of the unit by that point in time, so the 5th Ranger Battalion likely would not have been copied on the order.

Upon shipment home, he processed through various hospitals, until in March and April of 1945; the doctors at Percy Jones decided it best to discharge him medically due to his leg, as described in Chapter 8. TM 12-235 Enlisted Personnel Discharge and Release from Active Duty, dated January 1945, Page 34 indicates that a soldier would be designated as unassigned when it becomes clear that the wound suffered will result in a disability discharge. From this point on in the official records, his unit designation reads that of 5th Ranger (RN) Battalion (BN) unassigned or Simply Ranger Battalion or RN BN. The same manual mentioned above also clearly indicates what is to be included in a soldier's discharge paperwork. In S/Sgt Hull's case, the hospital clearly omitted his WD AGO 20 Form from his official record to be transmitted to the VA. This omission was documented in his VA records. Page seven of TM 12-235 indicated that for a disabled soldier, the WD AGO Form 20 was to be copied to the soldier, the VA and his permanent military records. This form was a critical component of his overall military records. If he was not in possession of a copy of it and the VA was never transmitted the record, then when it was destroyed accidentally at the National Personnel Records Center, this record was permanently lost. It contained his units of assignment, and his training records to include weapons qualifications.

Another important key to how he got lost to history is the matter of his Bronze Star Medal. There is no doubt that he qualified to receive it. The official orders for it were not found, but the Army has issued replacement orders and he is entitled to it. He received the award and it appears on his uniform as presented to me (Figure 348). Randall Ching did not remember him getting the award prior to his injury. The Army must have awarded it to him prior to his departing England, as newspaper accounts reveal on multiple occasions that he had been cited with the Bronze Star and Purple Heart. These articles are from the East Palestine, Ohio newspaper (Figure 349).

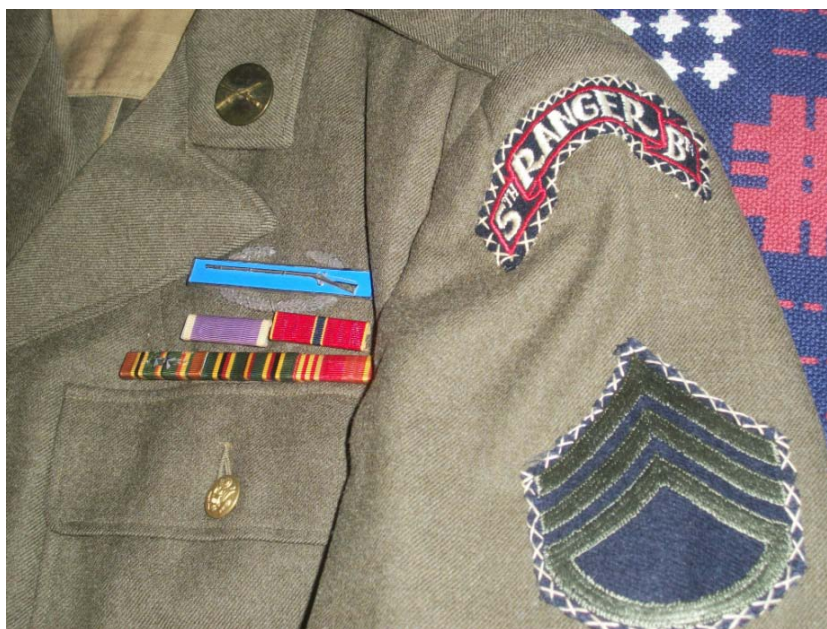


Figure 348: S/Sgt Hull's uniform showing the medals he had at the time of his death including the Bronze Star Medal

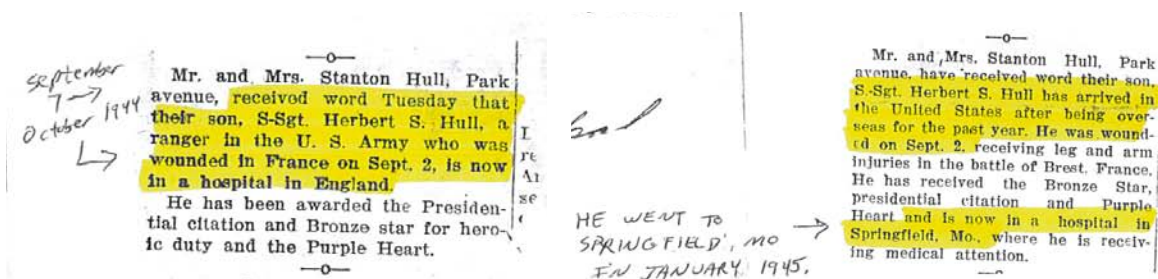


Figure 349: East Palestine Morning Journal Newspaper accounts of Herbert Hull in fall of 1944

As the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion fought on across France and Germany, the ferocity of fighting continued. This ferocity ended in many of the original members of the unit being replaced by War's end in 1945. Randall Ching verified that only three members of the original Platoon made it to war's end. The continual turnover of troops and officers, undoubtedly resulted in his not being included in the official unit history, "*Lead The Way, Rangers*" by Henry S. Glassman (himself a member of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion) written in 1945. This could be due to loss of certain internal unit records such as unit roster information and general orders as the unit moved across Europe. It is unknown what level of access and to what specific records Mr. Glassman had available to him as he authored the above work. It is no reflection on him that S/Sgt Hull was not added to this work. His omission did however go entirely unnoticed since 1945. Mr. Glassman is deceased, and his widow whom I contacted through a family friend, has no desire to reprint the work with corrections. It would be up to the military or NARA to make corrections to their official records, of which the Glassman book is considered. The Army responded to me that they have no intention of editing the Glassman work.

When he was discharged from service in April, 1945, a few key elements were documented incorrectly in his discharge papers and were not transmitted to the correct offices per U.S. Army protocols. This includes the failure of the personnel at the Percy Jones Hospital including his WD AGO Form 20 as part of his records transfer to the VA. These errors are also reflected in various blocks of his discharge paper WD AGO Form 53-55, and will be described at the end of this chapter where I include language from a letter I sent to the Army requesting a correction of his records. His untimely death in 1954 likely ended in internal family issues that resulted in key documentation being discarded or misplaced. The pain inflicted to the family that resulted from his death created fractures in the family that have persisted for generations. It also resulted in the beginning of a long period of spotty oral history that often times transmitted incorrect information amongst various members of the family that have likewise persisted for decades. Nothing more needs to be said of this.

On July 12, 1973, a disastrous fire at the National Personnel Records Center (NPRC) destroyed approximately 16-18 million Official Military Personnel Files (OMPF). No duplicate copies of these records were ever maintained, nor were microfilm copies produced. Neither were any indexes created prior to the fire. The damage resulted in an estimated loss of 80% of all U.S. Army records for soldiers discharged between November 1, 1912 and January 1, 1960. (NARA, St. Louis) As a result of this fire, S/Sgt Hull's military records were destroyed. The U.S. government has prepared a replacement file based on their work in recreating his file from other sources as they have slowly been doing for as many veterans as is possible over the years. Information regarding the fire may be found on NARA's website<sup>2</sup> and at Wikipedia<sup>3</sup>. Fortunately for our family, due to the fact that S/Sgt Hull was discharged under a disability rating of 30 percent by the military, and his care was turned over to the VA, the VA was copied on many of his pertinent records, and these records were and are stored separately from his personnel records which were lost.

Where I began with all of this was with a very limited understanding of my Grandpa Hull's service to our nation. All of my life, I had known that he was a Ranger. I had been told that "he scaled the cliffs at Normandy." Often, family references to him included his assaulting Pointe du Hoc. I knew that he got wounded in France and that he was injured either by a landmine or hand grenade. In more recent years, I had come by a hand-written note prepared by my mom with the following details in the beginning of the book:

- Toulbroc'h
- Normandy cliff 6-6-44; 1 hour before D-Day
- Back of German lines, retreated at Paris
- Sherborough; Sherborough Peninsula, end August; 9-2-1944 hit
- 60 men division (3 left)
- Staff Sergeant
- Tripped wire; put arm up and down, went off but he was hit
- Laid in the field for 3 days before medics got to him
- Plane to England
- Knee gangrene; got better
- Fort Dix New Jersey; Battle Creek Michigan
- Came home Dec 1944



Again, as stated in Chapter 1, the family oral history heard over the years, indicated he was either in the 5th or 2nd Ranger Battalion. I had heard mention of either B Company or D Company as his assigned unit. Upon receiving his uniform, I had more questions even as other questions were answered. The uniform and discharge solidified his inclusion as a 5th Ranger Battalion member, in my mind at least. I then set out to investigate more about his service based on some things on his discharge paper that did not seem to add up with the oral history. I was told by both my mom and Aunt Linda that at some points in the past, that Grandma Parks had been told by various individuals that he couldn't have been a member of the Rangers because he wasn't on the roster. As I started to research the 5th Ranger Battalion, I soon realized that he had been lost to history. I wanted to fix that. I wanted to know him. I wanted to try to heal old wounds for my small part.

Beginning on January 15, 2012, I began to really look into the Rangers during World War II. I started by using the internet to find possible leads. I came across the following site: <<http://www.vviiirangers.org/>>. Through this website, I contacted a man by the name of Mr. Jerry Styles, President of an organization called Descendents of WWII Rangers. He was my first link in finding out more. His dad, Mr. Clarence Styles was with D Company during the war. Like our family, Mr. Styles lost his dad after the war. In their family's case, it was due to a car accident in 1948. He became sympathetic to our family and continued to help me for many months, and I can't thank him enough for his contributions. He helped me make connections to Major General John C. Raaen, Jr. (retired of the 5th Ranger Battalion), Colonel Robert W. Black (retired from the 8th Ranger Infantry Company), and Mr. Richard "Doc" Felix, (retired medic from the 5th Ranger Battalion).

In the early part of the research the men previously mentioned listened to my account of the family history and then concluded that Grandpa Hull must have been a replacement Ranger added to the unit after D-Day. They even got frustrated early on with my insistence that Grandpa Hull was in fact a 5th Battalion Ranger. He was not listed in any publication previously produced on the unit in terms of being included in unit roster information. Most notably absent, was Grandpa Hull's inclusion in the official U.S. Army unit history, or in print elsewhere.

This absence as a listed member of the unit, only served to make me dig in and go deeper until I got to the bottom of this. As I continued the search in January, I came across the website: <<http://www.rangerroster.org/SearchPage.asp>>. This website listed Grandpa Hull as being a Private in the 5th Ranger Battalion, but did not provide his correct rank or his Company Assignment.

In two years of research, the email exchanges number well over 2000 between the parties I have come to rely on as my "core research group". This doesn't include the phone calls and visits. I have purchased, obtained or otherwise looked through hundreds of books, and visited the archival records of the following institutions to pour through thousands of pages of source material:

- NARA, St. Louis, Missouri (one visit)
- NARA, College Park, Maryland (three visits)
- USHEC, Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania (one visit)
- Ohio University, Cornelius Ryan Collection (One visit)

I later met James Robert Copeland and came to know Randall Ching from B Company. Lastly, I corresponded with the son of Captain George Whittington, with Mark Weast, the son of Carl Weast, and with Elmo Banning, nephew of Elmo Banning, whose family members were all in B Company. These men all greatly assisted me in this research, and I have struck up friendships with each of them. I am honored by their friendship. Early in my search, Colonel Robert Black sent me this encouraging note. It spurred me on. I respect him greatly in his knowledge of the Rangers and World War II history.

From: Robert Black  
Subject: Herbert S Hull 5th Ranger BN WW2  
To: Noel Mehlo  
Date: February 17, 2012

Dear Noel and Denise

Records not found but I assure you the service of Ranger Hull is not forgotten. Thanks for your kind words about "Rangers in World War II." it was of course an overview of six Ranger Battalions spanning from North Africa, to Sicily to Italy, Normandy to the heart of Germany and into the Pacific. There were many things not included in that work.

You have the records that prove he was in the 5th Ranger Battalion. My records are with the U.S. Army Military History Institute at Carlisle, PA. I am in Florida. However there are very devoted people who may be able to help and they are copied on this message: Julie Fulmer at JRF224 above is 2nd Ranger Bn Daughter and a keeper of the Battalion Rosters. Jerry Styles at Mailstyles is President of the sons and daughters group and the son of a 5th Bn Ranger. General John Raaen was the Headquarters Commandant of the 5th Ranger Bn at the time of the Normandy Invasion. He is in the process of publishing a book on the 5th Battalion. I sincerely hope these good people will be able to assist you,

Bob Black

I would receive similar encouragement from General Raaen and my research group. When I finally began working with Randall Ching and his daughter, he told me in an interview "Well, you're a Grandson who never met his grandfather. Right? And what I hear from the grandson, the family's problems and troubles seems to lay all the blame on the grandfather. Well I know your grandfather, and he's not that type of person. He's very caring, honorable, and patriotic. From what you told me, after he got back, got discharged from the hospital he went to be a peace officer. So that is how much he care about people under him. That's why I agreed to help you know your grandfather, what kind of person he is or was." His daughter Bonnie told me, "and you need to know this Noel. Many people have tried before in the past have tried to contact my Dad, or interview my Dad, and my Dad has always said no. But when the name Herbert Hull came up, and then I read about the circumstances about his death to my Father, and like I told you over the telephone, that is why he is agreeing to be interviewed, because he wanted you to know your grandfather through his eyes."



Figure 350: Leroy Anderson receiving haircut from Randall Ching in France in 1944.(courtesy of Randall Ching)

Randall went on to say, "For the short time I know him, I know he is a good person. He's a very caring person. And he's down to earth, both feet on the ground solidly. That's why I want to correct people who talk about him."

Bonnie said to her dad, "People's impression about him... That's the reason like I told you Noel. He wanted you to know your Grandfather, and that is what my Dad wanted you to know from him, not from anybody else, firsthand, that my Dad knew your Dad (Grandfather) and liked him very much."

Through this effort, Randall Ching pointed out that Herbert Hull was not the only Lost Ranger. Leroy Anderson from B Company was also a Lost Ranger. He was right as Anderson is not listed in Glassman (Figure 350). I wanted to point this fact out as it just highlights the importance of World War II research as our veterans are passing on.

Using Glassman and Black, I began to develop leads for each phase of his service known at the time. To this end I developed a file structure for each thread.

I wrote a notebook for our family that contained nine chapters broken into key areas. These included: Transition from Civilian to Soldier, 35th Infantry Division, 320th Infantry Regiment, 134th Infantry Regiment, 5th Ranger

Infantry Battalion, D-Day and Battle for Normandy, The Battle for Brest, Medical Treatment and Evacuation to the United Kingdom, and Becoming Lost to History, and Found Again.

In order to quantify data and mine the official record fully, I sought what information was available through records requests using:

- National Archives And Records Administration, Authorization For Release Of Military Medical Patient Records, NA Form 13036
- U.S. Department of Veterans Affairs, Individuals' Request For A Copy Of Their Own Health Information, VA FORM 10-5345a
- U.S. Department of Veterans Affairs, Request For And Authorization To Release Medical Records Or Health Information, VA FORM 10-5345
- Army Review Boards Agency, Application For Correction Of Military Record Under The Provisions Of Title 10, U.S. Code, Section 1552, DD FORM 149

This effort came to fruition as the United States Army, Human Resources Command, Awards and Decorations Branch and United States Army Review Boards Agency Army Board for Correction of Military Records evaluated our family's submission of documentation and corrected S/Sgt Hull's military records in 2013. They issued orders and medals where appropriate and helped close the loop on finding this Ranger who was no longer lost (Appendix D).

When I studied the French coastline of Normandy where some of the overall fighting on Omaha Beach took place, and where the 5th Ranger Battalion landed and assaulted the bluffs, my sensibilities were offended at first. I originally asked myself why this isn't a more protected location, such as Gettysburg, Antietam or other battlefields that I have visited. The more I thought about it though; the Americans who fought and died, were wounded, and survived it all did so to buy freedom for the French people. What better expression of freedom than to allow life to return and to thrive on these shores where many Americans paid the ultimate price? The French have not forgotten what was done for them here, and there are many monuments to D-Day and the Allied forces located there. As my search for this story deepened, I was moved by the story of Frenchman Mr. Franck Maurouard. This man and his family have adopted the graves of two Rangers, one from the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion and Elmo Banning from the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion. He didn't have to do this, but he decided to, and tends to the graves in France. He has met with the men's families and continues to honor their memory. I have been working with Franck, and consider him a friend. Freedom was the goal of the Allies, and freedom was achieved reflecting on the words of then General Eisenhower.

About a year into the course of my work, I came across the book *Finding Your Father's War, A Practical Guide to Researching and Understanding Service in the World War II US Army* by Jonathan Gawne. This book is an excellent source to help you understand what it takes to research a veteran. My book is the result of taking the steps discussed in his book. By the time I found his book, I had already taken many of the steps he established.

The next several pages detail the process undertaken to find "The Lost Ranger". This couldn't have happened without the written works of others. Much of the journey of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion is told in very small snippets and was not readily available. To find who my grandfather actually was had to be investigated and teased out of the collective memories of those few remaining individuals who knew him. I outlined the steps I took to complete the research for this book month by month to help explain the flow of thought processes and how one clue led to the next.

On January 15, 2012, I began research of the facts presented on S/Sgt Hull's discharge papers through internet research of the Rangers. This led me to the Descendants of World War II Rangers, Inc. Through them, I came into contact with Mr. Styles, Mr. Hudnell, Ms. Towne and Ms. Fulmer. We spent the first month trying to determine if anyone in the organization had records verifying his service as a Ranger, and in what battalion.

By early February, I sought out Mr. Dan Major of the World War 2 Medical Research Centre. He and his partner maintain a very extensive and growing database on the medical establishment during the War. <<http://www.med-dept.com/>> He and his partner Alain Batens became invaluable in the research concerning the medical treatment of S/Sgt Hull and made introductions to 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion veteran Richard "Doc" Felix.



In mid February, Mr. Styles introduced me to Ranger legends Major General John C. Raaen, Jr. (ret.) and renowned author Colonel Robert W. Black (ret.). These men treated me with patience and encouragement through the process. At times, our communications became almost daily while I tried to understand certain facts or sort fact from fiction.

The first of the topics researched in February included Fort de Toulbroc'h and the 320th Infantry Regiment based on hard evidence supplied to me by my aunt as described early in the book. The research into the fort was slow, and took nearly two years to fully develop. The research on the 320th Infantry Regiment led me to the Camp San Luis Obispo Museum in California, where I began to work with historian CW2 Sandra Peralta in mid March 2012. She assisted me over the course of the next year, even becoming a contributing editor to chapters 3 and 4.

Based on the dates listed (January 7 – 19, 1944) on the Discharge papers and the information presented in the books by Glassman and Black, I began to research the HMS Mauretania II. I made great leaps forward in understanding the voyage of the vessel through the website <<http://www.ww2troopships.com/>>. The information developed through this lead for example solidified his position as a member of his battalion, but also enabled the development of an entire chapter to expand the base of knowledge concerning the unit's activities during this time.

On March 28 and 29, 2012, I travelled to the United States Army History and Education Center in Carlisle Barracks, PA. I had been referred there by both Raaen and Black, as both men have archival holdings there. While looking through Colonel Black's files, I came across the first definitive proof of S/Sgt Hull as a member of the 5th Rangers. He was found in B Company Morning Reports of December 16, 1943 where he was promoted to Sergeant, while at Fort Dix, NJ. This document proved he was not a replacement Ranger as had been initially proposed. The unit had not received replacements at that point. There were two other specific examples that covered his being wounded on September 2, and lost to the unit on September 4, 1944. While at USAHEC, I copied several other documents such as War Department Orders referencing the battalion and book excerpts that referenced the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion.

On March 21, 2012 the National Personnel Record Center provided a copy of his reconstructed personnel file that included about one hundred pages of medical records. These records provided the identification of the treating units, the type of treatment and the time spent at each. This enabled detailed research of the medical aspect of his service to proceed. This data became important in the eventual records collection request of the Army.

On March 24, 2012, I visited NARA at College Park, MD. While there, I viewed and copied the records of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion and the 320th Infantry Regiment. These records did not contain any specific proof of S/Sgt Hull, but they did provide evidence of what he did while in the assigned units. The leads gained through evaluation of these records opened new avenues of research as to the movements of the units.

The 94th General Hospital became the subject of research in early April 2012. Batens and Major came through with new insights and I reciprocated with them by providing them information copied from NARA they have since rolled into their own research.

Mr. Robin Cookson, an Archivist at NARA at College Park became a major help in April by pointing me in the right direction through my research at NARA, and provided great help finding records. On April 9, I made acquaintance with Mr. Brandon Wiegand, a professional researcher of <[www.d-daymilitaria.com](http://www.d-daymilitaria.com)>, who helped me look for specific hard-to-find Orders over a two year period.

In mid April, I found the VA Records Management Center in St. Louis, MO. The staff there helped me greatly in finding and obtaining the VA records of S/Sgt Hull that had been archived away at the Dayton Federal Records Center. I received these records in June 2012.

In April 2012, I continued research on the 320th Infantry Regiment and came across the website [www.coulthart.com/](http://www.coulthart.com/) and its owner Ms. Roberta Russo. She became a trusted source of information on history of the unit, to include biographical pages of members. She eventually created a page in honor of my grandfather on her unit history website: <<http://www.coulthart.com/134/hull-h.htm>>.

Mr. Franck Maurouard, French historian and I made acquaintance on April 15, 2012. Our relationship continues to this day, and I have been impressed with his patriotism for France and care for fallen Rangers. He aided greatly in all things France, including period and current photographs and copies of unit records. He also helps me when I have a language barrier as he is bilingual.

In September 2012, I made contact with British historians Peter Wright and Michael Boyce and began collaboration concerning the 74th General Hospital.

I went to the Ohio Department of Health, Department of Vital Statistics in Columbus, Ohio for a copy of his death certificate in October 2012.

On November 19, 2012, I made contact with Dr. Alice Kaplan, author of *The Interpreter*. She wrote extensively on Captain George Whittington. She sent me various items of importance from her own research that covered summer 1944.

In March 2013, I read the book *Bloody Omaha, My Remembrances of That Day*, by James Robert Copeland. I reached out to the biographer, Gary M. Graves. He eventually put me in contact with Copeland. We met in the fall of 2013, and it turned out he was a friend of my grandfather. He shared many personal details I could have learned nowhere else.

On May 3, 2013 I travelled to the Ohio University (OU) in Athens, OH and visited the Cornelius Ryan Collection and curator Doug McCabe. Ryan was the author of *The Longest Day*. His holdings at the university are meticulous. Mr. McCabe helped me to research the files concerning the Rangers and 29th Infantry Division. These records became my inspiration for how I would handle the chapters on D-Day. He has worked with me since our visit, and I have committed to donate a copy of my research to OU. I spent the summer months researching every possible aspect of the D-Day invasion in relationship to the Rangers.

General Raen put me in contact with Ranger re-enactor George Despotis and his group in May 2013. The initial concept for my cover was brought to fruition through Mr. Despotis. He worked with SSG Adkins on the cover photo.

I paid another visit to the archives on June 14, 2013. I looked at the unit records for the 99th Infantry BN (sep) and 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion to investigate any cross-references with the actions concerning the 5th Rangers. I also captured photos of Camp Forrest, Mayenne France and the British Assault Training Center.

In August 2013, I collaborated with noted railroad historians Roger Thorne and Dan Cupper regarding the World War II Troop Train movements in the States.

In late August, I made contact with British historian Mr. Richard T. Bass and began collaborating with him regarding the USATC and Ranger training in Braunton, England. He was very helpful and interested in the work. Much of the data presented in Chapter 12 is attributable to him.

I investigated Swanage, England with the help of British historian Mike Ford. He helped me understand the town and surrounding cliffs. Together, we pieced together the training in detail.

Also in September, I began corresponding with British historian Richard Drew. He was kind enough to travel to Omaha Beach and gather source material and photos for me. He was also an invaluable resource in pinpointing the Marshalling Areas in England.

September also saw collaboration with British Geology Professors Dr. Ian West and Dr. Alan Holiday. We collaborated on the cliffs along the southern coast of England. They graciously allowed me access to their work in describing the places and geology involved in the training for D-Day. This collaboration led to an expanded understanding of just what was accomplished by the training along the cliffs. It is one thing to read something like, "Then the Rangers went to Swanage for cliff training." It is another thing to understand the places. This collaboration assisted the recollections of the remaining veterans as we spoke about this phase of training.

In November, 2013, I had the pleasure of making acquaintance with Mr. Mark Weast, son of Carl Weast. We worked closely together to share information. I then made acquaintance with Mr. Elmo Banning the nephew of fallen Ranger Elmo Banning. The collaboration among the three of us has opened new doors of understanding and built friendships that should endure into the future. Finally in November, I made acquaintance with Randall Ching and his daughter Bonnie Louie. We correspond and talk frequently, and the information provided by Randall has personalized this effort in ways that I never expected when I began.

There were many other individuals and organizations that have contributed in big and small ways to this project.

The research aspect of this book may seem detailed and overwhelming. The research is the vehicle that enabled S/Sgt Hull to be found. The Army has corrected his records and taken interest in this veteran due to these exhaustive efforts. The little clues that I had at the beginning from the single note from my mom and the discharge paper led to the development of this story. With each new lead came new avenues of investigation. Not all of the leads were fruitful. Other clues gave way to even more expanded paths of searching. Seemingly innocuous things such as letterhead on correspondence or identifying marks inside articles of clothing provided vital links to his early military experiences. It was important to plan trips to the National Archives carefully and with definite purpose. There are only so many hours allowed for research daily and so many records to sift through. The other trips to USAHEC and to Ohio University also had to be planned and timed properly so I was able to ask the correct questions and look at the right documentation.

In conclusion, this effort has led me to know my grandpa without having ever met him. I made acquaintance with family I never knew. I made friends and contacts around the world that I hope to maintain relationships with through the rest of my life. I worked with the United States Army and the NPRC to correct his official records. When I received and held his newly cut orders for the Bronze Star Medal and Purple Heart and held the medals in my hand, I wept for joy. He was accepted and welcomed back into the fold of his Ranger brothers. This helped me gain an understanding of the Rangers and the U.S. Infantryman in World War II. The story of these men and their families is one of great sacrifice and loss. Some families such as those of Elmo Banning paid the ultimate price during the war. Others families such as Lt. Colonel Max Schneider, S/Sgt Clarence Styles or S/Sgt Herbert Hull paid the price in heavy ways after the war, in some cases decades after. Some families continue to pay the price. It is my hope that this work will enable you as the reader to gain an understanding of what these men went through. The importance of what they did for the freedom of the world is immeasurable. I hope that by reading this work, you gained a good understanding of what S/Sgt Hull did, and why it is important for our family to pass on. For any family with a veteran whose contributions to the national experience seem to be incomplete or lost, the journey to find them is one that is rewarding. When I started all of this, I had no intention of writing a book. The ability to tell this story to those who might care is a personal bonus. Our family has been able to uncover a lost page to our history. As was stated as a goal in the early part of the book, we brought him home to a family who never really knew him.

Most of all, I give honor and glory to God for these men and the sacrifices they made for us. Thank you for taking the time to read this work.

Rangers Lead the Way!







In loving memory:

S/Sgt Herbert Stanton Hull

5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company, 2<sup>nd</sup> Platoon, 2<sup>nd</sup> Section

## ABOUT THE AUTHOR



Noel F. Mehlo, Jr. is the grandson of the late S/Sgt Herbert Stanton Hull. Prior to 2012, all that was known of his grandfather's service came from a hand-written note that contained a mere fifty words. After his grandmother's passing in late 2011, Mr. Mehlo inherited his grandfather's Ranger uniform and a single discharge paper. The information sparked a curiosity regarding the life and service of S/Sgt Hull including his unit.

Prior to becoming an environmental scientist, Mr. Mehlo served in the U.S. Army as a Counterintelligence Agent. He had followed his grandfather's example to serve. Mr. Mehlo combined his tenacity along with his skills as a researcher and intelligence professional to explore the details regarding the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion and his grandfather's service. Using these skills, he sought out veterans and their families and earned their trust and support for the project.

Most of his professional written work includes reports and technical guidance. He teaches how to conduct historic research as well as a myriad of other topics for the Federal Highway Administration in the transportation industry in which he now works.

The photo above is of the author (left) and Ranger J.R. Copeland (right) taken at JR's home in Michigan on September 28, 2013.

Ranger Copeland passed away on October 21, 2015.

APPENDIX A: S/SGT HULL DISCHARGE

ENLISTED RECORD AND REPORT OF SEPARATION  
HONORABLE DISCHARGE

*Mc Wheeler Co*

1. LAST NAME - FIRST NAME - MIDDLE INITIAL Hull Herbert S		2. ARMY SERIAL NO. 35 597 467	3. GRADE S/Sgt	4. ARM OR SERVICE Ranger Bn	5. COMPONENT AUS
6. ORGANIZATION 5th Ranger Bn		7. DATE OF SEPARATION 19 April 1945	8. PLACE OF SEPARATION 3610 SCU Percy Jones Hosp Center Fort Custer Michigan		
9. PERMANENT ADDRESS FOR MAILING PURPOSES R #1 East Palestine Ohio		10. DATE OF BIRTH 14 Jan 1924	11. PLACE OF BIRTH East Palestine Ohio		
12. ADDRESS FROM WHICH EMPLOYMENT WILL BE SOUGHT Same as item #9		13. COLOR EYES Blue	14. COLOR HAIR Blonde	15. HEIGHT 5' 11"	17. NO. DEPEND. 178 LBS. None
18. RACE WHITE <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> NEGRO <input type="checkbox"/> OTHER (specify) <input type="checkbox"/>	19. MARITAL STATUS SINGLE <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> MARRIED <input type="checkbox"/> OTHER (specify) <input type="checkbox"/>	20. U.S. CITIZEN YES <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> NO <input type="checkbox"/>	21. CIVILIAN OCCUPATION AND NO. Automobile, Body Repairman, Metal		

MILITARY HISTORY

22. DATE OF INDUCTION 7 Jan 1943	23. DATE OF ENLISTMENT -----	24. DATE OF ENTRY INTO ACTIVE SERVICE 14 Jan 1943	25. PLACE OF ENTRY INTO SERVICE Fort Hayes Ohio
SELECTIVE SERVICE DATA YES <input type="checkbox"/> NO <input checked="" type="checkbox"/>	26. REGISTERED #3	28. COUNTY AND STATE Columbianna Ohio	29. HOME ADDRESS AT TIME OF ENTRY INTO SERVICE Same as item #9
30. MILITARY OCCUPATIONAL SPECIALTY AND NO. Squad Leader 716		31. MILITARY QUALIFICATION AND DATE (i.e., Infantry, aviation and marksmanship badges, etc.) Combat Infantryman	

32. BATTLES AND CAMPAIGNS  
Battle of France

33. DECORATIONS AND CITATIONS  
Good Conduct Ribbon  
Bronze Star for Campaign European-African-Middle Eastern Theatre Ribbon  
Unit Citation GO 26 1st Army 17 June 44 Purple Heart, Combat Infantrymans Badge

34. WOUNDS RECEIVED IN ACTION  
France 2 Sept 1944

35. LATEST IMMUNIZATION DATES

SMALLPOX	TYPHOID	TETANUS	OTHER (specify)
22 Feb 44	5 Feb 43	24 Feb 44	Typhus

36. SERVICE OUTSIDE CONTINENTAL U.S. AND RETURN

DATE OF DEPARTURE	DESTINATION	DATE OF ARRIVAL
7 Jan 44	England	19 Jan 44
Unknown	France	6 Jun 44
19 Dec 44	USA	27 Dec 44

37. TOTAL LENGTH OF SERVICE

CONTINENTAL SERVICE			FOREIGN SERVICE		
YEARS	MONTHS	DAYS	YEARS	MONTHS	DAYS
1	3	22	0	11	21

38. HIGHEST GRADE HELD  
S/Sgt

39. PRIOR SERVICE  
None

40. REASON AND AUTHORITY FOR SEPARATION  
Certificate of Eligibility of ~~100-9-1~~ <sup>66</sup> HAS BEEN ISSUED BY THE VETERANS ADMINISTRATION TO BE USED FOR THE FUTURE REQUEST OF ANY QUANTITY OF BENEFITS UNDER THE VETERANS' READJUSTMENT ACT OF 1924 AS AMENDED, THAT MAY BE AVAILABLE TO THE PERSON TO WHOM THIS SEPARATION PAPER WAS ISSUED.

41. SERVICE SCHOOLS ATTENDED  
None


42. EDUCATION (Years)  
Grammar 8 High School 4 College 0

43. LONGEVITY FOR PAY PURPOSES

YEARS	MONTHS	DAYS	TOTAL	THIS PAYMENT	45. SOLDIER DEPOSITS	46. TRAVEL PAY	47. TOTAL AMOUNT, NAME OF DISBURSING OFFICER
2	3	13	\$ 300	\$ 100	None	\$ 1835 1934	ROBERT BAUER 1st Lt FtD Finance Officer

IMPORTANT IF PREMIUM IS NOT PAID WHEN DUE OR WITHIN THIRTY-ONE DAYS THEREAFTER, INSURANCE WILL LAPSE. MAKE CHECKS OR MONEY ORDERS PAYABLE TO THE TREASURER OF THE U. S. AND FORWARD TO COLLECTIONS SUBDIVISION, VETERANS ADMINISTRATION, WASHINGTON 25, D. C.

48. KIND OF INSURANCE Nat. Serv. <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> U.S. Govt. <input type="checkbox"/> None <input type="checkbox"/>	49. HOW PAID Allotment <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Direct to V.A. <input type="checkbox"/>	50. Effective Date of Allotment Discontinuance 31 Mar 1945	51. Date of Next Premium Due (One month after 50) 30 April 45	52. PREMIUM DUE EACH MONTH \$ 6.50	53. INTENTION OF VETERAN TO Continue <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Continue Only <input type="checkbox"/> Discontinue <input type="checkbox"/>
---	---	---	--	---------------------------------------	---

54.  RIGHT THUMB PRINT

55. REMARKS (This space for completion of above items or entry of other items specified in W. D. Directives)  
No time lost under AW 107 Sol entitled to travel pay  
Lapel button issued

56. SIGNATURE OF PERSON BEING SEPARATED  
*Herbert S. Hull*

57. PERSONNEL OFFICER (Type name, grade and organization - signature)  
*Ellen M. Hugh*  
HELEN L. MC HUGH  
1st Lt WAC (AUS)  
Asst Pers. Officer

WD AGO FORM 53-55  
1 November 1944

This form supersedes all previous editions of WD AGO Forms 53 and 55 for enlisted persons entitled to an Honorable Discharge, which will not be used after receipt of this revision.

OHIO WORLD WAR II CLAIM  
COMPENSATION APPLIED FOR No. 4768655 O.S.  
472 I.S.



THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

APPENDIX B: HEAVY INFANTRY COMPANY TABLE OF ORGANIZATION

TABLE OF ORGANIZATION  
AND EQUIPMENT  
No. 7-18

WAR DEPARTMENT  
WASHINGTON 25, D.C., 26 February 1944

INFANTRY HEAVY WEAPONS COMPANY

Designation: Company, #.... #.... Infantry

Unit	Technician grade	Company head quarters	2 cal. .30, machine gun platoons (each)					81-mm mortar platoon					Total company	Remarks
			2 sections (each)		2 squads (each)	Total section	Total platoon	3 sections (each)			Total platoon			
			Platoon head quarters	Section head quarters				Platoon head quarters	Section head quarters	2 squads (each)		Total section		
Captain, including Company commander		1 (1)											1 (1)	† Insert letter of company
First lieutenant, including Platoon commander		1 (1)											1 (1)	‡ Insert number of regiment
Reconnaissance		(1)												* Second in command
First lieutenant } Second lieutenant } including Platoon commander			1 (1)			1 (1)								† Also classification
Second lieutenant, including Section commander									1 (1)		1 (1)	3 (3)		‡ Armed with carbine, cal. .30
Total commissioned		2	1			1	1	1	1	1	4	8		§ Drives truck, ¼-ton
First sergeant		1 (1)				1 (1)							1 (1)	¶ Drives truck, ¼-ton
Technical sergeant, including Platoon			1 (1)			1 (1)		1 (1)				1 (1)	3 (3)	‡ Armed with pistol, automatic, cal. .45
Staff sergeant, including Mess		2 (1)		1 (1)		1 (1)	2 (2)	1 (1)		1 (1)	3 (3)	9 (9)	13 (13)	¶ Armed with rifle, cal. .30, M1
Section leader				1 (1)		1 (1)	2 (2)	1 (1)		1 (1)	2 (2)	3 (3)	5 (5)	
Squad leader									1 (1)	2 (2)	3 (3)	6 (6)	6 (6)	
Supply		1 (1)											1 (1)	
Sergeant, including Communication		3 (1)		1 (1)		2 (2)	4 (4)						11 (11)	
Reconnaissance		1 (1)											1 (1)	

Unit	Technician grade	Company head quarters	2 cal. .30, machine gun platoons (each)					81-mm mortar platoon					Total company	Remarks
			2 sections (each)		2 squads (each)	Total section	Total platoon	3 sections (each)			Total platoon			
			Platoon head quarters	Section head quarters				Platoon head quarters	Section head quarters	2 squads (each)		Total section		
Squad leader					1 (1)	2 (2)	4 (4)						4 (4)	
Transportation		1 (1)											1 (1)	
Corporal, including Clerk, company		1 (1)	2				2	2		1	2	8	13	
Gunner, mortar										1 (1)	2 (2)	6 (6)	6 (6)	
Instrument			1 (1)				1 (1)	1 (1)				1 (1)	2 (2)	
Transportation			1 (1)				1 (1)	1 (1)				1 (1)	2 (2)	
Technician, grade 4 } Technician, grade 5 }													3	
Private, first class } including Private }		25	2		6	12	26	2		6	12	38	79	
Ammunition bearer					(1)4	(8)	(16)			(1)1(1)4(4)5	(10)	(30)	(62)	
Armorer-artificer	5	1 (1)											1 (1)	
Bugler		1 (1)											1 (1)	
Cook	4	2 (2)											2 (2)	
Cook	5	1 (1)											1 (1)	
Cook's helper		2 (2)											2 (2)	
Gunner, machine gun					1 (1)	2 (2)	4 (4)						8 (8)	
Gunner, machine gun, assistant					p	2	4						8 (8)	
Gunner, mortar, assistant										1 (1)	2 (2)	6 (6)	6 (6)	
Mechanic, automotive	4	1 (1)								1 (1)	2 (2)	6 (6)	1 (1)	
Messenger		3 (2)	2 (1)				2	2 (1)				2	9 (9)	
Basic		14 (1)											14 (14)	
Total enlisted		32	5	1	7	15	35	5	1	8	17	56	158	
Aggregate		34	6	1	7	15	36	6	2	8	18	60	166	
Carbine, cal. .30		11	4		4	8	20	4	1	4	9	31	82	
Gun, machine, cal. .30, heavy flexible					1	2	4						8	

Unit	Technician grade	Company headquarters	2 cal. .30, machine gun platoons (each)					81-mm mortar platoon					Remarks
			Platoon headquarters	2 sections (each)			Total platoon	Platoon headquarters	3 sections (each)			Total platoon	
				Section headquarters	2 squads (each)	Total section			Section headquarters	2 squads (each)	Total section		
Gun, machine, HB, cal. .50, flexible		1										1	
Launcher, rocket, AT, 2.56-inch			2			2	2					2	6
Mortar, 81-mm									1	2		6	6
Pistol, automatic, cal. .45				2	4	8			3	6	18	34	
Rifle, cal. .30, M1		23	2	1	3	8	2	1	1	3	11	50	
Trailer, ¼-ton				1	2	4			1	2	6	14	
Truck, ¼-ton		2	1	1	2	5	1		1	2	7	19	
Truck, ¾-ton, weapons carrier		1										1	

APPENDIX C: 94<sup>TH</sup> GENERAL HOSPITAL GO#15, 20 SEP 1944

**R E S T R I C T E D**

Hq. 94th (US) General Hospital, APO 50

*Walker*  
*24*  
*Robert A. Hugh*  
*20 September 1944*

GENERAL ORDERS # 15

ORIGINAL ORDER - DTGUSA

1. By direction of the President, under the provisions of AR 600-45, 22 Sept 1943, as amended, a bronze Oak Leaf Cluster is hereby awarded (in lieu of an additional award of the Purple Heart) to the following named personnel, U.S. Army, for wounds received as a result of enemy action in Western Europe, European T of Opns, on the date indicated:

Sgt	Lee G. Bauman	38128297	Inf	12 September 1944
Pfc	Albert Bengston	37327076	Inf	3 September 1944
Cpl	Oral A. Brockman	36675695	Inf	12 September 1944
Sgt	Weldon Cable	34608624	Inf	8 September 1944
Pfc	Floyd R. Campbell	20824940	Inf	13 September 1944
Sgt	Jake W. Clinton	38471881	Inf	14 September 1944
S/Sgt	Roy J. Dodd	37338025	Inf	2 September 1944
Sgt	John D. Dorzi	31067086	Inf	2 September 1944
Pvt	Leroy K. Frey	33494190	Inf	30 July 1944
Pvt	Arthur L. Goff	33533011	Inf	14 September 1944
Pfc	Martin R. Gross	32269549	Inf	14 July 1944
Pvt	Eagar C. Hardin, Jr.	34882588	Inf	1 September 1944
Sgt	Tildon F. Jennings	35154207	Inf	1 September 1944
Sgt	Steven Melnikoff	31363722	Inf	14 September 1944
Pvt	Thomas A. Miller	42105368	Inf	10 September 1944
Pvt	Leon Mongeon	31200067	Inf	28 July 1944
Pfc	Claudio H. Moreno	18022868	Inf	14 September 1944
Sgt	Lawson Murkerson	34002508	Inf	14 September 1944
S/Sgt	Graham Pearce	33043068	Inf	2 September 1944
T/Sgt	Arthur A. Pippins	20731508	Inf	5 September 1944
Pvt	Emmett R. Porter	37545440	Inf	3 September 1944
Cpl	Wallace Quim	37491070	Inf	3 September 1944
S/Sgt	Abraham Remer	32528909	Inf	31 August 1944
S/Sgt	Matt Richardson	35471057	Inf	12 September 1944
Pfc	Roscoe G. Robinson	33526685	Inf	30 July 1944
Pvt	Dominick Russi	31327712	Inf	30 July 1944
Sgt	Ralph L. Ryff	37155894	Inf	4 July 1944
Pvt	Delbert L. Smith	37200684	Inf	12 September 1944
Pvt	Earl L. Taylor	35809373	Inf	11 September 1944
Pvt	Walter D. VanHorn	35762835	Inf	2 September 1944
S/Sgt	Walter R. Wesalowski	33051195	Inf	10 September 1944
Pfc	Robert T. Wilson	20340916	Inf	13 September 1944

2. By direction of the President, under the provisions of AR 600-45, 22 Sept 1943, as amended, the Purple Heart is hereby awarded to the following named personnel, U.S. Army, for wounds received as a result of enemy action in Western Europe, European T of Opns, on the date indicated:

Tec 4	William L. Acton	33153316	Armd F	3 September 1944
Pfc	Charles Adamowicz	32266778	Inf	7 August 1944
Pvt	Bernard Adams	33543294	Inf	3 September 1944

-1-

**R E S T R I C T E D**



R E S T R I C T E D

(Par 2, Gen Orders # 15, Hq, 94th (US) Gen Hosp, dtd 20 Sept 44, contd)

Pvt	Victor C. Gregg	36459617	FA	2 September 1944
Pfc	Vernon E. Grimm	38534628	Inf	10 September 1944
Pvt	Justin J. Groundwater	37722938	Inf	11 September 1944
Pvt	Jacob Gross	12101287	Inf	1 September 1944
Pvt	Michael J. Quadagno	42058132	Inf	26 August 1944
Pfc	Alton L. Guthrie	39412989	Inf	2 September 1944
Tec 4	Daniel W. Hagelin	35029877	Cav	5 September 1944
Pvt	Nicholas C. Hajiminas	32649220	Inf	1 September 1944
Pvt	Edgar C. Hardin	34882588	Inf	28 August 1944
Pvt	Alfred G. Hart	32948941	Inf	28 August 1944
Capt	William T. Hart	0293226	Inf	2 September 1944
Pfc	Francis J. Healy	32609927	Inf	3 September 1944
Pfc	Jacob C. Hedrich	35386871	Inf	2 September 1944
Pvt	John M. Heindorf	12214345	Inf	3 September 1944
Pvt	Leroy C. Henderson	6969864	Inf	3 September 1944
Lst Lt.	Thomas J. Henderson	01294306	Inf	3 September 1944
<del>Pvt</del>	<del>Melvin O. Herbie</del>	<del>37627351</del>	<del>Inf</del>	<del>3 September 1944</del>
Pvt	Elmer L. Hertel	37627351	Inf	3 September 1944
Pvt	Oscar W. Heussner	36890372	Inf	2 September 1944
Pvt	Carroll O. Higgins	39907800	Inf	12 September 1944
Pvt	Carroll O. Higgins	39907800	Inf	8 August 1944
T/Sgt	John H. Hill	12022726	Inf	13 September 1944
Pvt	Leroy Holton	32348697	Inf	13 September 1944
S/Sgt	Melvin G. Hooks	36314867	Cav	14 September 1944
Sgt	Edward M. Houck	34024713	Inf	8 September 1944
Pvt	Carl D. Howard	35933914	Inf	3 September 1944
Pvt	Harry M. Huff	13121108	Inf	11 September 1944
S/Sgt	Herbert S. Hull	35597467	Inf	2 September 1944
Pvt	Clifton D. Humphry	36775823	Inf	2 September 1944
Sgt	James W. Hussey	34023886	Inf	13 September 1944
Pfc	Theodore W. Huther	37606862	Inf	3 September 1944
Tec 5	Varnel Hutto	34785324	Engrs	25 August 1944
Pvt	Walter M. Illicki	32844310	Armd F	30 August 1944
Pvt	Adolph Ingwer	32881223	Inf	21 August 1944
Pvt	Edmund P. Ison, Jr.	32909369	Inf	4 September 1944
Sgt	Bernard J. Izzo	12035063	FA	30 August 1944
Pvt	Melvin L. Jarrell	6894822	Inf	3 July 1944
Pvt	William E. Jenkins	36861755	Inf	14 September 1944
Pfc	Mayo Johnson	35667079	Inf	9 September 1944
Sgt	Robert F. Johnson	18005858	Inf	3 September 1944
Pvt	John F. Johnston	32649949	Inf	14 September 1944
Pfc	Raymond B. Jordan	01321522	Inf	26 July 1944
2nd Lt.	Duel J. Judice	38651231	Inf	13 September 1944
Pvt	Robert W. Juergens	35227212	Inf	11 September 1944
Pvt	Joseph C. Kalinowski	11009654	Armd F	15 September 1944
Pvt	Alexander Kasenchak	32919448	Inf	25 August 1944
<del>Pvt</del>	<del>Gilbert O. Kennedy</del>	<del>34140773</del>	<del>Inf</del>	<del>8 September 1944</del>
<i>Amended by HQ 1st</i>	<i>Pfc Jan 22, 1945</i> Gilbert O. Kennedy	34140773	Inf	5 September 1944
Pvt	Max Kierins	35420392	Inf	3 September 1944
Pfc	Andrew J. Kilgore	34886241	Inf	3 September 1944
Tec 5	Loren C. Knepp	33570368	Cav	1 September 1944
Pvt	Peter Kostick	33466185	Inf	5 September 1944

R E S T R I C T E D

APPENDIX D: S/SGT HULL BRONZE STAR & PURPLE HEART CITATIONS



**THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA**

TO ALL WHO SHALL SEE THESE PRESENTS, GREETING: THIS IS TO CERTIFY THAT THE PRESIDENT  
OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA AUTHORIZED BY EXECUTIVE ORDER, 24 AUGUST 1962 HAS AWARDED

**THE BRONZE STAR MEDAL**

TO  
**STAFF SERGEANT HERBERT S. HULL**  
**ARMY OF THE UNITED STATES**

FOR distinguishing himself by meritorious service while serving with Company B, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion in September, 1944 in connection with military operations near Brest, France against a hostile force. His rapid assessment and solution of numerous problems inherent in a combat environment greatly enhanced the allied effectiveness in containing the enemy. Despite many adversities, he invariably performed his duties in a resolute and efficient manner. Energetically applying his sound judgment and extensive knowledge, he has contributed materially to the successful accomplishment of the United States mission in Europe. His loyalty, diligence and devotion to duty were in keeping with the highest traditions of the military service and reflect great credit upon himself, the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion and the Army of the United States.


GIVEN UNDER MY HAND IN THE CITY OF WASHINGTON  
THIS 21ST DAY OF FEBRUARY 2013

  
THE ADJUTANT GENERAL  
Per Permanent Order 052-07, 21 February 2013  
U.S. Army Human Resources Command  
Fort Knox, Kentucky 40122-5408



  
SECRETARY OF THE ARMY

DA FORM 4980-5-WT, JAN 2000. Previous edition is obsolete.



**THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA**

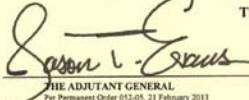
TO ALL WHO SHALL SEE THESE PRESENTS, GREETING:  
THIS IS TO CERTIFY THAT  
THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA  
HAS AWARDED THE


**PURPLE HEART**


ESTABLISHED BY GENERAL GEORGE WASHINGTON  
AT NEWBURGH, NEW YORK, AUGUST 7, 1782

TO  
**STAFF SERGEANT HERBERT S. HULL**  
**ARMY OF THE UNITED STATES**  
**FOR WOUNDS RECEIVED**  
**IN ACTION**  
ON 2 SEPTEMBER 1944 IN FRANCE

GIVEN UNDER MY HAND IN THE CITY OF WASHINGTON  
THIS 21ST DAY OF FEBRUARY 2013

  
THE ADJUTANT GENERAL  
Per Permanent Order 052-05, 23 February 2013  
U.S. Army Human Resources Command  
Fort Knox, Kentucky 40122-5408



  
SECRETARY OF THE ARMY

DA FORM 4980-10-WT, JAN 2000.

## WORKS CITED

### PROLOGUE

1. After Action Report, 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, Sept 44; National Archives and Records Administration (NARA), College Park, Record Identification, Entry: 427 WWII Operations Reports 1944-1948, [File # INBN-5-0 all boxes], located in boxes 16916-16919; See file : INBN-5.0.3 4297 Ops Rpts.
2. Unit Journal, 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, Sep 44; NARA, College Park, Record Identification, Entry: 427 WWII Operations Reports 1944-1948, [File # INBN-5-0 all boxes], located in boxes 16916-16919; See file: INBN-5.0.7 4933 Jnl.

### CHAPTER 1 – THE QUEST FOR MY GRANDFATHER

1. S/Sgt Herbert Stanton Hull Discharge WD AGO Form 53-55, dated April 19, 1945
2. Black, Robert W., *Rangers In World War II*, New York: Ballantine, 1992
3. Glassman, Henry S., *“Lead the Way, Rangers”*, *History of the Fifth Ranger Battalion*, Markt Grafing, Bavaria: Buchdruckerei Hauser, 1945

### CHAPTER 2 – HERBERT STANTON HULL - TRANSITION FROM CIVILIAN TO SOLDIER

1. United States Census Records available through Ancestry.com
2. “W. S. George Pottery Company”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 23 Mar. 2014. Web. 6 Aug. 2014
3. “Selective Service System”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 15 Jul. 2014. Web. 6 Aug. 2014.
4. Weast, Carl, DSS Form 150, March 15, 1943, Provided by his son Mark Weast
5. Ohio Department of Transportation, Division of Planning, Office of Technical Services, Official Transportation Maps, <<http://www.dot.state.oh.us/Divisions/Planning/TechServ/TIM/Pages/OfficialTransportationMaps.aspx>>, Retrieved 2014 03-12
6. Hardscrabble Farm, Brian Mead, War Department, WD AGO Form 3-4283, dated September 10, 1937, <[http://www.hardscrabblefarm.com/ww2/serial\\_numbers.htm](http://www.hardscrabblefarm.com/ww2/serial_numbers.htm)>, Retrieved 2014-03-12
7. Columbus City Schools, Fort Hayes Metropolitan Education Center, “Our History, Fort Hayes History”, <<http://fthayes.com/fthayes.com/History.html>>, Retrieved 2014-3-12
8. “Fort Hayes”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 24 Jun. 2014. Web. 6 Aug. 2014
9. Forgotten Ohio, “Fort Hayes”, <<http://www.forgottenoh.com/FortHayes/forthayes.html>>, Retrieved 2014-03-12
10. War Department Technical Manual, (TM 12–223), *Reception Center Operations*, December 20, 1944, pg 1
11. Enlisted Personnel Clothing and Equipage (Army Regulations No. 615-40), 1943
12. 225th AAA Searchlight Battalion Veterans Association, <<http://www.skylighters.org/>>, Retrieved 2014-03-12
13. Carnahan, John Anderson, “Changing Trains in Columbus”, January 1, 2004. print <[http://www.columbusrailroads.com/new/pdf/CHANGING\\_TRAINS\\_IN\\_COLUMBUS-2.pdf](http://www.columbusrailroads.com/new/pdf/CHANGING_TRAINS_IN_COLUMBUS-2.pdf)>, Retrieved 7-5-2014
14. Schroeder, Walter A., “Missouri State Sales Tax coins”, blog, <<http://munichburgmemories.blogspot.com/2012/03/missouri-sales-tax-tokens.html>>, Retrieved 2014-03-12
15. National Archives and Records Administration, “The 1973 Fire, National Personnel Records Center”, <<http://www.archives.gov/st-louis/military-personnel/fire-1973.html>>, Retrieved 2014-03-12

### CHAPTER 3 – THE 35<sup>TH</sup> INFANTRY DIVISION – 320<sup>TH</sup> INFANTRY REGIMENT

1. California State Military Department, The California State Military Museum, A United States Army Museum Activity, Camp San Luis Obispo, <<http://www.militarymuseum.org/CSLO%20History.html>>, Retrieved 2014-03-12
2. Kreiger, Dan, “Camp’s Drab Look Caught First Lady’s Attention, San Luis Obispo” *The Tribune*, Published: Sunday, August 24, 2003, <<http://sloblogs.tribunenews.com/slovault/2010/11/camp-san-luis-obispo-during-world-war-ii/>>, Retrieved 2014-03-12
3. “Fourth Army”, GlobalSecurity.org <<http://www.globalsecurity.org/military/agency/army/4army.htm>>, Retrieved 2014-03-12
4. Army Ground Forces, Historical Section, *History of the Fourth Army, Study No. 18*, AD-A954 908, 1946, pg 1



5. Gawne, Jonathan, *Finding Your Father's War, A Practical Guide to Researching and Understanding Service in the World War II US Army*, pg 34
6. 35th Infantry Division History, <[http://www.ranger95.com/divisions/history\\_of\\_the\\_35th\\_division.html](http://www.ranger95.com/divisions/history_of_the_35th_division.html)>, Retrieved 2012-11-25
7. G Company Headquarters, *History of the Santa Fe Division, Origins of the Santa Fe Division*, <<http://www.137thinfantry.org/history.htm>>, Retrieved 2013-02-23
8. *134th Infantry Regiment, "All Hell Can't Stop Us", Presenting the 35th Infantry Division in World War II, 1941 - 1945*, Transcribed by Roberta V. Russo, Palatine, Illinois, <[http://www.coulthart.com/134/35chapter\\_1.htm](http://www.coulthart.com/134/35chapter_1.htm)>, Retrieved 2014-08-08
9. U.S. Army, 320th Public Relations Office, *STORY OF THE 320TH INFANTRY*, Published in Hameln, Germany, June 6, 1945, pg5
10. National Archives and Records Administration, Archives II, College Park, MD, Entry: 427, WWII Operations Reports 1944-1948, [File #335-INF(320)-0], located in boxes 9772-9789.
11. National Archives and Records Administration, Archives II, College Park, MD, Entry: 427, WWII Operations Reports 1944-1948, [File #335-INF(320)-0], located in boxes 9772-9789.
12. McKay, Brett & Kate, *World War II Fitness Test, The Art of Manliness*, September 12, 2011, <<http://www.artofmanliness.com/2011/09/12/are-you-as-fit-as-a-world-war-ii-gi/>>, Retrieved 2014-03-23
13. Western Regional Climate Center, Monthly Precipitation, SAN LUIS OBISPO POLYTEC, CALIFORNIA, <<http://www.wrcc.dri.edu/cgi-bin/cliMONtpre.pl?ca7851>>, Retrieved 2014-03-23
14. Army Training Manual (TM) 12-427, *Military Occupational Classification of Enlisted Personnel* dated July 12, 1944, pg 94
15. National Archives at St. Louis, Archival Records, Auxiliary and Organizational Records, in the Archival Research Room, within the World War II Enlisted Rosters, 320th Infantry Regiment, Microfilm #15597

## CHAPTER 4 – THE 35<sup>TH</sup> INFANTRY DIVISION – 134<sup>TH</sup> INFANTRY REGIMENT

1. The National Personnel Records Center (NPRC) is one of the National Archives and Records Administration's (NARA) largest operations. The National Personnel Records center (NPRC) is located at 1 Archives Drive, Saint Louis, MO 63138 in suburban North St. Louis County, near the intersection of U.S. 367 and Interstate 270. <<http://www.archives.gov/st-louis/#address>>, Retrieved 2014-08-15
2. The 1973 Fire at the NPRC is fully described at: <<http://www.archives.gov/st-louis/military-personnel/fire-1973.html>>, Retrieved 2014-08-15
3. TM 12-223 is War Department Technical Manual (TM); *Reception Center Operations*, 20 October 1944. The images of WD AGO Form 20 – Soldier's Qualification Card appears on pages 28 and 29 of the manual with instructions on its preparation throughout.
4. Regimental history information presented on pages 4 through 11 is derived primarily from the information found in the sources listed in notes 5-8.
5. Miltonberger, Major General Butler B, & Major James A. Huston, Assistant Professor of History, Purdue University, *134<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment: Combat History of World War II*, 1946
6. I & E Section, 134th Infantry, *History of the 134th Infantry Regiment*, <<http://www.coulthart.com/134/134%20history%20i%20and%20e.htm>>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
7. United States. Army, Infantry Division, 35<sup>th</sup>, *Presenting The 35th Infantry Division In World War II 1941–1945* (Divisional Series), 1946, Battery Press Inc., ISBN-10: 0898391121, ISBN-13: 978-0898391121
8. Schoonover, Ferry G., Technician 4th Grade, 137th Infantry Regiment, Anti-Tank Company, *The war years: 1940 to 1946*, <<http://137thinfantry.org/schoonover.htm>>, Retrieved 2013-07-13
9. Kinlock, Ken, *Troop Trains in American History*, <<http://www.kinglyheirs.com/NewYorkStateRailroads/TroopTrain1.html>>, Retrieved 2014-03-23
10. U.S. Army Signal Corps, **TROOP TRAIN**, February 11, 1943, Office of War Production, Bureau of Motion Pictures, film, 11 minutes, (available through YouTube)
11. "Fort Rucker", Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 29 Jul. 2014. Web. 14 Aug. 2014.
12. US Army Aviation Center, Fort Rucker, Alabama, Office of the Adjutant General, *U.S. Army Aviation Center, Fort Rucker, Alabama, Home of the United States Army Aviation School 1954 HISTORY 1964*, 1 January 1965, <[http://www.rucker.army.mil/ruckhistorypdf/1964\\_historical%20supplement.pdf](http://www.rucker.army.mil/ruckhistorypdf/1964_historical%20supplement.pdf)>, Retrieved 2014-03-23
13. US Army Aviation Center and Fort Rucker, Alabama, *NRHP Evaluation of Ten Archaeological Sites and the Chapel of the Wings*, January 1998, US Army Corps of Engineers, US Army Aviation Center and Fort Rucker, Brian R. Collins, et. Al (Bruce G. Harvey, Todd McMakin and Eric C. Poplin), <<http://www.dtic.mil/cgi-bin/GetTRDoc?AD=ADA340991>>
14. Henry, Mark and Mike Chappell, *The US Army in World War II (1): The Pacific, Volume 1, Men-at-Arms* (Book 342), 2000, Osprey Publishing, ISBN 1855329956
15. Gawne, Jonathan, *Finding Your Father's War, A Practical Guide to Researching and Understanding Service in the World War II US Army*, pg 45

16. The United States Infantry Battalion, 1942 to mid 1943, <[http://www.bayonetstrength.150m.com/UnitedStates/Infantry/united\\_states\\_infantry\\_battalion%201942%20to%20mid%201943.htm](http://www.bayonetstrength.150m.com/UnitedStates/Infantry/united_states_infantry_battalion%201942%20to%20mid%201943.htm)>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
17. War Department, Army Field Manual, *Heavy Weapons Company, Rifle Regiment FM 7-15*, May 19, 1942
18. "M1918 Browning Automatic Rifle", Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 22 Jul. 2014. Web. 14 Aug. 2014.
19. Gooding, Ed, Robert Nieman and Bob Mitchell, *Ed Gooding: Soldier, Texas Ranger*, 2001, Ranger Publishing, Longview Texas, ISBN 0967331919
20. Chamblin, Cliff, series of articles about area World War II veterans entitled "*Did You Know. Don Helterbrand's WWII Story*", November 25, <<http://www.highland-ohio.com/your%20story%20archive.htm>>, Retrieved 2014-03-23
21. Hatfield, Kenneth K., *Heartland Heroes: Remembering World War II*, 2003, University of Missouri, ISBN 0826214606, page 159
22. State of Alabama Department of Archives and History, Alabama Photographs and Pictures Collection, LPP45, Box 6, #2458, "Calisthenics Drill - Camp Rucker, Alabama." <<http://digital.archives.alabama.gov/cdm/singleitem/collection/photo/id/19712/rec/26>>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
23. Justin, John, Justin Army Oral History Center, *Victor J. "Baseplate" Miller, Sgt., Co. E, 5th Ranger Battalion, U.S.A., Biography*, <<http://www.justinmuseum.com/oralbio/millervjbio.html>>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
24. Black, Robert W., *Rangers In World War II*, 1992, New York, Ballantine, Presidio Press Books, ISBN 0-8041-0565-0

## CHAPTER 5 – BECOMING AN ARMY RANGER IN THE 5TH RANGER INFANTRY BATTALION - CAMP FORREST

1. Houston, Rhonda, United States Army; *Rangers In Colonial And Revolutionary America*, <<http://www.history.army.mil/documents/RevWar/revra.htm>> Retrieved 2013-06-07
2. Rottman, Gordon L.; *U.S. Army Rangers & LRRP Units 1942-87*; Osprey Publishing, Ltd., Elite Series No. 13; 1997; Information derived from Page 3.
3. Siter, Bridgett Siter; The Bayonet, FORT BENNING, Ga. (TRADOC News Service, April 26, 2005); *Rogers 'standing orders' still drive Ranger training*; <http://www.tradoc.army.mil/pao/tnsarchives/april05/043205.htm>
4. King, Dr. Michael J. *Leavenworth Papers No. 11, Rangers: Selected Combat Operations in World War II*. Combat Studies Institute, U.S. Army Command and General Staff College. 1985. Website.
5. Bradley, Michael R., *Reveille To Taps, Camp Forrest, TN, 1940 --- 1946*, USAF
6. Black, Robert W (USA Colonel retired); *Rangers in World War II*; Presidio Press; 1992; Information derived from Chapter 1.
7. Pyle, Paul, Allen Parsons, and Jean Smotherman, *Camp Forrest: Tullahoma, Tennessee, 1941-1946*. Tullahoma: Tullahoma Chamber of Commerce, 1986
8. Lanham, Harley; *Phase I Archaeological Reconnaissance Survey For Cultural Resources Of 184 Ha (455 Acres) On Industrial Site A, 162 Ha (400 Acres) On Industrial Site B, And 0.7 Ha (1.7 Acres) At The Location Of The Trenton Transition Test Cells W1 And W2, Arnold Engineering Development Center, Arnold Air Station, Coffee And Franklin Counties, Tennessee*. 1994, <[http://denix.osd.mil/cr/upload/9200442\\_final\\_optimized.pdf](http://denix.osd.mil/cr/upload/9200442_final_optimized.pdf)>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
9. Hogan, David W., *Raiders or Elite Infantry?: The Changing Role of the U.S. Army Rangers from Dieppe to Grenada* (Contributions in Military Studies), Praeger, 1992
10. Murrell, Robert T., "M" 318th Infantry, *History of the 305th Combat Engineers*, <<http://www.thetroubleshooters.com/80th/305thce0001.html>>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
11. Hogan, Jr., David W., *U.S. Army Special Operations in World War II, Department of the Army*, CMH Publication 70-42, 1992, pg 40
12. Darby, William O., *Darby's Rangers: We Led the Way*, Presidio Press, June 1, 1993, ISBN-10: 0891414924, ISBN-13: 978-0891414926, pg 208-210.
13. Graves, Garry M.; *A Biography of a D-Day Soldier, Bloody Omaha, My Remembrances of That Day by James Robert Copeland, S/Sgt. – Company B, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion.*; GGA Publishing, 2010; Information derived from Chapter 3.
14. Glassman, Henry S. "Lead The Way, Rangers"; *A History of the Fifth Ranger Battalion*: Ranger Associates, 1945, reprinted in 1980, Print, pg 10
15. Kaufmann, J. E. and Kaufmann, H.W., *The American GI in Europe in World War II: The March to D-Day*, 2009, Stackpole Books, Mechanicsburg, PA, ISBN 978-0-8117-0449-6, pg 109
16. Justin, John, *Miller, Victor J. "Baseplate", Sgt., Co. E, 5th Ranger Battalion, U.S.A.*

## CHAPTER 6 – SCOUT AND RAIDER SCHOOL – FORT PIERCE, FLORIDA

1. 299th Combat Engineer Battalion, website, <<http://www.299thcombatengineers.com/History01Thayer.htm>>, Retrieved 2014 03 26
2. St Lucie County, Florida website, <<http://www.stlucieco.gov/media/history.htm>>, Retrieved 2014 03 26

## THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

3. "Fort Pierce, Florida", Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 2 Aug. 2014. Web. 14 Aug. 2014.
4. Becker, Captain Marshall O., *The Amphibious Training Center. Study No. 22.* Washington DC: Army Ground Forces—Historical Section, 1946, pg 71
5. Dwyer, John Barry, *SCOUTS AND RAIDERS*, 1993, Praeger, ISBN 0-275-94409-3
6. U.S. Naval Special Warfare Archives, "*Scouts and Raiders.*", 2 Jan. 2009, <http://www.navyfrogmen.com/Scouts%20and%20Raiders.html> >, Retrieved 2013 10 03
7. Hogan, Jr., David W., Department of the Army, CMH Publication 70-42, *U.S. Army Special Operations in World War II*, Washington, D.C. 1992, pg 50, <<http://www.history.army.mil/books/wwii/70-42/70-423.htm>>, Retrieved 2014 03 26
8. Madigan, Bob and Laura, The UDT - SEAL Museum, Ft. Pierce, FL, March 10th, 2002, <<http://www.rvtravelog.com/sealmuseum.dir/sealmuseum1.htm>>, Retrieved 2014 04 10
9. Hathaway, Jr., Richard N., *Training For Bloody Omaha*, 2002, Vantage Press, ISBN: 0-533-14215-6, pg 5
10. Glassman, Henry S, pg 10
11. Justin, John, *Miller, Victor J. "Baseplate", Sgt., Co. E, 5th Ranger Battalion, U.S.A.*
12. GARDNER, GREG, *Our own South Beach*, Article in IndianRiver Magazine, <[http://indianrivermag.com/LIVE/index.php?module=pagemaster&PAGE\\_user\\_op=view\\_printable&PAGE\\_id=202&lay\\_quiet=1](http://indianrivermag.com/LIVE/index.php?module=pagemaster&PAGE_user_op=view_printable&PAGE_id=202&lay_quiet=1)>, Retrieved 2013 05 06
13. Wynne, Nick and Richard Moorhead, *Florida in World War Two, Floating Fortress*, 2010, The History Press, ISBN 1596299290
14. O'Donnell, Patrick K, *Dog Company: The Boys of Pointe Du Hoc--the Rangers Who Accomplished D-Day's Toughest Mission and Led the Way Across Europe*, 2012, Da Capo Press, ISBN 0306820293, Chapter 4
15. Naval Research Laboratory; Washington, DC 20375-5320 NRL/PU/6110--98-372; *MTADS MAPPING AND ORDNANCE INVESTIGATION AT THE FORMER FT. PIERCE AMPHIBIOUS BASE VERO BEACH, FLORIDA*, March 1998; Supported by The US Army Corps of Engineers Mr. Robert Bridgers, Jacksonville Regional Office
16. USACE: *Military Training Lands Historic Context: Training Village, Mock Sites, and Large Scale Operations Areas*: Dan Archibald, Adam Smith, Sunny Adams, and Manroop Chawla, March 2010: <[http://www.denix.osd.mil/cr/upload/05-265\\_Training\\_Villages-Part-I-of-2.pdf](http://www.denix.osd.mil/cr/upload/05-265_Training_Villages-Part-I-of-2.pdf)>. Retrieved 2014-08-14
17. Gulbranson, C., Captain, USN, Commanding, *Hand to Hand Combat for Amphibious Scouts, United States Naval Amphibious Training Base, Ft. Pierce, Florida*, August 1, 1945, Training Aids Office for Amphibious Scouts,

## CHAPTER 7 – FORT DIX AND NEW YORK CITY

1. "Fort Dix", Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 29 Jul. 2014. Web. 6 Aug. 2014
2. John Adams Dix and the history of Fort Dix <<http://www.dix.army.mil/history/history.html>>, Retrieved 2014-07-10
3. Graves, pg 42
4. Waterson, Alisse, *My Father's Wars: Migration, Memory, and the Violence of a Century*, 2013, Routledge, New York, ISBN 0415859182, Chapter 7
5. Rivoli Theatre history, <<http://www.nycago.org/Organs/NYC/html/RivoliTheatre.html>>, Retrieved 2014-05-01
6. LIFE Magazine, *Life Visits a GI Phone Center*, Pages 72-75, December 25, 1944
7. Stage Door Canteen in World War 2, <<http://www.stagedoorcanteen.co.uk/vw2-history.html>>, Retrieved 2014-07-12
8. New York Times, *U.S.O. in Times Square*, Published: January 3, 1981, , <<http://www.nytimes.com/1981/01/03/nyregion/uso-in-times-square.html>>, Retrieved 2014 07 12
9. Miles, Donna, *USO Carries on 70-Year Legacy of Troop Support*, American Forces Press Service, US Department of Defense, <<http://www.defense.gov/news/newsarticle.aspx?id=66553>>, Retrieved 2014 07 12
10. Broadway, World War II, <<http://www.mapsites.net/gotham01/webpages/alisonhannah/broadww2.html>>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
11. Grigonis, Richard, *Coke vs. Pepsi: 14 Photos of Sodas' Prominence in Politics*, 10 Feb 2014, Newsmax, Independant American, <<http://www.newsmax.com/TheWire/coke-pepsi-politics/2014/02/10/id/551930/>>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
12. *Twentieth Century Wars on Tape*, Produced by Art Silverman and Darcy Bacon, 1999, NPR, <<http://www.npr.org/programs/lnfsound/stories/991224.smith.html>>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
13. Diehl, Lorraine B, *Over Here! New York City During World War II*, 2010, Smithsonian, ISBN 0061431346, Chapter 7
14. Justin, John, *Miller, Victor J. "Baseplate", Sgt., Co. E, 5th Ranger Battalion, U.S.A.*



## CHAPTER 8 – CAMP KILMER, NEW JERSEY

1. USGS, Historical Topographic Map Collection, <<http://geonames.usgs.gov/pls/topomaps>>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
2. Special Collections and University Archives, Rutgers University Libraries, Rutgers, The State University of New Jersey, 169 College Avenue, New Brunswick, NJ 08901-1163, Phone: 848/932-7006, <<http://mapmaker.rutgers.edu/MAPS.html>>, Retrieved 2014-08-14 <[http://mapmaker.rutgers.edu/HISTORICALMAPS/Kilmer\\_big.png](http://mapmaker.rutgers.edu/HISTORICALMAPS/Kilmer_big.png)>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
3. 1947 map of Middlesex County, Acme Photo and Blueprint Company, Inc: Public Domain: <<http://mapmaker.rutgers.edu/>> Retrieved 2014-08-14
4. Piscataway Township, NJ municipal website, <<http://www.piscatawaynj.org/government/about-piscataway-township>>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
5. Township of Edison, NJ municipal website <[http://www.edisonnj.org/about\\_township\\_of\\_edison/township\\_history/index.php](http://www.edisonnj.org/about_township_of_edison/township_history/index.php)>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
6. 20<sup>th</sup> Engineers at Camp Kilmer, The Brown Family, <<http://www.20thengineers.com/vw2-mawpawbrown.html>>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
7. Piscataway Public Library, *Camp Kilmer*, <<http://www.piscatawaylibrary.org/content/camp-kilmer>>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
8. <<http://www.archives.gov/nyc/exhibit/camp-kilmer/>>
9. CMH 10-20, Pg 127 –Page 140
10. European Theater of Operations, United States Army, Preparation for Overseas Movement, Short Sea Voyage; 10 Jan 44, Commanding General ETOUSA
11. Wiley, Major Bell I., *PREPARATION OF UNITS FOR OVERSEAS MOVEMENT - Study No. 21*, 1946, Historical Section, US Army Ground Forces

## CHAPTER 9 – NEW YORK PORT OF EMBARKATION – VOYAGE TO ENGLAND

1. Landeck, Carl and Roger Thorne, *The Pennsylvania Railroad During World War II*, <[http://www.tehistory.org/hqda/pdf/v42/Volume42\\_N2\\_035.pdf](http://www.tehistory.org/hqda/pdf/v42/Volume42_N2_035.pdf)>, Retrieved 2014 07 14
2. *United States Army In World War II; The Technical Services The Transportation Corps: Movements, Training, And Supply*; by: Chesler Wardlow, Center Of Military History, United States Army, Washington, D.C., 1990; Library of Congress Catalog Card Number 55-60003, First Printed 1956- CMH Pub 10-20.
3. Bennett, Sr., Donald, Camp Shanks New York, <<http://don.genemcguire.com/CampShanks.htm>>, Retrieved 2014 07 14
4. “New York Port of Embarkation”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 19 Jun. 2014. Web. 14 Aug. 2014.
5. Frame, Chris, *Chris’ Cunard Page*, <<http://chriscunard.com/mauretania2.php>>, Retrieved 2014 07 20
6. Authority of the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, *A Seaman’s Pocket-Book*, London: HMSO, June 1943, This work created by the United Kingdom Government is in the public domain
7. Larkin, James L., 1st Lt, U. S. Army Air Corps, WWII US Military, Glider pilot, 84th Troop Carrier Squadron, <<http://www.oralhistory.ws/tpl/index3.php?view=profile&client=4218>>, Retrieved 2014 07 14
8. “T2 Tanker”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 3 Apr. 2014. Web. 14 Aug. 2014.
9. “SS Hat Creek”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 5 May. 2013. Web. 14 Aug. 2014.
10. Sawyer, L.A., and William Harry Mitchell, *Victory Ships and Tankers: The History of the "Victory" Type Cargo Ships and of the Tankers Built in the United States of America During World War II*, David & Charles , January 24, 1974, ISBN-10: 0715360361
11. Weather Underground, <[http://www.wunderground.com/history/airport/KNYC/1944/1/8/DailyHistory.html?req\\_city=NA&req\\_state=NA&req\\_statename=NA](http://www.wunderground.com/history/airport/KNYC/1944/1/8/DailyHistory.html?req_city=NA&req_state=NA&req_statename=NA)>, Retrieved 2014 07 14
12. U. S. Department Of Commerce, *United States Coast Pilot, Atlantic Coast, Section B, Cape Cod To Sandy Hook, , Coast And Geodetic Survey, Serial No. 627*, Fourth (1940) Edition
13. US 6<sup>th</sup> Naval Beach Battalion; Lee Parker, M.D., <<http://www.6thbeachbattalion.org/bumed-interview.html>>, Retrieved 2014 07 14
14. Collins, Fran & Martin Collins, *The Friendly Invasion of Leominster, An account of the U.S. Military units billeted around Leominster, Herefordshire, 1943-1945*, 2012, Brewin Books, Studley, Warwickshire, UK, ISBN 978-1-85858-493-5, pg 24
15. Gorrell, Robert, *THE 54TH REPLACEMENT BATTALION, ETO, 1943-1945*, <<http://54threplacementbattalion.wordpress.com/chapter-5-england-1944/>>, Retrieved 2014 07 14
16. Justin, John, Miller, Victor J. "Baseplate", *Sgt., Co. E, 5th Ranger Battalion, U.S.A.*
17. Graves, pg 47
18. Authority of the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty (June 1943) *A Seaman's Pocket-Book*, London: HMSO; This artistic work created by the United Kingdom Government is in the public domain
19. *Disused Stations*, 2009, <[http://www.disused-stations.org.uk/1/liverpool\\_riverside/](http://www.disused-stations.org.uk/1/liverpool_riverside/)>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
20. Felix, Richard “Doc”, testimony, <[http://med-dept.com/testimonies/doc\\_felix.php](http://med-dept.com/testimonies/doc_felix.php)>, Retrieved 2014 07 14

## CHAPTER 10 – LEOMINSTER, HEREFORDSHIRE, ENGLAND

1. Collins, Chapter 2
2. Glassman, pg 12
3. University of Portsmouth, A Vision of Britain Through Time, Historical Maps, Ordnance Survey Popular and New Popular Editions, 2009,  
<[http://visionofbritain.org.uk/maps/results.jsp?xCenter=3200000&yCenter=3150000&scale=63360&mapLayer=europe&subLayer=new\\_pop&title=Ordnance%20Survey%20Popular%20and%20New%20Popular%20Editions](http://visionofbritain.org.uk/maps/results.jsp?xCenter=3200000&yCenter=3150000&scale=63360&mapLayer=europe&subLayer=new_pop&title=Ordnance%20Survey%20Popular%20and%20New%20Popular%20Editions)>, Retrieved 2014 07 14
4. “New Popular Edition”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 15 Jul. 2012. Web. 14 Aug. 2014.

## CHAPTER 11 – VACATIONING IN SCOTLAND

1. Secret Scotland website, Glen Caladh Harbour, <<http://www.secretscotland.org.uk/index.php/Secrets/GlenCaladhHarbour>>, Retrieved 2014 07 14
2. Secret Scotland website, Glen Caladh Castle, <<http://www.secretscotland.org.uk/index.php/Secrets/GlenCaladhCastle>>, Retrieved 2014 07 14
3. Caladh, Glen Caladh, Tighnabruaich, Argyll, PA21 2EH, Property Description, Rightmove Company, UK, <<http://www.rightmove.co.uk/property-for-sale/property-27788691.html>>, Retrieved 2014-07-19
4. Combined Operations Command, United We Conquer, Combined Ops Training Establishments, HMS James Cook, <<http://www.combinedops.com/Training%20EST%20UK.htm>>, Retrieved 2014-07-19
5. Wilcox, Douglas, Preparations for invasion in Caladh Harbour, blog, Thursday, March 31, 2011, <<http://seakayakphoto.blogspot.com/2011/03/preparations-for-invasion-in-caladh.html>>, Retrieved 2014-07-19
6. “Combined Operations”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 30 Sep. 2013. Web. 14 Aug. 2014.
7. Glassman, pg 12
8. Justin, John, *Miller, Victor J. "Baseplate", Sgt., Co. E, 5th Ranger Battalion, U.S.A.*
9. Graves, pg 47
10. Queen Alexandra's Royal Army Nursing Corps (QARANC), *British Military Hospital (BMH) Conglen Glasgow, Scotland*, <[http://www.qaranc.co.uk/bmh\\_cowglen\\_glasgow.php](http://www.qaranc.co.uk/bmh_cowglen_glasgow.php)>, Retrieved 2014-07-19
11. Florence, MD, Robert W., *Autobiography*, American Academy of Orthopedic Surgeons, Legacy of Heroes, 2002, <<http://www6.aaos.org/About/Heroes/transcripts/florenceTS.cfm>>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
12. Batens, Alain S., and Ben C. Major, WWII U.S. Medical Research Centre, *50th General Hospital, Unit History*, <<http://www.med-dept.com/unit-histories/50th-general-hospital/>>, Retrieved 2014-08-14

## CHAPTER 12 – U.S. ASSAULT TRAINING CENTRE, BRAUNTON, ENGLAND

1. Hatfield, Thomas M., *Rudder, From Leader to Legend*, Texas A&M University Press, College Station, Texas, 2011, Chapter 6
2. Schneider, James F., *My Father's War, The Story of Max Ferguson Schneider, A Ranger Commander*, Lulu, Boise, Idaho, ISBN 978-1-300-78304-6, 2012, pg 77-91
3. “Braunton”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 3 Aug. 2014. Web. 14 Aug. 2014.
4. “Woolacombe”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 5 Jul. 2014. Web. 14 Aug. 2014.
5. Bass, Richard T., U.S. ASSAULT TRAINING CENTRE, <<http://www.assaulttrainingcenter.com/>>, Retrieved 2014 07 20
6. Beck, Alfred M., et al, *Cross Channel Invasion, & The Corps Of Engineers: The War Against Germany*, CMH Pub 10-22, 1985, pg 289-293
7. Harrison, Gordon A, *Cross Channel Attack, United States Army In World War II, The European Theater of Operations*, United States Army Center of Military History, CMH Pub 7-4-1, 1951, pg 191
8. Hathaway, pg 14-20
9. Friends of the Assault Training Center, <<http://www.assaulttrainingcenterfriends.co.uk/history.html>>, Retrieved 2014 07 23
10. Black, *Rangers of WWII*, Chapter 8
11. Glassman, pg 13
12. Prince, Morris, PFC, Co A, 2nd Ranger BN, *Overseas, Then Over the Top*; The Command And General Staff College Library, call number: 940.542 P9560, October 21, 1948, Chapter 6
13. *Carl Weast* file, The Peter Kalikow World War II Collection of the National D-Day Museum Foundation, Inc., located at the National D-Day Museum, New Orleans.

14. BBC, The Peoples War, Contributed by woolacombegirl, The people of Woolacombe, Article ID: A1969194, 04 November 2003, <<http://www.bbc.co.uk/history/ww2peopleswar/stories/94/a1969194.shtml>>, Retrieved 2014 07 23

## CHAPTER 13 – DORCHESTER AND EXERCISE FABIUS I

1. Hatfield, Chapter 6
2. Ruppenthal, Ronald G., *U.S. Army in World War II; European Theater of Operations; Volume I, Logistical Support of the Armies: May 1941-September 1944*, United States Army Center of Military History, CMH Pub 7-2-1, 1995, Chapter IX
3. Office Of History Headquarters Third Air Force United States Air Forces In Europe, *Installations And USAAF Combat Units In The United Kingdom 1942 - 1945*, Revised And Expanded Edition , October 1980, pg 39
4. “Warmwell RAF”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 29 Jul. 2013. Web. 14 Aug. 2014.
5. Frederick, Scott, WWII Escape and Evasion Information Exchange, Daisy in the Sky, November 2010, <<http://www.conscript-heroes.com/escapelines/EEIE-Articles/Art-10-Frederick.htm>>, Retrieved 2014 07 26
6. Craven, W.F., and J. L. Cate, *The Army Air Forces in World War II, Volume III, Europe: Arument to V-E Day, January 1944 to May 1945*, Chapter 5: The Ninth Air Force, 1951, <<http://www.ibiblio.org/hyperwar/AAF/III/AAF-III-5.html>>, Retrieved 2014-08-16
7. Forty, George, *Frontline Dorset: A County at War, 1939-45*, Dorset Books, June 1994
8. The National Mapping Programme *South Dorset Ridgeway Mapping Project*; English Heritage Project Number 5583; Results of NMP Mapping; Historic Environment, Cornwall Council; Carolyn Royall; April 2011; Kennall Building, Old County Hall, Station Road, Truro, Cornwall, TR1 3AY
9. Prince, Chapter VII
10. Stille, Rick, 5th Armored, *The Victory Division, Welcome to 5AD Online!, What a Sausage Camp Might Have Looked Like*, <<http://www.5ad.org/sausage.html>>, Retrieved 2014 07 26
11. Lane, Ronald L., *The 2<sup>nd</sup> United States Ranger Battalion, Rudder's Rangers, The True Story of the 2<sup>nd</sup> Ranger Battalion D-Day Combat Action*, Ranger Associates, Inc, Longwood Florida, 1979, pg 60-63
12. Bates, Charles C., Lt. Colonel, U.S. Air Force (Retired), *Sea, Swell And Surf Forecasting For D-Day And Beyond, The Anglo-American Effort, 1943-1945*, Unpublished, 2010, pg 12
13. Jones, Lt. Clifford L., *The Administrative And Logistical History Of The ETO, Part VI, NEPTUNE: Training, Mounting, The Artificial Ports*, Historical Division, United States Army Forces, European Theater, March 1946, pg 263-274
14. Glassman, pg 13
15. Hathaway, pg 21
16. Schneider, pg 87
17. Brown, James D., and Michael Green, *War Stories of D-Day: Operation Overlord: June 6, 1944*, Zenith Press, 2009, pg 104

## CHAPTER 14 – SWANAGE

1. “Swanage”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 14 Aug. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
2. West, Ian, Dr. and Hampshire Romsey, *Geology of the Wessex Coast of Southern England - the World Heritage Jurassic Coast - and more*, <<http://www.southampton.ac.uk/~imw/index.htm#List-of-Webpages>>, Retrieved, 2014 07 28
3. “Burton Bradstock”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 7 Jun. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
4. BBC, BBC Two Coast Series 8, Episode 5 of 6, *Burton Bradstock at War, The Secret Life of Sea Cliffs*, first broadcast May 1, 2013
5. Village of Burton Bradstock, Burtonbradstockonline, *Burton Bradstock in World War II*, <<http://www.burtonbradstock.org.uk/index.htm>>, Retrieved, 2014 07 27
6. West, Ian, Dr. and Hampshire Romsey, *Geology of the Wessex Coast of Southern England, Burton Cliff and Burton Bradstock Geology, (Jurassic Bridport Sands, Inferior Oolite, Fullers Earth with Rock falls*, <<http://www.southampton.ac.uk/~imw/burton.htm>>, Retrieved, 2014 07 28
7. West, Ian, Dr. and Hampshire Romsey, *Geology of the Wessex Coast of Southern England, Durdle Door, West of Lulworth Cove, Dorset*, <<http://www.southampton.ac.uk/~imw/durdle.htm>>, Retrieved, 2014 07 28
8. Damon, Robert, *Handbook to the Geology of Weymouth and the Island of Portland: With Notes*, William Clowes and Sons, London, 1884
9. The Climbers Club of Great Britain, *Swanage and Portland: Historical*, <[http://www.climbers-club.co.uk/downloads/SP\\_historyA4.pdf](http://www.climbers-club.co.uk/downloads/SP_historyA4.pdf)>, Retrieved, 2014 07 30
10. West, Ian, Dr. and Hampshire Romsey, *Geology of the Wessex Coast of Southern England, Anvil Point to Fisherman's Ledge to Blackers Hole Cave, near Swanage, Isle of Purbeck, Dorset*, <<http://www.southampton.ac.uk/~imw/Anvil-Point-Blackers-Hole.htm>>, Retrieved 2014 07 28
11. West, Ian, Dr. and Hampshire Romsey, *Geology of the Wessex Coast of Southern England, Alum Bay, Isle of Wight*, <<http://www.southampton.ac.uk/~imw/Alum-Bay.htm>>, Retrieved 2014 07 28



## THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

- Black, Robert W., *The Battalion, The Dramatic Story of the 2<sup>nd</sup> Ranger Battalion in WWII*, Mechanicsburg, PA: Stackpole Books, 2006, pg 72-73
- Black, *Rangers of World War II*, pg 181
- Hatfield, Chapter 6
- Jamie S, en.wikipedia, *Cropped Swanage panorama*, 22 August 2009, <[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:Swanage\\_Panorama\\_Crop.jpg](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/File:Swanage_Panorama_Crop.jpg)>, Retrieved 2014 07 28
- Hathaway, Chapter 3
- Lane, pg 64
- Ketzer, Steve, Jr, *Bob Appetite, Ranger !*, Descendants of WWII Rangers newsletter, June 2012, <<http://www.wwirangers.com/News%20&%20Stuff/Newsletters/june2012newsletter.pdf>>, Retrieved, 2014 07 28
- Schneider, pg 87
- Zalooza, Steven J., *Rangers Lead the Way: Pointe-du-Hoc D-Day 1944 (Men-at-Arms)*, Osprey Publishing, December 20, 2011, pg 12-22
- BBC, WWII Peoples War, An Archive of World War Two memories – written by the public, gathered by the BBC, *The Story of a Tioga County Soldier: Studying Morse Code in England (Harold F. Plank)*, <<http://www.bbc.co.uk/history/ww2peopleswar/stories/34/a4588734.shtml>>, July 28, 2005, Retrieved, 2014 07 30
- Ambrose, Stephen E., *D-Day: June 6, 1944: The Climactic Battle of World War II*, Simon & Schuster; Reprint edition, April 23, 2013, pg 143
- Imperial War Museum (IWM), *The Way Back*; Produced by the A.F.P.U and R.N. Film Section, 1944; Available at: <<http://www.burtonbradstock.org.uk/History/BB%20at%20War/US%20soldiers%20scaling%20the%20cliff/index%20US%20cliff%20climb.htm>>, Retrieved , 2014 07 28
- Chief of Combined Operations, *Combined Operations Pamphlet No 24, Cliff Assaults*, August 1944, United Kingdom
- Chief of Combined Operations, *The Combined Operations Staff Notebook*, BR 1293, United Kingdom

## CHAPTER 15 – DORCHESTER CAMP D5 AND WEYMOUTH

- Black, *The Battalion*, pg 74-76
- Ruppenthal, pg 366
- Lane, pg 64-66
- Kaufmann, J. E. and Kaufmann, H.W., *The American GI in Europe in World War II, D-Day: Storming Ashore*, 2009, Stackpole Books, Mechanicsburg, PA, ISBN 978-0-8117-0449-6
- Jones
- Prince, Chapter 9
- Hatfield, Chapter 6
- Hathaway, pg 23-24
- Justin, John, *Miller, Victor J. "Baseplate", Sgt., Co. E, 5th Ranger Battalion, U.S.A.*
- CMH Pub 7-4-1, pg 272
- Jones

## CHAPTER 16 – CRIMSON SKY IN THE MORNING, D-DAY

- Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH , Cornelius Ryan Collection, PFC Max D. Coleman, Box 10, Folder 23.
- "Vierville Sur Mer", Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 2 Jul. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
- "Normandy", Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 9 Aug. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
- "Calvados", Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 2 Jul. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
- War Department, Historical Division, *Omaha Beachhead, 6 June – 13 June, 1944*, American Forces in Action Series, September, 1945, GPO, CMH Pub 100-11-1
- Balkoski, Joseph, *Omaha Beach, D-Day, June 6, 1944*, 2004, Stackpole Books, Mechanicsburg, PA, ISBN 0-8117-3376-9, pg 37-38
- Isby, David C., *The German Army at D-Day, Fighting the Invasion*, 2004, Greenhill Books, London, ISBN 1-85367-605-5
- Milano, Vince and Bruce Conner, *NORMANDIEFRONT: D-Day to Saint-Lo Through German Eyes*, 2011, The History Press, Stroud, Gloucestershire, ISBN 978-0-7524-7145-7
- Coquart, E., and Philippe Huet, *Le Jour Le Plus Fou, 6 juin 1944, les civils dans la tourmente*, ("The most Crazy Day"), 1994, Albin Michel, ISBN 2226069291 (French)
- Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Belmont, Gail H, SSG 2A, Box 10, Folder 19.
- Schneider, pg 84-104

12. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Weast, Carl F., PFC, Box 10, Folder 57.
13. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Snyder, Lt. Jack A., Box 10, Folder 51.
14. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Belmont, Gail H. SSG, 2A, Box 10, Folder 19.
15. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Nelson, Emil Jr., SSG, Box 10, Folder 39.
16. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Cota, Norman D., MG, (Notes of Lt. Shea), Box 6, Folder 15.
17. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Schneider, Max F, Lt Col, Box 10, Folder 49.
18. Schneider, pg 84-104
19. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Schopp, Dan D. T5, Box 10, Folder 50.
20. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Perry, John J, Sgt, Box 10, Folder 40.
21. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Ramney, Burton E, SSG, Box 10, Folder 44.
22. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Chance, Donald L, SSG, Box 10, Folder 22.
23. *Carl Weast* file, The Peter Kalikow World War II Collection
24. Taylor, Lt. Colonel Charles H., U.S. Army Historical Section Headquarters, European Theater of Operations, *War Department Notes*, Volumes 1 and 2, November 11, 1944
25. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Hodgson John C, TSgt, Box 10, Folder 30.
26. Raaen Jr., John C., *INTACT, A First Hand Account of the D-Day Invasion From a 5<sup>th</sup> Rangers Company Commander*, 2012, Reedy Press, ISBN 978-1-935806-27-1
27. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Runge, William M, Cpt, Box 10, Folder 47.
28. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Thornhill, Avery J, FSgt, Box 10, Folder 55.
29. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Dawson, Francis W., Lt, Box 10, Folder 24.
30. Graves, Chapter 5
31. Raaen, Jr., John C., *Sir, The Rangers Have Landed Intact; A Story of D-Day And of The 5<sup>th</sup> Rangers*, U.S. Army Military History Institute, 1981, unpublished
32. CMH Pub 100-11-1
33. Black, *Rangers of World War II*, Chapter 9
34. Hatfield, Chapter 7
35. Edlin, Robert, *"Invasion of Normandy, June 6, 1944: On the Beach" EyeWitness to History*, <[www.eyewitnesstohistory.com](http://www.eyewitnesstohistory.com)>, (2010), Retrieved 2014 08-02
36. Balkoski, Joseph, *Omaha Beach, D-Day: June 6, 1944*, Stackpole Books, Reprint 2006, ISBN-10: 0811733769, pg 50
37. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Corporal Ralph E Davis, Box 10.
38. Raaen Jr., John C., *INTACT, A First Hand Account of the D-Day Invasion From a 5<sup>th</sup> Rangers Company Commander*, 2012, Reedy Press, ISBN 978-1-935806-27-1, Chapters 5 & 6
39. USCG, Commanding Officer, USS LCI (L) 91, History: Flotilla 4 / 10, Group 29, Division 58, Subject: Operation Neptune, Participation in by USS LCI (L) 91, 10 June, 1944, <[https://www.uscg.mil/history/webcutters/LCI\\_91.pdf](https://www.uscg.mil/history/webcutters/LCI_91.pdf)>, Retrieved 2014 08 02
40. USCG, Seth Shepard, Pho. M. 3c, History: INVASION, The Story of the LCI (L) 92 in the Invasion of Normandy on June 6, 1944., Flotilla 4 / 10, Group 29, Division 58, June 25, 1944, <[http://www.uscg.mil/history/webcutters/LCI\\_92.pdf](http://www.uscg.mil/history/webcutters/LCI_92.pdf)>, Retrieved 2014 08 02
41. Justin, John, *Miller, Victor J. "Baseplate", Sgt., Co. E, 5th Ranger Battalion, U.S.A.*
42. O'Donnell, Patrick K., *Beyond Valor: World War II's Rangers and Airborne Veterans Reveal the Heart of Combat*, Gale Group, September 28, 2001, ISBN-13: 9780786234332

## CHAPTER 17 – D-DAY: OVER THE TOP

1. German 352nd DI -Lt Colonel Ziegelmann, Journal of telephone transcripts of reports received and sent by the 352nd German Infantry Division during the Normandy landings, Excerpt from the interview of the Chief of Staff of the German 352nd Infantry Division, (NARA)
2. *Carl Weast* file, The Peter Kalikow World War II Collection
3. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Weast, Carl F., PFC, Box 10, Folder 57.
4. CMH Pub 100-11-1
5. Historical Division, War Department, American Forces in Action Series, *Small Unit Actions, France: 2d Ranger Battalion at Pointe du Hoc*, April 4, 1946, CMH Pub 100-14, United States Army Center of Military History
6. Raaen, *Sir, The Rangers Have Landed Intact*, 1981
7. Graves, Chapter 5
8. Free Vierville website maintained by the Village of Vierville sur Mer, France <<http://vierville.free.fr/572-DeStrBatPriveesBourgHameaux.htm>>, Retrieved 2014 08 03. Note, the parent of this website is very authoratative in terms of documented records from the war and served as a go to resource <<http://vierville.free.fr>>
9. Milano, Vince and Bruce Conner, Chapter 6
10. Raaen, *Intact*, Chapters 8 & 9
11. Coquart, E., P. Huet and Albin Michel
12. Ambrose , Stephen E., *D-Day: June 6, 1944: The Climactic Battle of World War II*, Simon & Schuster, 1994, pg 457
13. Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH, Cornelius Ryan Collection, Corporal Ralph E Davis, Box 10.

## CHAPTER 18 – BATTLE, RECOVERY, REPLACEMENTS AND REFIT

1. Raaen, *Intact*, pg 98
2. Balkoski, *Omaha Beach*
3. “St. Lô”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 8 Jul. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
4. Balkoski, Joseph, *Beyond the Beachhead, The 29th Infantry Division in Normandy*, Stackpole Books, 1989, pg 163
5. CMH Pub 100-11-1
6. “HMS Glasgow (C21)”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 3 Jul. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
7. “Frank D. Peregory”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 11 Jun. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
8. Black, *The Battalion*, Chapter 6, pg 152
9. Hatfield, pg 158
10. Prince, Chapter 1, *D-Day*
11. Glassman, pg 28
12. Géoportail, French Government mapping website, <<http://www.geoportail.gouv.fr/accueil>>, Retrieved 2014 08 03
13. “Foucarville”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 21 Feb. 2013. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
14. Kaufmann, J. E. and Kaufmann, H.W., *The American GI in Europe in World War II, The Battle in France*, 2010, pg 375.
15. Gunnarsson, Sr, Robert L, *American Military Police in Europe, 1945-1991 Unit Histories*
16. Kennedy, Dave, History of the 552 Military Police Company Begins at Fort Custer, Michigan, <<http://www.552militarypolice.com/WorldWar2/index.html>>, Retrieved 2014 08 03
17. Evening Sentinel Shenandoah, Iowa, July 3, 1944, In Charge of Prisoners in Normandy, (printed with permission), now called: The Valley News - Shenandoah, Iowa, Shenandoah, IA, 2014 BH Media Group Holdings, Inc., <<http://www.valleynewstoday.com/>>, Retrieved 2014 08 03
18. “Gréville-Hague”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 25 Jul. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
19. Schneider, pg 104-119
20. Black, *Rangers of World War II*, pg 217-228
21. Wiborg, Erik, 99<sup>th</sup> Infantry Battalion (Separate), <<http://www.99battalion.org/>>, Retrieved 2014 08 03
22. Anderson, Rich, US Army in World War II, Artillery and AA Artillery, <<http://www.militaryhistoryonline.com/wwii/usarmy/artillery.aspx>>, Retrieved 2014 08 03
23. “Diélette”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 1 Jun. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
24. “Alderney”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 7 Aug. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
25. “Flamanville”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 1 Jun. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
26. Bllumenson, Martin, *United States Army in World War II, European Theater of Operations, Breakout and Pursuit*, Map VI, 1961, Center Of Military History United States Army, Washington, D.C., <<http://www.ibiblio.org/hyperwar/USA/USA-E-Breakout/maps/USA-E-Breakout-VI.jpg>>, Retrieved 2014 08 03
27. “Les Moitiers-d'Allonne”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 22 Feb. 2013. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.



28. WWII Letters to Wilma, 2 August 1944 letter from Greg to Wilma, <<http://wwii-letters-to-wilma.blogspot.com/2011/08/02-august-1944.html>>, Retrieved 2014 08 03
29. Kaplan, Alice, Dr., *The Interpreter*, August 30, 2005, Free Press, New York, ISBN 0-7432-5424-4, Chapters 14-18

## CHAPTER 19 – BATTLE FOR BREST: FORT DE TOULBROC'H

1. “Britanny”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 15 Aug. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
2. Battlefieldsww2, France, U-boat base Brest, < [http://www.battlefieldsww2.com/Brest\\_u-boat\\_bunker.html](http://www.battlefieldsww2.com/Brest_u-boat_bunker.html)>, Retrieved 2014-08-16
3. Helgason, Gudmundur, *U-boat Bases, Brest France*, 2014, Iceland <<http://uboat.net/flotillas/bases/brest.htm>>, Retrieved 2014-08-16
4. Balkoski, Joseph, *From Beachhead to Brittany: The 29th Infantry Division at Brest, August to September 1944*, Chapter 2
5. Skylighters, Photo of the Week, The World War II Photo of the Week for 20 August 2001, Hell in the Hedgerows..., <<http://www.skylighters.org/photos/pow08202001.html>>, Retrieved 2014-08-16
6. Flames of War, Indianhead: The US 2nd Infantry Division in France June-September 1944, <[http://www.flamesofwar.com/hobby.aspx?art\\_id=2401](http://www.flamesofwar.com/hobby.aspx?art_id=2401)>, Retrieved 2014-08-16
7. Bllumenson, Martin, *United States Army in World War II, European Theater of Operations, Breakout and Pursuit; Chapter XXX, The Battle for Brest; 1961*, Center Of Military History United States Army, Washington, D.C., <<http://www.ibiblio.org/hyperwar/USA/USA-E-Breakout/USA-E-Breakout-30.html>>, Retrieved 2014-08-16
8. Black, *The Battalion*, Chapter 8
9. Floch, Henri & Alain Le Berre, *L'enfer de Brest* (Hell of Brest), Heimdal Publishing, Chapter 2
10. “Fort de Toulbroc'h”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 10 Mar. 2013. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
11. Documentation Centre of the Inventory of Cultural Heritage, Furniture and architectural heritage in Brittany, *Glad, Le portail des patrimoines de Bretagne*, (Glad Portal heritages of Britain), , Brittany region / Inventory of cultural heritage, <<http://patrimoine.region-bretagne.fr/>>, Retrieved 2014-08-16
12. Chazette, Alain, Andris Kursietis and Jason Pipes, *Feldgrau.com - research on the German armed forces 1918-1945, Organization of the Kriegsmarine in the West 1940-45*, <<http://www.feldgrau.com/articles.php?ID=38>>, Retrieved 2014-08-16
13. Biography John Hemstreet, 11th Field Artillery, September 1944, <[http://www.louishensgens.com/hemstreet/?page\\_id=19](http://www.louishensgens.com/hemstreet/?page_id=19)>, Retrieved 2014-08-
14. Gawne, Jonathan, The 8th Infantry Division Archives, The 8th In Brittany, Web, 2010, <[http://www.fatherswar.com/8thinfdiv/WW2/ww2\\_8thgeneralinfo/8th\\_in\\_Brittany.html](http://www.fatherswar.com/8thinfdiv/WW2/ww2_8thgeneralinfo/8th_in_Brittany.html)>, Retrieved 2014-08-16
15. Ewing, Joseph H., *Let's Go: A History of the 29th Infantry Division In World War II*, Washington Infantry Journal Press, 1948
16. Bllumenson, Martin, *United States Army in World War II, European Theater of Operations, Breakout and Pursuit; Chapter Map XIV. Battle for Brest, 25 August-18 September 1944*, 1961, Center Of Military History United States Army, Washington, D.C., <<http://www.ibiblio.org/hyperwar/USA/USA-E-Breakout/maps/USA-E-Breakout-XIV.jpg>>, Retrieved 2014-08-16
17. Delaforce, Patrick, *Smashing the Atlantic Wall: The Destruction of Hitler's Coastal Fortresses*, November 30, 2005, Pen & Sword, ISBN 1844152561
18. “S-mine”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 17 Jun. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
19. “Republic P-47 Thunderbolt”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 14 Aug. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
20. Abbott, Jr, Major William B., *LOOK AT THE ANGELS; The story of tactical air power in the battle of Western Europe*, U.S. Army, Ninth Air Force, Headquarters, 9 May 1945, Page 47-48, <[http://www.ianabbott.com/images/Look\\_At\\_The\\_Angels.pdf](http://www.ianabbott.com/images/Look_At_The_Angels.pdf)> Retrieved 2014-08-16
21. “Battle for Brest”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 22 May. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.

## CHAPTER 20 – EVACUATION AND LOSS

1. Batens, Alain S., and Ben C. Major, WWII U.S. Medical Research Centre, *108th Evacuation Hospital, Unit History*, <<http://www.med-dept.com/unit-histories/108th-evacuation-hospital/>>, Retrieved 2014-08-16
2. “Debridement”, Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 10 Aug. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.
3. Olive-Drab, Military Medicine, Combat Treatment, Treatment WWII, WWII Medical Treatment, {[http://olive-drab.com/od\\_medical\\_treatment\\_ww2.php](http://olive-drab.com/od_medical_treatment_ww2.php)>, Retrieved 2014-08-16
4. Harrington, Stan, blog. "*Wayne Baker - - WW II Experiences*" from the Baker family in Lincoln, Nebraska. This document is a detailed diary of the experiences of my Great Uncle Wayne Baker accounting from the time he went into the Army in March 1942 to October 1945, <<http://harritage.blogspot.com/2009/03/invasion-of-normany.html>>, Retrieved 2014-08-16
5. University of Portsmouth, *A Vision of Britain Through Time*, Historical Maps, Ordnance Survey Popular and New Popular Editions, 2009,

<[http://visionofbritain.org.uk/maps/results.jsp?xCenter=3200000&yCenter=3150000&scale=63360&mapLayer=europe&subLayer=new\\_pop&title=Ordnance%20Survey%20Popular%20and%20New%20Popular%20Editions.](http://visionofbritain.org.uk/maps/results.jsp?xCenter=3200000&yCenter=3150000&scale=63360&mapLayer=europe&subLayer=new_pop&title=Ordnance%20Survey%20Popular%20and%20New%20Popular%20Editions.)>, Retrieved 2014-08-16

6. Batens, Alain S., and Ben C. Major, WWII U.S. Medical Research Centre, *74th General Hospital, Unit History*, <<http://www.med-dept.com/unit-histories/74th-general-hospital/>>, Retrieved 2014-08-16
7. "Willowbrook State School", Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 9 Aug. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.

## CHAPTER 21 – MY JOURNEY TO FIND A LOST RANGER

1. Roosevelt, President Franklin D., Radio Address, "*The Arsenal of Democracy*", This slogan was delivered by FDR in a radio broadcast from Washington on December 29, 1940. The full statement was "We must be the great arsenal of democracy. For us this is an emergency as serious as war itself. We must apply ourselves to our task with the same resolution, the same sense of urgency, the same spirit of patriotism and sacrifice, as we would show were we at war."
2. The U.S. National Archives and Records Administration, The 1973 Fire, National Personnel Records Center, <<http://www.archives.gov/st-louis/military-personnel/fire-1973.html>>, Retrieved 2014-08-16
3. National Personnel Records Center fire", Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia. Wikimedia Foundation, Inc., 18 Jul. 2014. Web. 15 Aug. 2014.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

Abbott, Jr, Major William B., *LOOK AT THE ANGELS; The story of tactical air power in the battle of Western Europe*, U.S. Army, Ninth Air Force, Headquarters, 9 May 1945

Altieri, James, *The Spearheaders*, 1960, The Popular Library, New York

Ambrose, Stephen E., *D-Day June 6, 1944: The Climactic Battle of World War II*, 1994, Simon & Schuster, New York, ISBN 0-671-67334-3

Ambrose, Stephen E., *The Victors, The Men of World War II*, 1998, Pocket Books, ISBN 978-1-84739-764-5

Balkoski, Joseph, *Beyond the Beachhead, The 29<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division in Normandy*, Mechanicsburg, PA: Stackpole Books, 1989, ISBN 0-7394-0328-1

Balkoski, Joseph, *From Beachhead to Brittany: The 29th Infantry Division at Brest, August to September 1944*, 2008, Stackpole Books, Mechanicsburg, PA, ISBN0-8117-0325-8

Balkoski, Joseph, *Omaha Beach, D-Day, June 6, 1944*, 2004, Stackpole Books, Mechanicsburg, PA, ISBN 0-8117-3376-9

Badsey, Stephen, *D-Day, From the Normandy Beaches to the Liberation of France*, 1993, Colour Library Books Ltd., Godalming, Surrey, ISBN 1-85833-095-5

Badsey, Stephen, *Normandy, 1944; Allied Landings and Breakout*, (Campaign Series 1), 1990, Osprey Publishing, Ltd., United Kingdom

Bates, Charles C., Lt. Colonel, U.S. Air Force (Retired), *Sea, Swell And Surf Forecasting For D-Day And Beyond, The Anglo-American Effort, 1943-1945*, Unpublished, 2010,

Beck, Alfred M., et al, *United States Army in World War II, Technical Services, Cross Channel Invasion, & The Corps Of Engineers: The War Against Germany*, (CMH Pub 10-22), 1985

Beevor, Anthony, *D-Day, The Battle for Normandy*, 2009, Penguin Books, New York, ISBN 978-0-670-02119-2

Becker, Captain Marshall O., *The Amphibious Training Center. Study No. 22*. Washington DC: Army Ground Forces—Historical Section, 1946

Bernage, Georges, *Omaha Beach*, 2002, Heimdal, Bayeux, France, ISBN 978-2-84048-287-1

Black, Robert W., *Rangers In World War II*; 1992, New York: Ballantine, Presidio Press, an imprint of the Random House Publishing Group, ISBN 0-8041-0565-0

Black, Robert W., *The Battalion, The Dramatic Story of the 2<sup>nd</sup> Ranger Battalion in WWII*, Mechanicsburg, PA: Stackpole Books, 2006

Black, Robert W., *The Ranger Force, Darby's Rangers in World War II*, 2009, Stackpole Books, Mechanicsburg, PA, ISBN 978-0-8117-052109

Bliven, Jr., Bruce, *Invasion, The Story of D-Day*, 1956, Random House, 2007, Flying Point Press, New York, ISBN 978-1-4027-4141-8

Blumenson, Martin, *United States Army in World War II, European Theater of Operations, Breakout and Pursuit; Chapter XXX, The Battle for Brest*; 1961, Center Of Military History United States Army, Washington, D.C. (CMH 7-5-1)

Botting, Douglas, *The D-Day Invasion*, 1978, Time Life Books, Alexandria, Virginia, ISBN 0-7835-5701-9

Bradley, Michael R., *Reveille To Taps, Camp Forrest, TN, 1940 --- 1946*, USAF

Brinkley, Douglas, *The Boys of Pointe Du Hoc, Ronald Reagan, D-Day, and the U.S. Army 2<sup>nd</sup> Ranger Battalion*, Harper Collins, New York, ISBN 0-06-056527-6



THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

- Brown, James D., and Michael Green, *War Stories of D-Day: Operation overlord: June 6, 1944*, 2009, Zenith Press, Minneapolis, MN, ISBN 978-0-7603-3669-4
- Bull, Dr. Stephen, *World War II Infantry Tactics; Company and Battalion*, (Elite 122), 2005, Osprey Publishing, Ltd., United Kingdom
- Bull, Dr. Stephen, *World War II Infantry Tactics; Squad and Platoon*, (Elite 105), 2004, Osprey Publishing, Ltd., United Kingdom
- Bull, Dr. Stephen, *World War II Street-Fighting Tactics*, (Elite 168), 2008, Osprey Publishing, Ltd., United Kingdom
- California Center for Military History, *Images of America, Camp San Luis Obispo*, 2004, Arcadia Publishing, San Francisco, ISBN 0-7385-2915-X
- Chief of Combined Operations, *Combined Operations Pamphlet No 24, Cliff Assaults*, August 1944, United Kingdom
- Chief of Combined Operations, *The Combined Operations Staff Notebook*, BR 1293, United Kingdom
- Collins, Fran & Martin Collins, *The Friendly Invasion of Leominster, An account of the U.S. Military units billeted around Leominster, Herefordshire, 1943-1945*, 2012, Brewin Books, Studley, Warwickshire, UK, ISBN 978-1-85858-493-5
- Coquart, E., and Philippe Huet, *Le Jour Le Plus Fou, 6 juin 1944, les civils dans la tourmente*, ("The most Crazy Day"), 1994, Albin Michel, ISBN 2226069291, (French)
- Coughlin, Fran & Lou Lisko, "5<sup>th</sup> Ranger D-Day Mission in Normandy, Col. Max Schneider, Commanding", Ranger Battalions Assn., World War II
- Craven, Wesley Frank & James Lea Cate, *The Army Air Forces in World War II, Volume II, Europe: Torch to Pointblank, August 1942 to December 1943*, Office of Air Force History, 1951
- Damon, Robert, *Handbook to the Geology of Weymouth and the Island of Portland: With Notes*, William Clowes and Sons, London, 1884
- Darby, William O. (Colonel), *Darby's Rangers, We Led the Way*, 1980, Presidio Press, New York, ISBN 0-345-46553-9
- Delaforce, Patrick, *Smashing the Atlantic Wall: The Destruction of Hitler's Coastal Fortresses*, November 30, 2005, Pen & Sword, ISBN 1844152561
- Diehl, Lorraine B, *Over Here! New York City During World War II*, 2010, Smithsonian, ISBN 0061431346
- Dwyer, John Barry, *SCOUTS AND RAIDERS*, 1993, Praeger, ISBN 0-275-94409-3
- European Theater of Operations, United States Army, Preparation for Overseas Movement, Short Sea Voyage; 10 Jan 44, Commanding General ETOUSA
- Ewing, Joseph H., *29 Let's GO! A History of the 29<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division in World War II*, 1948, Infantry Journal Inc., ISBN 0-89839-018-4
- Floch, Henri & Le Berre, Alain, *L'enfer De Brest*, 2001, Heimdal, ISBN 2-84048-144-8, (French)
- Forty, George, *Fortress Europe, Hitler's Atlantic Wall*, 2002, Ian Allan Printing Ltd, Hersham, Surrey ISBN 0-7110-2769-2
- Forty, George, *Frontline Dorset: A County at War, 1939-45*, Dorset Books, June 1994
- François, Dominique, *Normandy, Breaching the Atlantic Wall From D-Day to the Breakout and Liberation*, 2008, Zenith Press, ISBN 978-0-7603-3327-3
- Garland, Albert N. (Col), Howard McGaw Smyth and Martin Blumenson, *United States Army in World War II, The Mediterranean Theater of Operations, Sicily and the Surrender of Italy*, 1965, Office of the Chief of Military History, Department of the Army
- Gawne, Jonathan, *1944, Americans in Brittany, The Battle for Brest*, 2002, Historie & Collections, Paris, ISBN 2-913903-21-5

- Gawne, Jonathan, *Finding Your Father's War, A Practical Guide to Researching and Understanding Service in the World War II US Army*, 2006, Casemate, Drexel Hill, PA, ISBN 1-932033-14-9
- Gawne, Jonathan, *Spearheading D-Day, American Special Units in Normandy*, 2001, Historic & Collections, Paris, ISBN 2-908-182-793
- Glassman, Henry S., "Lead the Way, Rangers", *History of the Fifth Ranger Battalion*; Markt Grafing, Bavaria: Buchdruckerei Hauser, 1945, Originally Printed in Germany, Ranger Associates, Incorporated
- Going, Chris & Alun Jones, *Above the Battle, D-Day, The Lost Evidence*, 2004, C'recy Publishing Limited, ISBN 0-8597-097-5
- Goldstein, Donald M., Dillon, Katherine V., & Wenger, J. Michael, *D-Day, Normandy, The Story and the Photographs*, 1994, Brassey's Inc., Herndon, Virginia, ISBN 1-57488-023-3
- Gooding, Ed, Robert Nieman and Bob Mitchell, *Ed Gooding: Soldier, Texas Ranger*, 2001, Ranger Publishing, Longview Texas, ISBN 0967331919
- Graves, Garry M.; *A Biography of a D-Day Soldier, Bloody Omaha, My Remembrances of That Day by James Robert Copeland, S/Sgt. – Company B, 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion.*; GGA Publishing, 2010
- Greenfield, Kent Roberts, Robert R Palmer and Bell I. Wiley, *The United States Army in World War II, The Army Ground Forces, The Organization of Ground Combat Troops*, 1947, Department of the Army, Historical Division
- Greenfield, Kent Roberts, *The United States Army in World War II, Pictorial Record, The War Against Germany and Italy: Mediterranean and Adjacent Areas*, 1951, Department of the Army, Historical Division
- Guderian, Heinz, Fritz Kraemer, Fritz Ziegelmann and Freiherr von Lüttwitz, et al, Edited by David Isby, *Fighting in Normandy: The German Army from D-Day to Villers-Bocage*, 2001, Greenhill Books, London, ISBN 1-85367-460-5
- Gulbranson, C., Captain, USN, Commanding, *Hand to Hand Combat for Amphibious Scouts, United States Naval Amphibious Training Base, Ft. Pierce, Florida*, August 1, 1945, Training Aids Office for Amphibious Scouts
- Haggerty, Jerome Joseph, *A History of the Ranger Battalions in World War II*, 1982, Fordham University, University Microfilms International, Ann Arbor, MI, (In USACMH collections)
- Harley, Jeffrey S., Maj, USA, *Reading the Enemy's Mail: Origins and Development of U.S. Army Tactical Radio Intelligence in World War II, European Theater of Operations*, 1980, 1993. Old Dominion University, Norfolk, Virginia, Fort Leavenworth, KS
- Harrison, Gordon A, *Cross Channel Attack, United States Army In World War II, The European Theater of Operations*, United States Army Center of Military History, (CMH Pub 7-4-1), 1951
- Harth, Stan, Liz Krieger and Dan Krieger, *War Comes to the Middle Kingdom, Vol 1, 1939-1942*, 1991, San Luis Obispo County Historical Society, EZ Nature Books, San Luis Obispo California, ISBN 0-945092-24-5
- Hatfield, Kenneth K., *Heartland Heroes: Remembering World War II*, 2003, University of Missouri, ISBN 0826214606
- Hatfield, Thomas M., *Rudder, From Leader to Legend*, Texas A&M University Press, College Station, Texas, 2011
- Hathaway, Jr., Richard N., *Training For Bloody Omaha*, 2002, Vantage Press, ISBN: 0-533-14215-6
- Henry, Mark and Mike Chappell, *The US Army in World War II (1): The Pacific, Volume 1*, Men-at-Arms (Book 342), 2000, Osprey Publishing, ISBN 1855329956
- Hogan, David W., *Raiders or Elite Infantry?: The Changing Role of the U.S. Army Rangers from Dieppe to Grenada* (Contributions in Military Studies), Praeger, 1992, ISBN 0313268037
- Hogan, David W., *Raiders or Elite Infantry?: The Changing Role of the U.S. Army Rangers from Dieppe to Grenada* (Contributions in Military Studies), Praeger, 1992, ISBN 0313268037
- Hogan, Jr., David W., *U.S. Army Special Operations in World War II, Department of the Army*, CMH Publication 70-42, 1992

## THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

- Howard, Peter, *Secret Operations, Pointe du Hoc*, 2006, Ian Allan Publishing, Dorset, England, ISBN 0-7110-3095-2
- Isby, David C., *The German Army at D-Day, Fighting the Invasion*, 2004, Greenhill Books, London, ISBN 1-85367-605-5
- Jones, Lt. Clifford L., *The Administrative And Logistical History Of The ETO, Part VI, NEPTUNE: Training, Mounting, The Artificial Ports*, Historical Division, United States Army Forces, European Theater, March 1946
- Kaiser, Fred, *A Teenager's View of World War II; The Adventures of a Young Airman in the Army Air Force; 1942 to 1945*, 2003, iUniverse, inc., ISBN 0595274625
- Kaplan, Alice, Dr., *The Interpreter*, August 30, 2005, Free Press, New York, ISBN 0-7432-5424-4
- Kaufmann, J. E. and Kaufmann, H.W., *The American GI in Europe in World War II, D-Day: Storming Ashore*, 2009, Stackpole Books, Mechanicsburg, PA, ISBN 978-0-8117-0449-6
- Kaufmann, J. E. and Kaufmann, H.W., *The American GI in Europe in World War II, The Battle in France*, 2010, Stackpole Books, Mechanicsburg, PA, ISBN 978-0-8117-0449-6
- Kaufmann, J. E. and Kaufmann, H.W., *The American GI in Europe in World War II: The March to D-Day*, 2009, Stackpole Books, Mechanicsburg, PA, ISBN 978-0-8117-0449-6
- Kershaw, Robert J., *D-Day, Piercing the Atlantic Wall*, 1994, Naval Institute Press, ISBN 1-55750-151-3
- King, Dr. Michael J. *Leavenworth Papers No. 11, Rangers: Selected Combat Operations in World War II*. Combat Studies Institute, U.S. Army Command and General Staff College. 1985.
- Knox, (CPT), USA, *A Study of Ranger Units in World War II and Korea: An Analysis of Their Successes and Failures*, 1961, Chemical Officer Career Course, Historical Study, U.S. Army Chemical Corps School, Fort McClellan, Alabama
- Lane, Ronald L., *The 2<sup>nd</sup> United States Ranger Battalion, Rudder's Rangers, The True Story of the 2<sup>nd</sup> Ranger Battalion D-Day Combat Action*, Ranger Associates, Inc, Longwood Florida, 1979
- Lock, John D. (Major), *To Fight With Intrepidity... The Complete History of the U.S. Army Rangers 1622 to Present*, 1998, Pocket Books, New York, ISBN 0-671-01528-1
- Marshall, S.L.A., *Battle at Best*, 1963, Jove Books, New York, ISBN 0-515-10127-3
- McManus, John C., *The Americans at Normandy: The Summer of 1944--The American War from the Normandy Beaches to Falaise*, August 25, 2005, Forge Books, ISBN 076531200X
- Messenger, Charles, *The Chronological Atlas of World War Two*, 1989, Macmillan Publishing Company, New York, ISBN 0-02-584391-5
- Milano, Vince and Bruce Conner, *NORMANDIEFRONT: D-Day to Saint-Lo Through German Eyes*, 2011, The History Press, Stroud, Gloucestershire, ISBN 978-0-7524-7145-7
- Miller, Edward G., *Nothing Less Than Full Victory, Americans at War in Europe, 1944-1945*, 2007, Naval Institute Press, Annapolis Maryland, ISBN 1-59114-494-9
- Miltonberger, Major General Butler B, & Major James A. Huston, Assistant Professor of History, Purdue University, *134<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment: Combat History of World War II*, 1946
- Nance, Benjamin C., Tennessee Department of Environment and Conservation, Division of Archaeology, *Report of Investigations No. 13, An Archaeological Survey of World War II Military Sites in Tennessee*, 2007
- Naval Research Laboratory; Washington, DC 20375-5320 NRL/PU/6110--98-372; *MTADS MAPPING AND ORDNANCE INVESTIGATION AT THE FORMER FT. PIERCE AMPHIBIOUS BASE VERO BEACH, FLORIDA*, March 1998; Supported by The US Army Corps of Engineers Mr. Robert Bridgers, Jacksonville Regional Office
- Nixon, James C., (CPT), USA, *Combined Special Operations in World War II*, 1982, Auburn University, 1993, Fort Leavenworth



Noles, Jr., James L., *Camp Rucker During World War II (AL) (Images of America)*, November 6, 2002, Arcadia Publishing, ISBN-10: 0738514861

O'Donnell, Patrick K., *Beyond Valor: World War II's Rangers and Airborne Veterans Reveal the Heart of Combat*, Gale Group, September 28, 2001, ISBN-13: 9780786234332

O'Donnell, Patrick K., *Dog Company: The Boys of Pointe Du Hoc--the Rangers Who Accomplished D-Day's Toughest Mission and Led the Way Across Europe*, 2012, Da Capo Press, ISBN 0306820293

Office Of History Headquarters Third Air Force United States Air Forces In Europe, *Installations And USAAF Combat Units In The United Kingdom 1942 - 1945*, Revised And Expanded Edition , October 1980

Prince, Morris, PFC, Co A, 2nd Ranger BN, *Overseas, Then Over the Top*; The Command And General Staff College Library, call number: 940.542 P9560, October 21, 1948

Pyle, Paul, Allen Parsons, and Jean Smotherman, *Camp Forrest: Tullahoma, Tennessee, 1941-1946*. Tullahoma: Tullahoma Chamber of Commerce, 1986

Raaen Jr., John C., *INTACT, A First Hand Account of the D-Day Invasion From a 5<sup>th</sup> Rangers Company Commander*, 2012, Reedy Press, ISBN 978-1-935806-27-1

Raaen, Jr., John C., *Sir, The Rangers Have Landed Intact; A Story of D-Day And of The 5<sup>th</sup> Rangers*, U.S. Army Military History Institute, 1981, unpublished

Ranger Battalions Association WWII, 27<sup>th</sup> Biennial Reunion, "Rangers Lead The Way", *5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, a short history*, 2001, New Orleans, Louisiana

Rottman, Gordon L.; *German Field Fortifications 1939-45*, (Fortress 023), 2004, Osprey Publishing, Ltd., United Kingdom

Rottman, Gordon L.; *U.S. Army Rangers & LRRP Units 1942-87*; (Elite Series No. 13); 1997, Osprey Publishing, Ltd., United Kingdom, ISBN 0-85045-795-5

Rottman, Gordon L., *World War II Combat Reconnaissance Tactics* (Elite 156), 2007, Osprey Publishing, Ltd., United Kingdom

Rottman, Gordon L., *World War II Infantry Anti-Tank Tactics* (Elite 124), 2005, Osprey Publishing, Ltd., United Kingdom

Rottman, Gordon L., *World War II Infantry Assault Tactics*, (Elite 160), 2008, Osprey Publishing, Ltd., United Kingdom

Runde, Richard J., (Maj), USA, *The Intelligence and Reconnaissance Platoon, 1935-1965: Lost in Time*, 1981, 1994, Saint Norbert College, DePere, Wisconsin, Fort Leavenworth, KS

Ruppenthal, Ronald G., *U.S. Army in World War II; European Theater of Operations; Volume I, Logistical Support of the Armies: May 1941-September 1944*, United States Army Center of Military History, CMH Pub 7-2-1, 1995

Rush, Robert S., *US Infantryman in World War II (2): Mediterranean Theater of Operations 1942-45*, 2002, Osprey Publishing, Oxford, UK

Ryan, Cornelius, *The Longest Day*, 1959, Simon and Schuster, New York, ISBN 1-84022-212-3

Sawyer, L.A., and William Harry Mitchell, *Victory Ships and Tankers: The History of the "Victory" Type Cargo Ships and of the Tankers Built in the United States of America During World War II*, David & Charles , January 24, 1974, ISBN-10: 0715360361

Sayen, John, *US Army Infantry Divisions 1942-43*, (Battle Orders 17), 2006, Osprey Publishing, United Kingdom

Sayen, John, *US Army Infantry Divisions 1944-45*, (Battle Orders 24), 2007, Osprey Publishing, United Kingdom

Schneider, James F, *My Father's War, The Story of Max Ferguson Schneider, A Ranger Commander*, Lulu, Boise, Idaho, ISBN 978-1-300-78304-6, 2012

## THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

- Sides, Hampton, *Ghost Soldiers, The Epic Account of World War II's Greatest Rescue Mission*, 2001, Anchor Books, New York, ISBN 0-385-495-65-X
- Sinton, S. & R Hargis, *World War II Medal of Honor Recipients (2) Army & Air Corps, (Elite 95)*, 2003, Osprey Publishing, Ltd., United Kingdom
- Slaughter, J. Robert, *Wartime Memories of J. Robert Slaughter And Selected Men of the 116<sup>th</sup> Infantry, 29<sup>th</sup> Division, 1941-1945*, 1988
- Stewart, Jeff R., (Maj) USA, *The Ranger Force at The Battle of Cisterna*, 1993, Western Oregon State College, Monmouth, Oregon, Fort Leavenworth, KS, 2004
- Stroman, Samuel D., (CPT), USA, *Marching Fire*, 1955-1956, Advanced Infantry Officers Course
- Taylor, Lt. Colonel Charles H., U.S. Army Historical Section Headquarters, European Theater of Operations, *War Department Notes*, Volumes 1 and 2, November 11, 1944
- Taylor, Thomas H and Robert J. Martin, *Rangers, Lead the Way*,
- Taylor, Robert A., *World War II in Fort Pierce (Images of America: Florida)*, August 1, 1999, Arcadia Publishing, ISBN-10: 0738501344
- Thompson, R. W., *D-Day: Spearhead of Invasion*, 1968, Simon & Schuster, ISBN 0-671-06624-2
- U.S. Air Force, *Bibliography of Documents Prepared by Weather Staff Sections of Headquarters Army Air Corps and Headquarters Army Air Forces, 1937-June 1945*, April 1, 1961, Air Weather Service, AWSP 0-18/2A
- U.S. Army, 320th Public Relations Office, *STORY OF THE 320TH INFANTRY*, Published in Hameln, Germany, June 6, 1945
- U.S. Army Aviation Center, Office of the Adjunct General, U.S. *Army Aviation Center, Fort Rucker, Alabama, Home of the United States Army Aviation School, History; 1954-1964*, 1965, Fort Rucker, Alabama
- United States Army, Infantry Division, 35<sup>th</sup>, *Presenting The 35th Infantry Division In World War II 1941-1945* (Divisional Series), 1946, Battery Press Inc., ISBN-10: 0898391121, ISBN-13: 978-0898391121
- United States Army, Center Of Military History, *United States Army In World War II; The European Theater of Operations, The Supreme Command*, by Forrest C. Pogue, 1989, Washington, D.C. (CMH 7-1)
- United States Army, Center Of Military History, *United States Army In World War II; The Procurement and Training of Ground Combat Troops*, 1991, Washington, D.C. (CMH 2-2)
- United States Army, Center Of Military History, *United States Army In World War II; The Technical Services The Transportation Corps: Movements, Training, And Supply*; by: Chesler Wardlow, 1990; Washington, D.C., Library of Congress Catalog Card Number 55-60003, First Printed 1956- (CMH Pub 10-20)
- United States Army, Center of Military History, *United States Army in World War II; Pictorial Record, The War Against Germany: Europe and Adjacent Areas*, 1989, Washington, D.C. (CMH 12-3)
- United States Army, Center of Military History, *Utah Beach to Cherbourg; 6-27 June 1944*, 1990, Washington, D.C. (CMH 100-12)
- United States Army, Army Ground Forces, Historical Section, *History of the Fourth Army, Study No. 18*, AD-A954 908
- Army Service Forces Manual, (M-201), *Induction Station and Reception Center Operation*, August 1943
- Army Regulations (AR):  
    (AR) 345-400, *Military Records*, (May 1943)  
    (AR) 615-30, *Enlisted Men Army Serial Numbers*, (12 Feb 1942)  
    (AR) 615-40, *Enlisted Personnel Clothing and Equipage* (1943)  
    (AR) 615-500, *Enlisted Men, Reception of Selective Service and Enlisted Men* (1942)
- Army Training Manual (TM) 12-427, *Military Occupational Classification of Enlisted Personnel* dated July 12, 1944

United States Army, *Ranger Handbook* (SH 21-76), July 2006, Ranger Training Brigade, United States Army Infantry School, Fort Benning, Georgia,

USACE: *Military Training Lands Historic Context: Large Arms Ranges*: Dan Archibald, Adam Smith, Sunny Adams, and Manroop Chawla, March 2010, ERDC/CERL TR-10-8

USACE: *Military Training Lands Historic Context: Miscellaneous Training Sites*: Dan Archibald, Adam Smith, Sunny Adams, and Manroop Chawla, March 2010, ERDC/CERL TR-10-9

USACE: *Military Training Lands Historic Context: Small Arms Ranges*: Dan Archibald, Adam Smith, Sunny Adams, and Manroop Chawla, March 2010, ERDC/CERL TR-10-11

USACE: *Military Training Lands Historic Context: Training Village, Mock Sites, and Large Scale Operations Areas*: Dan Archibald, Adam Smith, Sunny Adams, and Manroop Chawla, March 2010, ERDC/CERL TR-10-10

United States Army, Office of the Theater Historian, *Order of Battle of the United States Army, World War II, European Theater of Operations, Divisions*, 25 Jan 1946, Paris, France

United States Code (U.S.C.) Title 32: National Defense, Part 578 and implementing Code of Federal Regulations (CFR) found at: 32 CFR 578

U. S. Department Of Commerce, *United States Coast Pilot, Atlantic Coast, Section B, Cape Cod To Sandy Hook, , Coast And Geodetic Survey, Serial No. 627*, Fourth (1940) Edition

War Department, Army Field Manuals:

- (FM 5-31) *Land Mines and Booby Traps*, November 1943
- (FM 7-5) *Infantry Field Manual, Organization and Tactics of Infantry, The Rifle Battalion*, 1940
- (FM 7-15) *Heavy Weapons Company, Rifle Regiment*, May 19, 1942
- (FM 7-20) *Infantry Battalion*, October 1944
- (FM 7-25) *Infantry Field Manual, Headquarters Company, Intelligence and Signal Communication, Rifle Regiment*, October 1942
- (FM 7-30) *Supply and Evacuation; The Infantry Regiment; Service Company and Medical Detachment*, June 1944
- (FM 7-40) *Infantry Field Manual; Rifle Regiment*, February 1942
- (FM 8-5) *Medical Field Manual, Mobile Units of the Medical Department*, January 1942
- (FM 8-10) *Medical Field Manual, Medical Service of Field Units*, March 1942
- (FM 8-35) *Medical Field Manual, Transportation of the Sick and Wounded*, February 1941
- (FM 8-45) *Medical Field Manual, Records of Morbidity and Mortality (Sick and Wounded)*, 1940
- (FM 8-50) *Medical Field Manual, Bandaging and Splinting*, January 1944
- (FM 8-55) *Medical Field Manual, Reference Data*, March 1941
- (FM 21-5) *Basic Field Manual, Military Training*, July 1941
- (FM 21-20) *Basic Field Manual, Physical Training*, March 1941
- (FM 21-25) *Basic Field Manual, Elementary Map and Aerial Photograph Reading*, April 1941
- (FM 21-26) *Basic Field Manual, Advanced Map and Aerial Photograph Reading*, September 1941
- (FM 21-30) *Basic Field Manual, Conventional Signs, Military Symbols and Abbreviations*, 1941
- (FM 21-100) *Basic Field Manual, Soldier's Handbook*, 1941
- (FM 23-15) *Basic Field Manual, Browning Automatic Rifle, Caliber .30, M1918A2 With Bipod*, 1940
- (FM 23-35) *Basic Field Manual, Automatic Pistol, Caliber .45, M1911 and M1911A1*, 1940
- (FM 31-30) *Basic Field Manual, Tactics and Technique of Air-Borne Troops*, May 1942

War Department, Historical Division, American Forces in Action Series, *St-Lo, 7 July-19 July 1944*, April 4, 1946, (CMH Pub 100-13), United States Army Center of Military History

War Department, Historical Division, American Forces in Action Series, *Small Unit Actions, France: 2d Ranger Battalion at Pointe du Hoc*, April 4, 1946, (CMH Pub 100-14), United States Army Center of Military History

War Department, Historical Division, *Omaha Beachhead, 6 June – 13 June, 1944*, American Forces in Action Series, September, 1945, GPO, CMH Pub 100-11-1

War Department, Military Intelligence Service, *Special Series No. 15, German Coastal Defenses*, 15 June 1943



## THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

### War Department Army Field Manuals:

(FM 7-15), *Heavy Weapons Company, Rifle Regiment*, May 19, 1942

### War Department Technical Manuals:

(TM 12-221), *Armed Forces Induction Station Operations*, 30 November 1944,

(TM 12 – 223), *Reception Center Operations*, December 20, 1944

(TM 12 -255), *Technical Manual of Administrative Procedures*, November 1, 1942

(TM 12-427), *Military Occupational Classification of Enlisted Personnel* dated July 12, 1944

(TM E 30-451), *Handbook on German Military Forces*, 15 March 1945, Reprinted by Louisiana State University Press 1990

Wasch, Diana Shaw, Perry Bush, Keith Landreth et al, James Glass Ph.D. *World War II and the U.S. Army Mobilization Program: A History of 700 and 800 Series Cantonment Construction*, 1991, Department of Defense Legacy Program

Waterson, Alisse, *My Father's Wars: Migration, Memory, and the Violence of a Century*, 2013, Routledge, New York, ISBN 0415859182

Wiley, Major Bell I., *PREPARATION OF UNITS FOR OVERSEAS MOVEMENT - Study No. 21*, 1946, Historical Section, US Army Ground Forces

Wood, James A., *Army of the West, The Weekly Reports of German Army Group B from Normandy to the West Wall*, 2007, Stackpole Books, ISBN 978-0-8117-3404-2

Wynne, Nick and Richard Moorhead, *Florida in World War Two, Floating Fortresses*, 2010, The History Press, ISBN 1596299290

*Yank*, The Army Weekly Magazine, November 16, 1945, Volume 4, Number 22

Zaloga, Steven J., *D-Day 1944, Omaha and Utah Beaches*, 2005, Osprey Publishing, The History Channel Club, MN, ISBN 978-1-58159-246-7

Zaloga, Steven J., *D-Day Fortifications in Normandy* (Fortress 037), 2005, Osprey Publishing, United Kingdom

Zaloga, Steven J., *Rangers Lead the Way: Pointe-du-Hoc D-Day 1944* (Men-at-Arms), December 20, 2011, Osprey Publishing, United Kingdom

Zaloga, Steven J., *Rangers Lead the Way, Pointe-du-Hoc D-Day 1944*, (Raid 1), 2009, Osprey Publishing, United Kingdom, ISBN 978-1-84603-394-0

Zaloga, Steven J., *The Atlantic Wall (1): France*, (Fortress 063), 2007, Osprey Publishing, United Kingdom

Zaloga, Steven J., *US Airborne Divisions in the ETO 1944-45*, (Battle Orders 25), 2007, Osprey Publishing, United Kingdom

Zaloga, Steven J., *US Armored Divisions; The European Theater of Operations, 1944-45*, (Battle Orders 003), 2004, Osprey Publishing, United Kingdom

Zaloga, Steven J., *US Tank and Tank Destroyer Battalions in the ETO 1944-45*, (Battle Orders 10), 2005, Osprey Publishing, United Kingdom

Zimmerman, Daniel W., *Fort Dix (Images of America)*, September 23, 2001, Arcadia Publishing, ISBN-10: 0738509094

**NATIONAL ARCHIVES AND RECORDS ADMINISTRATION (NARA) RECORDS,  
U.S. ARMY HISTORY AND EDUCATION CENTER (USAHEC) RECORDS AND  
OHIO UNIVERSITY HOLDINGS**

**National Archives and Records Administration (NARA)**

**National Personnel Records Center (NPRC) – St, Louis, Missouri**

1 Archives Drive  
St Louis, MO 63138

Useful records pertaining to the 35<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division and 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion are as follows:

35<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, 320<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment; World War II Company Morning Reports

<b>Date</b>	<b>Microfilm reel number</b>
August, 1943	06170
September, 1943	05120
October, 1943	03249
1940 through 1943	1878

35<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, 320<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment; Army Enlisted Men Roster World War II

<b>Microfilm reel number</b>	<b>Notes</b>
Microfilm Index #13, 0320 INF REGT, Reel 15597	Contained pay records

35<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, 134<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment; Army Enlisted Men Roster World War II

<b>Microfilm reel number</b>
Microfilm Index #13, 0134 INF REGT, Reel 15501

5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion; Army Enlisted Men Roster World War II

<b>Microfilm reel number</b>	<b>Notes</b>
5th RN BN, Reel 15772	Contained pay records Contained initial unit roster

**Sick Books Army:**            5 RN BN 2128, **Microfilm reel number 04296**

5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, World War II Company Morning Reports (0005 Ranger INF BN)

<b>Date</b>	<b>Microfilm reel number</b>
November, 1943	10291
November, 1943	21428
January, 1944	34685
February, 1944	25356
March, 1944	22250
April, 1944	32617
May, 1944	13746
June, 1944	23837
July, 1944	13417
August, 1944	18997
September, 1944	23926
October, 1944	15694
November, 1944	19933
December, 1944	09910 (may be 08910)

## THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, World War II morning reports (0005 Ranger INF BN)

Date	Microfilm reel number
January, 1945	12945
February, 1945	24723
March, 1945	23622
April, 1945	14535
May, 1945	14183
June, 1945	20290
July, 1945	26999
August, 1945	14992
September, 1945	27772
October, 1945	08454

General Orders for the Purple Heart from the microfiche files of the 94<sup>th</sup> General Hospital which is not open to public viewing

### NARA II – College Park, Maryland

The National Archives at College Park,  
Textual Records Unit and Still Pictures Unit  
8601 Adelphi Road  
College Park, MD 20740-6001

#### All World War II Army unit records are found at:

National Archives and Records Administration (NARA), College Park, Record Identification, Entry: 427 WWII Operations Reports 1944-1948

5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion Records are at: [File # INBN-5-0 all boxes], located in boxes 16916-16919

The following unit records were evaluated as part of this work:

- ETOUSA
- 12<sup>th</sup> Army Group
- First U.S. Army
- Third U.S. Army
- V Corps
- VII Corps
- 35<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division
  - 320<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment
  - 134<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment
- 2<sup>nd</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion
- 29<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division
- 552<sup>nd</sup> Military Police Escort Guard (MPEG)
- 99<sup>th</sup> Infantry Battalion (Separate)
- 759<sup>th</sup> Light Tank Battalion
- 4<sup>th</sup> Cavalry Reconnaissance Squadron (Mechanized)
- 24<sup>th</sup> Cavalry Reconnaissance Squadron (Mechanized)
- 196<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion (105 H)
- 18<sup>th</sup> Field Artillery Battalion (105 H)
- 50<sup>th</sup> General Hospital
- 108<sup>th</sup> Evacuation Hospital
- 94<sup>th</sup> General Hospital
- 74<sup>th</sup> General Hospital
- Halloran General Hospital

### U.S. Army Heritage and Education Center (USAHEC)

The USAHEC's Military History Institute (MHI) provides researchers with professional direction and assistance identifying and accessing the Center's resources and services. As an Institute of the U.S. Army, highest priority is given to U.S. Army users, but unofficial visitors and researchers are welcome to utilize the collections. The Institute has many resources available for serious research requiring multiple days to evaluate. Among the more critical resources for Ranger researchers are the:

- John C. Raaen, Jr. papers, 1939-1978, bulk, 1958-1962. OCLC Number: 47905560
- Robert W. Black collection, 1939-1991. OCLC Number 52551401



## Ohio University

Cornelius Ryan Collection, Mahn Center for Archives and Special Collections, Alden Library, Ohio University, Athens, OH,  
Cornelius Ryan Collection, Cornelius Ryan Collection of World War II Papers

The Longest Day, Initial Research, Box 1, Folder 8, Rosters of American personnel

Box 2, Folder 1

Folder 2, Lists and Rosters of Americans

Box 6, 29<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division, Folder 1, AAR, Co C, 116<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment,  
Command Group, 116<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment

Folder 15, General Cota

Box 10, US Rangers – All

Box 14, Navy

Box 16, Air France, Folder 35

Ohio University

Athens, OH 45701-2978

(740) 593-2710

Attention: Doug McKabe, Curator of Manuscripts

## LIST OF FIGURES

1. Figure 1: Handwritten note written by my Mom concerning what she knew about her father's military service through the course of her life. (author's collection)
2. Figure 2: Photo showing uniform of S/Sgt Herbert Hull (author's collection)
3. Figure 3: Photo taken in approximately 1953 of Herbert Hull with children (left to right), Mary Kathleen, Linda and Herbert (author's collection)
4. Figure 4: WS George Pottery Company, East Palestine postcard from early 20<sup>th</sup> century (Public Domain)
5. Figure 5: East Palestine Methodist Church postcard from early 20<sup>th</sup> century (Public Domain)
6. Figure 6: 1978 photo of Akron Ohio U.S. Armed Forces Induction Center (Courtesy, City of Akron Planning Department). Building no longer exists. Site is current location of Akron downtown public library.
7. Figure 7: DSS FORM 150 – Order to Report for Induction, for a new soldier named Carl F. Weast, of Alliance, Ohio4 (Courtesy Mark Weast). This is what was commonly referred to as a “draft notice”. Carl Weast served as Company Messenger, 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company with Herbert Hull
8. Figure 8: 1942 Ohio Division of Highways Map (Ohio Department of Transportation)
9. Figure 9: Induction Center photos: Taken March 28, 2012 at U.S. Army Heritage Trail, USAHEC, Carlisle, Pennsylvania (author's collection)
10. Figure 10: 1950 aerial view of Fort Hayes (Ohio Historical Society)
11. Figure 11: TM 12-223, Reception Center Processing Plan (pg 3)
12. Figure 12: TM 12-223, Layout for Soldier In-processing (pg 48)
13. Figure 13: TM 12-223, Layout for Soldier In-processing (pg 49)
14. Figure 14: TM 12-223, Layout for Soldier In-processing (pg 50)
15. Figure 15: PVT Hull Report of Physical Examination & Induction - DSS Form 221 (author's collection)
16. Figure 16: Union Station, Columbus Ohio postcard from early 20<sup>th</sup> century (Public Domain)
17. Figure 17: State of Missouri tax tokens (author's collection)
18. Figure 18: Union Station, 1945; Missouri Valley Special Collections, Kansas City Public Library, Kansas City, Missouri; <<http://www.kchistory.org/u?/Montgomery.380>>, Barcode 10004348, (Approval to use image received on July 8, 2013)
19. Figure 19: East Palestine, The Daily Leader, January 1943 (author's collection) \*Note, Archives of this newspaper no longer exist for 1943 or 1944. The paper is now known as the East Palestine Morning Journal.
20. Figure 20: Conflagration underway in 1973, Aerial View of MILPERCEN, National Archives (Photos – NARA)
21. Figure 21: U.S. Department of the Interior Geologic Survey, San Luis Obispo, California, Scale: 1:62500, Edition of 1942, <<http://geonames.usgs.gov/apex/f?p=262:18:0::NO:RP::>>, Retrieved 2014 08 08
22. Figure 22: Troop Train Approaching Camp San Luis Obispo - Camp San Luis Obispo Museum, Image 370, (Courtesy San Luis Obispo Museum)
23. Figure 23: Troop Train arriving at Camp San Luis Obispo – Camp San Luis Obispo Museum, Image 298, (Courtesy San Luis Obispo Museum)
24. Figure 24: Herbert Hull's 35th Infantry Division garrison cover (author's collection)
25. Figure 25: Camp San Luis Postcard: (public domain)
26. Figure 26: Typical tar-sided “tent” accommodations for soldiers – Camp San Luis Obispo Museum Image
27. Figure 27: Unit patch, Fourth U.S. Army (I), 35th Infantry Division (C) and 320th Infantry Regiment (R) Crest (U.S. Army Institute of Heraldry)
28. Figure 28: Example of Army Bivouac setup: - Camp San Luis Obispo Museum Image
29. Figure 29: Taken from U.S. Army Heritage Trail, USAHEC, Carlisle, Pennsylvania (author's collection)
30. Figure 30: US Army rifle training of basic trainees: NARA Photo
31. Figure 31: Postcard of Camp San Luis Obispo: - Camp San Luis Obispo Museum Image
32. Figure 32: U.S. Infantry Branch Insignia, enlisted (U.S. Army Institute of Heraldry)
33. Figure 33: 6th Infantry Division training on parade field, close order drill – Camp San Luis Obispo Museum, Image
34. Figure 34: Example of WD AGO Form 20 – Soldier Qualification Card (Source TM 12-223)
35. Figure 35: Camp Rucker Postcards in possession by PVT Hull (author's collection)
36. Figure 36: Stills taken from Troop Train film (1943) Images U.S. Office of War Information
37. Figure 37: U.S. Department of the Interior Geologic Survey, Ozark, Alabama, Scale: 1:62500, Edition of 1948
38. Figure 38: Camp Rucker in 1942. (U.S. Army photo)
39. Figure 39: Heavy Weapons Company organization FM 7-15
40. Figure 40: M1917 Water-cooled heavy machine gun (left) and M1919A Air cooled light machine gun (right) – (public domain)
41. Figure 41: Browning Automatic Rifle - BAR (left) M1 Carbine (middle) and M1911 .45 caliber pistol (right) – (public domain)
42. Figure 42: Flank Guard, Heavy Weapons Company, Rifle Regiment FM 7-15
43. Figure 43: Machine Gun Field of Fire, Heavy Weapons Company, Rifle Regiment FM 7-15

44. Figure 44: Machine Gun Emplacement, Heavy Weapons Company, Rifle Regiment FM 7-15
45. Figure 45: Swimming Instructions – Lake Tholocco – Camp Rucker, Alabama, No. 685, Alabama Department of Archives and History
46. Figure 46: Obstacle Course, Camp Rucker, Alabama, No. 682, Alabama Department of Archives and History
47. Figure 47: 134th Infantry Regiment, Company M, 1943 (Roberta Russo)
48. Figure 48: PVT Herbert Stanton Hull, July 22, 1943, Camp Rucker, (Author's collection)
49. Figure 49: Tullahoma, Tennessee, 1940's era postcard: (public domain)
50. Figure 50: Tullahoma Railroad Station - 1940's era postcard (public domain)
51. Figure 51: World War II Camp Forrest Postcard: (public domain)
52. Figure 52: Camp Forrest, Tennessee Rifle Range: NARA
53. Figure 53: Camp Forrest Type 700 Barracks. NARA
54. Figure 54: Tennessee Valley Authority Maps and Surveys Division in Cooperation with the War Department, Corps of Engineers, Camp Forrest Quadrangle, 1:24,000, 1941, revised 1944. Red dashed rectangle denotes reported 5th RN INF BN area (Bradley).
55. Figure 55: U.S. Army Airborne recruitment pamphlet, Courtesy of pararesearchteam.com by Donald and Sophia van den Bogert
56. Figure 56: Portion of initial 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion Roster showing conclusive proof of Private Hull as a Ranger from the origination of the unit. NARA, NPRC, St. Louis, MO, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion; Army Enlisted Men Roster World War II, 5th RN BN, Microfilm reel number 15772, Contained Initial Unit Roster dated September 21, 1943
57. Figure 57: Parcel flap from war held by Hull family (Author's collection)
58. Figure 58: 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion practicing cliff climbing at Camp Forrest, Tennessee – NARA
59. Figure 59: Loading weapons at range of Camp Forrest (NARA)
60. Figure 60: Photos typical of Ranger training. Photos are from various Ranger Battalions.
61. Figure 61: Ranger training at Camp Forrest, 1943. (Bradley)

#### Chapter 5 Camp Forrest Ranger School Photo Essay (NARA, College Park records)

- SC 167084: General View down Main Street of model Nazi village. Camp Forrest, Tenn. 1/12/43; Second Army Ranger School. Signal Corps Photo, Photographer T/5 George Clayton
- SC 167083: Two instructors of wire entanglement class lying under double apron barb wire entanglement preparatory to cutting wire, Camp Forrest, Tennessee. 1-16-43, 2nd Army Ranger School, Signal Corps Photo, T/4 Richard H Spencer.
- SC 167082: Two instructors of the wire entanglement class demonstrating method of cutting barb wire using cloth wrapped around pliers to muffle the sound caused by cutting. Camp Forrest, Tennessee. 1-16-43, 2nd Army Ranger School. Signal Corps Photo, T/4 Richard S. Spencer
- SC 167085: Students entering building in model Nazi village during a simulated mopping up operation. The building contains booby traps and dummies. The Rangers advance through the village firing live ammunition at dummy targets and bayoneting dummies placed throughout the village. Camp Forrest, Tennessee; 1-12-43; Second Army Ranger School
- SC167086: Sgt Edward N. Draper and PVT Mussel D. Scarboro advancing through the streets of model Nazi village in a demonstration of methods of mopping up at Camp Forrest, Tennessee; 1-12-43; Second Army Ranger School, Co K, 3rd BN., 319th Infantry; Nazi Village south of Range O: Photographer T/4 Edgar S Bagley
- SC 167088: Left to right: S/Sgt Bishop Scarboro, Cpl Elmer L Cochran (top), Sgt Edward S Draper demonstrating method of entering and covering building while mopping up enemy village at Camp Forrest, Tennessee; 1-12-43; Co K, 3rd BN, 319th Infantry Regiment, 2nd Army Ranger School; Photographer, T/4 Richard H Spencer
- SC 167087: Left to right: Sgt Edward S Draper, Sgt J. Perus, Pvt Russel D. Scarboro, in a simulated attack on the city hall of a model Nazi village, in a demonstration of methods of mopping up. Camp Forrest, Tennessee; 1-12-43; Co K, 3rd BN, 319th Infantry Regiment, 2nd Army Ranger School; Photographer, T/4 Edgar S. Bagley
- SC 167090: A simulated demonstration of capture of a model Nazi village mined with booby traps. Infantry troops are armed with M1 .30 Cal rifles, Thompson .45 Cal sub-machine guns. Camp Forrest, Tennessee. 1-15-43; 2nd Army Ranger School: Photographer T/5 George Clayton
- SC 167089: Sgt. Joe Perna bayoneting dummy during demonstration of mop up of enemy village. Camp Forrest, Tennessee, 1-12-43; Co K, 3rd BN, 319th Infantry Regiment, 2nd Army Ranger School; Photographer, T/4 Richard H Spencer.
- SC 167092: Private 1st Class, F.F. Santucci demonstrating how to use a trench knife on “blitz” bayonet course constructed for the training of Rangers, Camp Forrest, Tennessee: 1-12-43: Co I, 319th Infantry Regiment, 2nd Army Ranger School: Photographer T/5 George Clayton
- SC 167102: Ranger Students doing a class exercise known as the “windmill” in hand-to-hand combat course, Camp Forrest, Tennessee; 1-18-43; 2nd Army Ranger School: Photographer T/4 Richard H. Spencer



THE LOST RANGER, A SOLDIER'S STORY

- SC 167101: Two Ranger students participating disarmament of an opponent, armed with a knife, during a hand-to-hand combat class. Camp Forrest, Tennessee: 1-20-43: 2nd Army Ranger School: Photographer T/4 Richard H. Spencer
  - SC 167104: Two Ranger students demonstrate dirty fighting tactics in hand-to-hand combat class, 2nd Army Ranger School, Camp Forrest, Tennessee: 1-25-43: Photographer T/4 Richard H. Spencer
  - SC 157098: Pvt. Geo. McCravey being disarmed by S/Sgt. J.W. Douglas of his bayonet in hand to hand combat class, Camp Forrest, Tenn. 1/15/43. Photographer T/4 Richard H. Spencer
  - SC 167097: Pvt. Geo. McCravey applying counter for downward knife thrust of S/Sgt J.M. Douglas in hand to hand combat class. Camp Forrest, Tennessee: 1-15-43: Second Army Ranger School: Photographer T/4 Richard H. Spencer
  - SC 165100: 2nd Lt. Wm E. Vazzana and Sgt. J.R. Compton instructors at Camp Forrest, Tenn., demonstrating the straight-arm block used in hand-to-hand fighting. 1/12/43. Photographer: T/4 Edgar S. Bagley.
  - SC 167099: 2nd Lt. Wm. E. Vazzana and Sgt. J.R. Compton instructors at Camp Forrest, Tenn. Demonstrating the rear stranglehold used in hand-to-hand fighting. 1/12/43. Photographer: T/4 Edgar S. Bagley.
  - SC 167094: Pfc. F.F. Santucci demonstrating how to use the bayonet on blitz bayonet course constructed for training of Rangers, Camp Forrest, Tenn. Company I, 319th Infantry Regiment, 2nd Army Ranger School: 1/12/43. Photographer T/5 George(NMI) Clayton.
  - SC 167095: Gun crew firing .30 Cal Browning heavy machine gun, Camp Forrest, Tennessee. Left to right; PFC L. Edelman. Pfc. C. Rudnicki, Cpl., E.R. Elmann, and Pvt Joseph Barrett: 1-7-43: 2nd Section, 1st Plt, Co M, 318th Inf on Range B, Spencer Range: Photographer T/5 George Clayton
  - SC 167489: A car hit by a rocket fired from a rocket launcher at the U.S. 2nd Army Ranger School, Camp Forrest, Tenn 1/18/43. Photographer T/4 Richard H. Spencer
  - SC 167483; Pvt Nicholas Gomes and Pvt 1st Class Mike Danatsko demonstrate how to descend a cliff me means of ropes. Class in cliff scaling, Camp Forrest, TN; 2/6/43; Company C, 319th Infantry Regiment, 2nd Army Ranger School; Photographer T/4 Edgar S Bagley.
  - SC 157481: Model of dressed timber bridge (1 inch = 3 feet) H-15 loading. Constructed as training aids for teaching men theory and methods of bridge design and construction. 12/29/42 Photographer T/4 Edgar S Bagley
  - SC 157478: Army Ranger School Demonstration of Infantry crossing toggle rope bridge while under fire from machine guns, rifles, hand grenades, mortars. Estill Springs, TN. Camp Forrest, TN; 1/20/43; 2nd Army Ranger School; T/5 George Clayton
  - U.S. 2nd Army Ranger School, Camp Forrest, Tennessee, January 1943
  - SC 167484; Staff Sergeant L.J. Bush of Coxville, WV, inserts an anti-tank rocket 2/36 inch M6 into the anti-tank rocket launcher M1, as Sergeant C.W. Critchfield of Corpus Christi, TX prepares to fire by taking aim and sight on the target. Photo batched with 2nd Army Ranger School photos, although it depicts Camp Gordon, GA
  - SC 16746: Pvt 1st Class, L.S. Heaton and Pvt. C.O. Aiggin demonstrating two different types of head camouflage at Ranger School. Pvt Heaton's helmet and face are daubed with mud, dust, and particles of grass. Pvt Higgin's face is marked with grease paint and his helmet is camouflaged with leaves stuck into a net. Camp Forrest, Tennessee. 1/14/43. HQ Co., 1st BN., 319th Inf, 2nd Army Ranger School.
  - SC 164160-B: 2nd Army Rangers...cross a stream on a toggle-rope bridge under simulated battle conditions. Demonstration at Camp Forrest, Tennessee, January 23, 1943, preceding graduation. Signal Corps Photo by BPR Ralph Morgan
  - SC 164161-B: 2nd Army Rangers...cross a stream on a toggle-rope bridge under simulated battle conditions. Demonstration at Camp Forrest, Tennessee, January 23, 1943, preceding graduation. Signal Corps Photo by BPR Ralph Morgad
62. Figure 62: U.S. Department of the Interior Geologic Survey, Fort Pierce, Florida, 7.5 Minute Quadrangle, Edition of 1949
  63. Figure 63: U.S. Department of Agriculture Aerial Photo showing Fort Pierce. University of Florida George A. Smathers Libraries, Aerial Photography: Florida Collection, The University of Florida Map & Digital Imagery Library, Aerial photographs of St. Lucie County - Flight 2C (1944), Tile 36
  64. Figure 64: Fort Pierce, Florida – Typical training photos from WW II (NARA)
  65. Figure 65: Fort Pierce, Florida – Typical training photos from WW II (NARA)
  66. Figure 66: Fort Pierce, Florida – Typical training photos from WW II (NARA)
  67. Figure 67: USACE16: Figure 211. Crews of two landing craft rubber (LCR) bring their vessels onto the beach at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 28 November 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 198, photo 43902). ERDC/CERL TR-10-10 pg 133
  68. Figure 68: USACE16: Figure 124. Training for amphibious operations where an Army duck receives its loading orders by wig-wag from atop mock-up of assault transport at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 28 November 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 198, photo 43898). ERDC/CERL TR-10-10 pg 79

69. Figure 69: USACE16: Figure 212. Seabees in a chow line after a practice invasion at unknown location, 8 October 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 377, photo 82511). ERDC/CERL TR-10-10 pg 134
70. Figure 70: USACE16: Figure 271. Navigation class phase of raider training at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 9 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 862, photo 264385).
71. Figure 71: USACE16: Figure 214. An LCVP loaded with rifle squad ready for disembarking in training operations on the Atlantic coast at unknown location, 1 August 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 392, photo 85064).
72. Figure 72: USACE16: Figure 215. Seabees in landing boats prior to an invasion scene at unknown location, 8 October 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 377, photo 82524).
73. Figure 73: USACE16: Figure 216. Seabees leap from their boats in an invasion scene at unknown location, 8 October 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 377, photo 82518).
74. Figure 74: USACE16: Figure 217. Seabees leave the boats and fall flat on the sand in an invasion scene at unknown location, 8 October 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 377, photo 82516).
75. Figure 75: USACE16: Figure 263. The commandos were tough (Becker, 1946, p 51). ERDC/CERL TR-10-10 164
76. Figure 76: USACE16: Figure 267. Phase of raider training at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 10 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 862, photo 264404).
77. Figure 77: USACE16: Figure 268. Log PT phase of raider training at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 10 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 862, photo 264408).
78. Figure 78: USACE16: Figure 269. Seven-man rubber boat phase of raider training at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 10 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 862, photo 264395).
79. Figure 79: USACE16: Figure 270. Seven-man rubber boat phase of raider training at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 10 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 862, photo 264398). ERDC/CERL TR-10-10 169
80. Figure 80: USACE16: Figure 274. Obstacle course phase of raider training at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 9 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 862, photo 264392).
81. Figure 81: USACE16: Figure 275. Obstacle course phase of raider training at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 9 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 862, photo 264391).
82. Figure 82: USACE16: Figure 276. Training of Scouts and raiders for hand-to-hand combat at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 10 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 539, photo 210908).
83. Figure 83: USACE16: Figure 277. Training of Scouts and raiders for hand-to-hand combat at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 20 December 1943 (NARA College Park, RG 80-G, box 539, photo 210912).
84. Figure 84: USACE16: Figure 278. Training of scouts and raiders for hand-to-hand combat at Amphibious Training Base Fort Pierce, FL, 20 December 1943 (NARA College Park, MD)
85. Figure 85: U.S. Naval Amphibious Training Base course completion card (photo image Ross G Furore) <<http://users.skynet.be/jeeper/page85.html>>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
86. Figure 86: Fort Dix New Jersey, view looking generally east: 1943 USAF photo
87. Figure 87: Rangers Detlefsen, Ryan, Copeland, Stevenson and Hodges seated left to right at night club in NYC 1943. (Photo courtesy of JR Copeland)
88. Figure 88: Photo of Randall Ching and Herbert Hull taken in Penny Arcade in Times Square, NYC at set named the "Blitzkreig Bar" (Courtesy of Randall Ching)
89. Figure 89: Rivoli Theatre, Times Square, NYC (Source, New York Public Library)
90. Figure 90: World War II Postcard showing Pepsi-Cola Times Square Servicemen's Center (public domain)
91. Figure 91: Liberty Island, Photo by National Park Service. <<http://photo.its.nps.gov/storage/images/stli/stli-Thumb.00001.html>>, Retrieved 2014-08-14
92. Figure 92: US Army photo taken in 1939 of B-17s over New York City showing Empire State Building. NARA, SC 331724
93. Figure 93: Fort Dix Rifle Range postcard: (public domain)
94. Figure 94: U.S. Department of the Interior Geologic Survey, Columbus & New Egypt, New Jersey, 7.5 Minute Quadrangles, Edition of 1948
95. Figure 95: Aerial View of Fort Dix, NJ: Postcard, (public domain)
96. Figure 96: Fort Hamilton, NY: US Army Photo
97. Figure 97: 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company Morning Report for December 16, 1943 (Colonel Black Collection at USAHEC)
98. Figure 98: U.S. Department of the Interior Geologic Survey, Plainfield, New Jersey; Scale: 1:24,000; Edition of 1947: Area nine assigned to 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion is marked in red.<sup>1</sup>
99. Figure 99: S/Sgt Hull Identification Card from Camp Kilmer (Author's collection)
100. Figure 100: U.S. Army Installation Map of Camp Kilmer showing locations of various areas and important areas. Area nine assigned to 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion is marked in red: Courtesy of Rutgers University Library.<sup>2</sup>
101. Figure 101: 1947 map of Middlesex County, Acme Photo and Blueprint Company, Inc: Public Domain<sup>3</sup>
102. Figure 102: Camp Kilmer Postcard: Public domain
103. Figure 103: Map of Camp Kilmer included in US Army Publication: Welcome to Camp Kilmer
104. Figure 104: US Army Photograph of Camp Kilmer, NJ
105. Figure 105: US Army Photograph of Camp Kilmer

106. Figure 106: Postcard of Camp Kilmer: Public Domain
107. Figure 107: US Army Photograph of Camp Kilmer Gate 1
108. Figure 108: US Army Photograph of Camp Kilmer Headquarters
109. Figure 109: Camp Kilmer postcard showing Usual Camp Duty: Public Domain
110. Figure 110: 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company, Morning Reports, January 7-8, 1944, NARA, NPRC, St. Louis, MO, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, World War II morning reports (0005 Ranger INF BN), January, 1944, Microfilm reel number 34685
111. Figure 111: U.S. Army Signal Corps photo: Camp Kilmer, rail yard. (Courtesy of Dan Cupper, Railroad Historian)
112. Figure 112: Troops preparing for overseas movement. (Wardlow; Center of Military History)
113. Figure 113: The ferry terminal at Weehawken, New Jersey during WW II. (New Jersey Division of Archives and Records)
114. Figure 114: Weehawken railroad terminal in 1947 with a great locomotive juxtaposed with the NYC skyline (University of Louisville Library)
115. Figure 115: USGS 1935 Weehawken, NJ, The West Shore Ferry Terminal is on the west side of the Hudson River and the NYPE is to the southeast across the Hudson River.
116. Figure 116: Troops embarking onboard troop ships. (USCMH)
117. Figure 117: Troops embarking aboard ship (USCMH)
118. Figure 118: The HMS MAURETANIA II painted in her wartime grey. (public domain)
119. Figure 119: In her grey wartime paint, the HMS MAURETANIA II leaves Liverpool for a safe haven in New York on 10th December, 1939. (MINISTRY OF DEFENCE (FOXHILL))
120. Figure 120: Mauretania II docks in Newport News w/2,036 German prisoners 9/16/42. (Public Domain)
121. Figure 121: The new Queen Elizabeth arrives off Pier 90 to join Queen Mary, Normandie, Mauretania and Franconia (Public Domain)
122. Figure 122: The T2 tanker Hat Creek in August 1943 (NARA Number 80022 from Record Group 80, General Records of the Department of the Navy, 1798-1947. The photo was taken on 16 August 1943. The picture was researched by Dave Whittaker, Suffolk, VA)
123. Figure 123: New York Harbor, June 1944, U.S. Department of Commerce, U.S. Coast and Geodetic Survey, Sheet No. 369-06-1944. Arrows are the estimated positions of the HMS Mauretania and SS Hat Creek at 0900 hours on January 8, 1944
124. Figure 124: View from HMS Mauretania leaving New York Harbor, January 1944. Courtesy Rob Gorrell
125. Figure 125: Navigation lights (Seaman's Pocket-Book, 1943)<sup>18</sup>
126. Figure 126: Cramped troop accommodation on the MAURETANIA (USCMH)
127. Figure 127: Cramped conditions in the MAURETANIA's first-class dining saloon for some of the 6,500 troops the ship could carry. (USCMH)
128. Figure 128: Typical enlisted mens sleeping quarters aboard ship (USCMH)
129. Figure 129: Typical entertainment aboard ship provided by the soldier's themselves (USCMH)
130. Figure 130: Princess Dock, Liverpool, England looking northward (public domain)
131. Figure 131: Princess Dock, Liverpool, England looking southward (public domain)
132. Figure 132: The HMS Mauretania berthed in the Mersey River at the north end of Princes Landing Stage, Princess Dock, Liverpool, England. Ahead of her is the hospital ship ORANJE (Liverpool Museums, UK).
133. Figure 133: The MAURETANIA backing off Princes Landing Stage, Liverpool, on her way to join another convoy. Her escort is taking up position. (Liverpool Museums, UK)
134. Figure 134: Troops crowded on to the MAURETANIA's foredeck. Note the 'de-gaussing' cable, which neutralized the ship's magnetic field, and so helped in stopping magnetic mines being attracted to the ship (Liverpool Museums, UK)
135. Figure 135: Map showing Princess Dock and Liverpool Station (unknown author), <[http://www.disused-stations.org.uk/l/liverpool\\_riverside/](http://www.disused-stations.org.uk/l/liverpool_riverside/)>, Retrieved 2014-08-16
136. Figure 136: Liverpool Riverside Station (Courtesy Nick Catford, From the John Mann collection)
137. Figure 137: Historic Postcard of Broad Street in Leominster, Herefordshire, England (public domain)
138. Figure 138: Picture of soldier taken at Leominster Station in England (Collins).
139. Figure 139: Aerial view of the 76th General Hospital, Leominster (NARA)
140. Figure 140: Location of Berrington Hall in relation to Leominster. (A Vision of Britain Through Time – public domain)
141. Figure 141: Key to English Ordinance Survey Maps.<sup>4</sup>
142. Figure 142: 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company Morning Report, February 4, 1944, NARA, NPRC, St. Louis, MO, 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, World War II morning reports (0005 Ranger INF BN), February 1944, Microfilm reel number 25356
143. Figure 143: Map of Leominster drawn by S/Sgt Hull in February, 1944. (Author's collection)
144. Figure 144: SJX Early Postcard, Tignabraich from East, Kyles of Bute; Argyllshire, Scotland; (public domain)
145. Figure 145: Kyles of Bute at Tighnabraich - from original by Brian Gerlad - No.A.796, circa 1934 (public domain)
146. Figure 146: Map showing areas described in the email above. Auchenlachen, Kames and Tighnabraich are circled. Ordinance Survey of Scotland Popular Edition, Sheet 65 – Dunoon and Loch Fyne
147. Figure 147: British Combined Operations badge
148. Figure 148: Ranger training in Scotland (left) and Rangers practicing assault landings in Scotland (right)(NARA)



149. Figure 149: Ranger log training in Scotland from movie film. Note movement of logs. (NARA)
150. Figure 150: S/Sgt Hull and Corporal Herman Stuyvesant in Scotland (Author's collection)
151. Figure 151: World War II Nissen Huts in use as part of a Station Hospital (NARA)
152. Figure 152: 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion conducting cliff climbing training in Scotland (NARA)
153. Figure 153: The U.S. Army Assault Training Center, Woolacombe, England (Courtesy Richard T. Bass)
154. Figure 154: Assault Team in LCVP (NARA)
155. Figure 155: USATC, Area A map (Courtesy of Richard Bass)
156. Figure 156: Soldiers analyzing mock German defenses in Area A at Braunton Burrows (NARA)
157. Figure 157: USATC Area A; (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)
158. Figure 158: USATC, Area B, Practice Assault Beach, Engineer Obstacle Course (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)
159. Figure 159: USATC, Area B, Practice Assault Beach, dragon's teeth anti-tank obstacles (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)
160. Figure 160: USATC, Area B map (Courtesy of Richard Bass)
161. Figure 161: USATC, Area C, Practice Assault Beach, Rocket wall at Assault Range (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)
162. Figure 162: USATC, Area C, Mortar Range (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)
163. Figure 163: USATC, Area D map (Courtesy of Richard Bass)
164. Figure 164: USATC, Area D, Assault Range (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)
165. Figure 165: USATC, Area D, Flamethrower Range (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)
166. Figure 166: USATC, Area E, Croyde Bay, Area F in top left of photo (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)
167. Figure 167: USATC, CROYDE BAY - AREAS "E", "F", "G", and "H" map (Courtesy of Richard Bass)
168. Figure 168: USATC, CROYDE BAY - AREAS "H", "L", "M", and "N" map (Courtesy of Richard Bass)
169. Figure 169: Modern day photo of area of USATC, Area M, Morte Point (courtesy of Richard Bass)
170. Figure 170: Combined infantry and armor landing U.S. Assault Training School, Woolacombe, England (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)
171. Figure 171: Infantry landing at U.S. Assault Training School, Woolacombe, England (U.S. Army, courtesy of Richard Bass)
172. Figure 172: U.S. Assault Training Center, Woolacombe troop encampment at Saunton Park. (RAF photo public domain)
173. Figure 173: P-38 Lightning fighter aircraft (NARA)
174. Figure 174: Tactical Disposition of Ninth Air Force (Craven, USAF)<sup>6</sup>
175. Figure 175: 1943 Aerial photograph of Warmwell Airfield, England (Royal Ordinance Survey, public domain)
176. Figure 176: Map showing layout of RAF Warmwell
177. Figure 177: A 1947 air photo of Brodmayne and the marshalling camps. Camp D5 was located in the area of the right square in the fields northwest of the Tin hut. (17th January 1947. English Heritage (NMR) RAF Photography)
178. Figure 178: Present day photos of location of Camp D5 (Courtesy of Mr. Richard Drew, historian, United Kingdom)
179. Figure 179: Present day photos of Tin hut noted in above photo (Courtesy of Mr. Richard Drew, historian, United Kingdom)
180. Figure 180: Mapping of Broadmayne near Dorchester, England. Ordinance Survey of England Popular Edition
181. Figure 181: Wartime photo of marshalling camp showing 16 foot by 16 foot pyramidal tents
182. Figure 182: Troops landing ashore during FABIUS I (NARA)
183. Figure 183: Troops coming ashore during FABIUS I (NARA)
184. Figure 184: DD Tank and halftrack ashore during FABIUS I (NARA)
185. Figure 185: South England Map; 1935 (George Phillip and Son, Ltd, The London Geographical Institute)
186. Figure 186: Map showing cliff area at Burton Bradstock. Burton Cliff is shaded in the red square. (Ordinance Survey of Scotland Popular Edition)
187. Figure 187: R.A.F. reconnaissance photo of Burton Bradstock and Freshwater Bay taken on 7th. June, 1942.<sup>5</sup>
188. Figure 188: Taken from work by Dr. Ian West; The western part of the Chesil Beach at Burton Cliff, Dorset, is gradually diminishing in width and losing its fine shingle. The cliff of Bridport Sands, with Inferior Oolite at the top, is being underdercut as waves more frequently abrade the foot of the cliff. Within a decade or so the last 3 kilometres of the Chesil Beach. (at Burton Cliff and East Cliff, Bridport) might be mostly lost, and its new western limit might be at Burton Hive. Photo - 3rd March 2008. Ian West & Tanya West (c) 2008.<sup>6</sup>
189. Figure 189: Map showing cliff area at Bat's Head and Durdle Door shaded in the red rectangles. (Ordinance Survey of Scotland Popular Edition)
190. Figure 190: View of coast west of Durdle Door looking toward Bat's Head (2013 photo courtesy of Alan Holiday)
191. Figure 191: Rock Formation known as Durdle Door. (Courtesy Dr. Ian West)
192. Figure 192: Map showing cliff area at Ragged Point (Boulder Ruckle) shaded in the red rectangles. (Ordinance Survey of Scotland Popular Edition)
193. Figure 193: Boulder Ruckle ledge place names (Courtesy Dr. Ian West)
194. Figure 194: Geologic view of Ragged Rocks (Boulder Ruckle). (Dr. Ian West)
195. Figure 195: Map showing cliff area at Old Harry's Rocks shaded in the red rectangle. (Ordinance Survey of Scotland Popular Edition)

196. Figure 196: Wide Rock platform leading to Old Harry's Rocks on Ballard Point. Area recognized by Ranger Copeland (photo courtesy Ian West)
197. Figure 197: Photo showing Old Harry's Rocks on Ballard Point (photo courtesy Alan Holiday)
198. Figure 198: Area used by Rangers for cliff climbing on Isle of Wight. (Ordinance Survey of Scotland Popular Edition)
199. Figure 199: Alum Bay Cliff area on Isle of Wight used by Rangers (Dr. Ian West)
200. Figure 200: Swanage England. Arrow denotes Grand Hotel Swanage (Courtesy of Jamie S. at en.wikipedia)
201. Figure 201: Grand Hotel Swanage and surrounding area (Courtesy of Jamie S. at en.wikipedia)<sup>15</sup>
202. Figure 202: HMS Amsterdam (IWM)
203. Figure 203: Rangers training at Burton Bradstock. Note grapnels and rocket fire at cliff face Imperial War Museum (IWM) film, *The Way Back*.
204. Figure 204: Ranger LCAs firing rocket propelled grapnels at cliff faces in Burton Bradstock. These same LCAs landed on D-Day (IWM)
205. Figure 205: Landing craft firing ladders and toggle ropes at cliffs at Burton Bradstock (IWM)
206. Figure 206: Critical point in landing operations at base of cliff as assault had yet to commence, and men were bunched at base of cliff. (IWM)
207. Figure 207: Rangers scaling cliffs at Burton Bradstock (IWM)
208. Figure 208: Rangers lining up for cliff scaling (IWM)
209. Figure 209: Rangers making a mock assault of cliffs at Burton Bradstock in spring 1944 (IWM)
210. Figure 210: Ranger nearing top of cliff (IWM)
211. Figure 211: London fire-brigade ladders extended up cliff at Burton Bradstock (IWM)
212. Figure 212: U.S. Army Ranger DUKW outfitted with London fire-brigade ladder training in England (IWM)
213. Figure 213: 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion training with twin Vickers machine guns (IWM)
214. Figure 214: Ranger posing, ready to fire Vickers machine guns. (IWM)
215. Figure 215: Line of 2nd wave assault craft approaches beaches at Burton Bradstock (IWM)
216. Figure 216: Ranger re-enactor displaying orange diamond on rear of helmet (Photo courtesy of SSG Chase Adkins, 75th Ranger Regiment)
217. Figure 217: Photo example of U.S. soldiers relaxing in marshalling camp prior to D-Day (NARA)
218. Figure 218: Operation OVERLORD BIGOT Map of Omaha Beach, West (NARA)
219. Figure 219: Operation OVERLORD BIGOT Map reverse side, of Omaha Beach, West (NARA)
220. Figure 220: Operation OVERLORD BIGOT Map of Pointe du Hoc (NARA)
221. Figure 221: The Mounting Plan for Operation NEPTUNE (USACMH)<sup>11</sup>
222. Figure 222: Wartime photo of Rangers partaking of Red Cross hospitality tent in Weymouth Harbor (NARA)
223. Figure 223: Rangers marching through Weymouth to embarkation point (NARA)
224. Figure 224: Rangers marching through Weymouth to embarkation point (NARA)
225. Figure 225: 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion mounting their assigned LCAs at Weymouth (NARA)
226. Figure 226: Wartime photos of 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion on June 1, 1944 aboard LCAs (NARA)
227. Figure 227: 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion on June 1, 1944 aboard LCAs leaving Weymouth (NARA)
228. Figure 228: 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion on June 1, 1944 aboard LCAs leaving Weymouth en route to LSIs on June 1, 1944. LCA 1377 transported half of the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion including Captain Raaen. (NARA)
229. Figure 229: HMS Prince Baudouin (LSI) receiving LCAs in Weymouth Harbor, June 1, 1944(USCG)
230. Figure 230: Sunrise, D-Day, June 6, 1944 off Omaha Beach from US Coast Guard film (NARA)
231. Figure 231: General Eisenhower message given to Allied Forces before D-Day (USACMH)
232. Figure 232: German beach defenses at Omaha Beach, Belgian Gate (left) and Czech Hedgehog (right). (German Federal Archives)
233. Figure 233: Field Marshall Erwin Rommel inspects Omaha Beach defenses (Hemmbalken, or "obstruction beams") in spring of 1944. (German Federal Archives)
234. Figure 234: German 80 mm mortar (left) and MG-42 machine gun crew in Normandy (German Federal Archives)
235. Figure 235: German 105 mm gun, pictured in Russia, 1942 (German Federal Archives)
236. Figure 236: German Marder III Tank Destroyer (German Federal Archives)
237. Figure 237: German PAK 38 gun (left, German Federal Archives) and Nebelwerfer (right, NARA)
238. Figure 238: Portion of captured German Map showing artillery firing solutions onto Omaha Beach between Vierville Sur Mer and St Laurent (NARA)
239. Figure 239: Castle Gruchy family residence Loys and in 1944, the company PC 9/726, which defended the Breakthrough and Englesqueville (open source)
240. Figure 240: Captain Grundschoß, killed in action on June 6 Its 9th company (9/726) stopped the attacking Americans (5th Ranger Infantry Battalion) trying to reach the Pointe du Hoc from Vierville. (German Federal Archives)
241. Figure 241: HMS Prince Leopold in the Mediterranean (IWM)
242. Figure 242: Photo of type of 155 mm guns similar to those identified at Pointe du Hoc
243. Figure 243: Aerial photo of Point du Hoc revealing extent of bombing and bombardment leading up to and including D-Day. (NARA)

244. Figure 244: An LCA leaving the LSI HMS Rocksand for the island of Nancowry, on the Nicobar Islands, October 1945. Other LCAs are suspended on davits waiting to be loaded before being lowered. (NARA)
245. Figure 245: Landing craft marshalling near transport vessel awaiting orders to go ashore. In Mediterranean on November 8, 1942 (NARA)
246. Figure 246: Photo of U.S.S. Texas, BB-35 firing batteries (NARA)
247. Figure 247: U.S.S. Texas, BB-35 (NARA)
248. Figure 248: Brigadier General Norman Daniel "Dutch" Cota, Sr (US Army photo)
249. Figure 249: Dog White/Dog Red Beach Sectors on D-Day sketch (Courtesy MG John Raaen, Jr., Army ret)
250. Figure 250: 0730 aerial photo showing 1st wave of 5th Ranger Infantry BN moments before landing on Dog White (NARA)
251. Figure 251: March 1943 Army Reconnaissance Photo of Dog Red/Dog White boundary (NARA). Note the lack of obstacles on the beach.
252. Figure 252: Dog White Beach showing smoke on bluffs from US Landing Craft. (NARA)
253. Figure 253: Duplex Drive (DD) Tank, Variant of M4 Sherman medium tank used by 743rd Tank Battalion (United Kingdom)
254. Figure 254: LCI 91 and LCI 92 en route to Normandy for D-Day invasion. (NARA)
255. Figure 255: LCI 91 explosion at 0750 hours on D-Day. Omaha Beach, Dog White Sector (NARA)
256. Figure 256: This view from within the H677 casemate at Wn 72 shows to advantage how the 88m Pak 43 installed within dominated the beach to the east. The wrecked LCI 91 is visible on beach in center of photo. US Army Signal Corps Photo, NARA
257. Figure 257: German PAK 43/41 Antitank Gun. According to the USHEC, this is one of five known remaining examples of this variant which is on display at USHEC, Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania. Pictured is my wife holding my youngest daughter, with my middle daughter is in the background. (author's collection)
258. Figure 258: View that 5th Ranger Battalion had of beach at Dog White upon approach of the shore showing fires. (NARA)
259. Figure 259: Aerial View of Dog White/Dog Red sector that 5th Ranger Battalion landed at taken at 1230 hours showing breakwalls and blackened areas as a result of fires on the bluffs. The crest of the bluff is noted by the farm fields to the top of the photo. Also note the hedgerow on the top right of the photo. This was used by the Rangers to mask their movements. (NARA)
260. Figure 260: German Coastal Defenses, War Department, Special Series Number 15, Page 23
261. Figure 261: PROFILE VIEW OF BLUFFS, DOG WHITE, in the area where Company C, 116th, and the 5th Ranger Battalion assaulted the bluff. The picture was taken in June 1945 when vegetation had grown up heavily. View is toward east; beach flat shows in left rear. (CMH – Omaha Beachhead)<sup>4</sup>
262. Figure 262: Official War Department mapping of assault of Omaha Beach near Vierville.<sup>4</sup>
263. Figure 263: WN 70 southeast of Vierville (NARA)
264. Figure 264: Sergeant Len Lomell sits astride his trophy, one of the guns of Point du Hoc in June 1944. (NARA)
265. Figure 265: Path of 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company 2nd Platoon on D-Day overlain on German defenses mapping prepared by U.S. Army
266. Figure 266: U.S. map showing Allied advances and German defenses by midday on D-Day.
267. Figure 267: Postcard showing the Manoir of Than This structure was used by the Kommandatur Vierville PC and the 11th Grenadier Co. Germans defending the coast Vierville. (public domain)<sup>8</sup>
268. Figure 268: Ormel Farm (Open Source)
269. Figure 269: German bicycle soldiers in Normandy (German Federal Archives)
270. Figure 270: Aerial reconnaissance photo taken at 1215 hrs June 6 from 3000 feet. S/Sgt Hull and his unit are somewhere to the far left edge of this picture. (NARA)
271. Figure 271: Map from Free Vierville website showing American advances and German defenses on D-Day on western Omaha Beach overlain on BIGOT map. (Free Vierville website)
272. Figure 272: Letter sent by members of B Company to family of Elmo Banning upon his death (Courtesy of nephew Elmo Banning)
273. Figure 273: Map by Lt. Colonel Taylor illustrating Force B and Force C movements on D-Day (Courtesy of General Raaen)
274. Figure 274: Allied map showing German defenses at Grandcamp. Note flooded area to east (right) of map. Where this area joins the coast is the "Sluicagate" where B Company took positions and fought. (NARA)
275. Figure 275: HMS Glasgow (Imperial War Museum, public domain)
276. Figure 276: U.S. Army mapping showing June 8 action at Grandcamp, west of Omaha Beach (USACMH)<sup>5</sup>
277. Figure 277: German prisoners are led past the Rangers' command post on Pointe du Hoc on D-Day plus 2, June 8, 1944. U.S. Signal Corps (NARA)
278. Figure 278: 5th Ranger movements from June 6 to June 20, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)
279. Figure 279: Continuation of 5th Ranger movements from June 20, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)
280. Figure 280: Rangers marching past German POWs in summer 1944 (NARA)
281. Figure 281: 5th Ranger movements to Foucarville on June 20, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)
282. Figure 282: 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion members who received DSC on June 21 for actions on D-Day (NARA).



283. Figure 283: 5th Rangers at Foucarville (Source unknown)
284. Figure 284: Valognes in summer 1944 (NARA)
285. Figure 285: 5th Ranger movements from July 3 to August 6, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)
286. Figure 286: 759th Tank Battalion (L) Company B in Montebourg, France with M5A1 in August 1944. (NARA)
287. Figure 287: M-8 armored cars of 29th Reconnaissance Squadron Mechanized belonging to Task Force Cota of 29th US ID gathered on the east side of the Place Sainte-Croix à Saint-Lô. Photo taken on 19 July 1944 at the moment of their relief by the 35th US ID (NARA). They used the same equipment as the 4th and 24th Reconnaissance Squadrons (Mechanized)
288. Figure 288: M-8 armored cars of 29th Reconnaissance Squadron Mechanized belonging to Task Force Cota of 29th US ID gathered on the east side of the Place Sainte-Croix à Saint-Lô. Photo taken on 19 July 1944 at the moment of their relief by the 35th US ID (NARA). They used the same equipment as the 4th and 24th Reconnaissance Squadrons (Mechanized)
289. Figure 289: Valognes – 1944, Town Center looking South. Church at Center, Left Fork is Road to Apple Orchard (Photo courtesy of Rev. Frank Grubbs)
290. Figure 290: Valognes – 1944, View Looking South Down Main Road (Photo courtesy of Rev. Frank Grubbs)
291. Figure 291: 5th Ranger were positioned in Diélette from July 8 through July 19, 1944, Specific location is unknown. (mapping adapted from Géoportail)
292. Figure 292: Postcard showing The Chateau de Flamanville where the Rangers were positioned July 19 to August 6, 1944 (public domain)
293. Figure 293: Map illustrating the “Breakout” from hedgerow country (USACMH)
294. Figure 294: PFC Randall Ching and two Replacement Rangers riding atop an armored vehicle in summer 1944. Note camouflage on Ching’s helmet. (Courtesy Randall Ching)
295. Figure 295: 5th Ranger movements on August 7, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)
296. Figure 296: 5th Ranger movements on August 7 to August 10, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)
297. Figure 297: 5th Ranger movements on August 10 to August 15, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)
298. Figure 298: 5th Ranger movements on August 15 to August 18, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)
299. Figure 299: 5th Ranger movements on August 19, 1944 (mapping adapted from Géoportail)
300. Figure 300: German Submarine Bunker at Brest, France. Note Fort du Protzic, captured by the 5th Rangers on September 18 to top and left of sub base. (NARA)
301. Figure 301: 280 mm guns of the Graf Spee Battery defeated by the 2nd Ranger Infantry Battalion (NARA photos)
302. Figure 302: One of the 240 mm guns at Fort de Toulbroc’h, later reportedly replaced by the Germans with 105 mm guns (patrimoine.region-bretagne.fr)
303. Figure 303: German 75 mm gun in Casemate at Fort de Toulbroc’h (patrimoine.region-bretagne.fr)
304. Figure 304: German 20mm Flak V, antiaircraft weapon (German Federal Archives)
305. Figure 305: German MG-42 machine gun (NARA)
306. Figure 306: Casemate construction at Fort de Toulbroc’h (patrimoine.region-bretagne.fr)
307. Figure 307: The Breakout of Allied forces from Normandy (USACMH)
308. Figure 308: The breakout of U.S. forces into Brittany (USACMH)
309. Figure 309: Patches of the 2nd Infantry Division (left), 8th Infantry Division (middle) and 29th Infantry Division (right) (public domain)
310. Figure 310: Map showing Battle for Brest (USACMH)<sup>16</sup>
311. Figure 311: Operation Overlord (the Normandy Landings), 6 June 1944, The 15 inch guns of HMS WARSPITE bombarding German positions around Caen during the invasion of Normandy (Admiralty Official Collection)
312. Figure 312: Map of German Fortifications at Fort de Toulbroc’h (from L’enfer de Brest, Page 18)
313. Figure 313: Fort de Toulbroc’h as seen from sea looking roughly northeast. Rangers approached along cliff to left (patrimoine.region-bretagne.fr)
314. Figure 314: German Coastal Defenses, Special Series Number 15, June 15, 1943, U.S. Army Military Intelligence Service.
315. Figure 315: Diagram of S-35 German landmine and pressure sensor from 1943 US Army training manual. (FM 5-31, Nov 1 1943)
316. Figure 316: Drawing of ravine reconnoitered by the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company, 1st Platoon on September 2, 1944. (drawing by author)
317. Figure 317: Drawing of ravine reconnoitered by the 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company, 2nd Platoon on September 2, 1944. (drawing by author)
318. Figure 318: View of German barracks battery Toulbroc’h towards 1944-1946, Service Historique de la Marine, Brest German Barracks buildings noted as “Camp” on map on Page 19. (patrimoine.region-bretagne.fr)
319. Figure 319: A P-47 and a high-speed M2 Kletrak tractor at the Poleva Airfield in Northern France. (Mercury Marten, Pintrest)
320. Figure 320: P-47 Thunderbolt night-firing machine guns (USAF)
321. Figure 321: Aerial view of the heavy battery Toulbroc’h II, No. 93, Pinczon report Sel.Book IV, circa 1947, Service Historique de la Marine, Brest, French Ministry of Defense Aerial photo showing southern portion of the fort just after the war. (patrimoine.region-bretagne.fr)

322. Figure 322: Composite map over aerial photo of Fort de Toulbroc'h with attention paid to certain Ranger positions and actions on September 2, 1944. The orange oval denotes the area where the landmine was tripped wounding S/Sgt Hull as reported by Randall Ching. (Image courtesy of Geoportail, France)(Overlay from L'enfer De Brest)
323. Figure 323: After Action Map prepared by 29th Infantry Division of Ranger Action on September 2-3, 1944
324. Figure 324: 5th Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company Sick Log Book, September 1944, NARA, NPRC, St. Louis, MO, Sick Books Army, 5 RN BN 2128, Microfilm reel number 04296, September 1944
325. Figure 325: Circle showing possible location of 108th Evacuation Hospital in Lannilis France, Sep 44
326. Figure 326: Patients are brought to the 108th Evacuation Hospital by WC54 Ambulances. (NARA)
327. Figure 327: Wounded being loaded for transport for evacuation to England (NARA photo)
328. Figure 328: Flowchart of U.S. medical establishment, War Department, (courtesy of WW2 U.S. Medical Research Centre and Olive-Drab World War II Research websites)
329. Figure 329: Location of 94th General Hospital located at Tortworth Court, UK. (A Vision of Britain Through Time – Public Domain)<sup>5</sup>
330. Figure 330: Unit Crest of 94th General Hospital (USACMH)
331. Figure 331: The 94th GH took over the facilities of the 120th GH, located at Tortworth Courts, Falfield, Somerset, England, showing castle in distance. August 5, 1943 photo. (NARA photo)
332. Figure 332: Example of S/Sgt Hull medical records provided by Department of Veterans Affairs.
333. Figure 333: 74th General Hospital, Falfield, England 1944 (NARA photo)
334. Figure 334: The British liner RMS Queen Mary arrives in New York harbour, 20 June 1945, with thousands of U.S. troops from Europe. The Queen Mary still wears her light grey war paint. Seen from near Hamilton Avenue, Weehawken. June 20, 1945, Source U.S. Navy photo 80-GK-5645; U.S. Defense Visual Information Photo HD-SN-99-03026 [1], (USN)
335. Figure 335: Halloran General Hospital postcard (public domain – New York Public Library)
336. Figure 336: Halloran General Hospital aerial photo (public domain – National Institute of Health)
337. Figure 337: O'Reilly General Hospital postcard (public domain – Missouri Digital Heritage, Collections, O'Reilly General Hospital of Springfield, Missouri)
338. Figure 338: O'Reilly General Hospital postcard (public domain - Springfield-Greene County Library, Springfield, Missouri)
339. Figure 339: Medical Train arriving at Battle Creek Michigan to deliver patients to Percy Jones General Hospital (NARA Photo) - <<http://www.dispositionsservices.dla.mil/pubaff/hospital.shtml>>
340. Figure 340: Hart Dole Inouye Federal Center, Battle Creek, Michigan (Federal Government Photo)
341. Figure 341: Postcard of Percy Jones General Hospital, Battle Creek, Michigan (Public domain)
342. Figure 342: Herb Hull Bus ticket stub home upon discharge from Army (Author's collection)
343. Figure 343: Herb Hull and three of his kids, taken early 1950's (Author's collection)
344. Figure 344: Great-Grandson Christian Mehlo on January 30, 2012. (Author's collection)
345. Figure 345: Grave of Herbert Hull being honored by Great-Grandson Christian Mehlo in September 2004.
346. Figure 346: The picture above is Herb Parks holding revolutionary wheel used on the record setting "Swamp Rat 30" dragster (left) and Herb with his sister and Mehlo family in Youngstown, Ohio during the late 1970s. My mom and dad are to his right, I am on his lap, and my sister is to his left.
347. Figure 347: Herbert Hull, Jr "Herb Parks" standing with his boss, racing legend Don Garlits (photo courtesy of Don Garlits)
348. Figure 348: S/Sgt Hull's uniform showing the medals he had at the time of his death including the Bronze Star Medal
349. Figure 349: East Palestine Morning Journal Newspaper accounts of Herbert Hull in fall of 1944
350. Figure 350: Leroy Anderson receiving haircut from Randall Ching in France in 1944.(courtesy of Randall Ching)

# INDEX

- 1<sup>st</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion.....54-55, 60, 63, 67, 179, 206, 216, 218
- 1<sup>st</sup> Infantry Division.....182, 209, 213-215, 218, 229-230, 260, 267, 271
- 2nd Fallschirmjäger (Parachute) Division (German).....341
- 2<sup>nd</sup> Infantry Division.....326, 334, 342, 348, 350, 353
- 2<sup>nd</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion.....1, 2, 54, 60, 63, 67, 69, 72, 113-114, 123, 174, 179, 193, 196, 199-201, 206, 210, 212-217, 229, 230, 232-234, 243, 251, 268, 270- 271, 277-279, 283, 285, 290-291, 295, 316-317, 323-326, 334- 335, 337-339, 342-343, 394-396, 398
- A Company.....268, 316
- B Company.....305
- C Company.....231, 277
- D Company.....229, 231-232
- E Company.....229, 231-232
- F Company.....229, 231-232, 310
- HQ Company.....231-232
- 3<sup>rd</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion.....54, 60, 67
- 4th Cavalry Reconnaissance Squadron (Mechanized).....326, 330, 334
- 4<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion.....54, 60, 67, 179
- 5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion:
- A Company.....101, 120, 179, 196, 216, 268, 284, 293, 299, 311, 316, 320
- B Company.....i, 1, 72, 73, 101, 114, 120, 196, 216, 257
- C Company.....120, 216, 256, 268-269, 287, 354
- D Company.....i, 1, 2,70, 120, 179, 216, 274, 287, 291, 292, 312, 350, 353-355, 361-362, 364, 394
- E Company.....51, 120, 174, 216, 283-284, 315
- F Company.....i, 69, 72, 114, 120, 216, 268, 286-287, 311, 350, 353-354, 361-362, 364
- HQ Company.....i, 74, 120, 123, 216, 284, 287, 290, 324, 353, 355
- 6<sup>th</sup> Armored Division.....338, 348
- 6<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion.....55, 60
- 8<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division.....348, 350, 369
- 10<sup>th</sup> Armored Division.....63
- 10<sup>th</sup> U.S. Army Replacement Depot.....176-178, 200, 221, 331
- 18th Field Artillery Battalion (105 H).....326, 337-338
- 24th Cavalry Reconnaissance Squadron (Mechanized).....326, 330
- 29<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division.....iii, 54, 129, 182, 193, 199, 202, 210, 213-214, 217, 231, 260, 267, 269, 271, 277, 283, 299, 307, 309, 311, 314, 317, 334, 343, 348, 350-351, 353, 354, 364, 366-369, 371, 391, 398
- 116<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment.....199, 271, 277, 283, 285, 287, 293, 295, 299, 301, 303, 306, 311, 312, 313, 314, 317, 350, 351, 353, 369
- 116<sup>th</sup> Regimental Combat Team.....214, 231, 271, 277, 298, 302, 318
- 29<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion.....54, 193
- 35<sup>th</sup> Infantry Division.....iii, 2, 17, 23-32, 34, 37, 51, 63, 64, 121, 163, 395
- 50th General Hospital.....175, 176
- 54th Replacement Battalion.....146, 147, 149, 153
- 74th General Hospital (GH).....373, 378, 379, 398
- 80th Infantry Division.....60
- 84th Troop Carrier Squadron.....146, 147
- 94th General Hospital (GH).....373, 375, 376, 378, 383, 391, 397
- 99th Infantry Battalion (Separate).....323, 324, 326, 328, 330, 331, 333, 335- 338, 398
- 108<sup>th</sup> Evacuation Hospital (EH).....361, 371-373, 383, 391
- 134<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment.....i, 27, 32, 34-51, 64, 202, 395
- M Company.....32, 37, 42, 48-50, 64
- 196th Field Artillery Battalion (105 H).....326, 328, 337, 338
- 234<sup>th</sup> Engineer Battalion.....232
- 305th Combat Engineer Battalion.....60, 69
- 320<sup>th</sup> Infantry Regiment.....iii, 17, 23-32, 34, 38-39, 48, 395, 397
- 352<sup>nd</sup> Infantry (German Wehrmacht)..... 260, 262, 264, 273, 292, 295, 299, 304
- 436th MPEG.....323
- 454th MPEG.....323
- 474<sup>th</sup> Fighter Group.....206, 207, 209
- 552nd Military Police Escort Guard (MPEG).....322
- 716<sup>th</sup> Infantry (German).....260, 261, 263
- 726<sup>th</sup> Infantry (German).....260, 264, 266
- 741<sup>st</sup> Tank Battalion.....214, 215
- 743<sup>rd</sup> Tank Battalion.....214, 215, 283, 285, 292, 307, 311, 313
- 759th Light Tank Battalion.....326, 327, 330, 333-338
- V Corps.....129, 200, 204, 213, 214, 258, 315, 317, 318, 334, 338,
- VIII Corps.....36, 161, 175, 200, 339, 348, 351, 368, 371,
- IX Tactical Air Command.....207
- XIX Corps.....205, 337, 362
- LXXXVIII Corps (German).....260
- ## A
- Akers, Bernard C. Pfc.....73, 293, 296, 307, 339
- Alum Bay, England.....219, 221, 228-229
- Amphibious Forces Patch.....2, 112, 177
- Anderson, Leroy, Pvt.....73, 293, 298, 301, 319, 395
- Anvil Point cliff, England.....219, 225
- Armed Forces Induction Station, Akron, Ohio.....7-8
- Army Group B (German).....260
- Askin, Stanley “Stan” L, 1st Lt.....339, 353-355, 361
- Assault Flotilla 504 (British).....274
- Assault Section.....120, 182, 184, 187, 190, 197, 202,
- Atlantikwall.....iii, 182, 260, 312, 340, 346
- ## B
- Baker, Pfc Hubert A. ....331, 339
- Banks, Louis, Pfc.....73, 293
- Banning, Elmo, Tec 5 .....73, 270, 293, 296-298, 300-301, 303, 307-308, 394, 396, 399
- Barfield, Pvt Joseph B ..... 334
- Banks, Louis ....73, 293
- Barber, Alexander (HQ, Medic Detachment).....321
- Bartlett, Pvt William B. ....320, 339
- Bass, Richard T. ....i, 180, 181, 183, 185, 187-197, 199, 200
- Bat’s Head, England.....223-4
- Battle of Britain.....207, 220
- Beccue, Cpl Gale (5B).....291, 305



Belgian Gates.....96, 261  
 Belmont, S/Sgt Gail Hamilton  
 (2A).....268, 273  
 Berger, 2nd Lt George G.....320  
 BIGOT.....204-205, 209, 247-251,  
 272, 306  
 Bixler, Johnnie E, Pvt.....73, 293  
 Black, Robert W., Col.....i, 3, 51, 53,  
 63-65, 70, 114, 123, 200, 229, 231-  
 232, 257, 316-317, 323, 343, 356,  
 394-395, 397  
 Black, Pvt William L.....320  
 Blitzkreig Bar.....115-116  
 Bois du Molay, France.....317-318,  
 320  
 Boudreaux, Sgt Dalton L.... 307,  
 334  
 Boulder Ruckle cliff,  
 England.....219, 221, 225, 226  
 Boutilier, Pvt Howard L.....320  
 Bradley, General Omar.....179, 204,  
 231, 284, 342  
 Braunton Camp, England.....176,  
 178-204  
 Brest, France.....iii, 257, 339- 343,  
 346, 348-353, 357-358, 360, 363-  
 366, 368-369, 371-372, 383, 386,  
 391, 396  
 Brittany, France.....54, 257, 264,  
 338, 340, 343, 346- 348, 351, 369,  
 372  
 Broadmayne Park, England.....209-  
 210, 212  
 Bronze Star Medal.....2, 365, 386,  
 392, 399  
 Browning Automatic Rifle  
 (BAR).....43-45, 67, 183, 198-199,  
 232, 235, 284, 296, 300, 305, 307,  
 314, 315, 361  
 Browning M1917 heavy machine  
 gun.....43-47, 70, 72, 120, 231  
 Brunelle, Rene R., Pfc.....73, 293,  
 325  
 Buais, France.....319, 335- 337  
 Burke-Wadsworth Bill.....6  
 Burton Bradstock, England.....221-  
 222, 237-242, 244  
 Burton cliff, England.....221-222,  
 233

## C

Camp  
 Forrest, TN.....55-72  
 Kilmer, NJ.....125-135, 136-  
 137, 142,  
 Peay, TN.....54-55-57  
 Ritchie, MD.....123  
 Rucker, AL.....27, 34, 39-49  
 San Luis Obispo, CA.....i, 17,  
 23-33, 39

Canham, Charles D.W.,  
 Colonel.....231, 267, 277, 293,  
 295, 297-298, 300, 302, 304- 306,  
 311, 369  
 Cardinali, Peter, L., S/Sgt.....73, 164,  
 293, 307, 356, 364-365, 369  
 Carpenter, Pvt Roy E.....320, 339  
 Carter, Owen, Lt. Col.....61, 101,  
 113, 174-175  
 Castle Gruchy.....260, 264, 266, 300-  
 301  
 Continental Central Enclosure  
 No.19.....321-324  
 Channel Islands, United  
 Kingdom.....257, 330, 332  
 Chateaux de Vaumicel..... (See *Ormel  
 Farm*).....300, 302  
 Cherbourg, France.....320-321, 324-  
 326, 328, 330-334, 340  
 Ching, Randall Pfc.....66-67, 73,  
 114-120, 124, 268, 270, 276, 277,  
 283, 284, 291, 293, 305, 307, 326,  
 328, 333-334, 338, 351, 354, 356,  
 360-361, 364-366, 369, 377, 392-  
 395, 399  
 Coleman, Max D, Pfc (5C).....256  
 Colleville, France.....267  
 Colombières, France.....318, 320,  
 323  
 Commando(s), British.....53-54, 167,  
 170-174, 179, 212, 230, 231  
 Combat Infantrymans Badge.....2, 3,  
 386  
 Combe Point, England.....217  
 Combined Operations  
 Command.....167, 170-171, 180,  
 193, 231, 233-237  
 Constable, First Sergeant Grant  
 E.....101  
 Cordes, Pfc Henry J.....320, 334  
 Copeland, James Robert (JR)  
 S/Sgt.....63, 114, 163, 172, 173,  
 175, 185, 202, 207, 221, 232, 244,  
 251  
 Cota, Sr., Norman D.,  
 General.....269, 277-278, 283,  
 290-291, 293, 301-302, 304, 311  
 Craig, Pfc Henry.....331  
 Czech Hedgehogs.....261

## D

Darby's Rangers  
 Darby, William O, Col.....54, 60, 67  
 Davis, Ralph E. (2F).....279, 310  
 Dawson, 2nd Lt. Francis  
 (5D).....274, 321  
 D-Day.....1, 54, 73, 179-180, 201,  
 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 209, 210,  
 212, 213, 214, 215, 234, 235, 236,  
 244, 246, 256-310

DD Tank.....218  
 Dees, Pvt Dewey C.....320  
 Department of Veterans  
 Affairs.....21-22, 176, 370, 396  
 Descendents of World War II  
 Rangers, Inc.....2, 394  
 Detlefsen, Sgt Vern L.....114-115,  
 163, 317  
 Devlin, Thomas G. Pfc.....73, 293,  
 307  
 Dickman, S/Sgt Edward W. 319,  
 331  
 Dielette, France.....319  
 DiMarsico, Pfc Frank F....331, 339  
 Dinah Shore.....118, 338  
 Dinan, France.....319, 339  
 Dog Red Sector.....260  
 Dog White Sector.....260  
 Don "Big Daddy" Garlits.....390-  
 391  
 Dorchester, England.....203, 204-  
 219, 221, 245-246  
 Dorset, England.....206, 209-210,  
 219, 221-223  
 Drew, Richard.....211, 398  
 DUKW.....193, 196, 213, 232, 235,  
 242  
 Durdle Door cliff, England.....221,  
 223-224

## E

East Palestine, Ohio.....2, 5-7, 20-21,  
 386, 392  
 Eichnor, John T, Cpt.....174, 179  
 Eisenhower, Dwight D.,  
 General.....54, 175, 204, 215, 258-  
 259, 309, 325, 348, 396  
 Enlistment Oath.....9  
 ETOUSA.....113, 161, 174, 204, 318  
 European Theater of Operations  
 (ETO).....28, 60, 128-129, 180, 204,  
 214, 270, 342  
 Exercise FABIUS I.....203, 205,  
 213- 215, 217, 245, 247  
 Exercise FABIUS II.....213-214, 218  
 Exercise FABIUS III.....213-214  
 Exercise FABIUS IV.....213-214  
 Exercise FABIUS V.....213-214  
 Exercise FABIUS VI.....213-214  
 Exercise HARLEQUIN.....204  
 Exercise TIGER.....205, 212, 214  
 Exit D-1.....258, 260, 267, 277-278,  
 283, 301  
 Exit D-3.....258, 287

## F

Feagan, Pvt Raymond D.....339  
 Felix, Richard "Doc",.....3, 158, 371,  
 394, 396

- Fifteenth Army (German).....260  
 First Army.....113, 128, 204, 206, 318, 321, 323, 330, 335, 337-338  
 Fishman, Pvt Edward.....320  
 Flammanville, France.....319  
*For Whom the Bell Tolls*.....116-117  
 Force "O".....205, 206, 213, 251  
 Fort  
   de Dellac.....343, 369  
   de Pointe du Petit Minou.....343, 349, 364, 368-369  
   de Mengant.....343, 353, 369  
   de Portzic.....343, 368-369  
   de Toulbroc'h, France.....iii, 69, 340-369  
   Dix, NJ.....112, 113-114, 120-124, 141  
   Hamilton, NY.....123  
   Hayes, OH.....3, 7, 10-16, 18, 23,  
   Pierce, FL.....66, 74, 93-112  
 Foucarville, France (POW Camp).....318, 320-324  
 Fourth Army.....2, 26, 37
- G**  
 Gardner, Clayton E.....307  
 German 20 mm Flak V, antiaircraft weapon.....304, 325, 343, 345  
 German 75 mm gun.....264, 344, 357  
 German 88 mm gun.....264, 280, 285, 287-288, 296  
 German 105 mm gun.....262, 264, 279, 326, 328, 344, 362  
 German 150 mm gun.....262, 264, 279  
 German 155 mm gun.....247, 270-272, 276, 279, 295  
 German 240 mm guns.....344  
 German 280 mm guns.....343  
 German Nebelwerfer (rocket launchers).....264-265  
 German S-mine.....357-359  
 Gilmore, Pvt Richard J.....320  
 Gipson, Jr., Albert P, Pfc.....73, 293, 331  
 Glassman, Henry S, Sgt.... 3, 53, 114, 161, 200, 215, 257, 317, 330-331, 356, 361, 393, 395, 397  
 Glen Caladh Castle.....167-171  
 Goldberg, Howard M., Sgt .....73, 293, 334  
 Gombosi, Louis J, 1<sup>st</sup> Lt.....iii, 320, 351, 354-356, 359-361, 363-364  
 Goodwin, Robert S. Pfc.....73, 293, 339  
 Goranson, Capt Ralph.....231  
 Gorzynski, Pfc Robert W.....339
- Graf Spee Battery (German).....343, 349  
 Grandcamp les Baines, France.....271-273, 311-319  
 Grand Hotel Swanage.....229-230  
 Gray, Pvt Roland D.....331  
 Gregory, Matthew, 1<sup>st</sup> Lt.....175, 231, 275, 284, 292, 294, 301-302, 320  
 Grenadier Regiment (GR) 726<sup>th</sup>.....260, 263, 264, 266, 267, 295, 299, 300, 301  
 Grenadier Regiment (GR) 914<sup>th</sup>.....307  
 Grenadier Regiment (GR) 916<sup>th</sup>.....264, 292, 295, 300-301  
 Gréville-Hague (Greville), France.....324-326  
 Grünschloss, Captain (German).....260, 266, 302,  
 Gunnoe, S/Sgt Pierre D,.....163, 331,
- H**  
 Halloran General Hospital.....379-381  
 Hamel au Prêtre.....295,  
 Hamilton, S/Sgt Ozley K.....331  
 Harbin, 1st Lt Darwin D.....320, 324  
 Harward, Pvt Alton L.....320  
 Hathaway, Richard.....101, 172, 196-200, 216, 218, 229-230, 246  
 Healey, Francis J, Pfc.....73, 293, 307  
 heavy weapons company.....43-47  
 Hefflefinger, Hugo W, Cpt.....174, 179  
 Herring, Thomas E.....68-69  
 HMS *Amsterdam*.....215, 232, 233  
 HMS *Ben Machree*.....215  
 HMS *Glasgow* (British cruiser).....313- 314  
 HMS James Cook.....170-171  
 HMS *Queen Elizabeth*.....136, 143-144, 146, 179  
 HMS *Queen Mary*.....136, 143-144, 146, 373, 379, 380  
 HMS *Mauritania II*.....136, 143-158, 166  
 HMS *Prince Baudouin*.....215, 255, 269, 273, 274,  
 HMS *Prince Charles*.....215  
 HMS *Prince Leopold*.....216, 268, 269, 270, 273, 274  
 HMS *Warspite* (British Battleship).....349-351  
 Holiday, Dr. Alan.....220, 224, 228, 398  
 Hodges, Arthur.....114  
 Hodgson, Ranger John Carlin (5F).....273
- Hubbard, Dick (2nd RN BN).....230
- I**  
 Imperial War Museum (IWM).....233, 237  
 Isigny-Maisy.....271, 272, 310, 311, 317  
 Isle of Wight, England.....167, 219, 221, 228-229, 232,
- J**  
 Jarke, Robert, Jr, Pfc.....73, 293  
 Johnson, Denzil (5A).....321  
 Johnson, Pfc Jessie "Willie" (5HQ - medic).....294, 296, 298
- K**  
 Kauffman, Lieutenant Commander Draper L.....96  
 Keitel, Wilhelm,  
 Generalfeldmarscall..... 260  
 Kerchner, Lt.....317  
 Kervaër, France.....353-356, 359-360  
 Kervos, France.....319  
 Kimball, Tec 5 Ashley R.....307  
 Kuhn, S/Sgt. Jack E. (2D).....295  
 Kraiss, Deitrich, Generalleutnant.....260, 262-264, 312
- L**  
 Lacy, Father Joseph R.....230, 270, 321, 332  
 Landing Craft Assault (LCA).....54, 99, 172, 182, 184, 215-217, 231-232, 237-239, 251, 253-255, 270, 273-275, 279-280, 284-285, 287  
 Landing Craft Infantry (LCI).....215, 237, 256, 283-290  
   LCI (L) 91.....256, 284-290  
   LCI (L) 92.....256, 285,-290  
 Landing Ship Infantry (LSI).....172, 215-216, 232, 237, 251, 255-256, 268, 270, 273-274, 283-284  
 landmine.....iii, 28, 96, 180, 183-184, 190, 200-201, 203, 247, 261, 267, 278, 290-291, 300, 312, 314, 317, 326, 331, 333, 342, 356-359, 361, 366, 377, 391, 393  
 Larkin, 1st Lt. James L.....147  
 "Lead The Way, Rangers!".....291  
 Levesque, Tec 5 Joseph W. ....317  
 Lemon, 1st Lt Charles C.....320  
 Leominster, England.....151, 158, 160-166  
 Lesconnet, France.....353-354  
 Les Moitiers, France.....319, 334  
 Liverpool, England.....144-145, 151-159  
 Lomell, Sergeant Lem (2D).....295,

296  
Luther, 1st Lieutenant  
Edward.....174  
Lytle, Major Cleveland.....231

**M**

M1 Garand Rifle.....27, 29, 37, 43,  
67, 70, 78, 91, 305  
Madame de Loÿs.....266, 301-302  
Maisy Battery.....271-273, 312-314,  
317  
Marmo, Pfc John C.....334  
Marshall, General George.....54, 56  
marshalling area.....205, 212  
Marshalling Camp D-5.....203, 206,  
209-210, 212, 244-245, 251  
Martigne, France.....319, 337, 338  
Martin Jr., 1st Sgt. Sandy.....71  
Maurouard, Franck.....396, 398  
Mayenne, France.....319, 334, 338-  
339, 398  
McEleney, Edward J., S/Sgt.....73,  
163, 293, 307  
McIlwain, Walter, S/Sgt.....72-73,  
196, 293, 295-298, 300-301, 306-  
307  
McKissick, Howard (5C).....321  
McLain, William.....147, 149, 153  
Mehaffey, Jay H., 2<sup>nd</sup> Lt.....73, 196  
MG-42 machine gun  
(German).....262, 267, 284, 288,  
291-292, 300, 315, 345  
Middleton, Troy, Major  
General.....348, 351, 368  
Miller, Pfc Richard L.....331  
Miller, Victor, Sgt.....51, 63, 71, 98,  
114, 121, 146-147, 150, 152, 155,  
158, 161, 166, 172-173, 221, 247,  
286,  
Monroe, Pfc William, R.....320  
Montgomery, Harvey M, Pfc.....73,  
293, 307  
Moody, Willie (5C).....321  
Moreton Station.....207-209  
Morgan, Jr, PFC Carl W. ....317  
Morgan, Daniel, Col.....53  
Morgan, John Hunt, Gen  
(CSA).....53  
Mulligan, 2nd Lt William J.....324,  
335

**N**

National Archives and Records  
Administration (NARA).....14, 21,  
25, 28, 30, 34, 58, 59, 61, 64, 69-0,  
74, 97-100, 102-110, 119, 147, 162-  
163, 171, 173, 176-177, 185, 188,  
207, 215-216, 218, 246, 248-250,  
252-255, 265, 272, 275, 276, 281, 282

1973 Records fire.....14, 21, 34,  
370, 391,  
National Personnel Records  
Center (NPRC).....21, 34, 63,  
370, 393, 399  
National Museums  
Liverpool.....144, 158,  
Nelson, Jr, S/SGT Emil  
(5F).....268, 270  
Neuman, Eddie.....71  
New York City.....114-120, 126,  
135, 137, 139, 380,  
New York Port of Embarkation  
(NYPE).....123, 125-127, 130,  
131, 135, 136, 137, 139, 140, 141,  
142, 144, 146, 151,  
Ninth Air Force (U.S.).....206, 208,  
213, 364  
Normandy.....96, 99-100, 149, 179-  
180, 182, 199, 200, 203, 206, 213-  
215, 220, 231, 246-247, 257-258,  
260-264, 268-269, 273, 285-286,  
303, 309, 311, 312, 322-323, 326,  
330, 334, 339-342, 346-348, 350-  
351, 393, 395-396  
Norton, Pvt Richard H.....320

**O**

Oberbefehlshaber West (OB).....260  
Oberkommando de Wehrmacht  
(OKW).....260  
Old Harry's Rocks, England.....219,  
220, 221, 226, 227, 228  
Omaha Beach.....iii, 2, 54, 146, 149,  
179, 182, 197, 199, 202-205, 210,  
213, 215, 220, 231, 234, 248, 249,  
Chapter 16  
Operation NEPTUNE.....204, 214,  
251, 272  
Operation OVERLORD.....60, 204,  
205, 214, 246, 248-51  
O'Reilly General Hospital.....373,  
382-383  
Ormel Farm, France.....267, 300-  
302, 305  
Osmansville, France.....317, 318

**P**

P-38 Lightning.....206, 207  
P-47 Thunderbolt.....207, 362-363,  
365  
Parker, 1st Lt Charles "Ace"  
(5A).....179, 293, 299, 321  
Parker, Lee, Dr.,.....147-149, 152-  
153  
Parks, Herb.....387, 390-391  
Pavlicek, Tech 5 Eugene F.....334  
Pennsylvania Railroad.....7, 18, 126-  
129, 135, 137

Pepper, Bernhard, Lt.....69, 174,  
275, 284, 290, 292, 300-301, 324,  
339, 351, 363-364  
Percy Jones Hospital.....3, 385, 393  
Peregory, Frank D., T/Sgt  
(Congressional Medal of  
Honor).....314-315  
Perry, Sgt John Joseph (5A).....268,  
270  
physical qualifications  
as Ranger.....51, 62-63  
as soldier.....10  
Piette, Francis J, Pfc.....73  
Piprel family.....267, 305  
Plank, Harold F., U.S. Navy.....232  
Pointe de la Percée, France.....220,  
231, 260, 271, 287  
Pointe du Hoc, France.....1, 179-  
180, 193, 204, 220-221, 229, 231,  
237, 247, 250, 257, 260, 264, 266-  
267, 270-271, 273, 276-277, 279,  
283, 293, 306, 307, 309, 311, 316,  
318, 393  
Portsmouth, England.....205-206,  
219  
Powell, Gordon R. ....163  
Powell, Tech Sgt Harvie C.....331  
Preparation for Overseas Movement  
(POM).....129-131, 140  
Prince, Morris, PFC.....200-202,  
210-211, 215, 216-218, 246, 316-  
317  
Provisional Ranger Group  
(PRG).....175, 205, 206, 213, 218,  
231-232, 244-245, 247, 251, 267,  
271, 312, 317, 323, 326, 330-331,  
333-334, 337-339  
Princess Docks, UK.....155-158  
Purple Heart.....2, 3, 127, 386, 391-  
392, 399

**R**

Raen, Jr, John C., Maj Gen  
(ret).....3, 53, 64, 74, 114, 123,  
137-138, 146-147, 150, 161, 166-  
167, 171-175, 179, 197, 221, 232,  
247, 255, 257, 273-275, 279-280,  
285, 288-292, 296-297, 306-307,  
309, 311, 317, 331, 351, 355-356,  
360, 362, 371, 377, 391, 394-395,  
397-398  
RAF Warmwell.....206-209  
Ragged Rocks, England.....219, 221,  
225-226  
Ragsdale, S/Sgt Ralph W. 319  
Ramcke, Hermann-Bernhard,  
General.....341, 348, 368-369  
Ranney, S/SGT Burton Eugene  
(5F).....270, 273  
Read, Tec 5 Clinton O. ....307

Reception Center.....10-16,  
 Recher, Jr, Pfc Otto F.....320, 339  
 Reilly, Sgt William F.....307  
 Rifleman.....31, 48  
 Rivoli Theatre.....116-117  
 Rogers, "Bucky".....291  
 Rogers, Robert, Maj.....52  
 Rogers' Rangers.....52, 54,  
 Rommel, Erwin Johannes  
     Eugen.....260-261, 263  
 Rooney, James B.....196, 198  
 Roosevelt, President Franklin  
     D.....6, 27, 118, 388  
 Rudder, James Earl Col.....60, 174-  
     175, 179, 204, 205, 213, 217, 230-  
     232, 270-271, 277, 293, 311, 316,  
     324, 330, 332,  
 Rundstedt, Karl Rudolf Gerd  
     von.....260-261  
 Ryan, Cornelius.....256-257, 268-  
     269, 279, 292, 297, 301-302, 310,  
     394, 398,

## S

Saffert, Pvt Edward L.....331  
 Sausage Camp.....213  
 Schneider, Max, F, Lt. Col.....175,  
     179-180, 200, 204, 216, 229, 247,  
     268-269, 271, 277-278, 284, 290-  
     291, 293, 297, 309, 311, 321, 323,  
     330, 332, 399  
 Schopp, T/5 Dan D. (5F).....268,  
     270, 290  
 Second Army.....37, 48, 54, 60  
 Second Army Ranger School.....60,  
     67, 75-92  
 Selective Service System.....6, 7, 13,  
 Selective Training and Training Act  
     of 1940.....6, 9,  
 Serial Number.....9, 10, 24  
 Shea, Jack, Lt, Aide to General  
     Norman Cota.....269, 304  
 Slapton Sands, England.....213-217,  
     269, 277,  
 Sluice Gate at Grandcamp.....312,  
     315  
 Soldier Qualification Card (WD  
     AGO Form 20).....13-15, 35, 48,  
     386, 392-393  
 Southern Base Section.....205-206,  
     214  
 Smith, S/Sgt Harold I.....320  
 Snyder, 1st Lt Jack A. (5C).....268-  
     269  
 SS *Hat Creek*.....146-150  
 SS *Normandie*.....136  
 St. Germain d'Anxure,  
     France.....319, 337  
 St. Lô, France.....263, 311  
 St. Martin de Bonfosse,

France.....319, 334, 335  
 Stark, Harold R (Chief of Naval  
     Operations (CNO) Admiral).....  
     149  
 Stivison, Bill.....232  
 Stuyvesant, Herman, Cpl.....174,  
     319, 365  
 Styles, Clarence, S/Sgt.....2, 394, 399  
 Styles, Jerry.....2, 3, 70, 123, 394-  
     397, 399  
 Suchier, Jr., 1<sup>st</sup> Lieutenant Oscar A.  
     ....196  
 Sullivan, Richard P, Maj.....174-175,  
     196-197, 204, 231, 321, 332, 351,  
     361,  
 Supreme Headquarters Allied  
     Expeditionary Force  
     (SHAEF).....204, 214-215  
 Surowitz, S/Sgt Joseph.....307  
 Swanage, England.....203, 214, 218,  
     219-221, 223, 225-226, 229, 230,  
     232, 233, 244, 245, 398  
 Sweeney, Albert F., Sgt.....73, 293

## T

Taylor, Charles H., Lt.  
     Colonel.....270-271, 274, 285, 309  
 Tennessee Maneuvers.....27, 37, 56-  
     57, 59-60  
 Thibodeau, Pfc Maurice V.....339  
 Thompson, Paul W., Lt. Col.....180,  
     182  
 Thornhill, Avery J., S/Sgt.....163,  
     196, 273, 283, 301, 335, 339,  
 Tice, Pvt William B. ....320  
 Tighnabruach, Scotland.....167-177  
 Trégarantec, France.....319, 339, 353  
 Troop train.....7, 16-19, 23-24, 32,  
     39-40, 56-57, 63, 93, 136-137, 196,  
     398  
 Truscott, Colonel Lucian King.....54  
 TSS Santonia.....167  
 Tullahoma, TN.....51, 53, 55-56, 63,  
     72

## U

U-boat.....145, 153, 340, 348  
 U-boat (German submarine base,  
     Brest).....  
 Union Station, Columbus.....17-18  
 Union Station, Kansas City.....18,  
     20-21  
 United States Army Heritage and  
     History Center (USAHEC).....10,  
     29, 64, 288, 397, 399  
 USAAF Station 454.....207  
 U.S. Army/U.S. Navy Amphibious  
     Scout and Raider School  
     (Joint).....93-97,

U.S. Assault Training Center  
     (USATC).....178, 179, 180-203,  
     205, 210, 216  
 U.S. Department of Veterans Affairs  
     (VA).....21, 176, 370, 378, 396  
 U. S. Naval Amphibious Training  
     Base (USNATB).....93-97,  
 US 6th Naval Beach  
     Battalion.....146  
 USO.....117-118, 128  
 U.S.S. *Texas* (BB 35).....275-276,  
     301, 304-305, 313

## V

Valognes, France.....323, 324, 326,  
     328, 329  
 Vickers Machine Guns.....242-243  
 Vierville Sur Mer, France.....210,  
     231, 247, 257-258, 260, 264-267,  
     271, 278-279, 292-295, 297, 299-307,  
     309, 311, 369  
 Villedieu des Poeles, France.....319

## W

Walinski, Pfc John.....339  
 Wassil, Pfc Nickolas.....307  
 Warich, Chester B, T/Sgt.....73, 301,  
     307, 339  
 WD AGO Form 20.....13-15, 35,  
     48, 386, 392-393  
 WD AGO Form 53-55.....2-3, 31,  
     388, 393  
 West, Carl, S/Sgt...8, 66-67, 72-73,  
     114-115, 203, 268, 270, 273-275,  
     283-284, 291-294, 297, 301-303,  
     305-306, 365, 369, 394, 399  
 Weberman, Theorore, Pfc.....73, 293  
 Weehawken, NJ.....137-139, 380  
 West, Dr. Ian.....220-223, 226  
 West, Grady J. ....163  
 West Knighton.....209  
 Weymouth, England.....205, 213,  
     215, 216, 221, 223, 245, 251-255,  
     398  
 Whittington, George, Cpt.....101,  
     114, 125, 174, 179, 183, 251, 268,  
     269, 273, 275, 284, 289, 290, 291,  
     292, 293, 295, 297, 300-303, 321,  
     339, 348, 391, 394, 398  
 Widerstandsnest (WN).....261, 264,  
     266, 277, 280, 283, 285, 287, 288,  
     290, 292, 294, 295, 300, 305, 307,  
     312,  
 Wilhelm, Pvt Raymond F. ....307  
 Willis, Pvt Clyde F.....320  
 Winslow, Paul L., Cpl .....73, 293,  
     307  
 Woolacombe, England.....180-182,  
     193, 194, 196-199, 203



World War 2 (WW2) U.S. Medical  
Research Centre.....372, 374, 396

**Z**

Ziegelmann, Fritz,  
Obersteutnant.....247, 264



5<sup>th</sup> Ranger Infantry Battalion, B Company, Autumn 1943 at Fort Dix New Jersey